

A man was thinking and he wondered why ...

there is so much tragedy and human suffering.

Could God have a **strange plan** that explains  
what is happening and why ... and will God  
ultimately make things right some day?

# **God's Strange Plan**

By

Job S. Friend

## **Attribution Page**

Copyright 2022 and onward by:

Christian Thinkers Publishing  
C/O Barnabas Ministries  
P.O. Box 3393  
Farmington Hills, Michigan 48333  
USA

Creative Commons License granted: CC BY-NC-ND

Explanation of Creative Commons License grant:

CC: Please refer to [creativecommons.org](http://creativecommons.org)

By: The user must acknowledge the author and copyright holder as follows:  
Author: Job S. Friend

Copyright holder:

Christian Thinkers Publishing  
C/O Barnabas Ministries  
P.O. Box 3393  
Farmington Hills, Michigan 48333  
USA

NC: The user may not use this book for commercial purposes. However, the user may place a downloadable copy of this complete book onto a website for free downloading even though the website itself has banner and other ads. In other words there must be no charge for this book itself.

ND: The creative commons license grant only allows the user to use the original unmodified work. The user may not make a derivative from the original work, or any part of it. In other words, fair use quoting is allowed, but the user may not transform this book, or any part of it, into a derivative work.

## **Table Of Contents**

Introduction	1
1. And Then What?	11
2. The Current Human Condition	67
3. The Tragedy Of Being	142
4. God Unfairly Accused And/Or Disregarded Due To The Tragedy Of Being	228
5. Why The Left Can't Deliver	305
6. Why The Right Can't Deliver	504
7. Original Appropriation - God's Ownership Of The Entire Universe	566
8. Israel As Part Of God's Strange Plan	724
9. The Millennium As Part Of God's Strange Plan	896
10. God's Strange Plan And The Tragedy Of Being Explained	1,042
Appendix: A List Of Unsupported Assertions	

Author's dedication:

To the human race ... for all those men and women who are hurting and confused and need real hope and a credible explanation as to what is happening and why. No doubt you have suffered so much, been anxious and afraid, and too often confused. You miss your deceased loved ones and wonder if you will ever get to see and be with them again. This book is for you. This book is also dedicated to those who wish at this point in their life that they could do it all over again ... only this time much better.

Let it be known that the Great God of the Universe will "stick the landing" for you and your loved ones and make healing sense of it all. This book is for you. Please read on.

## **Introduction**

Your author believes that every human being would like to know that we fit in, in essence, to have a place setting with our name on it at "the dinner table of life." Each of us would like to have meaning in our life, to know who we are, where we have come from, and where we are going. We want to know that **we belong** and **are loved**. We want to be secure and for our friends and family to be safe, too. And we want our lives to count for something, to have a real purpose. All of these important things matter. Unfortunately, all of the above perfectly normal human wishes usually end up coming face to face with the very harsh buzz saw of reality. It is a buzz saw of reality that is seemingly so cruel and engenders so much widespread human suffering as to defy any "rational belief" in "a loving God" that is "behind it all."

The above is such a haunting, inescapable, and ongoing paradox that it hurts our hearts and confuses our minds. It is such an incongruous conundrum that many of those who are religious, not all, tend to ignore it and not speak of it, or to immediately dismiss it with a platitude, e.g., "God is in control," and then to put the paradox out of their minds. But it is a

paradox that is very hard for any thinking and caring person to just ignore, or dismiss. And it is a paradox that causes the non-religious to almost ridicule those who attempt to defend such “a cruel God.” In their minds if God is so “all-powerful” and so “in control” and so loving, then why would he allow such suffering? Their conclusion is that no God exists. He must not. After all, if God is both love and all-powerful then how could he possibly justify allowing for all of the human pain, suffering, and death that is extant all around us – not to mention all of the confusion, frustration, anxiety, loneliness, depression, etc., that comes before death?

The orthodox Christian religion doesn’t seem to have a satisfying answer to this paradox, for reasons that will be made plain as we go throughout this book. And those who believe in evolution can never explain this life. This is because one of their core tenets is that man is not all that special, all things considered, basically a higher form of animal that has evolved the ability to think. In essence, man is merely a happy accident so enjoy what you can while you can. But this is not a meaningful explanation that satisfies, especially in a world full of tragedy. Your author will get into the

negative implications of this particular attempted explanation fairly early in this book.

The title of this book, *God's Strange Plan*, is taken from parts of two scriptures joined together.

"For the LORD shall rise up as in mount Perazim, he shall be wroth as in the valley of Gibeon, that he may do his work, **his strange work**; and bring to pass his act, **his strange act.**" Isaiah 28:21, KJV

"**God's secret plan** has now been revealed to us; it is a plan centered on Christ, designed long ago according to his good pleasure."

Ephesians 1:9, NLT

From the above two scriptures your author coined the phrase, "**God's Strange Plan**," and thought that it would make a good title for a book, especially a book that could explain human suffering, or what your author calls the "Tragedy of Being." Your author hopes to make sense of it all and to provide some much needed hope to those so desperately needing it.

Regarding the phrase the "**Tragedy of Being**," your author has an entire chapter

explaining what he means by that coined phrase and so no more will be written here other than to say there are many reasons for human suffering and all of them will eventually work for good (Romans 8:28). And it could be said that since so very few human beings, who have ever walked the earth, seem to have understood "God's Strange Plan," it could also be said that it is largely a secret plan, too. Your author realizes others would debate this point, but it is true – at least for most people. What is God's strange and largely secret plan? To give the answer to that question is one of the central reasons for your author to have written this book.

This book will explain how the human race has collectively reached the point where we experience too much tragedy, confusion, and pain instead of purpose, meaning, and joy. The good news is that the story does have a very happy ending for most all who have ever lived – to be explained in more detail throughout this book, in particular, in chapter ten.

This book is also necessary because God the Father and Jesus Christ are falsely accused of being: uncaring, unloving, cruel, incompetent, and other assorted bad things said in pain by

those who are currently suffering. People are afraid of God not existing, which would mean that this hard life is all that there is. However, they are also very concerned that God does exist, but deep down they are afraid of a God who seems so cruel and uncaring as to allow all this suffering and death to go on for so very long. Ergo, many men reject either the very idea of God or "the cruel God" himself. And so this book has a twofold purpose: 1) to defend God the Father and Jesus Christ against false, but understandable, charges brought against them by hurting humans and 2) to outline their strange plan in order to give understanding and hope to mankind. This, once again, per your author's chosen field of writing, is another book about "God and Man."

The first four chapters of this book mainly detail human intellectual and moral failure and then God getting blamed for it. Chapters five and six detail there is no likely solution for humans in the politics of either "The Left" or "The Right." Chapters seven and eight detail what should have been but, alas, was not. Chapter nine discusses the 1,000-year time period widely known as the Millennium and chapter ten ties things together, including how God will ultimately fix the problems and stick the

landing. And yes, there is a happy ending for the good guys and you can become one of them.

The information from the pages that follow was gleaned from the Bible, logical reasoning, and from personal life experiences and learning.

The first housekeeping point that is necessary is due to the fact that your author, throughout this book, will intentionally make “the conceptual realism error” of attributing “thought” and “action” to a group, e.g., “The Left,” or “The Right,” or to Biblical Israel. This is done on purpose, as writing and communicating convention, utilized for ease of both writing and for the audience to more easily read the subject matter. It is, quite simply, just easier to write about core concepts widely known to be largely attributable to said group. Your author is well aware that only individuals think and take action and that no group of individuals is 100% aligned. In other words, some individuals of a group will differ on certain group platform points; individuals can change and grow over time, etc. Further, many individuals are members of multiple groups and this sometimes puts them into conflict when the groups they are members of are in conflict, etc. It is intellectual and philosophical error to attribute thinking and

acting to groups, instead of individuals. The individuals who gain power over collectives make decisions they hope the majority of members of that collective will support. This is going to be a very long book and it would be even longer still if every sentence had to be heavily qualified ad infinitum. All of this explanation is a rather long and boring way to tell you, dear reader, that this is an authoring and teaching communications mechanism intentionally utilized, i.e., a shortcut for convenience. God even does it throughout the Bible; one example is the scripture below:

“Son of man, when **the house of Israel** lived in their own land, they defiled it by their own way and by their doings, even as the defilement of woman’s impurity, their way was before Me.” Ezekiel 36:17, MKJV

Not all of the Israelites defiled the land, e.g., the prophets who served God did not. But it is just easier at times to write “Israel,” or “the house of Israel,” instead of writing more technically precisely. It is difficult to repeatedly write something like, “During the period of time in question, most of the individuals who comprised the collective, the house of Israel, thought and acted in such a way that they defiled the

Promised Land and angered God.” It is just much easier to simply write, “Israel disobeyed God and got thrown off of the land,” and the substance of this comment is certainly correct.

Your author has written a previous book entitled *Life Charts* and in part this book described various competing ideologies, religions, philosophies, and “isms” that have created a seemingly endless road for human beings to travel – a road with too many signs and no directions (or conflicting directions). In *Life Charts* your author used numerous charting metaphors and techniques to help the reader grasp main points – basically charting directions to help the reader more easily gain a better understanding. These directional charted points can help a great deal, because once one knows them, one can use them to see through and avoid those paths that lead the human race in the wrong direction. In other words, using a math analogy, if an “ism” anthropomorphically says, in essence, “Follow me:  $2 + 2 = 7$ ,” we can know not to follow it because it is false. It also is one of the goals of this *God’s Strange Plan* book to help provide some life-charting principles and bell-weather anchor points, as it were, to act as markers for us and others to keep in mind when making the decisions that

propel us down the road we are traveling – a road we want to lead to a long, happy, and eternal life.

What could a “Life Chart” be? It could be any one or more of the following:

A symbolic metaphor, e.g., Life > Death

A sequence, for example:  
Values → Choices → Consequences

A list of key points

A highlighted sentence with a core principle

A summary sentence or paragraph

A choice dichotomy, e.g.: Choice One versus Choice Two, and then the logical consequences that must follow from each

Premises reasoned from - which could include a detailing of some history in an effort to show us how we got to where we are right now

An excellent quote that helps anchor a point

## The calling out and ridiculing of false dichotomies

A time horizon point, e.g., the calling out and explanation of the effect one's time horizon has on one's choices and the resulting consequences

Etc.

It is your author's hope that other authors on other topics will also adopt the idea of using charting metaphors as teaching beacons in their own works. To your author's knowledge (outside of computer programming and perhaps chemistry), the idea of charting "the directions" as an aid to a teaching narrative has not been done – at least not as widely as it could have been.

In another housekeeping point, the scriptural references, herein, are from the King James Version, KJV, Modern King James Version, MKJV, New Living Translation, NLT, Amplified Bible, AMP, or Today's English version, TEV (The Good News Bible), unless denoted otherwise. Any emphasis, in the scriptural or other quotations, is mine throughout this book. Having said that, let's get started. Your author offers for your

serious consideration and hopeful edification an explanation of God's Strange Plan.

## **Chapter One**

### **And Then What?**

This first chapter explains a brief history of how Western society has arrived at the moral and intellectual place where it has no agreed upon "**standard of the right**," i.e., a standard of what is correct.

Throughout this book your author will use topical subchapter headings for the reader's convenience, known as "sections", such as section 1.1 directly below.

#### **1.1 If there is no God, then there is no Divine Law**

Actions can have unintended and unforeseen consequences. This is true even if good intentions and a lot of time and human energy went into an effort. Unfortunately, this is the case with Charles Darwin's attempted contribution to human knowledge via his theory that has come to be known as "the science" of evolution. Your author does not know if Darwin

intended all that came from his book, *On the Origin of Species*, but that does not matter. Darwin and his subsequent follower's elevation of Darwin's theory into a "science" have caused two very negative side effects and both of them have really injured the human race. The first will be covered in this section of the book and the second will be covered in the very next section.

To be fair to Darwin, who lived around 150 years ago, it is not possible for anyone to know if Darwin would maintain his theory, were he alive today, in the face of many advancements in the natural sciences, e.g., in microbiology, biology, chemistry, and physics, etc. Further, neither Darwin nor any other author can control how other people react to what is written. And certainly Darwin is not directly responsible for what other natural scientists have done with his theory. That said your author is not being unfair to Darwin or to any other honest believer in evolution when he points out the negative side effects of said theory.

The first negative thing Darwin and his followers did, in essence, was to displace God as the source of life. Now it could be said that it was actually the scientists who followed Darwin,

who accepted and modified his theories, who came to that unfortunate conclusion, nevertheless, it happened. There is now a “science” of evolution that is widely accepted and taught in schools and universities worldwide. And while some religious scientists argue that a creator God could have used natural selection to eventually get things how he wanted them, this is neither here nor there for your author’s purposes in this section. For your author’s purposes, here is the first unforeseen and unintended bottom line consequence stemming from Darwin: if there is no God, then there is no divine law of any kind! And some form of divine law has always been the best system of ethics for mankind – a way to at least try and keep mankind’s behavior in check.

Divine law is a heteronomous system of ethics, as it were. Heteronomous has the meaning “subject to external controls and impositions,” per Merriam-Webster’s Collegiate Dictionary. God’s divine law commands to mere men are very definitely external controls and impositions from God toward mankind, hence your author’s categorization of divine law being a heteronomous system of ethics. And this is true no matter which God someone believes in or tries to please. “Thou shalt not ... whatever”

is pretty easy for everyone to understand. Such a command tends to be short, direct, and clear.

A heteronomous system of ethics then is a system of ethical teachings that, as it were, comes down from above, for your author's purposes, from a God. It has to be some form of divine law from some God. And while this could be and has been argued, divine law of some kind has always been the best system of ethics, historically speaking, for the human race. People believing they have to answer for their choices, behavior, and lives tend make better decisions. So whether a Christian reads the Bible, a Muslim reads the Koran, a Jew reads the Tanakh, a Hindu reads the Hindu sacred writings, a Buddhist reads about Buddha's teachings, etc., the concept applies, hence the problem. If there is no God, there is no point to being concerned about any heteronomous system of ethics. **All divine law falls with the teaching and belief there is no God.**

No God → no divine law → no heteronymous systems of ethics of any kind for all mankind

Mankind's best historical system of ethics just went out the window via evolution being taught as a science in schools worldwide. Of course,

parents of school-age children try and teach the religion they believe in to their children at home, but if the school system is indoctrinating or teaching that religion is basically historic mythology, but evolution is scientific fact, it is hard for parents to overcome. This is especially true over an extended educational time horizon, starting in kindergarten and ending in university. This can cause school-age children to actually question their parent's intelligence and honesty and this can cause parent-child rifts that damage family relationships and harmony. However, as bad as all this lack of family harmony may be, it is not the central point of this section, which is that if there is no God then there is no divine law of any kind. And now man just lost his best system of ethical checks and balances.

There are other fallout effects from the "science" of evolution taking God out of the societal and family picture. If there is no God, then there is also no spiritual help available for any man who wants to try and turn their life around and to become one of the good guys. Your author is using "man" in the mankind sense of the word and so throughout this book such a reference would obviously include women, too.

Taking the “science” of evolution to its logical conclusion, over time there will be less church attendance. Your author uses the word church to include all religious assemblies. Without religious assemblies to help provide encouragement there is no positive church-based cultural encouragement and behavioral accountability. If believers in a God get together with each other on a regular basis they tend to receive instruction in righteousness, to encourage each other, and to also hold each other accountable for better behavior. People who attend a religious assembly tend to feel that they belong to something important to them and they are constantly reminded that they will have to answer for their lives.

If religious assemblies die out → no instruction in righteousness + no reminder men will have to answer for their lives

If religious assemblies die out → a loss of a positive ethical culture + a loss of the sense of belonging to something bigger than oneself

If religious assemblies die out → more selfish and short-term thinking people

If religious assemblies die out → more secular materialist people

Your author respects other men and women and realizes they are each potentially incredibly valuable. This is why he has written an earlier book entitled, *Divine Individualism* which covers just how potentially valuable to God each one of us is. It turns out living secularly wastes a lot of life; it renders life devoid of much of what it could have meant to a secular person.

Sometimes, when your author is speaking with secular friends, particularly with older ones, the topic of the meaning of life or even God comes up. And it never ceases to amaze your author that someone who has lived secularly their entire life, once reaching near the end of their physical life, will then start, in essence, **making up personal metaphysics**. Your author could not dignify their attempted metaphysical musings with the noun, religion, because it is nowhere near that designation.

Perhaps an example of what your author is getting at will prove helpful. When your author asked a good friend what he thought would happen after death, he answered honestly and said, "I don't know." But then he added two more important and unsolicited musings: 1) that

he was a good person and 2) that maybe there is some kind of positive energy in the universe and somehow if you have lived a good life then you, in so many words, merge with the universal positive energy. Your author was respectful and resisted the temptation to ask a few questions, but a couple of obvious questions for this book are, "By what standard were you a good person?" and a second obvious question is, "Do you have any evidence there is a positive energy blob in eternal existence throughout the universe?"

Without a heteronomous divine law standard of ethics to be held accountable to, by what standard is my friend a good person? For the record, in case he reads this and recognizes himself, he actually is basically a good person. If there is not a divine law standard there must be some other standard. What is it? Your author's friend and all secular materialists rarely address such a serious question, hence the problem. It basically comes down to self-assertion that one is a good guy, an assertion unsupported by any religious or rational standard. Once again, all religious ethical standards have "went by the wayside" if collectively we accept the "science" of evolution.

The unsupported metaphysical idea there is, what amounts to, a universal positive energy blob one might merge with upon one's death, should one have been "a good person" in this life, is laughably pathetic. Last minute and completely made-up metaphysics are a moral and intellectual joke. Unfortunately, some people basically have to resort to them to make themselves feel better when approaching death - after having led a largely secular life.

When someone says they are a "good" person → **good implies two things** → 1) there is a standard of the right + 2) the person in question met that particular standard

Made up silly metaphysics → the universal positive energy blob

Secular humanists and other believers in the "science" of evolution have discarded mankind's best historical system of ethics, which is some form of divine law. Ergo, the first big unforeseen and unintended consequence is that there is no heteronomous system of ethics for mankind to adhere to. There is no divine-law-supported **standard of the right** for men to compare their actions to and then to adjust their behavior to accordingly. And so your author can

now only ask a very important question, "And then what?"

### **1.2 If there is no God, then human life has no over-riding purpose**

The second big unforeseen and unintended negative consequence to a societal acceptance of the "science" of evolution is this: If there is no God, then there cannot be a purpose to human life. Further, there is also no substantial long-term meaning associated with human life either. We basically are a happy accident – a mammal that happens to be able to think and to be self-aware. You live 70, 80, or 90 or so years, if you are lucky, and then you die. That's it. There is no eternal life. You will never see your deceased friends and family again. They are gone forever as you and I will be soon. In other words, the believers in the "science" of evolution, even if they are correct, cannot deliver on explaining to others a substantial purpose to human life because they deny there is a purpose to life. They adopted that position when they decided to believe in evolution. Surviving and breeding are not some great purpose to life; they are just the continuance as a species of a purposeless life. As the previous section mentioned, they also gutted morality

when they took out divine law. Yet, they want the “scientific” position they espouse to be believed in and taken seriously. They want respect and to lead the human race forward using science as a basis for human progress. They would like to be leaders and to have, in essence, secular intellectual followers. But, follow you to where exactly? All that science can deliver is a better material standard of living during the time we happen to be alive and that’s if it does not kill us all by giving nuclear and other potentially devastating weapons to ethical infants. Science cannot deliver a life with meaning if there is no ultimate purpose to our lives, if we live so many years and then we just die and that is it.

The above is a serious problem for human beings individually and it can be for governments as well. It would be an even bigger problem if more citizens actually literally accepted the “science” of evolution. Fortunately, many do not. The bigger problem for those who do accept evolution as a science and then for governments is this. There can be a widespread tendency for many to, in essence, check out of society and do their own thing. And doing their own thing might include not working enough to provide for their own

personal living costs, abusing alcohol and drugs, being irresponsible when it comes to sex, engaging in financially destructive gambling, etc. After all, why should a person who has been taught the “science” of evolution simply go along and work long hours and engage in self-denial in order to invest in a better future if there is no future? Why should they obtain an education, learn a productive trade, learn social skills, and follow other societal norms if there is: 1) no divine law to establish a standard of what is correct, 2) no purpose to human life and no meaning to life, either, and 3) no God to whom you will ultimately have to answer to for your life? Why not just party, avoid pain, engage in pleasure, use alcohol and drugs that make you feel better for the moment, etc.? Why work and pay taxes? Why learn how to become a surgeon? Why waste your life trying to obtain and maintain all these material things you don’t really need like a big house full of furniture? And why care about the virtues if your lifespan is 70-80 years and then you die?

Your author was shocked when a surgeon friend of his mentioned there are about 82,000,000 adult Americans (USA) on either an anti-depressant psychotropic drug or an anti-anxiety psychotropic drug. The math of all of

this means that about 1/3 of USA adults are on a mind-altering drug in order to be able to cope with life. And it is about evenly divided between the anti-anxiety and the anti-depression drugs. In pointing this out your author is making a societal comment and judgment, not sitting in judgment of an individual who needed help and was brave enough to go out and get it. Again, your author was stunned to learn this. And this does not even begin to count all of the people who self-medicate their anxiety and depression by using alcohol or some form of cannabis. How could such a relatively favorable and seemingly wealthy cultural situation devolve to the point that 1/3 of American (USA) adults need ongoing psychiatric care and serious medication in order to cope with life? Why is there so much anxiety and depression? Your author's theory is that at least part of the reason is because school children are taught the "science" of evolution and this creates serious internal conflict. If there is no purpose to human life and there is no substantial long-term meaning to life, people become afraid to get sick and they also fear death. And they helplessly experience the death of friends and loved ones – people they are de facto being taught they will never be able to see again. It is an eternal loss for them and very painful mentally and emotionally. How do you

kill life's pain? One way is with drugs ... really strong ones.

Young people and not so young people are starting to ask themselves: If I don't have to answer to a God at the end of my life, if there is no judgment, why should I be good? And what is "good" exactly? By what ethical standard is something good? Since this life is all that there is, why shouldn't I do what I want right now?

Teaching evolution leaves people in the place where we live 70-80-90 years and then die. That's it. All religious and other metaphysical systems are null and void and therefore a waste of life to even contemplate. And there is obviously no divine law because there is no divine and so there is no divine law ethical system to provide for behavioral guidance.

Science cannot provide any answers as to the purpose for human life, nor can they provide any credible explanation as to ultimate meaning to something that is purposeless (to evolutionary scientists). And science certainly cannot give you eternal life or bring your loved ones back from the dead. Science might be able to prolong our lives for a few more years, but so

what if our older years are the lesser quality years?

Here are some bottom line questions to consider: If you cannot give me eternal life, why should I listen to you? Why should I follow you and to where exactly? And then what?

### **1.3 Reason itself is attacked and/or not fully trusted due to, unfortunately, faulty reasoning**

The use of reason could derive additional ethical principles for mankind. For those rejecting God the ethical principles so derived could stand apart from divine law, but not necessarily be in conflict with said divine law. From a Christian point of view, in point of fact, they would not be in conflict with it. Reason is used to discover natural laws. There is regularity and a consistency in the natural laws that govern the universe and reason is what man uses to discover those laws. Further, it takes time and effort to obtain scientific results and scientific truth unfolds over the years via a communal process. In other words, over time, natural and social scientists piece together how our universe is ordered. Facts are established using the law of identity. Cause and effect is

learned. We jointly piece together the context of our human situation from a secular point of view. And this information is very valuable to us.

Most people “allow” for reason to be used in the natural sciences but they believe, incorrectly, that reason cannot also be used to derive ethical principles. But reason can be used to derive a set of simple ethical principles. Your author has previously written several books touching on how this is so. For the sake of brevity in this book he will refer the reader to the following:

*Why There Is No Justice: The Corruption Of Law*  
(in particular the chapter entitled, “Natural Rights As A Key To Life”)

*Intellectual Warfare: The Corruption Of Philosophy And Thought* (in particular the chapter entitled, “The Importance Of Thought To Man”)

*Life Charts* (in particular the chapter four, section 4.3, entitled, “Solution To The Mind-Body Problem”) ... The *Life Charts* book contains a chapter showing that, of necessity, the universe has a logical structure to it and further

that the human mind also has a logical structure to it corresponding to the logical structure of the universe. Furthermore, you can derive an "ought" from an "is" ... if you utilize what amounts to **a totality of reasoning**. In other words, reason can derive ethical principles of what we ought to do considering what is the case. Reason can uncover ethical principles (what we ought to do) and not just be used to establish what is, i.e., facts. The reader is encouraged to read this herein referenced chapter section.

*Decision Filters* (in particular the chapter entitled, "Becoming 'One Of The Good Guys' Ethical Filtering")

Your author will now quote from part of the above referenced chapter from *Decision Filters* because it is a simple explanation and will suffice for your author's present purposes:

"Empathy for other people is a core component of ethics. In fact, a lot of ethics comes down to the question of empathy – do we have it, or not? In the hurry and scurry of this world, sometimes we can get too focused on our own life challenges and ourselves. But other people have hopes and dreams, too. And those

hopes and dreams are as important to them as yours are to you. If you want to be one of the good guys you have to have empathy for other people. A simple ethical filter is the below question:

**Do I have enough empathy for other people?**

In human history most systems of ethics are what are known as heteronomous - a system of ethics that comes down from above. It is probably easier for a reader to think, "divine law," as that is essentially what a heteronomous system of ethics comes down to. Examples of this are the Torah for Jewish people, the Bible for Christians, the Hindu sacred writings for Hindus, the teachings of Buddha for Buddhists, the Koran for Muslims, etc. And while there are similarities between the various ethical teachings there are also differences, but that is beyond the scope of this book. What is not beyond the scope of this book is to provide some core ethical filters that can likely be agreed to across the various and competing heteronomous systems of ethics, so that is what your author is going for in this section. And the suggested core ethical filters should also be agreeable to atheists and agnostics, too. Again, an empathetic approach toward the important

lives of others can be a great starting point. With all the above in mind, perhaps we can back into some generally agreeable ethical decision filters. Your author certainly hopes so.

Three things that are commonly important to all of us are our lives, our liberty, and our property. Would any of us want to be injured or killed? No. Would any of us want to be kidnapped or enslaved? No. Would any of us want to have our property damaged or stolen? No. This leads to three more ethical filters.

Am I harming the physical life of another human being?

Am I depriving another human being of their liberty?

Am I stealing or damaging the property of another human being?

If the answer to any of the above is, "Yes," you should stop, not proceed, and you should consider a different course of action. If another human being has something you want, perhaps you can trade for it instead of stealing their property. If you require the assistance of another human being perhaps you can hire their

time, or agree to help them if they help you. And obviously, murder is not the answer to anything. Life, liberty, and property have been acknowledged as important individual natural rights for centuries in Western Civilization and in many other cultures across the world. And they actually make a good set of ethical decision filters. If you want to be one of the good guys you must respect the individual natural rights of other people.

Further, would any of us who have contracted with another person, and who have performed our part of said contract, want the other person to renege on their portion of the contract? No. Would any of us who have received the benefit of a promise from another human being want that other human being to then not keep their promise to us? No. This leads to two more ethical decision filters.

If I have voluntarily contracted with another human being, am I fulfilling the terms of the contract?

If I have made a promise to another human being, am I keeping my promise?

In other words, **is my word good, or not?** If you are having trouble complying with the terms of a contract, perhaps you can renegotiate the contract to get more time to comply or to receive some needed relief. The same holds true with keeping a promise. Honest communication with the other party will be appreciated and will help to keep your relationship intact while you work together, if possible, to find a solution to the problem. If you want to be one of the good guys, **your word has to be good.**

When Einstein famously declared "E = MC<sup>2</sup>" it rocked the world. After the initial shock, and once his scientific proclamations were verified, it has become fairly easy to understand the meaning of his famous formula, but perhaps not all of the implications. At any rate, for those of us coming after Einstein and with the proper teaching help, we can understand the core principle involved. It is, so to speak, relatively easy for us to get the core concept of the interchangeability of energy and matter via Einstein's discovered formulation. But it was not so easy for Einstein, who labored for years thinking it through and then he had to work out the verifiable details of the formulation. It is really hard to get something so profound down

to such an easy to understand formulation, but Einstein did it. A long time ago another brilliant human being [Jesus in the New Testament Matthew 22:39, referring to Moses in the Old Testament, Leviticus 19:18] basically did the same thing, pertaining to ethical teaching, when he proclaimed, '**love your neighbor as yourself.**'"

Loving your neighbor as yourself means recognizing other people's individual natural rights and not violating them, as no one in their right mind wants their life, liberty, or property violated. There should be a recognized equality of interests among human beings regarding this. It is something all human beings with decent character and intelligence can do because this is not at all complicated. Further, no man has the right to violate a right, including no group of men hiding behind majority vote to do so, or hiding behind a religious leader's proclamation to do so, or a tribal or governmental leader's proclamation to do so.

As a point of fact, if individual natural rights were acknowledged, respected, and not violated then individual natural rights would act as an international, intra-national, inter-racial, inter-gender, inter-religious, inter-political party, etc.,

set of ethics that would allow for much more harmonious human relations around the world. And so doing would, no doubt, lead to greater human prosperity and happiness.

But mankind has fallen victim to disbelieving or distrusting reason to establish ethical principles. Perhaps part of this is due to the horrible conditions occurring in the first 50 years of the 20<sup>th</sup> Century – with WW1, the Great Depression, WW2, and the tragic deaths due to various forms of communism. But all of the above human-caused tragedies were not due to reason. They were due to reason being disregarded. **It was an age of irrational activism.** Reason should not be blamed for human beings acting irrationally any more than mathematics should be blamed for those failing to apply math properly and then getting the wrong answers to equations.

Widely regarded as the greatest philosopher of the 20<sup>th</sup> Century is Dr. Ludwig Wittgenstein. Paraphrasing, he presciently observed: **All thinking is logical or it is not thinking.** In other words for something to actually qualify as thought it has to follow the rules of logic. Said another way, if someone does not follow the rules of logic when attempting to think ...

they will miss the truth. Your author acknowledges there are many other forms of mental activity, of which logic is just one. But it is the most important one because man is the thinking animal and man has to think in order to outcompete other species. Thinking allows man to not just survive, but also to thrive. Some other exemplar (not all) forms of human mental activity are:

Wishing  
Feeling  
Hoping  
Dreaming or daydreaming  
Believing (without logical factual basis)  
Inspiration / creation  
Evading or willful mental blindness  
Denying (without logical factual basis)  
Expressing an opinion regarding personal taste  
Instinctual awareness  
Etc.

Your author acknowledges many of these other forms of human mental activity are, at times, also important for man. But thinking is not just important; **thinking is critical for man.** And to be thinking, thought must conform to the rules of logic. If not, it is a different human mental activity, but not thinking itself.

All thinking is logical → or it is NOT thinking  
All non-logical mental activities → mistakenly labeled as thinking → thinking by assertion

Mankind cannot just abandon reason because some men, irrational actors to be precise, have misidentified or misconstrued what would be the best course of action. Men have no better tool with which to build out a life than to use our minds, i.e., to think. And **to not miss the truth** we have to be logical, i.e., to reason clearly. And so obviously, we must trust in reason. It is the best secular tool we have in our toolbox.

To not miss the truth → we must think

To think → we must follow logical principles

Thinking is → hard rewarding work

Returning to individual natural rights, thinking enables mankind to derive the individual natural rights of life, liberty, and property, as they are what amounts to a subset of natural law. Nature is clearly governed by natural laws. Man does not know them all yet, but over time we are collectively making

progress. Natural laws are those laws that man can observe and deduce by using his mind, by logical reasoning, i.e., by thinking. And those natural laws are important for man because man must use his mind in order to manipulate the natural world he lives in to make it better for himself. Man, without reason, is just another animal competing in the wild - an animal that would be outcompeted by more physically gifted other animals in the attempt to survive. Man must discover natural laws so he can apply them and out-compete the other animals. In Biblical terms, man must have dominion over the earth (Genesis 1:26-28) and he must use his mind properly in order to do so.

The post-modern attacks upon reason hurts mankind because it leads to men misusing their valuable minds and it leads to the death of individual natural rights. And then there is hell on earth for which reason gets blamed (see all of the 20<sup>th</sup> Century fiascos). But reason is not to be blamed for irrational activists who do not take the time to think clearly. And reason is not to be blamed for immoral activists, who know right from wrong, but choose the wrong anyway.

Reason (logic) → should not be blamed for either → 1) irrational activists or 2) immoral activists

To supposedly uphold science out of one side of your mouth at the same time you are attacking reason and natural law out of the other side of your mouth is the sign of a confused mind. To further say, "Hey, follow me. I am a firm believer in science and the scientific method and I am an expert on what it would take to make the world better," is nonsense if you don't uphold the consistency of the laws of nature and the reason that is used to discover them. True scientific geniuses, like Newton and Einstein, not leftist muddle heads, and not science-rejecting religious muddle heads, knew nature is consistent and logically ordered and we are stuck, in order to succeed, with trying to understand and apply her laws. You cannot say there are no natural laws except for in the natural sciences and then say, "We are social scientists." What are the laws governing the social sciences? Are there any such laws? There are, but those rejecting natural law or questioning reason cannot elaborate on them. If there are such laws, can you please elaborate what they are? If there are no such laws (rest assured, there are) how can you possibly claim

to be a scientist? Those rejecting natural laws and individual natural rights generally cannot elaborate on anything but some metaphysics or a Philosophy of History of their own creation.

If reason cannot be trusted → man cannot discover the natural laws that govern the universe

If reason cannot be trusted → man cannot utilize the totality of reasoning necessary → to establish individual natural rights

If reason cannot be trusted → no man should follow a wannabe elite dictator or a wannabe elite religious leader or a save-the-world utopian secular elite leader because → all men are men → meaning their own “elite reasoning” also cannot be trusted

Fortunately → reason → can be trusted

Without reason there is no thought. The discovery and the use of natural laws is no longer possible. Further, without the totality of reasoning individual natural rights cannot be discovered. And without the necessary protection of individual natural rights governments, religions, tribes, and social

reformers of all flavors can and do abuse valuable individuals. Unfortunately, governmental, religious, and tribal leaders, and the leaders of various save-mankind movements always exempt themselves from natural laws and excuse themselves for violating the individual natural rights of other men. They “rationalize” criticizing reason and what can be derived from it because they want to be able violate the individual natural rights of other men while somehow holding the thought in their muddleheads that they are one of the good guys. They want to be able to behave as if they were not somehow also a member of the human race – as if they were some kind of elite super-human or the rest of mankind are sub-human. And neither of these beliefs can be established using facts and logic, which is to say they are irrational beliefs and unsupported assertions. And since those wishing to put into practice irrational beliefs do not want to be exposed, they attack reason itself. In the end, though, per French Christian philosopher and historian, Etienne Gilson, “The natural law always buries its undertakers.”

Whether someone fashions themselves as one of **the elite** or not, a big problem for those not trusting in, or not wanting to consistently uphold

reason is this: if you are going to attack reason, what you put forth cannot be trusted or believed in either.

If a human being attacks reason → what they put forth as truth also cannot be trusted → it is either: 1) an **arbitrary unsupported assertion** or 2) made-up metaphysics

Without reason, natural law, and individual natural rights functioning properly, each of us is left exposed to whoever “rationalizes” the violation of our individual natural rights. This includes every power-hungry goon or utopian fool who is backed by their gang of thugs, i.e., some form of unchecked power. Unfortunately, this is where the human race has devolved to at the present time. But it did not have to be so. The respect for natural rights would and should have acted as a check on institutional stupidity and evil. It would and should have acted to help prevent the occurrence of dictators in the world, from the abuse stemming from the religious equivalent of the secular dictator, and from social reformers with utopian delusions of grandeur in their heads. If reason stands then most of their immoral and irrational ideas have to be discarded as unethical and illogical. It should go without saying, but needs to be said,

that any irrational and/or immoral ideas will also, in the long run turn out to be impractical, too. You cannot build anything good or lasting on an immoral or irrational foundation. It will collapse, over time, if not almost immediately.

It could be said that your author is carrying his case a bit too far, that no one actually abandons reason entirely. But that is not really your author's point. Your author's main point in this section is that reason is not trusted enough, which it should be, to be able establish a secular ethical norm of behavior which is the respect for individual natural rights. If reason were so trusted, and individual natural rights were both acknowledged and respected universally, then there would be **a secular behavioral norm** in place that would allow for peace between nations, peace within nations, and would also allow for peace between races, genders, political parties, economic classes, and different religions. It could and would transform the world, but reason itself is not fully trusted or adhered to.

With reason trusted and adhered to → natural laws are discovered and applied → the human race advances

With reason trusted and adhered to → individual natural rights are universally acknowledged

Without reason trusted and adhered to → the human race is exposed to wannabe and actual secular and religious dictators → abusers of men

Without reason trusted and adhered to → the save-the-world elite's "reasoning" cannot be trusted either

Without reason trusted and adhered to → unsupported assertions → are put forward as if they were truth (they are not)

And so your author must once again ask, if we are not going to trust our best secular tool, reason ... And then what?

#### **1.4 Majority vote cannot establish truth, nor can subjective convention in a culture**

We will start this section with a brief recap of where we are so far because it will lead us to the next two human attempts to understand truth apart from God and apart from trusting reason. If evolution is scientifically true, then there is no God – at least this is how evolution is taught in most school and university systems

worldwide. This leads to all heteronomous systems of ethics being thrown out the window, other than if an anthropologist, historian, or sociologist or the like want to study them for their own purposes. It also leads to the unpleasant “fact” that there can be no purpose to human life. We are happily a complex accident that happens to be self-aware and also able to think. It further leads to a search for belonging and meaning where the end of any road taken is futility. Happy accidents with no purpose live for 70 – 90 or so years and then die. The end. Someone might find temporary belonging in a family or tribe or group of some kind, but without a purpose for human life there is no substantive meaning to be derived. And even if someone happens to believe they achieved some searched out meaning to their life, and then what? You live so many years and then you die. Once again, it is the end. Your story is over and everyone who knows and loves you takes a loss but then they get on with their own story that is also a purposeless and basically meaningless life. Sorry for the authorial bluntness of the obvious conclusions that so many miseducated human beings are almost being forced to draw. The consequences of all this will be pointed out later in this book.

All of this gets even worse when the educational, philosophical, and governmental establishment and other secular writers and influencers no longer fully trust reason, which is to say they do not fully trust their own minds, nor the minds of their fellow human beings to logically get the right answer to life's problems. This leads to the loss of respect for natural law and to a winnowing away of the individual natural rights of man. Once again, and then what? What is next?

What is next is for the simple-minded to believe and act in such a way, particularly in this era of democracy, that truth can somehow be established by majority vote. This is ridiculous and when pressed about it, most people will back off – at least in private or in small groups. In terms of public matters, though, e.g., in governmental ones, people seem to act as if the truth or goodness of a public policy proposal can be established by a majority vote.

In an era of democracy, too many people having too much faith in government further compounds the problem of secularly defaulting to majority vote as a mechanism to establish what the truth or the good is. Political power becomes important to achieve. Whoever holds

the reigns to a governmental power, unchecked by the respect for individual natural rights, can do great damage. Theoretically, they can also do good, but at whose expense? And what is the good, to whom is it good? Making matters worse, political parties act like if they can get more than 50% of the vote on an issue that that issue is not only settled politically (if the vote went their way), but also somehow sanitized to be also considered correct, which is to say, the truth, or the good. This is so even if the politically approved course of action was by a vote of 50.01% to 49.99%. This is also so even if what was voted on and approved clearly violates divine law and clearly violates individual natural rights. **The citizens in society and the governmental leaders they elect behave as if the government functions not only as a government, but also as a gigantic political and societal washing machine where immorality and irrationality are somehow magically washed away.** All you need is a majority vote or some political scheming to clean it all up, which is nonsense. And then that society can delude itself into thinking that everything is all right. Your author is, of course, referring to the citizens and politicians in that society as a society does not think and take action – only individuals do.

An extreme example would be the question: is abortion right or wrong? And the modern answer is it all depends on who currently has political power and who is sitting as judges in the higher courts. The obvious reason that majority vote cannot establish truth or ascertain what is moral is the switching of political parties in power every few elections. Is abortion, or any other issue, currently right for four years, then wrong for eight years, and then right for 12 years in a right or wrong majority vote tug of war? This is foolishness, but we tend to act as if it is not.

Further, just where would you draw the geographic line in any attempt to use majority vote on a subject? For example, referencing the USA's normal political reporting, if a blue state accepted abortion, but the overall USA had a red state majority, would abortion be morally correct and intellectually true in blue states but morally incorrect and intellectually false in red states, or now morally incorrect and intellectually incorrect throughout the entire USA?

Further still, the majority of the world's population is still somewhat religious. At the

time of this writing, using round numbers, a chart on Wikipedia showed that there were 7.8 billion people on earth and only 1.2 billion, about 15.4%, were self-described as "Secular / Nonreligious / Atheist / Agnostic." Presumably the other 6.6 billion people would not accept evolution as science if the self-described religious adherents were to try and use majority vote to establish truth or ethics. They would argue about who or what is God, but they would collectively reject evolution. So is evolution now false, from a majority vote to establish the truth point of view?

Accepting the Wikipedia numbers at face value is enough for your author to make an additional point a bit further below. And so back to your author's abortion example, the Wikipedia chart shows:

2.2 billion Christians 28.2% of the world total  
1.6 billion Moslems 20.5%  
1.2 billion Hindus 20.5%  
0.5 billion Buddhists 6.4%

The above four religious groups contain about 5.5 billion total people with 70.5% of the world total population. Considering established religious orthodoxy, not one of the above major

world religions would allow abortion solely for birth control purposes. Each of them, depending on who the religious teacher and religious subset branch was, might and probably would allow for abortion to protect the life of the mother, etc. The simple fact of the matter is that an issue such as abortion or evolution could not be decided in favor of IF the geographic lines drawn to vote to establish ethics or truth included the entire world and if political and intellectual leaders were serious in their attempt to try to establish truth or ethics by majority vote. Of course they are not. They actually use majority vote as a smokescreen to gain political power and then also so they do not feel too badly about themselves when they abuse said political power in the violation of individual natural rights. In short, majority vote is a political smokescreen and a political/societal washing machine to them and their political followers.

Your author's point is the entire exercise of even pretending to use or actually using majority vote to establish truth or ethics is moral and intellectual stupidity. Sorry for the authorial bluntness, but really, can ten year olds vote to make ice cream a food group? Can Germans get a free pass from the people of the

world if they vote it is all right to kill Jews? Can slavery be established as ethically and logically correct if a majority votes for it? To even have to address this topic is a sad commentary on our times.

The second human attempt to understand truth apart from God and apart from fully trusting reason is what philosophers sometimes refer to as **subjective convention**. Subjection convention, for your author's purposes, basically means that whatever the mainstream of a particular society's population acknowledges and practices is a good guide to what is accepted as "the good" in that society. Subjective convention is obviously subjective, which means that sometimes, many times, societies can and will differ. But, for whatever reason, certain things get accepted enough in a society to be considered a convention in that society. The problems are obvious, which is, what if one society accepts X, but other societies reject X in favor of Y, which society is "correct" and by what ethical or rational standard? And what if the French subjective convention is that Alsace-Lorraine should be French, but the German subjective convention is that it should be German territory? The question is decided how? The answer is usually by a war that is

catastrophically destructive. Further, within a society, what about the individuals who come to the intellectual or moral place where they differ with their society's subjective convention? A historical example of this is Galileo having to recant his correct theory that the earth orbits the sun and not the other way around to bow down in favor of the religious and political orthodoxy (subjective convention) of the time. It can all get very awkward and dangerous. Can one even safely offer up the pointed question: "Who was correct, Galileo or the infallible Pope?" The obviously fallible "infallible Pope" was relying on subjective convention. Need anything more be written?

Your author's main point is that without God in the picture and without fully trusting reason no society actually has "a standard of the right," - a standard of what is correct, either ethically or intellectually. And so then secular people in an age of democracy go too far. They go too far because they think or behave as if using either subjective convention (at least for that society), or a vote-counting mechanism of some kind, with both of them likely run through what they hope is a gigantic governmental washing machine will somehow allow for their society to function on a stable ongoing basis. It will not.

It just leads to politicians and intellectual so-called elites desperately fighting for votes. And in the period of time between elections it leaves them trying to control the narrative via public relations offensives – which are, in fact, offensive to ethical and intelligent men and women. The reality is that neither vote counting nor subjective convention can establish ethics or truth. And so, once again, your author must ask, “And then what?”

### **1.5 Follow you to where, exactly?**

Just what is the secular standard of the right, of what is correct? If there is no divine law because there is no God, and so every heteronomous system of ethics known to man is out the window, and if reason is not fully trusted to at least establish and respect individual natural rights, and if majority vote and subjective convention are intellectual jokes of an attempt to establish either ethics or truth, your author has two simple questions for anyone who wants to be a secular-based leader:

- 1) Just what is “the standard of the right” you are espousing? And ...
- 2) How did you arrive at it?

These two questions would stop any honest wannabe secular leader of men in their tracks – at least they should. And your author could add a third question, which is implied in question #2 above:

3) How do you “**know**” you are correct?

Remember Wittgenstein’s famous and correct observation (paraphrased by your author): All thinking is logical or it is not thinking. Many people will begin a sentence, “I think that \_\_\_\_\_” and then they say something after “I think that.” But what actually comes out of their mouths after the “I think that” is many times not an actual thought. It is instead a wish, a hope, a daydream, a feeling, a not-fully supported belief, a partisan political statement, etc. In other words just because someone starts a sentence with “I think that \_\_\_\_\_” does not mean they are actually sharing something that could be considered thought. In fact, many times it is just an **unsupported assertion**, which your author will speak to throughout this book.

Secular elites fight over the ability to lead. Politicians of numerous political parties want to

get their hands on power so they can lead the human race “forward” and to do that they need followers. And so now your author must ask yet another question, which also serves as the title to this section of the chapter:

Follow you to where, exactly?

Where can a secular leader, advocating for evolution as a science, which means advocating there is no God, which means there is no divine law to establish ethics, who rejects or does not fully trust reason to be consistent enough to at least acknowledge and support individual natural rights as a secular ethical standard, who ducks the gaping emotional and intellectual black hole that there is no purpose to life if there is no God, who cannot actually deliver meaning to anyone if life, de facto, has no purpose, and who cannot or will not answer your author’s two pointed questions above lead anyone to? To where can we successfully follow such a leader? Where are you going? What will it be like when we arrive? Can you give me eternal life? Can you resurrect back to life and heal my long lost loved ones? Can you provide meaning to a purposeless life?

The sad fact of the matter is that if a secular leader, in substance, rejects God, is willing to violate other men's individual natural rights, and is willing to irrationally (pun intended) allow reason to be attacked, then any such "leaders" and those who follow them, are left with the below, which is devastating to the human race:

Morality by assertion

Truth by assertion

Your author writes "by assertion" meaning, of course, by **UNSUPPORTED ASSERTION**. If they want to support their assertions, usually given as god-like pronouncements, then they must answer your author's two questions above, which they won't. And they also must provide facts and logic, too. Here is the unpleasant truth for secular "leaders" and their followers:

Morality by assertion → is not morality

Truth by assertion → is not truth

Morality by assertion → is an opinion

Truth by assertion → a hope, wish, or opinion

And so now we have evidently entered the age of not just **irrational activism**, but also of **immoral activism**. Irrational and immoral actors spring up and hope to gain enough followers that they can impose their will on others. We have politicians fighting like they are correct and the other side is evil when, the truth be told, based on the context these pseudo-leaders are operating within, **there is neither a divine law standard of the right, nor even at least a reason-derived secular supported standard of the right (individual natural rights)**. When you reject God and also reason there can be no fully supported standard of the right. It is as simple as that. What there is instead are arbitrary and unsupported assertions of morality and truth. Moving further down the wrong road, we have also entered into an age of dueling opinions without an independent standard of the right to measure those opinions against. And so there is **a loss of civility in private and public discourse** as opinions cannot be judged or weighted against an independent moral and rational standard. In short, there is a breakdown of society and government and even inter-personal relations.

When both God + reason → are rejected → there can be no → independent supported standard of the right (of what is correct)

What there is instead → are primitive + politically motivated + arbitrary → assertions of morality + assertions of truth

Arbitrary unsupported assertions of morality and truth → are neither ethical, nor rational

If enough citizens were both moral and rational in our own right then these pseudo-leaders would realize they have no hope of getting votes and power when they have nothing of substance to offer. Said another way, there is no "There" there if there is no God who can give eternal life and also a purpose for life and who can also provide moral and rational standards of the right for human beings to live by. The secular human leader wannabe Emperors have no clothes. They cannot lead the human race in a positive direction to anywhere, hence this section.

Without God → there is no "**THERE**" there

Secular human "leaders" → are analogously-speaking → Emperors with no clothes

Some of the arbitrary assertions of morality are what amounts to virtue signaling, but what is virtuous if there is no standard of the right? Virtue signaling is basically a secular human attempt to feel like one is a good guy and to let others “know” you are a good guy. But **virtue signaling is not virtue** and this fact shows a widespread conflation of virtue and virtue signaling. A virtue is largely internal to a human being and virtue signaling is external and directed toward others.

Virtue → internal

Virtue signaling → external

Virtue signaling → does NOT → mean you are actually virtuous

Modern people → tend to conflate virtue with virtue signaling

Changing gears slightly, here is a newsflash for wannabe secular leaders:

If you do not know the right answer, you are not the leader.

If there is no standard of the right → there are no right answers

If there is no standard of the right → no one can be a real leader

What a sad state of modern affairs. Under **Secular Humanism influences** we have devolved morally and intellectually to where we have:

Morality by assertion

Truth by assertion

No purpose to human life

A futile and endless quest for meaning in a secular world where meaning is not possible

Death – eternal death

Follow you to where, exactly? And then what?

### **1.6 And then what?**

Without an independent standard of the right the modern era is one of both disagreement and disagreeableness. Your author is quite certain

that many reading this book so far do not agree with what has been written. If you disagreed so far it actually, in a sense, helps your author make his case. Because if you have disagreed with your author then what you have just unwittingly admitted is: 1) there is a standard of **the right** and 2) your author does not meet it. (And one of the big things your author is going for in this first chapter is the importance of there being a standard of the right and what happens when there isn't one.) In which case now is the perfect time for your author to re-ask his two big questions from earlier in this chapter:

1) What is your standard of the right?

2) How did you arrive at it?

If you disagree with another human you have actually de facto admitted the following:

1) There is a standard of the right and

2) The person you disagree with does not meet that particular standard.

Secular Humanism cannot lead the human race anywhere ... except to destruction. The attack upon reason, and also the teaching of the

theory of evolution, now taught as a science by school systems and universities worldwide, has left the human race open to the following moral, intellectual, and civil negative chain reaction:

No God, no divine law, no heteronomous system of ethics for anyone to use to understand what is the good.

No God, no purpose to human life.

No purpose to human life, an endless and futile quest to find meaning and belonging.

The questioning or abandonment of reason to solve man's problems causes man to not really use reason to learn and apply natural laws – at least not consistently pertaining to the social sciences.

The questioning or abandonment of reason to solve man's problems causes man to weaken or even abandon the protections due to people concerning their individual natural rights. The very governments that are supposedly charged with protecting individual natural rights now trample upon them, incorrectly believing that the government is some kind of a giant washing

machine that washes away the stains from violations of divine and natural laws.

The lack of civility in public and private discourse is due, at least in part, from dueling immoral and irrational assertions (opinions) – both of which are a poor substitute for an actual standard of what is ethical and rational, i.e., the right.

The embarrassing attempts to justify “the good,” or “the true” via either majority vote or subjective convention.

The inability for anyone who wants to be a “leader” to actually lead anyone anywhere because without there being a God, there is no **“THERE”** there to lead to. This means there are no Secular Humanist leaders in the sense that they can actually lead the human race to anywhere meaningful. But followers give their time, energy, resources, and emotions to such pseudo-leaders and in so doing waste their lives as those pseudo-leaders cannot deliver the purpose and meaning to life that human beings are really searching for. Without God we might as well “eat, drink, and be merry, for tomorrow we die.”

Instead of a divine law standard of the right, or a natural law / respect for individual natural rights secular standard of the right, we are left with merely unsupported assertions. And despite those unsupported assertions being passionately made by “well-intended people who care,” if those unsupported assertions do not mesh with the underlying reality of the actual context of the human situation, anyone following pseudo-leaders with their unsupported assertions is likely to pay a heavy price - a price they might not fully understand at the time they trusted in those who should not be trusted because they are not actually capable of leading. Wanting to make the world a better place and knowing how to make the world a better place are two different things. Your author will work through the implications of all this and explain the actual context of the human situation throughout the balance of this book. For now, caring and passion and good intentions are no substitute for the right answer, but the right answer has not been taught to the human race, either by governments, school systems, or religions. And so your author writes on in the hopes that he can shed some light on a tough and complex subject.

Not to pile on too much, there are a couple of additional tough questions your author wants to bring up before heading toward the end of this difficult first chapter:

- 1) Can any secular explanation of life's mysteries contain even a kernel of hope that you will ever see your already deceased loved ones ever again?
- 2) Can any secular leader heal you or give you eternal life?

Since the answer to both questions is obviously, "No," then why should anyone give their time, emotions, and energy to a secular leader or system that can ultimately get you nowhere? It is bad game theory, not that life is a game. It is bad game theory because even if you are "correct," that evolution as a science is true, you live your life, die, and that's it, the end, the literal end. And then what? Isn't it time to consider a strategy, like cooperating with God, which would actually give you a chance at something far superior? God's strange plan can.

As it currently stands, Secular Humanism and its logical extensions have set up the human race for a gigantic civil war of all against all and

this cannot end well. Instead of a moral and rational standard of the right, with at least the hope of an eternal and good future, depending on the religious system being discussed, we have the sad-to-report state of affairs detailed below, which will be commented on and explained further as your author unfolds his case for God's Strange Plan later in this book:

Morality by assertion

Truth by assertion

Elite "leadership" by assertion

Utopia by assertion (if you follow the elite)

Values by assertion

Virtues by assertion

Virtue signaling as virtue by assertion

"The greater good" by assertion

Political correctness by assertion

Cultural correctness by assertion

"I'm a good person" by assertion

Self-esteem by assertion

Sexuality by assertion

Property ownership by assertion

Personal force justified by assertion

Governmental force justified by assertion

History by assertion

Ideology by assertion

Production strategies by assertion

What prices should be by assertion

Economic growth strategies by assertion

Metaphysics by assertion (remember the positive energy blob from earlier) (this includes various foolish Philosophies of History, e.g., Communism, too)

Legally correct by majority vote assertion

Etc., etc., etc. (any other assertions not supported by either divine law or by facts and logic, i.e., by reason)

With all of these unsupported assertions and others not listed above, instead of a widely recognized and respected **standard of the right** we have what amounts to shifting, varying and competing ideas, hopes, wishes, and dreams, in other words, opinions ... and those opinions are in constant conflict with each other. And so now some people are advocating another age-old method to "establish the truth," or "to "establish what is right," which is **by force.** After all, "the winners write the history" is how the old saying goes. But force cannot establish truth, nor can it define morality, nor can it give purpose and meaning to life. In civil interactions ... force can only negate. In the modern era of advanced and lethal weaponry, force can, however, ruin the quality of life for many and perhaps even end life itself for all of us. And then what?

## **Chapter Two**

### **The Current Human Condition**

Chapter one is a beginning, laying out what has happened in recent history to get us to the point we are now. In short, that point is the place where instead of having a widely agreed upon standard of the right we have almost everything being put forth by unsupported assertions. This Chapter two is more consequences based, starting with the dangers of not having a widely agreed upon standard of the right and working through some additional consequences of being intellectually and morally rudderless.

#### **2.1 No agreed upon standard of the right is dangerous for mankind**

Without a widely agreed upon standard of the right, there is a virtual certainty of human conflict. It is all but assured, hence the danger to the human race. The conflicts can be both macro and micro. Some examples of potentially dangerous macro conflicts are conflicts between races, genders, cultures, nations, religions, or trading blocks. In the age of nuclear weapons a macro conflict between nations can destroy the

entire human race, as can a genetically modified virus, etc. Some examples of micro conflicts can be conflicts within families between mates, generational conflicts between parents and children, arguments at local schools or in local trade associations, clubs, unions, etc. Another micro conflict, less thought about, is within the mind and heart of an individual, where they would like to know the right course of action to make their own life better, but they find themselves in a state of moral or intellectual confusion. This is personally very hard on us.

How can any conflict be decided peacefully if there is no widely agreed upon standard of the right? It likely cannot. People argue over the right course of action and they are passionate about it. Micro conflicts can sap our energy, time, and happiness. They can essentially rob us of a lot of the joy in life. While micro conflicts can kill one or a few of us, e.g., a local shooting, macro conflicts, on the other hand, can kill all of us – the entire human race. In short, without a widely agreed upon standard of the right there is an increased chance of both micro and macro fighting and this fighting leads to internal conflicts, and worse, external conflicts. The psychological and emotional and physical toll can be really harmful to a lot of

people. Not having a widely agreed upon standard of the right is a dangerous place for the human race to find itself.

Without a widely agreed upon standard of the right → conflicts cannot be resolved peacefully

When a good friend of mine went into officer's candidate training for the military one of the first things he was asked was, "Do you have a problem with either killing people or destroying their property?" The reason he was asked those two questions was very clearly told to him. And that reason was, "Killing people and destroying property is what we do in the military. We kill the enemy and destroy their property so they do not have the ability to make war against us." In olden times, when the surviving losers of war were enslaved, your author is guessing some ancient general or tribal leader would have expanded the questioning to also include a third unpleasant item: "Do you have a problem killing men, enslaving them, or destroying property?" "No. Good, because that is what we do here."

Throughout history war has caused death, slavery, and the destruction of property. Human interactions resulting in friction and

argument break social harmony. And the breach of social harmony can, if not resolved, seriously breach the peace through ultimately leading to a war. When your author thought about war, as he was thinking about natural laws and natural rights, he realized that war is the extreme opposite of social harmony and peace. And my thinking helped me to realize why war is so very detrimental to human beings. Please take a look at the chart below to see what I realized when I thought about the opposite, or difference, between war and peace (social harmony). Read the left hand side "War" column all the way down first and then note each entry's opposite notation in the right hand side "Peace / Social Harmony" column.

War leads to:	Peace / Social Harmony leads to:
Death	Life
Slavery	Liberty
Property destruction	Property
	aka the Natural Rights

The importance of social harmony is revealed in the genius of the Creator God. First, the Creator God told us, throughout the Bible, to live in peace and social harmony, e.g., to love your neighbor as yourself. Even the way that the Creator God phrased it below speaks to social harmony. Notice it only took him five key words to get the job done in Leviticus 19:18.

"Thou shalt not avenge, nor bear any grudge against the children of thy people, but thou shalt **love thy neighbour as thyself**: I am the LORD." Leviticus 19:18, KJV

"Depart from evil and do good; **seek peace** and pursue it." Psalms 34:14, MKJV

"So then let us **pursue the things of peace**, and the things for building up one another." Romans 14:19, MKJV

God knew how important peace is to the quality of life and also how dangerous war is to human lives, liberty, and necessary-for-life property.

Without an external standard of the right human beings have no "true north" to align our thoughts, words, and actions to – true north being an analogous compass reading pointing to

said standard of the right. Instead, we have a lot of people with arbitrary assertions and opinions trying to play God, dictator, and social reformer and trying to force the changes they believe are desirable onto other people; this is true in both macro and micro cases. When they are resisted conflicts ensue. Conflicts break social harmony, breach the peace, and can lead to a devastating war. A widely accepted, moral and logical standard of the right would give mankind a true north to aspire to. And there could be a peaceful unity among mankind if there was such a standard of the right and people adjusted their own thoughts words, and actions to this external standard. This would be in contrast to attempting to change other human beings to conform to their own arbitrary assertions of what "the right" is.

No standard of the right leads to → conflicts

Conflicts mean → no peace

No peace ultimately means → war

War → the loss of life, liberty, and property

War → enmities and hatred multiply

Your author realizes there is a wide variety of and disparity in: human beliefs, constantly shifting values, religions, cultures, nations, geographical influences, etc. All that said, morality is morality, truth is truth, and standards are standards.

While the opposite of a negative may or may not establish truth, depending on other supporting factors, your author's *War and Peace / Social Harmony Table* from above point out how important peace and social harmony are from the simplest standpoint of avoiding the hurtful negatives of the loss of life, liberty, and property. Further, please let the reader remember a key part from your author's earlier section 1.3:

"Three things that are commonly important to all of us are our lives, our liberty, and our property. Would any of us want to be injured or killed? No. Would any of us want to be kidnapped or enslaved? No. Would any of us want to have our property damaged or stolen? No."

The simple recognition of individual natural rights and the respect for them between men would actually allow for **a secular standard of**

**the right**, as it were, to be used across the world. Any religion, or nation, or culture, or gender, or race, or individual, etc., that advocated for the disregarding of others' individual natural rights would mark themselves as, in effect, outlaws – the bad guys. Others observing this could choose to not interact with and to ostracize such bad actors on the world stage.

The recognition and respect for individual natural rights → could function as → a secular standard of the right

This secular standard of the right → could function between nations, between religions, between cultures, between genders, and between races → to limit otherwise potentially harmful behaviors and policies

This secular standard of the right → could also function within nations, religions, cultures, genders, and races → to limit otherwise potentially harmful behaviors and policies

This secular standard of the right → could also function between individuals → to limit otherwise harmful behaviors

A great problem in the modern era is that governments, religions, and various institutions seem to regard themselves as above such a secular standard of the right and so the leaders, thereof, actually engage in widespread institutional violations of individual natural rights. Taxes and regulations greater than what should be minimally necessary are examples of this. And so institutions themselves lead the human race toward the abyss of the lack of social harmony and toward either internal civil wars or actual external wars. After all, if “the important institutions” do not have to safeguard and respect individual natural rights, why should individuals in that society behave any differently? In point of fact, the institutional disregard and/or disdain for individual natural rights is actually even more dangerous than a sole bad actor in a local situation because the potential damage is far greater and because the “leadership” of any such institution(s) is actually leading the human race away from peace and toward conflict. This is not good leadership by any reasonable standard of the right.

As your author moves toward the end of this section there are a few additional random points to be made. First, any individual arguing for a position should be free to do so and others, of

course, should be free to disagree with the argument put forth. That being written, the disagreeing parties should still be bounded in their actions by maintaining respect for the other party's individual natural rights, even if they disagree with them. This would allow for a secular standard of the right, which is better than no standard of the right. Second, when some people use the word "unity" what they actually mean is something along the lines of, "We will all have unity when you agree with me." Actually, we will all have unity when we all agree with God and God's standard of the right, not when we agree with an arbitrary assertion masquerading as a standard of the right. What God was going for will be explained a bit later in this book. Third, some people foolishly believe that "peace" and "freedom" mean something along the lines of, "we will achieve peace when all you people out there use your freedom to agree with and to obey me." Obviously, this is neither freedom, nor peace. In actuality, to be explained throughout this book, peace will not occur until all people conform their thoughts words, and deeds to an external standard of the right, God's standard. It is ridiculous to assert that freedom means the freedom to obey a human dictator of some sort. It is truly sad that your author has to even address such immoral

and illogical conceptual formations as points two and three of this paragraph, but this is the world we currently live in – a dangerous one.

God foresaw what would happen if men did not regard him and his instructions and so the Bible warns against this, in advance. Without a Biblical or even a secular peaceful standard of the right you get every man making assertions about what is right and what to do instead of checking their thoughts, words, and deeds against an actual ethical standard.

"You shall not do according to all that we do here today, each doing whatever is right in his own eyes." Deuteronomy 12:8, MKJV

"The way of a fool is right in his own eyes, but he who listens to advice is wise." Proverbs 12:15, MKJV

## **2.2 Morality by assertion is not morality**

As previously pointed out, if there is no God then there is no divine law and every heteronomous system of ethics known to man is, in effect, discarded into the moral trashcan. Instead of having a relatively easy to

understand standard of the right, mankind is now morally blind in one eye.

Not fully trusting reason to investigate natural laws maims the attempt to uncover individual natural rights as a subset of those natural laws. No one wants to have their life, liberty, or property harmed, but in the various societies around the earth we behave collectively as if the government is a gigantic washing machine cleansing wholesale violations of individual natural rights. The various rationales put forth to justify the unjustifiable are usually some form of: "for the greater good," or "due process was followed," or "we voted on it," as if voting could establish a standard of the right. Natural rights are given token verbal political acknowledgement and then widely disregarded. The individuals sacrificed to the greater good, if they had an effective voice and the power to resist, would no doubt dispute this **greater good by assertion.** Their legitimate questions would be, "Greater good by what standard?" and "How did you arrive at this standard?" It is certainly not good for those whose lives were impacted by their unwilling and coerced sacrifice. The truth is God created natural laws discoverable by reason. An investigation into those natural laws would

reveal the individual natural rights of life, liberty, and property as a discoverable and valid subset of those laws. Not using or fully trusting reason, or attempting to evade reality by pretending the government is a gigantic washing machine that washes away ethical encroachments and logical inconsistencies will only lead to conflict, not peace, and peace is necessary for a good life. The human race has gotten to the place where we almost regard governments as godlike. Sadly, the widespread disregard of individual natural rights and not fully trusting reason to discover natural laws means that mankind no longer has available to it what would have amounted to a secular standard of the right – the respect for individual natural rights. And so mankind is now morally blind in the other eye, too.

Just alluded to above, many if not most of the political and religious leaders, instead of using divine law or the respect for individual natural rights to guide their policies and actions, largely disregard both and then do some version of the following: 1) Proclaim morality by assertion, or 2) proclaim what is the greater good by assertion – which is a subset or derivation of #1, or 3) they engage in some form of virtue signaling. None of the listed

items are moral, but they masquerade as morality to ethically and intellectually confused followers. Once again, virtue signaling is not virtue and it also is not morality. Virtue signaling is an external show of pretending to be good, while virtue is an internal character trait that has to be developed over time through discipline and self-denial and by making balanced ethical and logical choices.

Mankind has come to the place where it is attempting to substitute arbitrary opinions and virtue signaling for legitimate morality. Instead of engaging in real morality by choosing to run our decisions through both divine law and natural law/natural rights decision filters, we have adopted the cheap substitute of a pseudo-morality, morality by assertion. And morality by assertion, not according to a divine law and/or natural law/natural rights standard is dueling opinions of what “the good” is. Your author has written a previous book entitled, *Decision Filters*, explaining in detail the importance of trying to become one of the good guys by making sure we run our decisions through a set of ethical and intellectual decision filters so no more will be mentioned about decision filters right here.

The God of the Bible has an entirely different point of view regarding morality and it makes sense to hit a few high points in the remaining part of this section. Your author is writing this book as part of his *God And Man* series so the reader should be aware that your author is a Christian and believes in the Bible and in the God who is behind it all. There is good news coming to all of mankind, but *God's Strange Plan* takes us or allows for us to go on a long and tough journey first – more on that later in this book. For now, here are some bulleted points concerning God's view on morality, in shorthand form:

- \* God wants to give an eternal abundant life to each man and each woman (John 10:10).
- \* But sin entered into the human picture when Adam and Eve did not do what God said to do. Instead they ate from the tree of knowledge of good and evil (Genesis 3). The implications of them eating from the tree of knowledge of good and evil will be covered in more detail as we progress throughout this book.
- \* This leaves each man and each woman who has ever lived in the place where everyone has sinned (Romans 3:23).

- \* Unfortunately, the wages of sin is death (Romans 6:23).
- \* What is sin? 1 John 3:4 shows that sin is the transgression of the divine law (not meeting the divine law standard of the right):

“Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the [divine] law: for sin is the transgression of the law.” 1 John 3:4, KJV

Exodus 20 and Deuteronomy 5, where the ten commandments are detailed, and Matthew 22, where loving both God and our fellow man is highlighted, form a framework of divine law. But it should be noted that the entirety of the Bible defines right and wrong from a divine law point of view:

“Then one of them, a lawyer, asked, tempting Him and saying, Master, which is the great commandment in the Law? Jesus said to him, You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like it, You shall love your neighbor as yourself. On these

two commandments hang all the Law and the Prophets." Matthew 22:35-40, MKJV

\* For some people who think that the divine law has been done away, Jesus Christ himself disavowed that notion:

**"Do not think that I have come to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I have not come to destroy but to fulfill."**  
Matthew 5:17, MKJV

\* The good news is that the sacrifice of Jesus Christ can pay the death penalty for you so that you do not have to die for all eternity. Of course, that requires repenting of your sins and changing your life (Acts 2:38). It should be noted that the divine law standard of the right remains in place, but God the Father provided a sacrifice through Jesus Christ to pay the penalty for us to allow for the fact that we do not meet this very high divine law standard of the right.

\* The sacrifice of Christ can pay the penalty of your sins and you can achieve an eternal, abundant, and incorruptible life as a spirit being (1 Corinthians 15:40-44).

A key point of this short section is there is a standard of divine law right; we don't currently meet it; but a sacrificial provision has been made for us through the sacrifice of Jesus Christ in order to create a bridge from death to life for us his characters. In other words ... the divine law standard is the standard of morality for man. Ignoring this reality or being in possession of some self-esteem award one was gifted is not going to help anyone in this predicament of needing a Savior, but the perfect sacrifice of Christ will.

The Biblical divine law standard = the standard of morality for man

When each of us does not meet this standard → God the Father provided Jesus Christ as a Savior for man

Regarding morality: 1) if you believe there is a God, better to go with his plan which includes a divine law morality standard; 2) if you don't believe there is a God, but want to have as good and as long of a physical life as is possible, (but then understand you will die and then be dead for all eternity), then use individual natural rights as what amounts to a secular standard of the right. At any rate, morality by assertion is

not morality, the greater good by assertion is not the greater good, and virtue signaling is not virtue. Sorry, that's the way it is.

### **2.3 Truth by assertion is not truth and is also dangerous**

Truth by assertion is not truth and down deep inside people know it. Sad to have to write this, in the modern era some people are actually arguing about long established facts. Others disregard or dismiss news they believe is fake news, i.e., politically motivated or worse, propaganda masquerading as news. A lot could be written about "truth by assertion," but since this is going to be a rather long book your author is just choosing to call out and highlight only a sampling of some of the intellectual errors men are currently making and their effects. For a more detailed and systematic explanation of what happens when philosophy and thought get corrupted, please refer to your author's previously written:

*Intellectual Warfare: The Corruption Of Philosophy And Thought*

*Life Charts*

In these two books there are various discussions explaining how some serious and famous intellectual blunders, that shunted the human race onto the wrong track, can be overcome so that the human mind can be relied upon to establish reasonably reliable working knowledge with which to live our lives. Sometimes man might have to use what your author terms, "**working postulates**," as a stopgap measure. Later on, as science and thought improves, we can replace an imperfect working postulate with an updated and improved postulate. Until then, we at least have something to go with (call it moderate realism if you will). Your author cannot cover such a broad topic in this short section, but the above two books have more information should the reader be interested. The short answer to the historic intellectual dilemmas mankind has faced is for us to apply our minds to discover reality, as best we can, realizing that reality has a logical structure we are able to apprehend to some useful extent with our logic-enabled minds. We might not do so perfectly at a particular moment in time, but later on, as more and more people work together to attempt to learn more facts, discover better explanations for cause and effect, etc., we can adjust our thinking to a new and improved scientific level.

The natural sciences tend to do their own thing and their arrogance and condescension towards the social sciences leads the natural scientists to, in essence, be alone in their own little world. But an honest natural scientist must admit they cannot explain what was going on before the Big Bang, nor can they adequately explain complex life (which man is), nor can they explain how man has the ability to be self-aware and to think. In other words, the natural scientists cannot provide the important answers as to how we got here, what we actually are, or how we think, and those are some of the bigger questions most people would like to have the answers to.

It is good for the natural scientists to discover core theoretical science because from there applied scientists can discover technological, engineering, medical and other principles that help the human race be healthier and to produce more of the things we need to sustain life. It is also good for there to be communications and transportation advances because those breakthroughs lower costs and make life easier, too. But the natural scientists cannot ever provide a satisfactory answer as to how life got here, how man or any other

complex life could possibly exist, and how man has the ability to think. It is beyond what they can deliver, despite their looking down on the social scientists and the religionists.

Scientific breakthroughs are appreciated. Most people don't argue about them because if a scientific breakthrough can be applied in the real world and seems to work, then it is probably true. But all the science, technology, and engineering in the world are not going to reveal the purpose to human life and they are not going to bring Grandma back either. In short, we need science, but putting too much faith in science by itself is a mistake.

Natural scientists tend to argue with other natural scientists, as they are in the process of establishing facts, but after that, not so much. But what should mankind do with all these facts? That is the question and this is a **value judgment by a human being**. Value judgments are human choices, something the natural scientists are very uncomfortable with (human thought and choice). And there are big value judgments by governments that affect all of us. Obviously, it is an individual in charge of the government, or a compromise of the individuals in charge that make the value

judgment, but a value judgment by a human being is what it is. By what ethical standard are they making those judgments? By what intellectual standard are they making those judgments? These are very important questions. They are particularly important if the government leaders in question actually believe in "the science of evolution" and further do not fully trust reason to at least establish the secular standard of the right of respecting others' individual natural rights. If this is the case then is the governmental leader making the value judgment ethical by any reasonable standard at all? If so construed, by what ethical standard? By what standard, by whose values, are the choices that affect all of us being made?

If a governmental leader rejects God + does not fully trust reason or natural laws enough to at least acknowledge the secular standard of the right of respecting others' individual natural rights → is that government leader ethical at all?

Technology cannot provide meaning or purpose to life, but it can make life better. Unfortunately, if advanced weapon systems are built with it, it can also make life worse, or non-existent. Again, by whose value judgments and by what standards are technological advances to

be implemented? If value judgments are not run through ethical and intellectual decision filters first, then those value judgments affecting the human race can be very dangerous, e.g., nuclear weapons on hypersonic missiles, biological weaponry, etc. Human choices, including governmental leader's choices, are based on values. And the choices made all have consequences.

Values → choices → consequences

Ideally, decisions should be run through → ethical and intellectual and other decision filters

Your author has previously written two books explaining this in more detail and those two books are:

*Values, Choices & Consequences*

*Decision Filters*

Earlier in this book your author asked his two salient questions which bear repeating right here:

1. What is your standard of the right?

## 2. How did you arrive at it?

Anyone who wants to be a leader of human beings should be required to fully answer these two questions because doing so will reveal their hidden values and their thought processes. You are not a leader if you do not have a standard of the right that you can explain to others. How will anyone know whether or not it is wise to follow you if you are intellectually confused about what right is? What a purported leader thinks is right will, in essence, establish their ethical values and what a leader thinks ought to be done will reveal their intellectual secular values. Those ethical values and secular intellectual values will be reflected in the choices they make and those choices will have consequences for all of us.

Natural scientists have adopted the mantra that science should be value free. Sadly, they are wrong. Science should be bias free, not value free. The value that scientists should uphold over any other is life. Science should support human life - as abundant of a human life for all of us as is possible.

Science should be bias free, not value free

Science should uphold life as the primary value

As previously pointed out, **all thinking is logical or it is not thinking.** Wishing, hoping, dreaming, feeling, intuiting, sensing, daydreaming, etc., are important and valid mental activities, at times, for each of us – but they are not thinking. True thinking requires being logical or you will miss the truth. It requires accurately identifying entities, learning cause and effect, correctly associating and differentiating and integrating, precisely defining terms, and rigorous step-by-step reasoning, etc. Truth requires consistent thought, supported by facts and a logical chain of reasoning. An unsupported assertion is not truth. **And it is not thinking, either.** It is an opinion at best and dangerous for man, at worst.

When language gets corrupted thought itself gets corrupted, not just communication. When long-defined words are constantly being tinkered with and redefined something sinister is going on. The only reasonable explanation is that the human race's ability to think is being messed with in order to frustrate clear communication and thought. This is covered in

your author's previously referenced book  
*Intellectual Warfare: The Corruption Of Philosophy And Thought.*

Because mental activities that are not thinking are conflated and regarded as being thinking, reason/logic itself actually gets a bad rap and then gets abandoned or not fully trusted. This is very dangerous for mankind. Supported assertions are always welcome. This is because the terms in an argument are precisely defined and premises that are being reasoned from are, too, as are conclusions drawn. There is no problem with fully supported logical arguments and assertions, even with fully supported value judgments, or a theory offered up for constructive critical review by others. The problem occurs when **unsupported assertions** are offered up as truth. They are not. And so throughout this book your author attacks and ridicules unsupported assertions because accepting them as truth can lead to confusion, pain, suffering, and death for man.

One last point before your author closes this section is this: in the modern era so-called and actual "influencers" often times do not take the time to define their terms or to spell out their arguments. Instead, they put forward various

unsupported assertions. The results of this are that the Internet can end up functioning as, in essence, an amplifier for fools.

#### **2.4 Seeking belonging and safety in a tribe or collective is not really belonging and is certainly not safety**

Many people sense that something is seriously wrong, but they are confused about just what that is and what to do about it. The public school systems and most of the universities of the world teach evolution as a science. At home, however, most people are still exposed to some type of religious teachings, or at least some nominal religious beliefs. As was pointed out in Section 1.4, only about 1.2 billion people describe themselves as atheist/agnostic so presumably about 6.6 billion people (about 85% of the world's total population) still believe in some type of religious or metaphysical system, at least nominally. Extrapolating linearly solely to make a point, about 85% of the world's school-age population is then subject to being conflicted spiritually, mentally, and emotionally by being taught something formally at school their parents disagree with at home, or don't fully agree with.

The secular adherents to evolution as a science evidently have control of the public school systems and most universities. As was pointed out in chapter one of this book, they don't fully come to grips with the implications of what they are teaching. If there is no purpose to life and there is no divine-law-based heteronomous system of ethics people get dismayed and confused. Perhaps an example of this might prove useful. If a young person is taught evolution as a science, and religion is intellectually and philosophically ridiculed, it again sets off some negative unintended consequences that most likely neither the young person's parents or the society at large wishes for. One negative unintended consequence is what happens when the parents try to transfer their religious values to their children at home. The conflict is what both the parents and the children have to endure when the children question everything and refer to what they were taught at school "as proof." The young people don't really want to treat parents they love like they are ignorant, miseducated, or stupid, but they no longer trust the religion and values that their parents are trying to teach them and they do not fully believe either their parents, the values, or the religious beliefs and doctrines. The conflict that ensues can last a lifetime. The

second negative unintended consequence likely occurs when the children turn into young adults and they get together with their friends and talk about life and what they each hope and wish for. But just what is there to hope and wish for if there is no purpose to human life, as seriously believing in evolution implies? And so the adults in society get upset when the young adults mill about and take longer to mature than in prior societies (before evolution was taught as a science). How can an adult or government leader, etc., answer when a young adult questions the wisdom of getting a job, working most of their life, and paying taxes? Why should they not just go to the beach and party, or work only 20 hours a week and just have less physical stuff, etc.?

What many young people do, and also adults in our society, too, who have not resolved this inner conflict, is **to seek some type of belonging and safety** in a tribe or collective of some kind. It is only natural to not want to be alone when life is tough enough for everyone already. It is very understandable to seek for belonging and safety in a tribe or collective but it will not provide safety to anyone. **If there is no purpose to human life then none of us is ever going to be safe** - everyone in the

collective or tribe is at best going to live 70-90 years or so and then die. A collective and tribe is a group of men and woman who are, for the most part, all basically the same in the tribal member or collective member sense. Of course there are tribal and collective leaders who are more than happy to ask and/or demand certain actions from their followers/fellow members.

But a tribal or collective leader is still human. They cannot give you eternal life. They cannot heal you. They cannot bring Grandma back.

What they can do is to take advantage of your spiritual, mental, emotional, and physical vulnerability to live better than you while you give your time and energy to them. Further, what they can do is to set up an official set of tribal beliefs or collective beliefs that a member in good standing must adhere to, or at least not publicly criticize. In other words, the tribal or collective leader can establish and espouse a set of values or judgments that are asserted to be what would be "good" for the members. Apologies in advance, your author must again ask a few of his pointed questions:

- 1) Just what is the tribal or collective leader's "standard of the right?"

- 2) How did they arrive at the standard?
- 3) Is the tribal or collective “standard of the right” in inherent conflict with other tribes or collectives and their “standard of the right?”
- 4) Will dueling tribes / collectives with conflicting “standards of the right” fight with each other?
- 5) Will such a fight harm the members of the conflicting tribes / collectives?

Tribal thinking, in particular, but also collectives basically assert the following:

Our tribe = good → by assertion

Other tribes = bad → by assertion

A big problem with tribal or collective “ethics” is their standard of the right is not compared to both divine law and natural rights and modified if it is in conflict with either. The reasons for this are that secular leaders feel free to disregard God as unscientific; further many of them want to be able violate other men’s individual natural rights if there is a tribal or collective conflict with them, ergo they

rationalize it is in their best interest to do so. They do not think long-term, which is that there will be a victim counterattack where they and their members are harmed in some way or killed.

Tribal / collective leaders → disregard divine law

Tribal / collective leaders → disregard the individual natural rights of their fellow man

Tribal / collective leaders → due to disregarding both divine law + the secular standard of the right → are unethical

Another big problem with tribal or collective “ethics” is the tribal or collective leaders will not allow for the set of official doctrines to be examined one by one. A tribal or collective member in good standing must accept the entire set of official doctrines as an undivided set, even if they disagree with some of the individual doctrines. The tribal or collective official set of doctrines starts to resemble or actually becomes an unassailable **ideology**. The clearly bad parts of that ideology become almost impossible for anyone to critically examine or reform, so they remain in place. Because this we now have what amounts to **ideology by assertion**.

Perhaps the biggest problem of all is when ideologies are in conflict. If the adherents to the ideologies in question have a large enough number of dedicated supporters we can witness what amounts to a clash of civilizations. For example, the Muslim world, if not led by moderate leaders can conflict with the Christian world, again, if not led by moderate leaders. Another easy example to understand is if Communism's adherents come into conflict with the West. All of this is very dangerous for mankind. And this is why joining an unprincipled tribe or collective **is dangerous**, and perhaps could even be life-threatening to those ironically joining said tribe or collective for safety. The tribal or collective member might achieve their goal of not being alone, or temporarily feeling a sense of belonging, but at what potential cost, their life? They are not safe. Your author previously wrote in more detail about ideologies in his *Life Charts* book, specifically section 4.6.5. - "Cultural transmission of negative (anti-life) values."

An easy to understand local example of the attempt to find belonging and safety might prove useful. If a young man in a poorer section of a city feels obliged to join a gang that

supports itself by selling drugs, but then that gang gets into a turf war with another competing gang, many people might be injured and die as the gangs fight it out for control, respect, profits, or because one gang leader hates the other gang leader in question. Our young man might have a sense of belonging and secular purpose for a very short period of time before he goes to jail for a much longer period of time, or is killed. He is certainly not safe because he joined a gang (a local tribe). And his new sense of "belonging" might unfortunately be to the other incarcerated cellblock members in the prison he is sent to. This is not the safety or sense of belonging he was going for when he joined the local gang.

Examples of tribes and/or collectives are as follows: nations, religions, political parties, races, genders, language speakers, neighborhoods, management, labor unions / workers, stockholders, social movements, trading blocks, professional associations, gangs, actual ethnic physical tribes, etc. Of course, an examination of your author's incomplete exemplar listing, above, reveals that some tribes and collectives one is simply born into. One cannot help that. But what one can help is to not overly associate with, e.g., a race or a

gender to the exclusion of principle and rationality. Doing so corrupts one's own morality and mind.

Tribes and collectives many times act as if they will be able to successfully rebel against reason and reality. They cannot, they will fail. Your author wrote in more detail about the problems with tribes, in particular, in his *Life Charts* book, section 4.5.5 – “Tribalism.”

Collective and tribal leaders tend to act as if the tribe or collective itself is some super and ongoing entity somehow magically worth more than the sum of its individual members. The obvious truth, however, is that this is impossible. The simple proof is if each individual member left the tribe or collective then the tribe and/or the collective would obviously cease to exist. People think and do strange things to try and find belonging, meaning, and importance in life. Perhaps there used to be an 8-track tape manufacturer’s trade group that no longer exists as an easy example of a collective not being worth more than its individual members.

Another problem with trying to find belonging, safety, and meaning in joining a

collective or tribe is each of us is likely belonging to many assorted groupings of this kind, some via accident of birth. And wannabe or actual leaders of each grouping would like to be able to "demand" loyalty and/or your time, energy, and money. To which grouping should a man be the most loyal? What if a man was nominally but not really practicing a particular religion, a member of a political party, a member of a trade union, and also obviously a member of a race, gender, local neighborhood, etc. How should he allocate his time, money, and energy after having been taught in school that his life is without purpose or long-term substantial meaning? And what if the political party he was a member of advocated for a law that conflicted with his religion's official orthodoxy? It all gets very complicated and confusing to people. The way to overcome this problem is this: to think in terms of individuals and in terms of principles, but people are not taught to do this. Blindly following or overly indentifying with a tribe or collective, even one that one was born into can become a problem if that tribe or collective views non-members as enemies or potential enemies and if that tribe or collective is not ethical, which it probably is not.

Your author's previously delineated secular standard of the right, the respect for others' individual natural rights would go a long way to resolving these conflicts – at least at the secular human level. But even religions these days do not really acknowledge and respect others' individual natural rights and political parties, trade unions, warring tribes, etc., certainly do not. And a tribal and/or collective "standard of the right" by assertion is no substitute for either divine law or your author's suggested secular standard of the right. In short, the people of the world, having been miseducated and/or being uneducated, look for safety and belonging by going tribal or by joining and supporting various collectives or by overly associating with and emphasizing a race, gender, etc. But tribalism is not safe. Neither are dueling collectives. It keeps coming back to" 1) what is the correct standard of the right? and 2) how did you arrive at it? If there is no widely held standard of the right and then you add in or inject tribal or collective passions then you have a situation where ideological classes threaten life on earth, or national stability, or regional stability, or local stability. Passion plus a lack of principle plus a lack of reason equals nothing good. It certainly does not equal safety.

Passion + lack of principle + irrationality = a human disaster waiting to unfold

There is no substantive life meaning to be attained merely by joining and/or belonging to or overly associating with a collective or a tribe.

Passionately supporting an unprincipled, irrational tribal or collective leader is not safe.

There is no "**truth by membership.**"

There is no "**ethics by membership.**"

There is no "**purpose or meaning to life**" simply **via membership** in "the correct" tribe or collective.

There is no truth to "**we are the good guys**" solely via assertion.

To bring this section of the book to a close, the lack of objective ethics, the obvious fallacy of truth by assertion, and the lack of a substantive purpose to human life lead to a lot of internal conflict, anxiety, and fear. And so people tend to get tribal or to give their time, money, and energy to a collective(s) in an attempt to find a sense of belonging and

meaning and also to feel safer in a cruel world. But tribes are notorious for not trusting outsiders and for adhering to long-standing systems of beliefs and practices even if modern knowledge should logically supplant some of them, and they generally do not respect other tribe's member's individual natural rights.

In short, tribes and collectives cannot give people what they desire, a purposeful life with substantive meaning and they cannot give them safety in an unsafe world.

Because the world is unsafe some collectives, in particular, try and gain a critical mass of followers. The reasoning likely runs along the lines of, "If our collective can get big enough, we can take over, or impose our will on others." But who is going to govern the collective and what if other collectives fight against you? As previously pointed out, peace is necessary for man because war is catastrophic to life, liberty, and property. Follow you where exactly, oh great tribal or collective leader? To ideological or actual warfare or perennial warfare where valuable individuals are used and then discarded? And then what?

## **2.5 Neo-Platonic “elites” attempt to play God**

There have always been some men who want to lead others and since most people are more comfortable following than leading they can usually find some followers. If they achieve voluntary followers from providing moral leadership, or intellectual leadership, or productive leadership this might be fine for those involved. The problem occurs when the leadership is not really leadership, but what your author calls pseudo-leadership. Pseudo-leadership is leading some segment of the human race into some combination of immorality, intellectual error, or predations upon other men and their property. It seems there is never a shortage of men who want to fashion themselves as a great leader. This section of the book is mainly addressing pseudo-leadership by a self-proclaimed “elite.” In other words your author has a real problem (and so does the human race) with what amounts to **elite by assertion**, particularly if that leadership attempts to play God in order to rule over other men and their lives, liberties, and property. These pseudo-leaders, who operate under the delusion and presumption they are **the elite**, definitely need examination.

Plato advocated for some type of philosopher-king and elites governing the masses and perhaps that might be about 10% of the population. Those elites are protected from the masses and other nations by a military apparatus of some kind comprising perhaps about 20% of the population. The military is, of course, taken care of by the elites for protecting them and providing whatever order the elites fashion for that society – in other words the military keeps the 70% of the population who are actually productive in check and compliant with the dictates of the elite. This model has been largely rejected by the USA but seems to be making a worldwide comeback. The reason it was rejected is because it was recognized that Biblically and logically all men possess the individual natural rights of life, liberty, and property. In the USA men would rule themselves while respecting others' individual natural rights.

Many places on earth, even pre-Plato, tended to do something similar to what he suggested, e.g., evidently ancient China did so and European feudalism could in a manner of fashion be thusly categorized. Down to the present day there are neo-Platonists in different

nations who, in essence, advocate something similar. The inherent and obvious problem is the wholesale and widespread violations of men's lives, liberties, and property by whatever percentage of people occupy the top two tiers. While most men don't want to be leaders, they also do not want to be enslaved. Your author realizes historians might argue with your author's estimated example-based percentages, but the concepts apply:

There is an elite protected by a military and governmental apparatus ruling over the productive citizens of the nation.

In a previous book, *Life Charts*, your author took many pages of argument to demonstrate that these pseudo-leader wannabe elites are wrong on many levels. The particular section of that book is section 4.6.1, entitled "Justifications For 'Elite' Status." Because that section was over 22 pages, with detailed explanations, your author chooses to simply call out a few of the obvious problems to "elite by assertion."

There cannot be a biological reason for an "elite" classification, as no anthropologist or biologist has ever examined man and scientifically demonstrated there should be two

separate classifications: Homo sapiens sapiens Elite and Homo sapiens sapiens Regular.

Before making the next point it is important to understand that the reason man can think is because the Creator God gave man a special spirit the Bible refers to as "the spirit in man." The scriptural references for this are found in Isaiah 42:5, Job 32:8 and 38:36, Zechariah 12:1, and 1 Corinthians 2:11.

**"But a spirit [is] in man giving them perception, even the breath of the Almighty."**  
Job 32:8 MKJV

**"For who among men knows the things of a man except the spirit of man within him? ..."**  
I Corinthians 2:11 MKJV

All men can think. It is true that some men can think more clearly than others, but all men can think. This is why man is known as the rational animal. He can reason and be reasoned with. All men need to learn, which they do one concept at a time, in order to acquire a body of knowledge with which to combine with whatever understanding and wisdom they can achieve in order to think and to make the best possible decisions for themselves. Since God, the two

Jehovahs (God the Father and the Word, now Jesus Christ, John 1:1-17) gave the same spirit in man to all men there is no Biblical reason for an intellectual “elite” classification for some men and a “regular” classification for the rest. If there are some men who are smarter at some things than others they can share their knowledge by writing books, teaching, or speaking, etc. But they do not become entitled via self-proclamation to make the decisions for the entire human race. Since all men are capable of thought, the peaceful way to lead is to make a morally and intellectually correct, i.e., a good and persuasive argument instead of just declaring yourself ruler. But the wannabe leaders are too impatient for this kind of approach and they are not interested in having their arguments held up to an independent moral or intellectual standard of the right. They advocate for power that will then be used against their noncompliant fellow men. However, since some men who do not want to be enslaved will resist their efforts, there will be conflict with the resulting loss of life, liberty, and property – a disaster for mankind.

Some other highlights from section 4.6.1 of your author’s previous *Life Charts* book are as follows:

All men have physiological limitations and health challenges and all men die = True (in other words, all men are mere mortals, including "the elite")

No baby is born with inherited knowledge = True

The two Jehovahs give the spirit in man, enabling thought, to all men = True

Men are not farm animals, where breeding over generations is important, because the most important part of a man is not merely biological; it is a man's capacity for rational thought = True

Thought itself cannot be bred because of the spirit component of a man's mind and because all human beings learn one concept at a time, over time = True

Morals are choice-based, not bred = True

Superior breeding, via genetics, cannot be used to justify an "elite" status = True

Since all men can think, a sound education would benefit all men = True

Genius cannot be bred or predicted = True

There is no biological, intellectual, or breeding over time basis for “elite” status. Further, each person who deludes themselves into believing they are one of the elite and should therefore have the self-proclaimed right to play God, dies. They are, in fact, not God. They cannot resurrect themselves back to life. They are regular men who die just like the rest of us. But the danger comes when they start playing like they are God and then start experimenting on their fellow human beings through institutions they form and directives and demands they make. They pronounce what amounts to **truth by assertion** that others are just supposed to accept. In effect they exempt themselves from the human race and from the laws that govern the universe (so they “think”), and try and bamboozle as many gullible followers as possible into joining them. They try and impose their will on others, using whatever manner they believe or hope they can get away with. This includes naming, shaming, threats of violence, propaganda, lies, fraud, financial blackmail, and when it comes down to it, if necessary in their eyes, even actual wars and murder. Their goals by assertion are used to “justify” immoral and irrational means. In short,

**they become self-righteous, immoral, and irrational actors** who are destructive toward the individual natural rights of those they hope to impose their will on. They want to be the dominators, not the dominated.

The elite want power to engage in what history will someday judge as human experimentation. The power they wish to wield does not respect individual natural rights, nor does it regard individual men and women made in the image and likeness of God as valuable – but rather as disposable means to their arbitrarily asserted ends. If what they try does not work, at the cost of the pain, suffering, and death of many of their fellow men, they will simply view it as a learning experience and then revise a new and improved secular plan and then engage in another round of further human experimentation. They believe and assert the following: we are the elite; we are the good guys; we know what the greatest good for the greatest number is; we have the best plans; etc. It is literally:

Elite by assertion

Good guys by assertion

We know the greatest good for the greatest number by assertion

The best plan by assertion (and unquestionable)

Utopia by assertion (the elite's utopia where the rest of the human race are basically their servants)

Many of the elite believe in some form of **Secular Humanism** and wish this for the human race. *Secular Humanism* and *humanism* are defined below, per the dictionary on your author's Macbook, emphasis your author's:

**"Secular humanism** - with regard in particular to the belief that humanity is capable of morality and self-fulfillment without belief in God"

**"Humanism** – an outlook or system of thought attaching prime importance to human rather than divine or supernatural matters. Humanist beliefs stress the potential value and goodness of human beings, emphasize common human needs, and seek solely rational ways of solving human problems." [Humanism without God = Secular Humanism, in essence].

Obviously your author has more than a few major problems with Secular Humanism and humanism, too. The first major problem being

that if there is no God, then there is no purpose to human life and human efforts, though well-intended, cannot change the reality that we live 70-90 years or so and then die. That's it. The end. Grandma is not coming back again and neither are we. The second major problem is the aforementioned, no God, no divine law, no heteronomous system of ethics for mankind to use to help establish what is ethical and what is not. Further, if there is no substantive purpose to human life then how can any man, no matter how moral and capable, actually be a leader, in substance? Where is **THERE**, there to lead anyone to? We might as well eat, drink, and be merry because tomorrow we die. People like to put their heads in the sand and ignore some things that are too painful to come to grips with. And this opens the door to pseudo-leaders, the elite by assertion, attempting to play God. But according to their own secular humanist beliefs there should be no God role to play.

Once again, your author must ask his two pointed questions: 1) If there is no heteronomous system of ethics available to secular man and if 2) the elites want to rationalize the violation of their fellow men's individual natural rights of life, liberty, and property, then how are the elites good? By

what standard are they good? If you are elite then you should have a well-defined system of ethics that can be universally applicable to all men, because all men are men. And if you are elite, you should be intelligent enough and articulate enough to explain it all very well. Your author has not heard any such explanation or honesty from said group of elite wannabes. Instead we get **elite by assertion** and **we are the good guys by assertion** – not according to any articulated, coherent, rational, and objective standard. Without said standard, there are no good guys, only moral assertions masquerading as ethics.

The very fact that the elite want governmental and international power so they can impose their will on their “inferior” fellow men, knowing full well this is a violation of other men’s individual natural rights, tells your author that these men are neither ethical, nor intelligent in their peace-disturbing, God-playing plans for mankind. It is all unsupported assertions masquerading as ethics and intelligence, i.e., as truth. The big problem for the human race is if these self-asserting elites get granted said power. If that happens, then modern technology and warfare implements will be in the hands of these self-deluded ethical

infants, who are not in touch with reality in any moral or rational way. Elites playing God is not going to end well (Revelation 13). Thinking they are the solution, instead, they are a big part of the problem. All of the rest of their fellow men are in point of fact less safe.

Now would be a good time for your author to ask any potential followers of these self-proclaimed, God-playing elites a few questions.

Do the atheists, agnostics, and other secular humanist elites **have the ability to give you eternal life?** Can they bring Grandma back to life again?

Or are they simply going to get you all riled up and extract your mental and emotional energy from you, as well as a lot of your income and property in an attempt to change the world to their **utopia by assertion**. Can the elites really change human nature ... for the better? They can certainly change it for the worse as they pit races, genders, nations, political parties, income classes, etc., against each other in order to gain political power. If there is no purpose to human life and the human race is just a happy accident, just where can any group of elites actually lead

you to that actually matters long-term to you and your loved ones?

The assertions of these elites may make them feel important and better than their fellow men, but they are just that, unsupported assertions masquerading as ethics (the good) and intelligence (the truth) and they will lead the human race nowhere. Attempting to implement their delusional plans will cause wars, the loss of individual liberties, and dismay for the human race. And human nature will not be changed, except by the manner in which it was always meant to be changed, by the two real Gods in the universe, God the Father (the most high) and Jesus the Christ. This will be explained further as we progress throughout this book.

## **2.6 Personal existentialism and various coping behaviors**

Because people are taught evolution as a science and also because most parents in the modern era are living largely secular lives, so do their children. Even if religious parents try to counter what their children are taught at public schools and at university, young adults have a mind of their own. They observe a plethora of

worldwide problems, consider their formal education, and then wonder if it is true that God does not exist. He must not. After all, the world seems such a mess. In virtually all societies the young adults hang out with each other and both commiserate about the world they are inheriting and they also ponder their own future. If there is no God, how can they find substantive meaning for their own life?

Within the context of the above paragraph, if there really isn't a substantive over-arching purpose to human life, or it is not believed that observing traditional societal values will provide enough meaning, then some really bad things start happening. Some of those bad things are being open to secular philosophies such as **relativism, nihilism, Secular Humanism, and personal existentialism**. In addition to being influenced by these non-constructive, outright destructive, or out of context philosophies, many people, including mature adults, also unfortunately engage in or have fallen victim to various addiction(s). Many others spend far too much time in various activities that amount to escapism, or time-killing, boredom-filling activities.

The below quoted definitions are all per your author's dictionary on his Macbook [any emphasis mine throughout]. Secular Humanism was discussed in the previous section of this book:

**Relativism:** "the doctrine that knowledge, truth, and morality exist in relation to culture, society, or historical context, and are not absolute." [This amounts to: there is no absolute morality, no absolute truth, and so we have non-reliable knowledge and non-objective ethical standards. Relativism leads to subjective convention, which was previously discussed in section 1.4 of this book.]

**Nihilism:** "the rejection of all religious and moral principles, often in the belief that life is meaningless." [Nihilism is destructive of ethics, truth, society, and individuals. It is a caustic philosophy.]

**Existentialism:** "a philosophical theory or approach that emphasizes the existence of the individual person as a free and responsible agent determining their own development through acts of the will." "... existentialism tends to be atheistic (although there is a strand of Christian existentialism deriving from the

work of the philosopher Kierkegaard), to disparage scientific knowledge, and to deny the existence of objective values, stressing instead the reality and significance of human freedom and experience." [Existentialism is basically do your own thing to find your own meaning which will matter to you, but maybe not so much to anyone else. But when you deny objective values and disparage scientific knowledge any personal experience that a practitioner realizes will almost certainly be out of context and devoid of cause-and-effect learning that are both so valuable to prudential human beings.]

Existentialism is an out-of-context attempt to find personal meaning in a life without purpose.

In the modern era social media publicizes and magnifies these shared personal experiences that are at least somewhat important to the person who experienced them, but the publicity and magnification of same does not translate them into something they most decidedly are not. They are not substantive meaning in a purposeful life, which evolution, relativism, nihilism, and existentialism would themselves deny. If there is no God, there is no over-arching purpose to human life and even famous social media "influencers," with massive

followings, cannot change this, nor can these influencers escape from the above dilemma either. They, too, are also members of the human race. Some big-time influencers with huge followings are empty vessels themselves, with no clue as to what life is all about.

Personal existentialism, even when magnified by social media, is an attempt by all involved to find purpose and meaning. It is a failed attempt. Instead of purpose and meaning, we have what amounts to:

Meaningful experience by assertion

Self-esteem by assertion

Self-importance by assertion (but do you believe it yourself?)

Feelings, wishes, and unsupported assertions are put forth as "**my truth**," as if truth could somehow be personal. But when billions of people are doing this and the feelings and the wishes conflict, ... and then what?

People want to be considered as one of the good guys, but what is "good" if there are no objective ethical principles, truth is relative, and

even science cannot be trusted? Instead of an objective ethical standard like God's divine law to adhere to, or instead of at least using individual natural rights as a secular standard of correct behavior, substitute "virtues" are utilized so people can tell themselves they are "one of the good guys." Some of those substituted "virtues" are caring, sharing, passion, and trying. All of these virtues are good, but by themselves they will not solve the problems of the human race. (The virtues are a very large topic, which your author addressed in his previous, *Life Charts* book.) Unfortunately, these virtues, admittedly all good when properly deployed, are basically used in the modern era as **virtue signaling**, especially including via social media. The potential and actual problem with this is that virtue signaling and virtue itself are often conflated in the minds and hearts of the practitioners of relativism and personal existentialism. Your author doubts serious nihilists care one way or the other about virtue at all; they might even be against the virtues as "antiquarian ethics." Caring, sharing, passion, and efforts (and over-confidence) are mistaken for actual solutions to problems. Because most people in the last 100+ years have been, in effect, miseducated, there is a widespread ignorance of history, law, true economics, logic,

cause and effect, the purpose of government, what government can and cannot do, etc.

Things can become dangerous, from the point of view of the human race, if miseducated people who do not believe in objective ethical standards, or truth, or who do not fully trust science or reason, come up with a caring idea, are passionate about it, want to share their idea with the world, suggesting the imposition of force if necessary, and they make more than a token effort to implement their idea, which conforms neither to a divine law nor a secular natural rights ethic. One central reason why it can be described as a bad idea is because it is not ethical. Another central reason it can be described as a bad idea is if it violates the laws of peaceful human action, which almost all ideas about re-ordering society do in the modern era.

Peaceful human action is beyond the scope or topic of this section of the book. Your author wrote a lot about this in chapters seven and particularly chapter eight of his previous *Life Charts* book should the reader be so interested.

In short, really bad things can happen if caring and passion and a bad idea are all wrapped up together, with force behind said bad idea. It can lead to and become basically human experimentation, personal existentialism wit

**large**, which is a very bad human action recipe for the human race.

Further, the adherents to relativism, nihilism, existentialism, and Secular Humanism tend to want to regard government as a secular god, who can magically do things that individuals or people acting in small groups cannot. Ergo, there is a lot of political fighting about who gets to control the power of government. Mind you, many of these individuals do not believe in objective ethics or truth and are willing to disregard their fellow man's individual natural rights. Further, in their personal life they are all about having experiences and then sharing them, or about having shared experiences. Try and succeed or try and fail, but learn something and then share it is sort of a personal and social media mantra. This is not a problem for individuals bearing the responsibility for their own lives, but it is a very big problem when those same individuals group together into political party tribes and then want to either use the power of government against other political tribes or to engage in widespread unprincipled and often irrational human experimentation. So the governmental and philosophical leaders, the elite in power and influence at the time, echo back what the

political tribe members want to hear. They basically engage in some form of the below:

Truth by asserted narrative

Policy correctness by assertion

Deficits don't matter by assertion

Our tribe cares more, shares more, is more passionate, and undertakes greater efforts than other tribes – all by assertion

Etc.

All of the above has gotten to the place where political doctrines and policies and secular philosophies are functioning as **a secular humanist “religion.”** Secular Humanism is the attempt to find purpose and meaning in life without a God to provide said over-arching purpose. While it may make its practitioners feel good, or important, or smarter than others, its practice results in a failed attempt to “perfect” humanity and a failed attempt to find purpose and meaning in a life apart from God. The secular humanists have been at it since at least the Renaissance (really long before) and all of their efforts and human institutions have not

perfected a single human being, nor made the world into a utopia, nor provided true meaning and purpose to life.

The secular humanists → have not perfected even one human being

The secular humanists → have not transformed the world into a utopia

The secular humanists → have not provided true meaning and purpose to human life

Moving on, down deep inside most people know there is an absolute standard of morality, there is truth, and we can know some important things as a virtual certainty. Evading reality is perhaps easier and more comfortable than facing up to the serious problem of actually becoming moral oneself, working to learn what is true, and then applying what we learn in order to be peacefully productive in various ways in our own life. Of course, any evasion of reality wastes time and lives.

Because Secular Humanism and the other isms cannot deliver meaning and purpose to life many people, unfortunately, have fallen victim to, or chose to engage in various harmful

addictive or excessive or time-wasting behaviors. These behaviors do not really need authorial comment except to say that no addictive or excessive or time-wasting behaviors can provide substantive meaning and purpose to any human being. They are likely engaged in due to an internal psychological reaction to the confusion and anxiety of life, or engaged in to attempt to kill the pain of life, or to escape from boredom, etc. Your author is quite certain the below is not a complete list and fully realizes that some of the below activities are not bad in and of themselves if they are not engaged in to excess:

Illicit drug abuse  
Marijuana abuse (and cannabis products)  
Alcohol abuse  
Prescription drug abuse  
Nicotine abuse (and vaping)  
Gambling and lotteries  
Shopping – out of control for things not needed  
Pornography or too much sexual emphasis  
Video games to excess  
Television to excess  
Social media or the Internet to excess  
Cell phones to excess  
Food - overeating  
Overworking

Plastic surgeries to excess  
Tattoos and body piercings  
Anything else to escapist excess

In the USA, about 82 million people are using a psychotropic drug on an ongoing basis; this is about 1/3 of the total adults. About 50% of these legal drug users are being treated for anxiety and about 50% are being treated for depression. To receive such drugs you must be under the ongoing care of a psychiatric professional. Your author is making a societal comment, here, not attacking an individual who needed help and was honest and brave enough to go get it. When you add in the millions of others who self-medicate by drinking too much alcohol the percentage of USA adults needing some type of "drug" to cope with life becomes staggeringly high. Just considering the ongoing use of psychotropic drugs, if 1/3 of USA adults need to take a drug, every day, to help them cope with life what does that say about USA culture and society? People are anxious and depressed about life is the answer. When the secular humanists, in de facto charge of most public education and the universities worldwide, teach evolution as a science, the fruits are anxious and depressed people searching for meaning and purpose. Unfortunately for the

human race, as this section has attempted to point out, all too many people are searching for meaning and purpose in all the wrong places.

## **2.7 Ongoing life conflicts and then last-minute desperate made-up metaphysics**

The first chapters of this book are admittedly not the easiest for someone looking for answers to read. Without an honest examination of what has gone wrong and how it has affected all of us, however, it is going to be very difficult to finally come to the place where we can understand what is actually happening and why. Unfortunately, it is going to take a few more such hard-to-read chapters to explain it before we get to the decidedly more positive and hopeful chapters nine and ten, chapter ten finally explaining God's Strange Plan and how God sticks the landing.

To recap this chapter and to ridicule desperate last-minute, made-up metaphysics is the purpose of this section of the book

The only realistic chance human beings have of a widely agreed upon standard of the right is for human beings to accept either God's divine law instructions or to settle, as it were, for the

secular standard of the right of respecting others' individual natural rights. Of course, the best case is for man to do both. If God is removed from men's minds by teaching evolution as a science, and that is the context within which human pseudo-leaders and human beings themselves make their decisions, then there is no divine law and there is also no overarching purpose to human life. Further, any quest, whether epic or small-scale, to attempt to find substantive meaning within this scenario will prove futile. Further still, if the human pseudo-leaders, the self-proclaimed "elite" by assertion, can gain some governmental power and attract enough followers to get behind them, they will likely rationalize the evil of violating other men's individual natural rights, particularly those of non-tribe members. The pseudo-leaders also rationalize the violation of their own follower's individual natural rights – if they can get away with it. This means that the secular standard of the right that could have been available to act as an ethical guideline is of little use in the modern era. As previously written, a universal respect toward others' individual natural rights could have easily performed a behavioral-moderating ethical function between religions, nations, tribes, political parties, genders, and also disputes

within nations all the way down to local man versus man disputes.

Your author has never heard or read of any other thinker making the following point and it seems relevant to bring it up here. Before doing so, for the record your author is not a professional psychologist or psychiatrist. That said, perhaps the reason men who really deep down inside do not believe in God and who also then realize there is no over-arching purpose to human life behave so irresponsibly toward others is they feel this life is all there is and "I only have 70 years or so to accomplish my secular goals." Ergo, said human then rationalizes the evil of taking a shortcut to achieve their goals because they are time-pressured to achieve them. So they rationalize using other men's lives, liberty, and stealing their property, too, in order to take a shortcut to achieving their own goals. Then, later in life, they give some of the stolen money away to a good cause so they can feel good about themselves and at least pretend they were a good person – which other men who really knew them well would clearly dispute. Government leaders basically do the same thing with large. They pretend to be good and to do well, but it is with other people's energy, time, and property.

With men knowing their lives, liberty, and property are not safe they tend to do one of several things. **First**, they look for safety in numbers. They join or embrace a tribe. This does not provide safety as was pointed out in section 2.4 above. For ease of reading your author will detail down subsequent points into separate paragraphs bellow.

**Second**, as pointed out in section 2.5 above, men also look for a leader who will protect them, but said leaders have historically proven they are more than willing to sacrifice their followers in wars and through levying heavy taxes on them and through only decreeing liberty for themselves and their elite leadership team at the expense of the loss of liberty to their followers and everyone else. Taxes and regulations and wars steal individual natural rights from other men. But the pseudo-leaders cannot actually lead men to a purposeful life because their “leadership” amounts to immoral, irrational, and parasitical secular pseudo-leadership. As your author will continue to point out: “Follow you to where, exactly?” If there is no over-arching purpose to human life there is no “THERE” there to go toward. All of these human pseudo-leaders are going to die

themselves. And all of these human leaders are hoping that their fellow men will not wake up and ask them a few pointed questions:

If there is no divine law and you are not going to respect the secular ethical standard of the respect for other men's individual natural rights, by what standard is what you are proposing **the good?**

How did you arrive at said standard?

Do you meet said standard yourself, or did you exempt yourself and your close followers from compliance with the standard you wish to impose on others?

Who gives you the right to proclaim what the greater good by assertion is? Good to whom?

Why do you think you have the right to violate other men's individual natural rights?

Is it possible to morally or rationally assert a right to violate a right?

Political leaders will usually not answer the above questions. If they do attempt an answer they will usually just point to majority vote, but

majority vote has at least two major problems associated with attempting to use it: 1) it is not stable and 2) only a fool would believe you could establish either ethics or truth by majority vote. Men need a widely supported ethic with which to guide their choices and this ethic must be known before the choices are to be made or it is not a useful ethic. And the ethical standard must apply to all men, leaders and regular men, i.e., it must be **a universal standard** – which majority vote can never be. Further, men need stability in order for it to make sense for them to produce, save, and then to invest in the future. Trying to determine what is the greater good by majority vote is inherently unstable as the next election could reverse everything. Witness the Presidential elections in the United States of America in 2016 and 2020 as examples one and two, respectively. This was already written about in section 1.4 above.

Majority vote **is not stable**, nor could it ever be made to be and remain stable.

Majority vote **could never be a universal standard applicable to all men** because there are men voting against “it,” whatever “it” is. The losers will never accept the “**standard by**

**majority vote,”** in essence, what the current standard by political assertion is.

Only a fool could ever believe either ethics or truth could be established by majority vote, apart from objective ethical principles and logic.

**Third**, people adopt negative philosophies like relativism or worse, nihilism. Nihilism is counterproductive in every possible way and does not really need further comment except to condemn it as immoral, irrational, and destructive in every way something could be destructive. It is personally life gutting to those humans foolish enough to believe in it and life destroying to the victims of enacted policies enabled by its rationalization of destruction. Relativism guts standards, rejects truth, and makes it very unlikely that any human beings adopting it will ever become moral, reasonable (according to reason and balanced), or productive, which is to say those human beings adopting it will also very likely live secular failed lives.

**Fourth**, many human beings, conflicted by what they were taught by their parents and what the scientists through the public schools and universities have taught them, will decide to

kill the pain of life by engaging in one or more of the very harmful addictive or escapist behaviors detailed in section 2.6, above. In short, they will kill the pain of life as best they can while the hours of their lives click off spent on boredom killing, unfruitful, escapist activities.

As it currently stands, Secular Humanism and its “logical” extensions have set the human race up for a gigantic civil war of all against all and this cannot end well. As pointed out in section 1.6, instead of objective ethical standards and truth, we have unsupported assertions masquerading as ethics and truth. All of the above factors your author detailed in the first two chapters of this book compound on each other, unfortunately. No standard of the right is multiplied by no purpose to human life is multiplied by human beings not being able to find meaning in life. After all that many human beings then want: 1) to take a shortcut to achieve their own goals – a **micro** remaking of their own personal world, or 2) they want to try to remake the **macro** world into their version of utopia, or at least into a world that would be a less painful place to live in. The taking of these shortcuts, either personally or collectively in a micro or macro world-changing attempt, end up not only not recognizing the valuable individual

lives and natural rights of other men, but also violating them. So the micro and macro worlds we live in descend into perpetual conflict. Instead of doing the hard and possible work to become a better individual, people instead want to perform the hard, actually impossible, task of changing their fellow men's value, choices, and nature. In short, too many people want to change everyone else instead of doing the hard ethical, rational, and productive work to make their own life better. This cannot end well, secularly speaking, for the human race. Men who are so horribly flawed they cannot fix their own lives want to somehow be able to put on **a magical leader cap** and be transformed into the secular savior of the human race. They are only fooling themselves and further leading other men into unprincipled, irrational, never-ending conflicts. If there are no objective ethical truths or logically derived natural and social scientific facts with which to have our decisions live up to and to be in compliance with, then there is no peaceful conflict dispute resolution mechanism for the human race to use. And so we fight. And then we fight on. Political power can become so irrational, corrupting, and perverse the wielders of it actually sometimes believe they can change the past by rewriting a historical narrative in the

present. Power is evidently that self-delusional. Without standards those with political power can come to act like we can somehow have "**history by assertion.**" "Might makes right" and "the winners write the history" enable this ethical and logical error.

Back for a brief moment to personal existentialism and its "contribution" to unending conflicts ... feelings, wishes, and unsupported assertions are put forth as "my truth." But when billions of people are doing this and the feelings and the wishes conflict, then what?

Secular Humanism has poisoned the human race. Without a standard of the right there is no peaceful way to resolve conflict when we disagree. Conflicts sap us of time, energy, and money and they take a lot of the joy out of what could have been a much better life.

Secular Humanism also hurts the human race in another way. This is besides giving us assertions and conflicts instead of truth and peace – which is bad enough. Most of the people that live secular lives live them without substantive meaning and purpose. They were, in essence, taught to be this way from their public school and university training. But at the

end of their life most people would like some type of closure and they would like spiritual, mental, and emotional peace. They would like to believe that their life had meaning and purpose and that it stood for something lasting. But what is lasting about living 70 – 90 years and then dying? Nothing. Under a secular humanist banner (pattern of thought) even thinking of your children and grandchildren does not really close this gap or fill the hole in the human heart. They, too, will live their physical lives and then die. And then what? Further, people want to believe they were one of the good guys – but good by what standard if there are no cogent standards? Most importantly at the end, they want to believe they will somehow live on again, in some way, in some form. Due to their secular humanist programming they might feel almost guilty of believing this is even possible, but they want something to believe in at the end anyway. And so they make up their own, last-minute metaphysics. Enter the positive energy blob, or some other conjured up spiritual “Hail Mary.” That such a desperate, contrived, and last minute attempt would, in essence, void everything they have lived and believed in up to now (nothing spiritual) does not matter. Desperation knows no boundaries. They know the positive energy blob is not true,

but it is something. Analogously speaking, they are like a small child in bed, telling themselves things to make it comfortable enough to get to sleep. And so after experiencing a life of evasions, assertions and conflicts the secular humanist dies.

## **Chapter Three**

### **The Tragedy Of Being**

The first two chapters have basically explained what happens when secular humanist thinking is taught worldwide and how this has landed the human race in the tough current condition it is in. This chapter hits some high (or low) points from human history to help us understand what “**Being**” is and how it became tragic. This Chapter Three is then additive to what was written in the first two chapters. Authorial apologies in advance, it is also not an easy chapter to read.

#### **3.1 The “Tragedy of Being” defined**

Whenever the word “**Being**” is denoted with a capital “B” it is probably a reference to a term used to attempt to denote the totality of human

experience as opposed to only what “objective” reality by itself is perceived to be. Defining Being is a bit tricky and the problem with doing so is that human action, our choices and their consequences, are a causative factor in helping to shape objective reality. Being with a capital “B” came from a 20<sup>th</sup> Century German philosopher named Martin Heidegger who was largely an existentialist. Your author likes the term, but will further put his own spin on it in this section of the book. Any resemblance to Heidegger’s philosophy is coincidental, other than the use of the term Being. It should be obvious from what was written earlier in this book (section 2.6), that your author is not a big fan of existential philosophy, no matter how elaborately contrived. A capitalized Being in this section and throughout the rest of this book should be taken by the reader and viewed in light of your author’s explanation in this section. Further, this is not intended to be a chapter or a section on his philosophy, per se, and your author does not need Heidegger’s philosophy to make his points.

Several things the natural scientists are very uncomfortable with are human consciousness, individuality, and choice. Human beings think, make choices based on values they hold true,

and then take the actions they deem appropriate in order to alter their world (and sometimes the entire world) for the better. Sometimes those choices are based on good values and have good consequences and sometimes those choices are based on bad valuations and have bad consequences. And so the individuals involved in taking actions personally experience both psychic gains and losses, depending on whether they succeed (psychic gain) or fail (psychic loss) in their efforts. Further, human beings with otherwise good values can misperceive their estimate of the future and take a psychic loss. Further still, human beings can also have executional errors that cause them psychic and other losses. Human beings sometimes err and they personally pay for their error. If that were all there were to it, this section would be easier to write and for Heidegger and others like him to have figured a lot more out. But that is not all there is to it. Our choices and their consequences will many times affect others, too.

The funniest thing your author probably ever heard in a sermon was a minister only somewhat facetiously defining what he thought "hell" was. And his definition stays with your author until this day. He said, "Hell ... is other

people.” The audience laughed. The problem, however, is that we are the “other people” to most other people. Hence, the problem if too many other people are making bad choices based on bad values and then there are consequences that then slop over and flow into our own lives. This is how hell can come to be referred to, at least somewhat accurately, as other people. **Human choice is a causative and cumulative factor** in shaping both our own personal world and the world wit large.

Values → choices → consequences

Good values → good choices → good consequences

Bad values → bad choices → bad consequences

Human choice → a causative factor → affecting both: 1) our own lives + 2) other people’s lives, too

**Being** = objective physical reality (perceived by moderate realism) + the totality of the effects of choices from beings who have free will to make those choices (but please keep reading)

Being is not just objective reality plus the cumulative effects from choices made by beings with free will. It also includes our subjective feelings and experiences from what has happened in our own world and in the lives of our loved ones, and it also includes our feelings and reactions to the events happening in the world at large. Your author previously mentioned psychic profits and losses from the actions we undertake to make our world better. These are emotional and logical reactions, both (heart and mind). Being also includes all of the good emotions and feelings such as happiness, love, joy, hope, courage, faith, etc., etc., but also unfortunately, all of the possible bad emotions and feelings, too, such as fear, dread of loss, anxiety, depression, hatred, frustration, confusion, jealousy, anger, etc., etc.

Because each of us knows our own choices only have so much power to change the entire world, we tend to concentrate our aim and efforts in making the kind of choices that can improve our own lives. It is wisdom to fix what is in your control to fix. (This, in fact, is what your author would advise. Even if the world at large seems big and terrible, try and make your own world as good as possible while respecting the individual natural rights of all others.)

People with any kind of intelligence will sometimes observe the religious, political, economic, and otherwise described world at large and come to a very harsh realization.

**They and their loved ones are vulnerable.** This is because there are so many other people making choices, those choices are not under our control, and all of those choices will have consequences, many of them bad consequences. At times, this tough, but true, realization creates **existential angst** for all of us and existential angst is a part of Being, too. It is only natural to love our own life, our family, and our friends and so we care very much about this world we live in. We hope we can pass on a better life than we ever had to our children and grandchildren. We hope for a better future. We want to find both a purpose and meaning for our life. We want to share both the good times and bad times with our loved ones, and we really want to experience more good times than bad.

Because human hopes and dreams and wishes tend to be quite similar, e.g., to love and be loved through family and friends, to be healthy, to have meaningful productive work, to make enough to pay the bills, to enjoy good food, etc., and also because we have similar reactions to negative events like sadness, anger,

depression, etc., there is **a commonality of human experiences** that we tend to understand. We can understand each other much better because of this commonality of our shared experiences. This is all part of experiencing and understanding Being, too. Nothing in this paragraph precludes unique human experiences, e.g., marrying a particular person, being the first human to achieve something, etc. Your author is just pointing out that we can understand each other due to the experiences we share in common.

In addition to experiencing existential angst at the condition of our world, even if the world itself is doing quite well during our lifetimes, we still have a big problem, which is we only live for so long ... and then we die. A part of Being then is to confront our own mortality and also to confront the mortality of our loved ones. A related part of Being is to sometimes experience bad health, including physical pain and suffering, and sometimes having to watch our loved ones suffer from bad health, too. Ergo, we all have to confront one thing for certain, that every human being lacks enough of, which is **time**. We can and will experience some existential angst from a shortage of time in both our day-to-day lives and also a shortage of total

days in our mortal lives. All of this, too, is part of Being. Along these lines a part of Being is the quest to understand life itself, where it came from, and what its purpose is. We individually and jointly search for answers to questions that torment our inner man or woman. We search for ultimate meaning. This is a big part of Being, too. How can a self-aware human being with a good mind not wonder about it all, to wonder about what is happening and why?

Other aspects of Being are having to interact with nature, having to interact with others, desiring to interact with others who may not wish to interact with you, i.e., **trying not to be all alone**, attempting to solve life's problems, trying to determine how to live in this world, **dealing with constant change** – usually caused by the subjective valuations of other people we cannot control, adapting to new technologies, etc.

With all of the never-ending human interactions we initiate and also those that are imposed on us, there is the understandable irony of constantly being engaged with so many others, but being alone in our own thoughts and feelings. We have hopes, wishes, dreams, thoughts, and feelings that others might or

might not understand or not care about if they did, etc. Or, we might not have anyone we trust enough to share them with at this time. This, too, is all a part of Being.

When making economic choices we quickly realize that we have a shortage of means to achieve our ends (we have a shortage of one or more resources and must therefore economize). This can create angst and force us to make hard choices. It is even more complicated than that because before we can achieve some of our goals, our goals can change because our circumstances have changed ... further, because the world itself is constantly changing, too. We have limited knowledge, limited wisdom, shifting personal valuations and a shortage of resources and time. Choosing is stressful sometimes and we can make a bad choice and experience both a financial loss and also a psychic one, too. So **making choices can be an ordeal** and all of this creates existential angst and is a part of Being. As a coping mechanism concerning this, some people at times will make the choice of having other people choose for them. Like it or not, that, too, was their own choice.

Other contributions to Being are as alluded to above, human choices and actions: 1) both

conforming and not conforming to a reasonable and respectable ethical standard, 2) conforming and not conforming to rational standards, 3) made based upon feelings, 4) made by those people practicing virtues and 5) made by those engaging in escapist vices instead of developing virtues.

The individuals in charge of governments and institutions also make choices for those entities. Their choices in guiding such entities turn out to be rather big choices affecting us all. What if the men and women making those choices reject God, divine law, and also do not respect or recognize individual natural rights? Big problems can ensue leading all the way up to wars and violence, both internal and external. This is unfortunately a major part of Being in the modern era, an era where institutions are not bound by their original purposes and have taken on a life of their own.

By now you can see why a man like Heidegger worked for years trying to find and then define one term that could encompass all of it. He finally settled on Being and your author likes the term, but will use it in light of this section and his previous writings in this book,

not in reference to Heidegger's philosophy.  
Being is complicated, very complicated.

Most men have not been exposed to philosophy very much or at all and have likely not thought in depth about Being, as outlined in this section. But when men do think about the world at large they are often afraid. Painting with a very broad brush, they are likely afraid of at least some portion of the following: 1) they are afraid of their fellow men having bad values and making bad choices that can hurt them 2) they are afraid that God does not exist and mankind is down here on its own and not doing all too well at the moment 3) they are afraid God does exist, but he must be some kind of cruel or uncaring or very weak God to allow all of the pain and suffering and mental and emotional angst involved in human life.

Being has unfortunately become tragic with all too much human pain, suffering, angst, and then death. How did Being become **The Tragedy of Being?** The short answer is as follows:

Bad values → bad choices → bad consequences

Being → becomes → tragic

The long answer is this book. Fortunately, though God is blamed for The Tragedy of Being, he is **not guilty** as charged. God is, however, guilty of giving men and also angels free will. Unfortunately, free will has been used by all too many to make bad choices, temporarily poisoning our reality and making our lives much harder than they otherwise would have had to be. God being guilty of free will does not make him guilty of The Tragedy of Being, but this will be explained in more detail later in this book.

The balance of this chapter builds on this first section in a deeper explanation of some of the major contributing factors to Being becoming tragic.

To end this section with some hope ... there is a "Yes and a No" to God being guilty of The Tragedy of Being. As mentioned above, a "No" to how it is commonly thought about and expressed, by those who even think of God in this "post-modern" era. And a surprising "Yes" where the two Jehovahs (God) actually intervene to solve The Tragedy of Being and "stick the landing" in order to save the day. In other words the two Jehovahs are in the process of actually using The Tragedy of Being to

accomplish several important things. Those things will be explained in the last chapter of this book.

### **3.2 Some examples of human pilot error**

Bad actions by people making The Tragedy of Being worse are too numerous for your author to detail in total and so this section will only cover several important ones. Most of them can be categorized as occurring due to negative human emotions and errors in thinking. These will be examples of contributing factors leading to ... bad values, bad choices, and then bad consequences, i.e., negative "contributions" to Being. You, dear reader, can no doubt list many more.

**Envy leads to coveting and is poison,** which is why the God of the Bible included a prohibition against coveting in his top ten. The New Testament prohibits wrong attitudes leading to sinful actions, e.g., the Sermon on the Mount (Matthew 5:21-30). This would clearly include prohibiting envy.

"You shall not covet [envy-based] your neighbor's house. You shall not covet your neighbor's wife, nor his manservant, nor his

maidservant, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor anything that is your neighbor's."  
Exodus 20:17, MKJV

Notice that prohibiting coveting also affirms private property and also sacred relationships like marriage. Many people, instead of looking at what they do already have to work and achieve with, focus their spiritual, mental, and emotional energy and their time on trying to figure out how to get what other people have. And so they engage in activities that disturb the peace, break social harmony, and cause injustice toward the victims of their actions. To be fair, God's prohibition against coveting is directed against something you do not own and therefore are not entitled to. There is no prohibition against coveting good grades in school, working to earn a promotion, or anything else that is positive and potentially available to you. The problem comes when something is not potentially available to us and we act like it should be, e.g., another man's wife. Envy and coveting are poison if they are not directed toward something positive that is lawfully available to us. One last thought on coveting is that if you covet another man's car, are willing to acknowledge his ownership of it, and contractually pay him an agreed upon price

for the car, it is fine to “covet” his car, but then you must buy it from him paying him the agreed upon price. Then you can lawfully have the car. But some things are permanently unavailable to us. That is just the way life is. Will we accept the boundary line or not? If not, Being takes a hit and goes south.

Some things are permanently unavailable to us and out of our reach → will we accept the boundary line, or not?

Another example of where human pilot error in inter-personal relationships can lead to big problems is if someone is willing **to inflict win-lose deals on other people**, just because they have the actual power to do so. Your author is not speaking of voluntary marketplace exchanges where both parties believe they will benefit from the transaction and so they agree on a deal. Your author is speaking, e.g., of a tribal leader being vicious and threatening in a negotiation where the tribal leader actually believes if the other tribe gets anything at all, it is too much. In other words, if the tribal leader leaves even a crumb from the table for the other tribe, he feels he “took a loss.” Some people in the business world are this way, not just local tribal leaders. And many politicians around the

world are this way. Even some religious leaders are this way. If people start “negotiating” or acting out under such an obviously unjust mindset, Being takes many hits and goes further south. Perhaps this kind of a mindset is a holdover when most of the human race survived as hunter-gatherers and territorial squabbles were a part of life. For example, two tribes cannot hunt and gather in the same territory without ending up fighting. But we are not hunter-gatherers any more, at least for the most part, and your author’s main point here is a win-lose hunter-gatherer mindset does not easily allow for the mutual adjustment and compromises that are an ongoing necessity for peaceful human interaction.

An economic doctrine that has come to be known as **comparative advantage** is unfortunately not widely understood, even though it is de facto practiced around the world. Your author has a chapter entitled, “A Place For Everyone – Comparative Advantage” in his previous book entitled, *Economic Fallacies Versus Rational Thought*. It makes sense to quote much of that short chapter right here.

“An economist named David Ricardo, in a book published in 1817, is credited with

discovering and explaining the economic doctrine known as "**comparative advantage**." Comparative advantage turns out to be a very important concept for economics and for human life itself. Before we can understand comparative advantage, though, it would be helpful to explain **absolute advantage**. Economically speaking, someone has an absolute advantage over another if they are better, in absolute terms, at producing a particular item. For example, if a doctor can clean his own office in 2 hours, but it takes a janitor 3 hours to perform the same task, the doctor has an absolute advantage in cleaning his office as compared to the janitor. He can do the same task in less time.

Absolute advantage and comparative advantage are different concepts and must be thought of as such. A person has a comparative advantage at producing a product or service if they can produce that product or service at a lower cost. Ergo, having a comparative advantage is NOT the same as being the best at producing a product or performing a task. In other words being the best at producing a product is having an absolute advantage. Being the lower cost producer of that product means having a comparative advantage.

How do you define “lower cost,” though? Lower cost means what it costs someone to produce something, which is the value of what is given up by producing it, i.e., **the opportunity cost**. Someone who is really good, in absolute advantage terms, e.g., our doctor friend, might only have a comparative advantage in one thing, or a few things at most. The reason for this is that our doctor friend has a very high opportunity cost associated with not practicing medicine. His time is valued very highly by the other marketplace participants WHEN he is practicing medicine. When he is not practicing medicine, his time is not valued anywhere nearly so high. It is true that our doctor friend could clean his own office faster than a janitor, but that does not mean it is a good use of his time to clean his own office. In point of fact it turns out that it is not a good use of his time. This is because of the economic doctrine of comparative advantage. It would cost our doctor friend a lot if he were to clean his own office, because when he is cleaning his own office he is not practicing medicine.

It might be helpful to put some numbers to our example to help make the case clear. If the marketplace values our doctor’s time at \$200

per hour and a janitor's time at \$10 per hour we almost don't need to do any math to understand that it is not a good idea for the doctor to clean his own office. If instead of taking two hours to clean his own office the doctor worked those same two hours practicing medicine he could earn \$400 from practicing medicine (2 hours @ \$200 per hour = \$400). He could then hire the janitor for \$30 (3 hours @ \$10 per hour = \$30) to clean his office. The doctor would be \$370 better off by practicing medicine (\$400 extra earned practicing medicine less the \$30 it would cost the doctor to pay the janitor to clean his office). The janitor would have a job. The doctor probably likes practicing medicine more than routine office cleaning. And the marketplace participants would have two additional hours of professional medical care available, which they value more than losing three hours of janitor time. **Everyone would win.** In this case, the janitor has a comparative advantage over the doctor in office cleaning. This is true even though the doctor has an absolute advantage in office cleaning over the janitor.

The lesson here is: in order to understand different people's comparative advantages, you do NOT compare their absolute advantages; you

compare their opportunity costs associated with performing a task or producing a product.

Ricardo used the example of Britain and Portugal exchanging wine and cloth. The concept of comparative advantage holds true no matter what products are compared and no matter where those products come from, e.g., from different nations or from within a nation. ...

Per Rothbard [an American Austrian-school economist], an important economic postulate is that there is a diversity of both human and natural resources over the earth. To your author, it is an axiom. At any rate, no one can argue with the fact that there is a diversity of both human and natural resources over the earth. And this is to mankind's overall benefit because each person has a comparative advantage at producing something with which to trade with others. Those who see only "the seen" think in terms of absolute advantage. The "unseen" is the comparative advantage discovered by comparing the opportunity costs of producing something. It is really clear when using the doctor and the janitor in an example. It is not quite so clear when the opportunity costs, per producer, of products or services are closer, but a free marketplace sorts it all out

over time. Over time, the lower cost producers in terms of opportunity costs, aka those with a comparative advantage of producing something, end up producing it – to the overall good of all.

The economic concept of comparative advantage, helping to show who should produce what product or service, is a very important one. Your author believes there is an important extension of the concept of comparative advantage that is important for the self-esteem of every man. And that extension comes from knowing the two Jehovahs [God] made their purpose for mankind plain all the way back in Genesis 1:

“And God said, Let Us make man in Our image, after our likeness. And let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the heavens, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over all the creepers creeping on the earth. And God created man in His image; in the image of God He created him. He created them male and female.”  
Genesis 1:26-27, MKJV

The two Jehovahs made man to look like them, but also want for man to become like them in terms of character, in terms of obtaining and

consistently using the moral and intellectual virtues. Each human being is valuable and unique and can contribute something to others. The concept of comparative advantage from economics, extended a bit more broadly to human life itself, shows there is a place for every man. Every man can produce something of value and bring that something to the marketplace in order to trade with others. The results of so doing make the overall productive pie larger than it otherwise would have been. Every man can have the self-esteem and dignity of knowing that he is a productive and contributing man. Metaphorically speaking, that productive contributing man can show up at the dinner table of mankind with his head held high. He helped make the overall pie bigger. And this is true even if others have an absolute advantage over him in everything. It does not matter, because he has a comparative advantage at producing something. And when he learns what that something is and produces it he helps make the pie bigger to the benefit of all men. **He is valuable, too.** And your author believes the two Jehovahs knew all this and designed for it all a long time ago. Praise is to them for this dignity granted to all men. There is a place for everyone and this is not a trivial

observation. It is an important observation concerning human dignity.”

In section 7.8, coming later in this book, your author will use the idea of comparative advantage to help explain who did not understand this important concept and how it really hurt everyone in the universe. For now, perhaps the reader can now understand your author’s opening line from the Introduction of this book, which was “Each of us would like to have a place setting with our name on it at ‘the dinner table of life.’” And every man who cooperates with God the Father and Jesus Christ will one day have it.

**Short-term thinking** can lead to many human problems. First, it can lead to human beings not taking seriously the necessity of performing the work to obtain the moral, intellectual, social, and other skills they need to properly develop and live as human beings. Second, short-term thinking can lead to a lack of capital with which to produce in a society and then production is severely curtailed or non-existent compared to what it could have been with sufficient saved and invested capital. Short-term thinking in terms of either a lack of human development and also in terms of

reduced production can lead those human beings engaging in such short-term thinking to then envy and covet what others are and/or what they have, including their higher standard of living. However, no human has to develop the bad habit of short-term thinking. They can decide to grow and develop personally and also to save up some capital and then invest it in producing more. Then they, too, will be better human beings and also have a higher quality of life. Remembering the previous point of comparative advantage, they will also become good and productive men and have a place setting at "the dinner table of life."

**Hedonism** of various forms can be an attempt to escape from or to kill the pain experienced from The Tragedy of Being. Hedonism is basically self-indulgent, self-gratifying, pleasure seeking, i.e., eat, drink, and be merry for tomorrow we die. Apologies for the authorial bluntness of what comes next: in the form of its worst attitude and actions it can also be construed as sort of giving God and Being itself the middle finger. However, just as the natural law always buries its undertakers, God and The Tragedy of Being are still here and hedonism will not make either of them go away.

### **3.3 Despots and predators**

A major contributor to world problems, hurting the lives of billions of people has been despotic government of one form or another. Historical examples are unfortunately plenteous, e.g., Genghis and the Khans, Attila and the Huns, Germany under Hitler, and the U.S.S.R. under Stalin. In section 3.8, later in this chapter, your author will discuss why the worst get on top. For now, let's review a few definitions:

"**Despotism** ... is a form of government in which a single entity rules with absolute power. Normally, that entity is an individual, **the despot**; but (as in an autocracy) societies which limit respect and power to specific groups have also been called despotic.

Colloquially, the word despot applies pejoratively to those who use their power and authority to oppress their populace, subjects, or subordinates. More specifically, the term often applies to a head of state or government. In this sense, it is similar to the pejorative connotations that are associated with the terms **tyrant** and **dictator**." Quoted from Wikipedia's entry for "Despotism" [emphasis mine, footnotes omitted]

**Oriental despotism:** "A particularly oppressive form of despotic government, thought historically to be characteristic of Asian politics, especially those of the Ottoman and Chinese Empires; ... any regime operating through this form of government." Quoted from the online Oxford University Press, [www.lexico.com](http://www.lexico.com)

Whether coming to power through force or fraud or via docility on the part of the population, despotism in many parts of world makes life harsh. Any immoral, corrupt, or harsh king or emperor is obviously included in the above, which covers thousands of years of human history all over the earth. Also included in the above is any tribal leader who behaves like a warlord. It is interesting that God warned the ancient Israelites (1 Samuel 8) of all the abusive and horrible things a king would end up doing to them, but they rejected God's rule and chose a king anyway, to their future harm. So have most of the peoples who have ever walked the earth.

All the above does not need much comment or condemnation from your author because these things are widely known. The main point here is that living under a despot, or being

threatened by a despot, e.g., the people living in a neighboring country or region, makes Being tragic and life dangerous. Unfortunately, in the modern era, we now have nuclear weapons and very accurate long-range missiles so now a despot can threaten not just his regional neighbors, but also even people who are living on the other side of the earth.

Predators also poison Being. Predators hunt their fellow man and behave as if they are animals in the wild engaged in some kind of survival of the fittest. An animal in the wild (if metaphorically capable of thought) would feel no remorse over hunting down its prey. Similarly, these human predators (who are capable of moral thought, but don't engage in it) treat their fellow men like they are merely animals to be hunted down and preyed upon (exploited or taken advantage of). It is very sad indeed.

The below definition of "predator" is from the Dictionary on your author's Macbook [emphasis mine]:

"**predator** |'predədər| noun

1 an animal that naturally **preys on others**:  
wolves are major predators of rodents.

2 a person or group that ruthlessly exploits others: a website frequented by sexual predators."

Some examples of predation upon human beings are as follows:

Local gangs like drug gangs and various other "mafias" offering "protection" and other illicit services in an area.

Aggressive tribes, such as those led by warlords, who attack their neighbors.

Political parties and lobbyists who game the legal system in favor of "special interests," disregarding principles and the taxpaying citizens (once again, if there is no widely accepted "standard of the right" and it is erroneously thought that the individual natural rights of others can be violated if the violations are first run through the government washing machine, what would a thoughtful one expect?).

Corrupt religious leaders and religions that abuse their members psychologically, financially, and through putting the religion ahead of individuals and families and who operate

through a military-type control structure (Christ prohibited this in Matthew 20:25-28 to no evident avail).

Governments not respecting the individual natural rights of their citizens, or of the citizens of other nations their actions threaten.

Gambling casinos and operations including state lotteries (their business model is preying on human weaknesses).

Pseudo-entrepreneurs who offer prostitution, drugs, gambling, and other illicit services and products are, in actuality, predators on other human beings. They, too, are preying on human weaknesses. It is their business model. They also corrupt the law enforcement and justice systems in which they operate.

Central banks, with their ability to create money substitutes and force their acceptance through legal tender laws. They contract with their government clients to obtain a pledge on that government's citizen's life, liberty, and property, including their citizen's progeny. It, in effect, means that a man does not even own himself or his property or his family and his time is wasted complying with having to earn a lot more money

in order to pay corrupt taxation and to comply with useless, politically-contrived regulations.

Pseudo-entrepreneurs of the military industrial complex and their employee cohorts whose main business it is to obtain and fulfill government contracts, including providing despotic governments with armaments and other hardware and software for spying on and abusing and/or controlling their citizenry, including waging war on peaceful and non-peaceful others.

All of the above are predators, enemies of God and man. And all of the above make Being more tragic than it would otherwise have to be. Basically, the men engaged in such behaviors are what your author calls, "**primitives.**" They do not yet understand that it is in their interest to be principled because when they put their personal special interests over ethical principles they break the peace and cause harm to their fellow man, including themselves. What should happen is this:

Principles → bound → "interests" → to only what is → moral + reasonable + productive

What unfortunately happens is this:

"Interests" > principles → in despotic and predatory actions → Being becomes more tragic

### **3.4 Israel's failure hurt everyone**

God wanted all twelve tribes of Israel (not just the single tribe of Judah) to be his congregation, his body of witnesses to the other peoples of the earth. To that end God located Israel in the middle of Asia, Africa, and Europe. They were in the center of the world at the time. An Israelite civilization should have developed and resided where other nations would be very aware of them and what they practiced. They were to be a moral, rational, and productive people. The idea was for the other nations to observe the intended results, which were supposed to be very good. Unfortunately, the results were not good. This will be explained in much more detail in chapter eight of this book, including numerous scriptural supporting references. This section's main point is that when Israel failed God and were thrown off of the land, they failed not only God, but also themselves and the entire human race. **This negatively impacted The Tragedy of Being for the human race.** With all of this in mind

your author will only hit on a few things, for now, in this section:

Israel was to be God's body of witnesses but failed to live by God's instructions (divine laws). This caused them to be thrown off of the land. The entire Old Testament is basically this story.

Israel was supposed to live under God's leadership, not a human king, via known laws, with Levites and priests and judges ruling morally, logically, and justly. Any statutes that were issued were to be consistent with divine law, including respecting others' individual natural rights. Instead, the foolish Israelites asked Samuel the prophet for a king ... with disastrous results (1 Samuel 8). Unlike God as King, who was perfect, the human kings were not.

After Solomon's death, his son Rehoboam was overly harsh with his subjects and the ten Northern Tribes of Israel split off from the Southern two tribes, Judah and Benjamin (1 Kings 12).

Later, sporadic civil wars between the Northern ten tribes and the Southern two tribes led to hundreds of thousands of deaths and a very

weakened country. One instance of this was the deaths of 500,000 men of the Northern ten tribes in just one battle (1 Kings 14:30, 2 Chronicles 13:17, and other places).

Later still, after many prophetic warnings from God, the Northern ten tribes were deemed by God to be unfit to continue to reside in the land and Assyria conquered the Northern ten tribes late in the 8<sup>th</sup> Century B.C. (between about 740 B.C. and 718 B.C) (2 Kings 15:29, referring to a partial conquest and more fully 2 Kings 17:20-24, the major conquest).

In broad terms, this left Judah and Benjamin in the land. Again, after many prophetic warnings from God via his prophets, e.g., Jeremiah, the Southern two tribes were judged to no longer be fit to continue to live on the land. Babylon, under Nebuchadnezzar, through a series of attacks finally conquered the Southern two tribes about 586 B.C (2 Kings 25). This left very few members of the original twelve tribes remaining in the land, mainly the poor and not well connected.

The Northern ten tribes, for the most part, never returned to the land (2 Kings 17:23).

Some Israelites from the Southern two tribes did return to the land, but they had a hard time of it for hundreds of years under the Persians, then the Greeks, and finally the Romans. After the Romans destroyed the temple in 70 A.D. and the Bar Kokhba revolt was put down in 132-136 A.D., the Jews were banned from Jerusalem. As a result, in substantive effect, there really has been no substantive Israelite witness in that geographic area for almost the last 2,000 years.

Israel was supposed to represent God's divine law instructions in action. They did not.

Israel was supposed to respect individual natural rights. God's Ten Commandments prohibit, murder, theft, lying, and coveting which leads to actions harming other individuals and their property (Exodus 20 and Deuteronomy 5). Further, God's divine law prohibited dishonest dealings with others, etc. (Leviticus 19:11,34-35). Everyone was to be equal before the law, with neither the rich man nor the poor man being favored (Leviticus 19:15). Even strangers in the land were to be treated well (Leviticus 19:34). The individual was to be respected. Liberty was to be proclaimed throughout the land for all the inhabitants (Leviticus 25:10).

The judgment of a judge was to be according to principles that agreed with both divine law and the respect of individual natural rights (Leviticus 19:15,37).

Israel was supposed to be **THE** moral, intellectual, and productive light to the nations.

Western Civilization, with at least some respect for the individual, some acceptance of the teachings of Christ, and some utilization of logical thought and science to benefit mankind was a poor and late de facto substitute for what Israelite Civilization was supposed to be, but was not.

Again, there is much more to be explained regarding Israel, which your author will do in the book's chapter eight. For the reader's information, should you be so interested, your author wrote about a 130 page chapter regarding Israel and the effects of its failure toward God, itself, and the human race in his previous *Life Charts* book, which are found in that book's chapter five.

For the purposes of this section, suffice it to say that Israel's failure left a leadership void

that has greatly contributed to The Tragedy of Being – a great loss to all of us.

### **3.5 Values and virtues or the lack thereof**

In the modern era, where evolution is taught as a science in public schools and universities and not as many people attend a religious assembly each week, there is a widespread lack of teaching and emphasis pertaining to **values** and **virtues**. This impacts human development, as both values and virtues are critical to it. The lack of human development shows up in our cultures and societies at large throughout the world. **Amoral** people do not think of right and wrong before making a decision, or don't care about the consequences to others. **Immoral** people know right from wrong, but choose wrong as a shortcut to a goal of their choosing. In short, we are currently in the process of peopling our societies with greater numbers of both amoral and immoral people. Then their decisions poison Being. The amoral and immoral are hurting not only themselves, but also those they come into contact with via their bad choices, generating bad consequences for all concerned.

**Amoral** = making decisions without the consideration of what is right or wrong, or ignoring or not caring about the consequences to yourself and others.

**Immoral** = knowing right from wrong, but all too often choosing wrong as a shortcut to a chosen goal.

The choices people make are based on the values they hold at the time. Since values are not widely taught, your author will briefly and simply define value.

Value = a principle to live by, or

Something you: 1) want to achieve if you don't yet have it, e.g., a home, or 2) to maintain or hold on to if you already have it, e.g., paying all of the upkeep necessary to maintain a valued home in good condition, paying the insurance and taxes, etc.

Honesty would be an example of a value that is a principle to live by. Honesty is the principle behind many of the Ten Commandments, e.g., thou shalt not steal and thou shalt not bear false witness (Exodus 20:15,16). If you are an honest person your life choices will be very

different from the choices a dishonest person will make. A social science causal chain sequence is as follows:

Values → choices → consequences

In an ideal society people would be taught to think about:

What kind of a life do I want to live?

What kind of person do I want to be?

In other words, what values are going to guide my life?

However, how do you convince people who are taught that life has no purpose and therefore no substantive long-term meaning to value anything? Why should they? Even if parents are attempting to install good values into their children at home, if the university and other school systems of the world are teaching that we are a happy accident with a very short life span and then that is it, is it any big surprise if people group together into gangs, tribes, political parties, etc., and try to get what they can as fast as they can without too much, or

any, regard for others? It should not be a surprise. Rather, you could predict it.

Bad values → bad choices → bad consequences  
→ for the individual

Large numbers → of amoral + immoral people →  
many bad choices → many bad consequences →  
Being takes a huge hit

With regard to virtues, the very word seems archaic these days. Public schools are loathe to systematically teach virtues because they smack of religion and the public schools don't really want anything to do with religion. They also do not want to be seen as favoring any one particular religion. Some virtues are taught, e.g., self-control, being on time, and sharing, but they are taught in a way to help the school function and not necessarily as a means to systematically develop better overall human beings.

Per the Dictionary on your author's Macbook, virtue is [emphasis mine]:

"1 behavior showing high moral standards: paragons of virtue.

- a quality considered morally good or desirable in a person: patience is a virtue. ...”

Ergo, virtue is: 1) conforming to a standard of morality, i.e., “the right” or “the good” and/or 2) individual qualities, e.g., honesty, or industriousness, or love that are good for each of us to possess and utilize in how we live our lives.

Aristotle broke the virtues down into a couple of broad categories: 1) moral virtues and 2) intellectual virtues, which will do for your author’s purposes in this section.

Some examples of the moral virtues are love, joy, kindness, faith, hope, empathy, compassion, patience, self-control, peace, temperance, etc. Because of the Christian faith and its emphasis on love, and in your author’s opinion, love can be seen to be the standard bearer of the moral virtues.

Some examples of the intellectual virtues are wisdom, understanding, judgment, justice, and knowledge. To your author, wisdom is the standard bearer for the intellectual virtues.

Aristotle also taught his famous, the **Golden Mean**, which is sort of the Goldilock's approach to virtues (not too cold, not too hot, etc.). One can be too impatient and rush in to a situation and make a mess of things. Conversely, one can be too late and miss an opportunity. Or, per the idea behind the golden mean, one can be balanced and act in time, not too early and not too late and get a good result. This is the idea of the golden mean.

One further concept the ancient Greeks developed was "**The Unity of Virtues.**" The unity of virtues means that virtues tend to mutually adjust and determine each other. For example, if you saw a disheveled man leaning against the side of a liquor store, you might have compassion and empathy for him, but it would not be a good idea to give the man money if he asked you for it. The reason is because it is likely he is an alcoholic and would just take the money and buy alcohol and drink it, which would further harm him. In this brief example, empathy and compassion were adjusted by knowledge, understanding, and wisdom and the result is a better decision. Maybe the thing to do would be to buy him a blanket or a sandwich, but not to give him money that he would likely use to buy alcohol.

The big idea behind the unity of virtues is that the more of each individual virtue each one of us obtains the better, and the greater the number of additional virtues each one of us obtains the better, because the virtues act upon each other in a mutually adjusting and determining way in order to produce better choices generating better results in our lives. If a virtue is missing or substantially missing from our personal development it is not there to do its job.

If the virtues are not taught and people turn into short-term thinkers, because they do not hold there is a purpose to human life, here is a further very big problem for mankind.

People lacking virtue → will almost certainly have bad values.

Bad values → bad choices → bad consequences

If you take away the moral virtues you will have unethical choices and bad consequences

If you take away the intellectual virtues you will have unintelligent (incorrect/wrong) choices and bad consequences

Being takes a hit and we all suffer, not just those lacking in virtues and having bad values. This will be explained further in the next section.

If a man does not believe in a possible eternal life he de facto becomes a short-term “thinker.” A couple of rules of thumb regarding short-term thinking are these: 1) short-term thinkers make more bad choices than long-term thinkers and 2) short-term thinking is a form of irresponsibility, which is a vice.

All too many people lacking in the virtues also have bad values and they have almost been programmed to think short-term. As a result of this they are making too many poor choices that negatively affect not just their own lives, but Being, too.

### **3.6 The Law of Responsibility and The Law of Solidarity**

An 18<sup>th</sup> Century French economist named Frederic Bastiat uncovered two “laws” which he espoused in some of his writings. They were:

1. The Law of Responsibility

## 2. The Law of Solidarity

Bastiat was a genius at understanding human nature. These two laws he taught merit their own section in this book because they contribute to an understanding of Being. Before your author discusses Bastiat's two laws, the Bible seems to confirm the law of responsibility, per the below:

"The stripes of a man cleanses away evil ... "  
Proverbs 20:30, MKJV

Bastiat's central idea of "**the law of responsibility**" is that if someone errs they will receive in return negative feedback (blowback). They will experience a bad result and this psychic loss will teach them to be more responsible in the future. The psychic loss could encompass a financial loss, hurting an important relationship, physical harm to oneself, etc.

The idea behind Bastiat's "**the law of solidarity**" is that other people's errors can flow over into our lives and hurt us, too. This is also true of our own errors hurting other people. Once again, the Bible seems to confirm the law of solidarity, per the below:

"But if you bite and devour one another, take heed that you are not consumed by one another." Galatians 5:15, MKJV

Governments and social reformers should NOT attempt to shift where the loss falls from irresponsible actions. Otherwise they will prolong bad behavior and choices, in addition to becoming instruments of injustice. In short, thinking they are helping people in need of help they shift losses from the irresponsible to innocents and hurt everyone in the process. Beyond this "Executive Summary" your author will mainly let Bastiat speak for himself – as he so eloquently does [emphasis mine throughout]:

"For the laws of Providence [God] to be considered as harmonious, it is not necessary that they exclude evil. It is enough that evil have its explanation and purpose, that it be self-limiting, and that **every [resulting] pain be the means of preventing greater pain by eliminating whatever caused it** [whether the cause be bad values, an immoral choice or ignorance, etc.]. Society is composed of men and every man is a free [moral] agent. Since man is free, he can choose; since he can choose, he can err; since he can err, he can suffer. All error breeds suffering and this

suffering either falls upon the one who has erred, in which case it sets in operation **the law of responsibility**, or else it strikes innocent parties, in which case it sets in motion **the law of solidarity.**" ... "The action of these laws, combined with the ability that has been given us of seeing the connection between cause and effect, must bring us back, by the very fact of suffering, to the path of righteousness and truth [morality and rationality]. ... But in order that evil (suffering) should fulfill this mission, we must not stretch Solidarity artificially, so as to destroy Responsibility – in other words, we must respect Liberty [the freedom of the individual must be respected which is why the two Jehovahs granted men liberty – free will].

Should human institutions step in to oppose in this respect the divine laws, evil would not the less flow from error, only it would shift its position. **It would strike those whom it ought not to strike.** It would be no longer a warning and a monitor. It would no longer have the tendency to diminish and die away by its own proper action. Its action would be continued, and increase, as would happen in the physiological world if the imprudences and excesses of the men of one hemisphere were

felt in their unhappy effects only by the inhabitants of the opposite hemisphere."

... "But in order that experience should afford us this lesson, in order that it should fulfill its mission, develop foresight, explain the series of consequences that flow from our actions, pave the way to good habits, and restrain bad ones - in a word, in order that experience should become an effective instrument of progress and moral improvement-the law of responsibility must come into operation. The bad consequences must make themselves felt, and evil must for the moment chastise us.

Undoubtedly it would be better that evil had no existence; and it might perhaps be so if man was constituted differently from what he is. But taking man as he is, with his wants, his desires, his sensibility, his free will, his power of choosing and erring, his faculty of bringing into play a cause that necessarily entails consequences that it is not in our power to elude as long as the cause exists; in such circumstances, the only way of removing the cause is to enlighten the will, rectify the choice, abandon the vicious act or the vicious habit; and nothing can effect this but the law of Responsibility."

Experience → has a mission → to learn cause and effect + to develop **future foresight** → that is to improve human choices so as to eliminate the primary cause of evil → wrong choices stemming from bad values

The Law of Responsibility's purposes: 1) learn cause and effect 2) to develop future foresight 3) for the erring actor to reexamine their values 4) to improve future choices 5) a warning to others seeing the problem unfold and to the actors themselves 6) an ongoing monitor of our values and choices and their consequences 7) to encourage good habits/virtues and to discourage bad habits/vices 8) to slowly cause evil to diminish and one day die out due to morally and rationally improved human beings

Bastiat was a genius. People bemoan the evil in the world and the foolish and criminal acts that cause it. But rules and regulations and the attempts by governments, religions, and social reformers to mitigate THE EFFECTS of evil without addressing the causes of evil will not work. They will only temporarily suspend the law of responsibility by shifting the effects of evil from the heads of the ones who deserve it onto the moral, reasonable, and productive members

of a society. Thinking they do well, **they actually perpetuate evil.** In essence, they work against the two Jehovahs and against the human race.

For experience to fulfill its mission → the law of responsibility → must be allowed to operate **unimpeded**

If the law of responsibility is not allowed to operate unimpeded → evil effects shift their position → the law of solidarity kicks in and distributes the negative effects from the guilty actors to the innocent → Being suffers

Governments + social reformers + indulgent parents and teachers + religious leaders → do NOT help people → by preventing them from growing mature

The above discussion of the laws of responsibility and solidarity are along the lines of why your author wrote a previous book entitled *Values, Choices & Consequences* and the previous section in this book. Until people change their value system and learn that obtaining and using the virtues are important, they are going to make many bad decisions and those decisions will have bad consequences. We

do not help people by preventing them from growing mature. People can grow mature in at least two important ways: 1) via conceptual learning and 2) via experience (both good and bad experiences). They can also learn if they are observant, from seeing the effects of the experiences of others. If religious leaders, government leaders, and social reformers deplore the habits and tastes of large segments of the general populace they need to understand that the only real change that will occur is when people change **ethical value systems**. Then their personal choices, including their subjective purchase decisions in the marketplace, will reflect these better ethical values. Until that time some of marketplace demand will be for immoral and other items reflecting bad ethical values and unrefined tastes.

Human beings are causative agents in the world. Our learning from experience comes from making judgments and taking action based on those judgments – and then the law of responsibility comes into play and we get both positive and negative feedback. We can learn from both success and failure. If one or more of governments, religious leaders, social reformers, indulgent parents, or indulgent teachers try and prevent the law of responsibility from operating

properly then the negative feedback from bad choices stemming from bad values or vices does not work to extinguish the harmful cause. We have a less developed human being going forward who is prone to keep making the same mistakes that harm themselves and others. The harm to others occurs when the negative consequences, via the law of solidarity, slop over and flow over into the lives of those not involved with that particular choice, i.e., innocents. It really is a case of either the law of responsibility is going to operate freely, if not the law of solidarity will and the only just and wise thing to do is to allow for the law of responsibility to operate unimpeded.

Either **the Law of Responsibility** is going to function or **the Law of Solidarity** is ... and no human being has the power to alter this. Of course, sometimes both laws operate at the same time, when one individual's really bad choice flows over into many other people's lives and harms them, e.g., a drunk driver hits a school bus and many children die, as does the drunk driver. Human choice as a causative factor and the two laws discussed in this section all contribute to The Tragedy of Being, which is why they are included in this Chapter Three.

### **3.7 The natural sciences cannot solve social science problems – now or ever**

For all of the confidence many people place in the natural sciences, some of it deservedly so, e.g., medical, agricultural, industrial, digital, and other technological advances, the natural sciences are actually helpless to solve social scientific problems, such as why Being has become tragic.

In order to keep this rather long book to as short of a length as is possible, your author will basically summarize the key reasons that the natural scientists will never be able to solve the social science problems dealing with ethics, epistemology (how knowledge is established), the logic of human action, and the economic problems stemming from all of the above, etc. As a sidebar and for the reader's benefit, your author has previously written at length pertaining to the above in his *Life Charts* book and more detailed explanations can be found therein.

Here are a few of the key reasons the natural sciences will not be able to solve the problems pertaining to the social sciences:

1. There is a spirit in man that enables thought, put there by God. A spirit in man is not something that an empirically based natural scientist is ever going to find using human senses. In addition to the Job 32:8 and Zechariah 12:1 scriptures quoted below, the reader can also refer to Isaiah 42:5, Proverbs 20:27, and 1 Corinthians 2:11.

"But a spirit is in man giving them perception, even the breath of the Almighty."  
Job 32:8, MKJV

"The burden of the word of the LORD for Israel, says the LORD, who stretches forth the heavens, and lays the foundation of the earth, and forms the spirit of man within him."  
Zechariah 12:1, MKJV

the human brain + the spirit God gave to man =  
the human mind

An important thing to understand about the context of the human situation is that human consciousness was designed and planned for by the two Jehovahs and given as a gift to mankind. What they did is to put a spirit in man that allowed for consciousness and thought.

This, combined with freedom to choose, allows for man to make moral choices – to be moral. An unthinking, pre-programmed robot (android) is not moral. It simply does what it is forced to do by its programming. Human thought plus free will also allows for us to be able to learn how to think clearly, how to become peacefully productive, and how to get along with other people.

No natural science using empirical methods is ever going to find the spirit substance that God categorically states enables human thought. There is no missing brain organ enabling thought in existence for them to find.

2. Scientism, the approach of the natural scientists to explain human action is decidedly false and easily proven so. **Scientism** is the belief that the biological functioning of the brain will eventually be reduced to explainable chemical reactions that will then ultimately be reduced and explainable via the laws of physics. This is known as scientism, or a form of reductionism. It is a bad theory that does not correspond to reality.

3. The natural scientists do not understand or acknowledge the need for a second and different

scientific method to be used by social scientists. This is known as **methodological dualism** (two methods). This second method must be used because **human choice as a causative factor is clearly empirically correct and cannot be ignored**. Electrons do not decide which way and when or whether to travel. Human beings do and what they are going to do is not subject to a correct forecast using a natural scientific theory. The correct second method to be used, but rarely is, is known as **praxeology** – the logic of action or the theory of human action. Men value, choose, and act and there is no getting around this for a true scientist trying to explain what is actually happening and why. Because praxeology reasons from a core central axiom, human action (human beings exist and act) and because praxeology uses a deductive method to establish a body of knowledge, converse to the natural sciences which use mainly an inductive method, the natural scientists dismiss or ignore praxeology – to the harm of the human race.

4. The natural scientists, and worse, even most purported social scientists do not understand the need for **methodological individualism**. In the social sciences a true scientist must develop a body of knowledge based upon **the individual**

and build from there and not get confused by attempting to base suggested social scientific laws or policies based on a collective / institutional approach. We can't expect much here from the natural scientists, but it is very disappointing for people who claim to be social scientists to also have the wrong approach. The incorrect social scientists tend to further complicate things and make matters worse by two additional negatives: 1) they tend to believe there are not natural laws that apply to all human beings at all times and in all places; they perhaps believe in "laws" for a nation at a specific place and time, but this obviously means they are not really laws at all, but history lessons 2) they rationalize the violation of individual natural rights in service to some collective "for the greater good" – what the greater good is, being an assertion by a pseudo-social scientist or a political leader. The collective or institutional focus of these pseudo-social scientists, their willingness to violate the individual natural rights of some men, and their not being able to bring themselves to consistently believe in natural laws are all errors and any approach using same is in gross error and will not solve the problems of the human race.

The natural sciences rely on the experimental method and the social sciences cannot properly (morally) do so because to do so would mean experimentation on valuable human beings. No theory can ever argue away reality and **any theory contrary to human uniqueness, individuality, and human choice and action is wrong.**

5. The natural scientists do not have the correct theory in hand to explain Being and further admit they cannot account for several of the key questions human beings want answers to. Your author will quote a few paragraphs from his *Life Charts* book below:

"Back to the matter at hand ... what is the correct context of the human condition? What is our situation?

To understand the context of our human situation one must understand that science cannot give us all of the answers. Your author watched a television interview where Charlie Rose, on his interview show, interviewed Dr. Neil deGrasse Tyson, the host of *Cosmos: A Spacetime Odyssey* (another television show). Dr. Tyson has a doctorate in astrophysics from Columbia University and is the Director of the

Hayden Planetarium in New York City. Ergo, he is not some quack pseudo-scientist with off-the-wall theories. During the portion of the interview, that your author was able to see, Charlie Rose asked Dr. Tyson if there were some things that science could not yet explain. Dr. Tyson is an excellent communicator and answered as follows – to the best of your author's recollection: 1) science does not know what happened before the big bang – in other words, what the actual origin of the universe is and 2) science cannot explain complex life which human beings are and 3) science cannot explain human consciousness. And your author was struck by this intelligent scientist's honest responses to some of the more important aspects of what leads up to human life as it is. Science does not really understand the origin of the universe, basically stopping at the big bang as an explanation. Science cannot explain complex life – which human beings are. And science cannot explain the human mind – which is one of the key attributes that makes us human.

Unlike many Enlightenment-era scientists, who were trying to figure out what God actually did in creating the universe and human beings, many modern scientists have rejected anything

that cannot be proven empirically. This is especially true since the early 20<sup>th</sup> Century when logical positivism gained a foothold in academia. Logical positivism holds as nonsense anything metaphysical, including religions. If a question cannot be empirically (in their mind scientifically) verified it is either nonsense or a tautology. A tautology is true but is basically saying the same thing twice in different words, e.g. a bachelor is an unmarried man. Logical positivists view tautologies as true, but not conveying any particularly useful information about the real world. This leaves science in the place where only empirically verifiable questions are worth pursuing and considered as scientific. But this approach, considered in light of Dr. Tyson's admission mentioned above, leaves human beings in the place where they lack the answers to life's more important questions.

Science cannot explain: 1) the origin of life 2) complex life, which includes human beings 3) the human mind and its ability to be self-aware and to think."

The natural scientists cannot provide mankind with an explanation that gives us a substantive purpose or meaning for our lives, i.e., a credible

explanation of why man is here and what is happening. They just cannot.

6. The natural scientists have bought into the incorrect idea that science should be value free, instead of the correct idea that science should be bias free. Science should support life, the most fundamental of all values, including if possible a healthy and abundant life. **Science should be bias free while supporting life.**

Science should be **bias free**, NOT value free = T

Science should support life as a value = T

7. The natural scientists have sold out to the pseudo-leaders and have been more than willing to put advanced destructive weaponry into the hands of ethical infants with confused minds. It need not be pointed out that this cannot end well and in the interim has contributed to The Tragedy of Being.

8. If the natural scientists are using clearly falsifiable methods and are not coming up with the answers to life's more important questions, are they really scientists? Yes and no. "Yes," in that they have helped the human race with a higher standard of living, but the answer is

surely, "No," at least from a social science point of view. Sometimes it seems as if the natural scientists have forgotten or buried away in their minds that they, too, are members of the human race and that they, too, need purpose and meaning in their own mortal lives.

9. The natural scientists advocate for evolution to be taught as a science with all of the attendant problems your author is pointing out in this book.

Many of the natural scientists can choose to be dismissive of a Creator God and of the social science of praxeology, but they are not going to explain the purpose of life, nor provide a roadmap to a life filled with meaning, and they do not really engage in using their minds pertaining to ethics, values, or human choices and actions flowing from human valuations. Even worse, many of the natural scientists are more than willing, if the price is right, to develop advanced weaponry of all kinds and to place it into the hands of those with questionable ethics. And this brings us to the next tough section of this book, a discussion as to why the worst human beings tend to get on top, into positions of power and authority.

### **3.8 Why the worst get on top**

The ability of human beings to value and choose drives utopian schemers, collectivist planners, and those who want to use the power of the government political processes to refashion human nature and human society crazy. They become impatient and want to find a way to "correct" the fact that human beings are individuals with their own valuations of what is important to them and who make their own choices and take actions in an attempt to alter their own world for the better. Sometimes human individuality and choice also drives the natural scientists crazy, too. Enter the serious reformer, the one who will change human nature or at least suppress it and who will reorder the world to his image, regardless of what happens to others or how they feel about it.

In your author's previous *Life Charts* book there was a section 4.6.2 explaining why the worst get on top. Needing no updating, other than a few [bracketed comments], your author quotes it for the reader's benefit below.

"Nobel prize winning author, Friedrich Hayek, wrote a book entitled, *The Road to Serfdom*,

which was originally published in 1944. One of the most famous chapters in that book is entitled, "**Why The Worst Get On Top.**" This is the subject of this section of the book, along with a brief explanation of some of the methods used by such men.

In The Institute For Economic Affairs' (iea – non-capitalized letters, per their logo) publication of a condensed version of *The Road to Serfdom* was a Forward by Edwin J. Feulner, Jr., a past President of both the Heritage Foundation and The Mount Pelerin Society. Quoting from that Forward [emphasis mine]:

"Hayek employed economics to investigate the mind of man, using the knowledge he had gained to unveil the totalitarian nature of Socialism and to explain how it inevitably leads to 'serfdom'. His greatest contribution lay in the discovery of a simple yet profound truth: man does not and cannot know everything, and when he acts as if he does, disaster follows. He recognized that Socialism, the collectivist state, and planned economies represent the ultimate form of hubris, for those who plan them attempt – with insufficient knowledge – **to redesign the nature of man.** In so doing, would-be planners arrogantly ignore traditions that embody the

wisdom of generations; impetuously disregard customs whose purpose they do not understand; and blithely confuse the law written on the hearts of men – which they cannot change – with administrative rules that they can alter at whim. For Hayek, such presumption was not only a '**fatal conceit**', but also '**the road to serfdom**'."

Because it is in the nature of individual men and women to pursue personal goals, they are a challenge (from a wannabe utopian's point of view) to "herd." In fact, they are impossible to herd because they are men, not animals. Men choose. Domesticated animals are herded. Because of this ... ongoing quoting below from the iea's publication of a condensed version of *The Road to Serfdom* [emphasis mine throughout] [all life charts mine throughout]:

"Just as the democratic statesman who sets out to plan economic life will soon be confronted with the alternative of either assuming dictatorial powers or abandoning his plans, so the totalitarian leader would soon have to choose between disregard of ordinary morals and failure."

The democratic statesman → who wants to reconstruct society → per his utopian vision → confronts men with free will → either he must:  
1) abandon his utopian scheme or 2) assume dictatorial powers [in order to force other men]

If he picks dictatorial powers → he confronts morality, e.g., individual natural rights (other people's lives, liberty, and private property) → then he must either → 1) disregard ordinary morals or 2) fail [abandon his scheme]

The utopian schemer → to "succeed" → must 1) abandon morality AND 2) become a dictator

The utopian schemer → becomes →  
1) unprincipled + 2) domineering → a monster

The worst → get on top

"... What is promised to us as the Road to Freedom is in fact the Highroad to Servitude. For it is not difficult to see what must be the consequences when democracy embarks upon a course of planning. The goal of the planning will be described by some such vague term as '**the general welfare**'. There will be no real agreement as to the ends to be attained, and the effect of the people's agreeing that there

must be central planning, without agreeing on the ends, will be rather as if a group of people were to commit themselves to take a journey together without agreeing where they want to go: with the result that they may all have to make a journey which most of them do not want at all."

Who will lead that journey? It will be the worst of mankind. Why? Because the suppression of democratic institutions (like individual natural rights, due process, etc.) and the creation of a totalitarian regime require a number of things, which Hayek thoroughly explains in his, "Why The Worst Get On Top" chapter of his *The Road to Serfdom* book. Your author will intersperse quotes from some of the key sequencing from his book [emphasis mine throughout]:

There is a stage where there is a "general demand for quick and determined government action," due to perceived failures of the current system. It becomes "action for action's sake [as] the goal." Then it is "the man or the party who seems strong enough and resolute enough 'to get things done' who exercises the greatest appeal." "Strong' ... means not a numerical majority – it is the ineffectiveness of

parliamentary majorities with which people are dissatisfied. What they will seek is somebody with such solid support as to inspire confidence that he can carry out whatever he wants. It is here that **the new type of party, organized on military lines**, comes in." ... "The chance of imposing a totalitarian regime on a whole people depends on the leader's first collecting round him a group which is prepared voluntarily to submit to that totalitarian discipline which they are to impose by force upon the rest."

"Although the socialist parties [who failed in Europe, leading to Nazi and Fascist dictators in Germany and Italy] had the strength to get anything if they had cared to use force, they were reluctant to do so. They had, without knowing it, set themselves a task which only the ruthless ready to disregard the barriers of accepted morals can execute."

The Socialists were "unwilling wholeheartedly to employ the methods to which they had pointed the way." If there is not a group large enough to, in essence, impose its plan "for the organization of the whole of society" then how can it "be created and who will succeed in creating it."

Quoting again from the iea's condensed version [emphasis mine throughout]:

"There are three main reasons why such a numerous group, with fairly similar views, is not likely to be formed by the best but rather by the worst elements of any society.

First, the higher the education and intelligence of individuals become, the more their tastes and views are differentiated. If we wish to find a high degree of uniformity in outlook, we have to descend to the regions of lower moral and intellectual standards where the more primitive instincts prevail. This does not mean that the majority of people have low moral standards; it merely means that the largest group of people whose values are very similar are the people with low standards.

Second, since this group is not large enough to give sufficient weight to the leader's endeavours, he will have to increase their numbers by converting more to the same simple creed. He must gain the support of the docile and gullible, who have no strong convictions of their own but are ready to accept a ready-made system of values if it is only drummed into their ears sufficiently loudly and frequently. It will be

those whose vague and imperfectly formed ideas are easily swayed and whose passions and emotions are readily aroused who will thus swell the ranks of the totalitarian party.

Third, to weld together a closely coherent body of supporters, the leader must appeal to a common human weakness. It seems to be easier for people to agree on a negative programme – on the hatred of an enemy, on the envy of the better off – than on any positive task."

"The contrast between the 'we' and the 'they' is consequently always employed by those who seek the allegiance of huge masses [if you are not for us, you are against us – tribalism]. The enemy may be internal, like the 'Jew' in Germany or the 'kulak' [a relatively wealthy farmer] in Russia, or he may be external. In any case, this technique has the great advantage of leaving the leader greater freedom of action than would almost any positive programme.

Advancement within a totalitarian group or party depends largely on a willingness to do immoral things. The principle that the end justifies the means, which in individualist ethics is regarded as the denial of all morals, in

collectivist ethics becomes necessarily the supreme rule. There is literally nothing which the consistent collectivist must not be prepared to do if it serves 'the good of the whole', because that is to him the only criterion of what ought to be done.

Once you admit that the individual is merely a means to serve the ends of the higher entity called society or the nation, most of those features of totalitarianism which horrify us follow of necessity. From the collectivist standpoint intolerance and brutal suppression of dissent, deception and spying, the complete disregard of the life and happiness of the individual are essential and unavoidable. Acts which revolt all our feelings, such as the shooting of hostages or the killing of the old or sick, are treated as mere matters of expediency; the compulsory uprooting and transportation of hundreds of thousands becomes an instrument of policy approved by almost everybody except the victims.

To be a useful assistant in the running of a totalitarian state, therefore, a man must be prepared to break every moral rule he has ever known if this seems necessary to achieve the end set for him. In the totalitarian machine

there will be special opportunities for the  
ruthless and unscrupulous. ...”

The highest positions in a totalitarian state are for those who are willing to do anything, including acts outside of normal morality. Ergo, the worst rise to the top.

The highest positions → totalitarian state → for those who will obey any orders → including orders killing or hurting other men, lying, stealing property, etc. → the worst → rise to the top

“If God decided to do nothing at all, no one could criticize him. If he hid his face, we would be helpless. There would be nothing that nations could do to keep godless oppressors from ruling them [because the worst get on top].” Job 34:29-30 TEV

Hayek also points out that “collectivism on a world scale seems to be unthinkable – except in the service of a small ruling elite.” And it is noted that collectivism means an end of the truth. This is because propaganda is used to persuade people to accept the goals for the collective as chosen by its elite and because the meaning of concepts is changed in order to

attempt to convince the masses that they have always believed what the elite now want them to believe. When truth is disregarded and language is corrupted, thought is corrupted, as are values and the masses themselves.

A collective must be run by → a small ruling elite → who will use propaganda + lies → to deceive and convince the masses

When language is corrupted → thought is corrupted

The iea's version has several further brilliant points, including one illustrating the corruption of language and thought: "**“Collective freedom”** is not the freedom of the members of society, but the unlimited freedom of the planner to do with society that which he pleases. This is the confusion of freedom with power carried to the extreme."

"...There must be no spontaneous, unguided activity, because it might produce results which cannot be foreseen and for which the plan does not provide."

The elite's plan for → the individuals in society (the collective) → is to somehow be > (greater

than) God's plan for man (which allows for free will) → they will fail, but hurt many in their attempt

..." There is one aspect of the change in moral values brought about by the advance of collectivism which provides special food for thought. It is that the virtues which are held less and less in esteem in Britain and America are precisely those on which Anglo-Saxons justly prided themselves and in which they were generally recognized to excel. These virtues were independence and self-reliance, individual initiative and local responsibility, the successful reliance on voluntary activity, non-interference with one's neighbour and tolerance of the different, and a healthy suspicion of power and authority."

Hayek basically showed why, if individuals are not respected and their individual natural rights are not legally recognized, there will, over time, be a utopian-schemer clamor for a collective effort to solve societal problems. And if the utopian-schemer can achieve critical mass, or take advantage of some crisis, there will be a change in morality and an abandonment of the virtues. "The principle that the end justifies the means is in individualist ethics regarded as the

denial of all morals. In collectivist ethics it becomes necessarily the supreme rule.”

Those who are willing to implement that rule are the worst: the amoral, the non-empathetic, the immoral, the power-crazed utopian-schemers, the intellectual and moral and scientist sellouts, and those who are willing to follow orders – of whatever kind – in order to advance and to have more power, wealth, and status. In short, they are the morally corrupt and intellectually incorrect elite, and their obedient followers.

Individualist ethics → “the end justifies the means” → a denial of morals

Collectivist ethics → “the end justifies the means” → the supreme rule

Quoting Hayek again: “To be a useful assistant in the running of a totalitarian state, it is not enough that a man should be prepared to accept specious justification of vile deeds; he must himself be prepared actively to break every moral rule he has ever known if this seems necessary to achieve the end set for him. Since it is the supreme leader who alone determines the ends, his instruments [obedient followers] must have no moral convictions of their own. They must, above all, be

unreservedly committed to the person of the leader; but next to this most important thing is that they should be completely unprincipled and literally capable of everything. They must have no ideals of their own which they want to realize; no ideas about right or wrong which might interfere with the intentions of the leader.

..."

And so, the unprincipled dictator, whose society-reshaping utopian ideas requires that he obtain and use power over other men, is supported by a host of other men who are completely committed to the leader, willing to do literally anything for him, and who are unprincipled and obedient in their performance of their assigned immoral tasks. This is why gas chambers get built. This is why the worst get on top and get the help they need.

The worst in society (without virtue, or abandoning virtue) form a collective gang, **rationalize evil**, quell all opposition by any means necessary, and destroy whoever stands in their way. They serve their collective warlord leader and destroy valuable individual men and women made in the image and likeness of God. In this system of rationalized evil, per Hayek, "there will be special opportunities for the

ruthless and unscrupulous.” It is they who will rise to the top. It can happen in a democracy, too, through the corruption of its institutions in much the same way.

Your author has noticed there is a way those in power (including some in the business world) seem to act in their efforts to achieve their goals – a methodology used by those who got on top, i.e., the dominant. ... Here, in your author’s opinion, is the ... parasitical, unethical way to attempt to get what you want:

- Notice an object and desire it
- **Ask** for the object and if the rightful owner says, “No” then ...
- Perhaps **offer to trade** for the object (if the desirer has something to trade, which the owner might be willing to accept), if still, “No” then ...
- **Threaten** the owner with harm, or with negative exposure via blackmail and
- **Impose ignorance** to the owner (the owner’s judgment of value should align with the covetous parasite’s judgment of value)
- **Imply the owner is a reactionary** who is impeding progress (progress being defined as the parasite moving toward the achievement of his goals and not the owner continuing to own

the object as part of the owner's achieving his goals)

- Imply the owner is **selfish**
- Imply the owner is **stupid**
- Imply the owner is **evil**
- **Rationalize** forcing the reactionary, ignorant, selfish, evil owner to capitulate and give the parasite what he wants and
- After the rationalization for evil is complete so the covetous parasite can somehow magically feel good about what they are about to do, then
  - **Take what you want by force** in the name of: the common good, progress, science, or the necessity of the moment (the impatient parasite could simply not wait any longer)
  - If the owner resists, **imprison or kill him**, and **demonize his moral legacy**
  - The rationalization and the theft being complete ... **act as though you are a benefactor of mankind**, a great leader, instead of the evil, lying, covetous, murderous, domineering, parasitical thug and thief you are in reality.

A further tactic of evil attempting to achieve its goals via pretended or supposed "negotiations" is to demand another person, governmental entity, etc., to take a meeting. It

takes two non-coerced parties to really agree to a meeting. Then, as a condition of the meeting, where “negotiations” will take place, demand that the domineered party agree in advance to various pre-conditions of the domineering demander. If not, force will be used upon the person or entity demanded upon. And so the person or entity demanded upon is forced to a meeting and forced to agree in advance to a negotiation structured in favor of the domineering demander. It is force, with no respect for individual natural rights, or national rights. After such a meeting, where the domineering demander is obviously going to get all or most of what they want, it is a rationalization of evil to say that there was an honest negotiation and agreement between all parties.”

The world reformers and utopians always exempt themselves from: 1) the human race 2) natural laws 3) space and time 4) divine laws 5) etc. They want to reform the world because they are afraid to do the really hard thing, which is to reform their own person. They are either lacking in the intellect, the character, the sustained work effort, or the personality to achieve actually making the world a better place by reforming their own selves. It is much easier

to decree society as flawed, others as below them, and to demand power with which to fix things. Seriously flawed human do-gooders want to enforce their uneducated, historically ignorant, ethically challenged, and limited arbitrary wishful perspective upon the rest of us and then have us pay the cost of their human experimentation. Their misguided actions, even if caring, well intended, and passionate have been major factors contributing to Being becoming Tragic.

### **3.9 There is no solution coming from politics**

Politicians cannot solve problems stemming from the citizens having bad values and then making bad choices engendering bad consequences. They can only pass more and more legislation in a whack-a-mole attempt to keep a lid on things. Chapters five and six of this book go into why politicians on The Left and also on The Right cannot solve real world problems, so your author will only make a few points in this shorter section.

Usually the legislation enacted by the politicians of both parties makes things worse, not better, and then there is a huge tax and

regulatory infrastructure put into place that cripples capital formation and the implementation of life-improving innovations.

Many times a new political leader starts off their administration by calling for unity. Please let the reader remember the previous section detailing why it is that the worst tend to get on top, particularly of political and collective processes. With this context in mind, the secular and ongoing problem not usually thought of is if a terrible leader is calling for unity, unity to what standard of ethics? To a Hitler's amoral / immoral standard? Or, should it be unity with an Attila the Hun's or a Genghis Khan's standards? Are we all supposed to become immoral irrational activists? It will always come back to your author's earlier two questions: 1) What is your standard of the right? And 2) How did you come up with said standard? The citizenry at large would actually be better off not conforming to any standard that is not ethical, logical, and peaceful. "Unity to what?" could be a third question from your author. The Unity Standard is horrible if we all have to become a Hitler or a fool in order to not be guilty of treason. The Unity Standard is against human individuality and we are all unique. Your author previously wrote a book

entitled, *Divine Individualism* that explains human uniqueness in detail.

As mentioned earlier, politicians allow for evolution to be taught as a science in public schools and universities and chapters one and two discuss the problems with this. Also, as mentioned earlier, a compounding problem that politicians make, and the citizenry allows, is for individual natural rights to be trampled on via majority vote. It is like politicians from both The Left and The Right, their special interest backers, and the constituent portion of the citizenry who receive government "benefits" act as though since a "democratic process was involved" that the government mystically transforms into a gigantic washing machine that washes away the sins of the entire process. In short, individual natural rights are lost and the parties involved rationalize that it is all right. It is not. Further, just as the government washing machine cannot cancel individual and collective sins, neither does it wash away personal responsibility, the personal responsibility that many people act like they traded away to the political decision makers. They did not. But since the parties of both The Left and The Right act as though this is all normal, "nothing wrong

here,” more trampling of individual natural rights in the future is all but assured.

Parents almost always have a desire to leave the world better off for their children than the world they grew up in. But then they elect politicians of all kinds who tax and overspend and run up huge local, State, and national budget deficits that lead to an accumulated national debt that can never be paid back in honest money. The parents involved in all of this (most of them) somehow blank out and continue to hold in their mind they would like the world to be better in the future for their children. Your author is amazed that the very political processes engaged in by both The Left and The Right lead to the same processes continuing until our children are, in essence, perpetual tax slaves and slaves to whatever special interest group can muster up political power and then use it on their fellow citizens for their own narrow benefits. All of this taxing and overspending and special interest corruption adds up to an unpayable debt and perpetual, in effect, slavery for our children, grandchildren, and us.

The government can only give to one group of people what it first took from others. There is

no net societal gain, but people, including political leaders act as though there is. There is not. This and all the above, plus what will be explained in chapters five and six justify your author's point that there is no solution for Being via politics. Politicians cannot make the world better, but they can make it much worse.

### **3.10 Bad values pay off the consequences, a summary of The Tragedy of Being so far**

Defining "Being" took your author section 3.1 and then the follow-on sections in this chapter. However, Being is probably even more complicated than that, even from a secular point of view. Your author did the best he could. The soon upcoming chapter four introduces spiritual elements into Being, making it even more complicated and difficult for the human race. Being has indeed become tragic. The short answer as to "Why?" is as follows:

All too many men → with bad values + lacking in the virtues → make bad choices → engendering bad consequences → those bad consequences hurt their own lives + the lives of all of the rest of us, too → Being becomes Tragic

The Tragedy of Being terrifies men. It should. With evolution being taught as a science and national political leaders playing “Elite” and disrespecting individual natural rights, there is currently no widely agreed upon **standard of the right**. This is true from both a divine law perspective and also from the secular perspective of at least not harming others’ life, liberty, and property. There also is no widely agreed upon purpose for human life, leaving each of us adrift searching for meaning in our own ways. All too many men are seeking to kill the pain of life through engaging in the abuse of drugs and alcohol and through spending too much time playing video games, engaging in social media, watching television, etc. The irony of social media is you have confused and insecure people, each lacking meaning and purpose in their lives, attempting to find it from each other. There is no “There” there, similar to there not being any place to which a secular humanist leader could ever lead the human race to. And following a secular humanist leader is dangerous because the worst tend to get on top, those who are the most willing to suspend ethics and regard it as practical to take action for action’s sake, irrespective if there are dead bodies in the wake. If the secular humanist leader(s) accumulates too much power, then it

is indeed very dangerous for those living in such a nation and also for the world at large.

"There is a way that seems right to a man,  
but the end of it is the ways of death."  
Proverbs 16:25, MKJV

People are correct not to trust their fellow man's decisions if those fellow men have no ethical standard to guide said decisions. Further, with reason being either abandoned or not fully trusted, secular decisions cannot be trusted either. People know that majority vote does not establish either ethics or truth, but it can give power to pseudo-leaders acting as the Elite, who can turn around and then use their power in immoral and irrational ways. The Elite leaders many times act out of envy, coveting what others have or seem to have. Further, many times they have a win-lose mindset, they do not forgive or they engage in actions that break the peace, are short-term (at best) "thinkers," and are many times hedonistic behind the scenes, out of the citizen's view. The worst tend to get on top, give themselves an exemption from also being members of the human race, and then act like gods experimenting upon mankind.

Once the worst get on top, truth is the next casualty and the propaganda mills work nonstop to attempt to bamboozle and manipulate the public. There is no solution to Being from the politics of either The Left or The Right and there is no solution to Being from going tribal, either.

Once you fold in all of the harmful actions from: the ignorant and the clueless, small-scale crime, local gang activity, international gang activity, political fighting at all levels, un-empathetic psychopaths, religious wars and fighting, special interests fighting over government money, larger-scale despots and predators, etc., etc., it is no wonder that people either become tribal activists of some kind (for defensive purposes) or check out of life and try to kill the pain as best they can. Being is not just tragic; it is brutal.

Secular Humanism, with evolution being taught as a science, is poisoning men's minds and causing all too many people among us to behave like primitives, who do not yet understand that **it is in their best interest to be principled**. But again, principled by what standard of the right, by what standard of what is truthful?

Tribal activist moral assertion → is not morality

Tribal activist assertion → is not truth

Secular Humanism → a disaster → for mankind

Your author's minister friend is correct. For now, "Hell is other people." But there is much more to Being that is otherwise thought, hence this book. Please be patient, dear reader, to learn about God's Strange Plan, including his solution to Being. And, yes, there is a solution.

## **Chapter Four**

### **God Unfairly Accused And/Or Disregarded Due To The Tragedy Of Being**

#### **4.1 God is unfairly accused or reasoned "out of existence" and then disregarded because Being is so tragic and painful**

Chapter three took many sections of this book to point out that Being is complicated and now tragic, too. This chapter four will introduce the further complication that Being also includes

powerful angelic spirit beings who decided to wage war against the two Jehovahs (the two Jehovahs = God = God the Father and Jesus Christ). These evil and powerful angelic spirit beings have also waged warfare against the human race. This will be explained in more detail throughout the balance of this chapter. For the moment, in essence, there is a spiritual war being waged against God and man and this war has had many human casualties and very negatively affected Being. While this paragraph may sound strange, and in one sense it is, the Bible is very clear about what has happened to the human race as a result of this ongoing war. This chapter will necessarily utilize more of the Bible in its explanation and will also utilize many sections to disclose what has happened to Being through this war and how it has negatively affected all of mankind.

For much of human history many parts of the earth have amounted to a war zone, populated by sin-infected human beings making sinful and wrong choices because they lack the virtues and also have the wrong values. (The concept of human beings being infected with sin will be briefly explained in section 4.3 below and in more detail in chapter ten.) Most human beings do not know the difference between what

is merely necessary versus what is **actually important** and so they spend their time and energy on things that, in essence, waste huge portions of their lives. Further, human beings do not understand the solution to the mind-body problem (explained in chapter seven, section 7.5 below) and so there has been a lot of human intellectual confusion that was unnecessary. In essence, there is a huge gap between what human beings, in a perfectly calm, fully informed, and thoughtful moment, would decide they wanted and what the human race as a whole has tragically experienced. We did not get what we wanted, we got what we deserved, but did not expect. The Tragedy of Being is painful and very real indeed.

This creates a host of other problems, which for our purposes can be narrowed down to two big ones, which are the main purpose of this section of the book. Because Being is so tragic and there is so much human suffering, many human beings either: 1) reason God out of existence and then disregard him, or 2) many other human beings run away from God, or lose their faith in God. They rationalize that God is either some combination of cruel, lazy, uncaring, weak, or stupid because of all the "unnecessary" human suffering. The Tragedy of Being has

shipwrecked the faith of many people who otherwise really wanted to believe in a “good God,” but just could not – hence this book. God definitely gets blamed for “The Tragedy of Being.” It certainly does not seem like a loving, caring, wise, and powerful God is in control. If so, he seems to have rather made a mess of it all.

People assume that any God must be omnipotent. There are a “Yes” to this and a “No” to this, but this will be explained in chapter seven. For now, part of the reason people reject the idea of God is not just that they have been taught evolution as a science, but also because they look at all of the suffering in the world and disbelieve that any all-powerful God would allow so much suffering for so long. It tilts their human minds and they don’t know what to do about it. So, again, they either reject the idea of God or conclude that God is some kind of cruel, uncaring, or incompetent monster and so run away from him on those grounds.

Getting back to the spiritual warfare part of this chapter, the evil angelic spirit beings who are waging a war against both God and man do a lot of damage and then hope that human beings will blame God instead of them, which

happens. What also happens is that instead of human beings blaming ourselves for our own bad values and choices, we blame God. And this works for these bad guy fallen angels because God gets the blame and leaves confused and hurting humans rudderless in The Raging Storm of Being. For the reader's benefit, your author wrote a previous book entitled, *Water Miracles In The Bible: Satan Conquered* that discusses God's use of water miracles to help his people.

People accuse God of a lot of things, but God is usually not guilty of what he is being accused of. What God is guilty of is love. God is also guilty of creating complex life. Ergo, God is guilty of wanting to share his great love with complex beings, beings that can love God in return. This required complex life, not just life, and complex life is just that - complex. For our purposes complex life pertaining to human beings required three big things (in addition to all of the biological capacities): 1) intellectual and emotional capacity, 2) free will, and 3) time. And this is where complex life gets very complicated because contingent beings, men (and angels), are free to choose ... and they do. Many times this gets God blamed for angelic and human bad choices. Your author cannot stress

enough the importance of the below social science causal chain sequence:

Values → choices → consequences

Bad values → bad choices → bad consequences

Many bad values → even more bad choices → incredibly bad consequences → The Tragedy of Being

This book attempts to construct a different, more complete, and a more compelling explanation for what is happening and why it is happening. In other words, this book hopes to provide the human race with a better theory that really explains The Tragedy of Being. Said theory will find God “innocent” from the charges of: 1) cruelty 2) incompetence 3) laziness 4) impotence 5) unjust anger 6) the lack of mercy 7) the lack of love and any other charge that hurting humans might lash out with.

God the Father and Jesus Christ are falsely accused for being responsible for The Tragedy of Being by hurting humans. The charge is false in the sense of how it is made.

God gets the blame for human bad actions =  
True

God gets the blame for Satan and the evil fallen  
angel's deceptions and actions = True

This is the subject of the next section of this  
book.

#### **4.2 Satan's rebellion explains the source of evil**

Your author previously wrote a book entitled,  
*The Source Of Evil*, from which he will quote  
below, with minor edits:

"For years your author has thought about  
the problem of evil. In one sense the problem  
of evil is very complicated, e.g., how can evil  
exist since God is sovereign and God is good?  
In other words, one line of thinking is that God  
could stop evil if he wanted to. This question  
regarding evil co-existing with a loving  
sovereign God will be answered in a later section  
of this book [particularly chapter ten]. And in  
one sense the problem of evil is quite simple to  
understand, i.e., a spirit being God created, an  
archangel, now named Satan, rebelled against  
the Creator God and decided to wage war

against him. Evidently one-third of the created angels joined him in the rebellion and the resulting and ongoing war has left suffering victims scattered far and wide. **The source of evil is Satan, his evil values, and his systems based on those evil values that have afflicted so many.** It is, in this sense, as simple as that.

The Creator God created angels before he created men made in his image. In fact, he created them before he created the earth (Job 38:4-7). The Bible does not directly state why Satan rebelled, although it is quite possible that Satan rebelled because he thought he was set in his position as perhaps the number three in the universe - behind the God who is called the Most High and the God who became Jesus Christ (the two Jehovahs). When he found out that the two Jehovahs were instituting a new plan to create mankind in their image (... Let us make man in our image, after our likeness ... Genesis 1:26), perhaps this set Satan off and he rebelled, thinking he was being slighted. This, to me, is as good a guess as any.

At any rate, Satan did rebel and perhaps his twisted thinking led him to the false conclusion that he could knock the two Jehovahs off of their

throne and do a better job at running the universe than they could. We are experiencing the results of that age-old rebellion, including all of the suffering, frustration, and wasted efforts because of it.

"And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: **he was cast out into the earth**, and his angels were cast out with him." Revelation 12:9, KJV

The above verse identifies the serpent in the Garden of Eden (Genesis 3) as none other than Satan, the devil.

"And he [Christ] said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven."  
Luke 10:18, KJV

"How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, [the being now known as Satan] son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars [angels] of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; **I will**

**be like the most High.** Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit.”  
Isaiah 14:12-15, KJV

The above verse shows some of the arrogant thinking of Satan. Satan thought he could rebel and mount a takeover of the universe and then run the universe the same as the Most High God, only better. Since the Most High God runs the universe he created, being “like the most High” is tantamount to a takeover, since only one being can be in charge of the universe. Satan thought it should be him, not the Most High God. Further, the above verse shows that Satan thought himself better than all the other angels. In other words, Satan thought himself better than all other angels and better qualified than the Most High God to run the universe. He had a wrong kind of pride as the below passage of scripture will illustrate.

“Moreover the word of the LORD came unto me, saying, Son of man, take up a lamentation upon the king of Tyrus [Satan], and say unto him, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Thou sealest up the sum, **full of wisdom**, and **perfect in beauty**. Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the

onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold: the workmanship of thy tabrets and of thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created. Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth [Satan was evidently at God's throne and very familiar with God]; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire [almost certainly a reference to interplanetary travel]. **Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee.** By the multitude of thy merchandise they have filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned: therefore I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God [probably a reference to Satan no longer being part of the government of God]: and I will destroy thee, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire. Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness: I will cast thee to the ground, I will lay thee before kings, that they may behold thee. Thou hast defiled thy sanctuaries by the multitude of thine iniquities, by the iniquity of thy traffick; therefore will I bring forth a fire from the midst of thee, it shall devour thee, and I will bring thee to ashes upon

the earth in the sight of all them that behold thee. All they that know thee among the people shall be astonished at thee: thou shalt be a terror, and never shalt thou be any more.”  
Ezekiel 28:11-19, KJV

Satan was evidently an anointing cherub that covered. He was sometimes at God’s throne and had a high position in God’s government. But his wrong pride in his beauty, his wisdom, and his high angelic position caused him to believe he could do better than the Creator God at running the universe. Perhaps he felt slighted at the thought of mankind starting lower than the angels, but eventually rising above and actually judging the angels.

“But to which of the angels said he [God the Father] at any time, Sit on my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool? [This is referring to Jesus Christ sitting down, rightfully so, at the right hand of the Father.] Are they not all ministering spirits [the loyal and righteous angels], sent forth to minister for them [men who are Christ’s] who shall be heirs of salvation?” Hebrews 1:13-14, KJV

“For unto the angels **hath he not put in subjection the world to come** [when Satan

found this out this might have been what triggered his rebellion], whereof we speak. But one in a certain place testified [a quote from Psalm 8], saying, What is man, that thou art mindful of him? or the son of man, that thou visitest him? Thou madest him a little lower than the angels [for now]; thou crownedst him with glory and honour [at the future resurrection], and didst set him over the works of thy hands [mankind's future job, or at least one of them]: Thou hast put all things in subjection under his feet. For in that he put all in subjection under him, he left nothing that is not put under him. But now we see not yet all things put under him. But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels [while he was on the earth as a human being] for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man.

For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, **in bringing many sons unto glory**, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings. For both he that sanctifieth and they who are sanctified are all of one: for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren, ...

Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same; **that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil**; And deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage [and evil]. For verily he took not on him the nature of angels; but he took on him the seed of Abraham [the Word, aka Jesus Christ became flesh John 1]. Wherefore in all things it behoved him to be made like unto his brethren, that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people. For in that he himself hath suffered being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted."

Hebrews 2:5-11, 14-18, KJV

The above scriptures tell a lot about Jesus Christ's saving sacrifice and resurrection and what God's plans for man are. And they are for us to help manage the universe, under God the Father and Jesus Christ, and man will ultimately be over the angels themselves. Satan did not like this. I personally believe [but cannot prove] his wisdom, beauty, high management position in the government of God, and familiarity with the two Jehovahs, tainted his thinking (or lack

thereof) toward believing he was, for all intents and purposes, the third Jehovah. And therefore entitled to keep this number three position for all eternity. In this regard Satan was a static thinker. Life was good, until the two Jehovahs wanted to go in a different direction, which was their prerogative. After all, they (not Satan) were the original appropriators of the universe, i.e., they created it and own everything in it and are forever entitled to manage it.

After mankind is resurrected and perfected (I Corinthians 15 and I Thessalonians 4), we will judge the angels.

"Know ye not that we shall judge angels? how much more things that pertain to this life?"  
1 Corinthians 6:3, KJV

So Satan goes from probably a de facto number three in the universe to someone who will be lower than a resurrected mankind. To add further insult to injury, from Satan's point of view, man was graced with the privilege and honor of being made in the image and likeness of the Creator God himself (Genesis 1:26). The angels were not. My guess is that Satan's familiarity with the two Jehovahs, along with his wrong assumptions of their plans for the future,

and this apparent future “demotion” and the further “insult” of weak mortal men being made in God’s image and likeness were too much for him to bear. So he rebelled. Satan viewed all of the above as chaos and he wanted to re-establish, or create order again out of this chaos. His way to do so was to attempt a coup. He wanted to overthrow the two Jehovahs and take over the control and management of the universe. Unfortunately, he sold this idiotic bill of goods to about one-third of the angels, who bought it.

“And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon [Satan], having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. And his tail drew the third part of the stars [angels] of heaven, and did cast them to the earth ... ”  
Revelation 12:3-4, KJV

Were the two Jehovahs surprised? I doubt it. They were probably more disappointed than surprised. There are two very interesting scriptures, in the book of Job, relative to God’s view of his angels.

“Behold, he put no trust in his servants; and his angels he charged with folly:” Job 4:18, KJV

"Why, God doesn't even trust the angels! Even the heavens cannot be absolutely pure in his sight." Job 15:15, NLT

I realize that the above two verses could be a depiction of God's views toward only the fallen angels, the ones who helped Satan attempt his coup. In any case, the coup did not even come close to succeeding as the below scripture from the Good News Bible makes plain. In this scripture, Rahab, the sea monster, is a metaphor for Satan. The enemies referred to are Satan's army of fallen angels.

"God's anger is constant. **He crushed his enemies who helped Rahab, the sea monster, oppose him.**" Job 9:13, GNB

"Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? declare, if thou hast understanding. Who hath laid the measures thereof, if thou knowest? or who hath stretched the line upon it? Whereupon are the foundations thereof fastened? or who laid the corner stone thereof; When the morning stars [the angels] sang together, and all the sons of God [again, the angels] shouted for joy?"  
Job 38:4-7, KJV

Perhaps at the time the earth, and maybe the physical universe, was created, the angels were all right with what God was doing. It was so far, so good. But something changed and Satan and one-third of the angels rebelled. Was it God creating man in his image and likeness? Was it God admonishing Satan to not be too proud of his wisdom and beauty? Did Satan's system of trafficking prompt a correction from God? The Bible does not explicitly say. What the Bible does say is there is an age-old war that has produced and is producing many casualties. Satan, not God, is the source of evil."

In very broad terms, what values does Satan operate by?

Murder → as a type for → force

Lies → as a type → fraud

Satan's core values → force + fraud

"You are of [Satan] the Devil as father, and the lusts of your father you will do. He was a **murderer** from the beginning, and did not abide in the truth because there is no truth in

him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks of his own, for **he is a liar** and the father of it.”  
John 8:44, MKJV

The end result of following Satan and his values is this (the below is a paraphrase by your author of a portion of Matthew 26:52):

“... all who live by the sword [force] will die by the sword [superior force].”

The bad angels found out the hard way that they do not have superior force and are wrong. And all of the men, who also follow Satan, thinking they are so clever and will not be found out are also wrong.

“For nothing is secret that shall not be revealed; nor secret which shall not be known and come to be revealed.” Luke 8:17, MKJV

Someone can only get away with fraud ... for a time and then they are found out.

In terms of human history, sadly and ironically, taken as a whole mankind has done the following:

- We have followed a murderer in a vain attempt to have an abundant life
- We have followed a liar in a vain attempt to know truth

As previously mentioned, peace is a paramount value for mankind because the alternative to peace, war, leads to the wholesale destruction of human lives, liberties, and necessary-for-life property. Satan, hating mankind made in God's image and likeness, is constantly instigating civil wars of various kinds of man versus man, including at least all of the following and probably more:

Nation versus nation  
Tribe versus tribe  
Gender versus gender  
Religion versus religion  
Race versus race  
Economic class versus economic class  
Political parties versus political parties  
Governments versus citizens  
Warlords versus other warlords  
Organized crime versus citizens and government  
Laborers versus business owners  
Unions versus unorganized workers  
Etc.

The more human infighting, the better it is from Satan's point of view. He cannot destroy God the Father or Jesus Christ. He tried that gambit already and failed. Ergo, your author's speculation is that Satan wants to kill and/or corrupt as many human beings as possible before he himself is judged (1 Corinthians 6:3, 2 Peter 2:4, Jude 6) and then destroyed (Isaiah 27:1).

All it took for evil to extend its reach was for all too many of the angels (about one-third) and then also for human beings to adopt Satan's values and bad attitudes and then to start making bad choices based on those bad values.

Satan's values → 1/3 of the formerly good angels go bad → bad choices → bad consequences

Satan's values → mankind infected → human nature corrupted → bad choices → bad consequences

Satan's seed (Jude 11-19, Psalm 83, 2 Peter 2:9-17) → perverse creatures of their spirit father → bad values + organized evil as a way of

life → bad consequences (they bet on the wrong God, as Satan is not God)

Satan's spiritual seed → are behind → Secular Humanism

Satan works to deceive mankind. He hopes to be invisible to those so deceived but God through the Bible pulled back the curtain to give us a few glimpses as to what is really happening. The few scriptures below should suffice to show that Satan has deceived the whole world:

"And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, **which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.**" Revelation 12:9, KJV

"But have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, nor handling the word of God deceitfully; but by manifestation of the truth commanding ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God. But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: In whom **the god of this world [Satan] hath blinded the minds of them which believe not**, lest the light of the

glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.”

2 Corinthians 4:2-4, KJV

Satan and his anti-life values and those practicing them in rebellion against divine law and against respecting individual natural rights are responsible for The Tragedy of Being, but God gets blamed.

Considering that Satan himself, plus one-third of the angels becoming now fallen angels, plus humanity itself being infected with Satan's bad values, plus a group of men who are, in effect, Satan's spiritual seed spreading evil willfully upon the earth, is there any wonder that there is a war of all against all and a Tragedy of Being? Not really, if you think about it. Satan, the amoral/immoral nihilist destroyer has done his job "well," to the detriment of mankind – at least so far.

#### **4.3 The Garden of Eden, man's experience concerning the knowledge of good and evil, and the subsequent curses upon the earth**

The story of what happened in the Garden of Eden is one of the most famous stories in all of human history, but it is not just a story. It was

a real historical occurrence with profound ongoing implications for the human race. Satan, in the form of the serpent, got Adam and Eve to believe and act on his lies to the great detriment to the human race. Satan got Adam and Eve to eat from the forbidden tree of knowledge of good and evil.

“And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, You may freely eat of every tree in the garden, **but you shall not eat of the tree of knowledge of good and evil.** For in the day that you eat of it **you shall surely die.**”

Genesis 2:16-17, MKJV

Your author will once again quote much of this section from his previous book, *The Source Of Evil*, below (with some minor edits):

“God created the earth, including man and woman, and the beautiful Garden of Eden (Genesis 1-3). Unfortunately, Satan was also in the Garden of Eden as the serpent. Satan’s next step was to get Adam and Eve to sin against God, which he did. And while God may not have been surprised, he was displeased and God evicted mankind from the Garden of Eden.

"Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die. And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.

And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat." Genesis 3:1-6, KJV

"And the LORD God called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou? And he said, I heard thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself.

And he said, Who told thee that thou wast naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I

commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat? And the man said, The woman whom thou gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat. And the LORD God said unto the woman, What is this that thou hast done? And the woman said, **The serpent beguiled me**, and I did eat.

And the LORD God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, **thou art cursed** above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life: And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.

Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee.

And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: **cursed is the ground for thy sake**; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; **Thorns also and**

**thistles shall it bring forth to thee;** and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; **In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread,** till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return.” Genesis 3:9-19, KJV

Satan, the serpent, enticed Adam and Eve to sin. Satan also got the earth cursed so that mankind would have to work hard to be able to have sustenance and he got Adam and Eve (and all mankind) expelled from paradise. From Satan’s point of view, this was a successful effort. Men were corrupted with Satan’s evil nature through sinning, men now had to work hard in order to just stay alive, and men were thrown out of paradise. It is also likely that natural disasters, e.g., hurricanes, tornados, earthquakes, etc., would now afflict the earth and the people who live on it. In other words, it was far worse than the earth producing thorns and thistles. Now there were natural disasters to also deal with. And perhaps this was also the start of animal and insect and other biological problems, too.

Even worse, instead of following the Creator God, men would be susceptible to every flavor of false religion that Satan could dream up and

con men into believing. These false religious systems have enslaved virtually the entire world and have wasted untold lives. Part of enticing Adam and Eve to take from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil was Satan's false promises that they would not die (because you have an immortal soul) and that you will become gods (you can become an avatar and ascend into godhood, or you can become one with "the one.") These false promises, or derivations of them, provide the main ingredients for all kinds of false religious systems.

"Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, even by him doth this man stand here before you whole. This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner. Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved."  
Acts 4:10-12, KJV

Satan's various flavors of false religions permeate the earth. Rather than list them all, the Acts 4 scripture above points the only true

way to be saved, which is through Jesus Christ of Nazareth. Any other religion, or religious system, is wrong. The lie told by the one-world-religion ecumenical movement, however, is that all paths lead to the truth – except the path of Jesus Christ. What a hypocritical lie! **All paths lead to the truth, except the one true path.** Satan has done his work well and the whole world is deceived. Mankind's character has been corrupted and the one true path to the truth has been poisoned. Who else could be responsible, but an evil being (and his team) full of hatred for the two Jehovahs and the beings made in their image and likeness? Satan's team includes the fallen angels who are also on the earth deceiving mankind.

"And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, **which deceiveth the whole world:** he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him." Revelation 12:9, KJV

"They [Israel and by extension the nations of the world] provoked him to jealousy with strange gods, with abominations provoked they him to anger. They sacrificed unto devils, not to God; to gods whom they knew not, to new gods

that came newly up, whom your fathers feared not." Deuteronomy 32:16-17, KJV

"And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many." Matthew 24:4-5, KJV

In addition to the many flavors of false religious systems, Satan has a mercantile trafficking system (Ezekiel 28:16-18) that has now enslaved mankind (Habakkuk 1:14-17). Now that man has to work hard to sustain himself, fear and greed come into play. Satan evidently has "perfected" his system of trafficking. This system of trafficking includes banking systems and government and non-government debt (Proverbs 22:7), printed and created money substitutes (Haggai 1:6), and the souls [lives] of men (Revelation 18:13). And it allows Satan, the fallen angels, and their human team [the spiritual seed of Satan in human form] to buy and control governments, news media organizations (Ephesians 2:2), and legal systems (Isaiah 10:1-2, Habakkuk 1:4). With the control of world governments, their education systems, their legal systems, their banking systems, etc., the righteous and all mankind are oppressed by the wicked and

uncaring. [Satan's worst, his spiritual seed line in human form, get on top (Ephesians 2:2-3, Jude 11-13)]. But since Satan cannot defeat the two Jehovahs, his next best idea was to corrupt and torture and kill men made in their image. Satan's basic method of operation is "join me or die." What else would you expect from the "god of forces" [Daniel 11:38] and a deceiver?

"For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. And no marvel; **for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light.**" 2 Corinthians 11:13-14, KJV

Destruction is not the same as creation, but this is what Satan is left with. He cannot really be the third member of the Godhead, but he thinks he can render invalid the plans of the two Jehovahs and in so doing somehow make himself an equal. However, he cannot render invalid the plans of the two Jehovahs and he is not their equal. He is an unprincipled, maniacal, and dangerous, but certainly no equal to the two Jehovahs. Unfortunately, he broadcasts his negative values and vices and attitudes worldwide via some mechanism to be revealed later by the two Jehovahs:

"in which you once walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now works in the children of disobedience; among whom we also had our way of life in times past, in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the thoughts, and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others."

Ephesians 2:2-3, MKJV

The Executive Summary is that **Satan has temporarily corrupted the human race** and craftily taken over much of the world. Your author writes "temporarily" because the two Jehovahs are allowing all of this for a time, but Jesus Christ will undo the works of the devil [as will be partly explained in section 4.7 and more-so in chapter ten]. Sometimes his ill-gotten gains came from deception – by appearing as an angel of light. And sometimes his gains came from his evil debt-based mercantile trafficking system. And sometimes his gains came from force. I am sure other tactics and means have been used as well, including broadcasting his evil nature into humans, but the basic point is this: Satan has systematically extended evil throughout the spheres of influence available to him. And since, for the most part, it appears

that Satan and the fallen angels are presently confined to earth, Satan is doing his spreading of evil throughout the earth. He has done a "good" job of this and this affects all of us in a very negative way. All of this, needless to say, exponentially corrupts Being and makes it ever more tragic. And this is hard on all of us, especially thoughtful and caring members of the human race who are trying to be moral, reasonable, and productive now.

My personal belief is that Satan views the creation of mankind in God's image, and the further granting to men of free moral agency, as chaos that has to be stopped. Which is why the various religions of the world and the various governmental systems of the world are all different flavors of people control systems. It leads to people being used as sacrificial fuel for various religious, or governmental fires. Satan does not want men to exercise their freedom of choice to follow the two Jehovahs and he works ceaselessly to prevent this from happening, or to torment the people who actually dare to follow God at this time.

Time is running out for Satan and his team. They may have spread evil throughout the earth, and they may currently be able to make

the lives of the servants of God difficult, but God reserves the right to intervene and set things straight [which is the subject of later sections of this book]."

Human beings experience a lot of things as we make our way through this life. It is interesting that we tend to experience BOTH good and bad (evil) from the exact same people, events, and things. For example, a garden can give you beautiful fruits and vegetables, but also aphids, fungus, weeds, etc. Further, children can be a blessing for good or wear their parents out by their bad behavior. On a job or in a business we have good days and bad days, good years and bad years. Our spouses can bring us great joy or also make us miserable. It is the same garden, child, job, or spouse and yet we experience both good and evil, at different times, from them. Why? It is because our ancestors, Adam and Eve, did not value properly and then made a horrific choice for the entire human race, that's why. Adam and Eve ate from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil when God said not to and that was a whopper of a bad decision. God was evidently in a Burger King kind of mood (pun intended) and said, in essence, "OK. Have it your way." Further, God evidently, "at no extra charge," super-sized the

order put in by Adam for the entire human race. Adam's order, **for the knowledge that would come from experiencing both good and evil**, got super-sized by God. This brought at least two laws into play: 1) the law of experience (responsibility), where we learn from the good and bad (evil) choices we personally make via directly experiencing the effects of those good and evil choices and 2) the law of solidarity, where every other being's choices can sometimes flow over into our lives, both for good and evil, causing us to personally experience and learn about both good and evil in what could be termed an indirect way, due to the choices of others. Sometimes the law of solidarity works for our good, e.g., when the Wright brothers invented the airplane or Steve Jobs and his team at Apple invented the smart phone. But many other times evil flows into our lives by the immoral and selfish choices of others, choices brought on by the human race being infected with and corrupted by Satan's evil values. As an example of this, think of Hitler and World War Two and the horrific damage this war caused throughout many places on earth.

The Law of Solidarity → can be for good BUT

The Law of Solidarity → can also be for evil

If for evil → The Tragedy of Being gets supersized

The Law of Solidarity → will cause humanity → **to experience** → **both good and evil**, i.e., the collective results of our individual choices either for good or for evil (in reality, both)

Adam and Eve → believed and/or acted on Satan's lie → and made a really bad choice for their progeny → which God → super-sized

Jesus Christ, while he was on the earth, of course knew all of this and offered up some important advice to his followers, and really to all men:

"Therefore do not be anxious about tomorrow; for tomorrow shall be anxious for its own things. **Sufficient to the day is the evil of it.**" Matthew 6:34, MKJV

Sometimes we just have to try and get through a really tough day and at the end of it all say to ourselves, in essence, "Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof." Maybe tomorrow will be a better day; one can only hope.

For the reader's benefit, your author will briefly summarize at least some of the major curses that God put upon the earth because Adam and Eve disobeyed his simple command not to eat of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil:

- \* Adam and Eve became cursed with human nature – in reality Satan's nature – and this created ongoing internal conflict for those trying to be good (Romans 7)
- \* The ground was cursed, i.e., nature would no longer be so man-friendly, but instead would be subject to natural disasters, thorns, insect infestation, and other things harmful to man
- \* Women would be cursed in conception (think morning sickness at a minimum) and childbirth (very dangerous to women in human history + children themselves would be born with human nature and then sin because of it giving their parents and other human beings grief as a result)
- \* Man was banned from paradise, the Garden of Eden, and not allowed back in
- \* The serpent and his seed line (those following Satan) were cursed
- \* There would be ongoing conflict between the serpent's seed line and Adam's seed line

- \* Cain was later cursed, as was his seed line by extension (Genesis 4)
- \* Women crave a husband and are generally miserable if they do not have one, but then the husband tends to rule over the wife
- \* Man would now have to work hard to get enough to provide for himself and his family
- \* Man will now die a physical death
- \* Men and women will have to watch their children suffer as they make their way through this sin-shortened life
- \* Men and women will now experience anxieties and fears instead of paradise

The Executive Summary of this section is that Satan got Adam and Eve to believe in a lie and/or act on it and this obviously greatly contributed to The Tragedy of Being.

#### **4.4 God divided the nations to give each nation land – in order to prevent wars over land ... to no avail**

Mankind was supposed to acknowledge God and follow his directions, but we have constantly rebelled against his divine law instructions. One of the more interesting scriptures in the Bible is the below:

"When the Most High divided to the nations their inheritance, when He separated the sons of Adam, He set the bounds of the people according to the number of the sons of Israel."  
Deuteronomy 32:8, MKJV

Today's English Version (the Good News Bible) has the first part of Deuteronomy 32:8 thus:

"The Most High assigned nations their lands; he determined where peoples should live ..."

The same basic idea is alluded to, but not as directly stated in Genesis 10:1,5,20,31.

"Now these are the generations of the sons of Noah, Shem, Ham, and Japheth. And sons were born to them after the flood."  
Genesis 10:1, MKJV

"By these were the coasts of the nations [of Japheth] divided in their lands, every one after his tongue, after their families, in their nations."  
Genesis 10:5, MKJV

"These were the sons of Ham, after their families, after their tongues, in their countries, and in their nations." Genesis 10:20, MKJV

"These are the sons of Shem, after their families, after their tongues, in their lands, and after their nations." Genesis 10:31, MKJV

Ergo, in a macro sense, God did not want the nations fighting over land, but mankind did so anyway. War causes pain, suffering, death, the destruction of property necessary for life, wounded and crippled people, and many times, slavery to the losers. After a war is "over," the losers seek revenge and bide their time until they can get it by going back, sometimes generations later, and fighting basically the same battles for the same land in question all over again. Repeat ad nauseam. All of this constant warring over land that should have been settled by complying with God's divine law instructions has greatly contributed to The Tragedy of Being.

Even further, if we take a look at what God instructed within the nation of Israel, we can see that God intended for each family in a nation to have, in effect, free land. Your author is ignoring the Levites who basically received some small cities, and the land around said cities, as it is not telling for the main point of this section. Since God generally uses Israel as a model for the other nations, your author feels safe in

analogizing what God instructed Israel to do as also being a model for the other nations, too.

"But the land shall be divided by lot [**not by fighting for it**]. According to the names of the tribes of their fathers they shall inherit."

Numbers 26:55, MKJV

"And you shall divide the land by lot by your families. And you shall give the more inheritance to the many; to the few you shall give the less inheritance. Wherever the lot falls out to him; according to the tribes of your fathers you shall inherit." Numbers 33:54, MKJV

It is very clear that God did not want international fighting over land and God also did not want fighting about land going on inside of a nation, either. And divine law actually places a curse on those who rationalize stealing all or a part of other men's land.

"Cursed is he who removes his neighbor's landmark. And all the people shall say, Amen."

Deuteronomy 27:17, MKJV

Human beings think they can get away with taking other nation's land and other people's land inside of a nation, but ultimately, they

cannot. God is someday going to use his free will to force the people of the nations to accept their national and family land boundaries because there has been too much historical fighting (and hysterical fighting) about land.

"And it shall be, in the last days the mountain of the LORD's house shall be established in the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills; and **all nations** shall flow into it. And many people shall go and say, Come, and let us go to the mountain of the LORD, to the house of the God of Jacob. And He will teach us of His ways, and we will walk in His paths. For out of Zion shall go out the Law, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem. And He shall judge among the nations, and shall rebuke many people; and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning-hooks. Nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more." Isaiah 2:2-4, MKJV

#### **4.5 The Romans 3:23 "all have sinned" problem**

God is very clear that every individual is going to be held responsible for his or her own thoughts, words, and deeds.

**"for all have sinned and come short of the glory of God," Romans 3:23 MKJV**

**"Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law."** 1 John 3:4, KJV

When one reads the entirety of the Bible it is clear that the word "law" could just as easily be translated "instruction." Divine law has instructions for man. All men disregard and/or break those instructions from time to time. And that is the meaning of Romans 3:23, where the Bible asserts we have each fallen short of keeping the instructions, i.e., we have broken the law. Ergo, we are each guilty of having sinned in divine law terms.

**"But I say to you that every idle word, whatever men may speak, they shall give account of it in the day of judgment."**  
Matthew 12:36, MKJV

**"For the Father judges no man, but has committed all judgment to the Son [Jesus Christ]," John 5:22, MKJV**

There is a personal judgment coming to every individual for our thoughts, words, actions, and attitudes. Since all have sinned and fallen short of the glory of God, each of us has a big problem we are going to need some outside help solving. That help is coming, but for now, the purpose of this short section is to point out that all of us have a big problem in terms of Biblical divine law because all men are guilty of breaking it. And when we break it, we ourselves, unfortunately, contribute to The Tragedy of Being that we each despair over. In other words, each one of us is a part of the problem.

#### **4.6 The Romans 6:23 “the wages of sin is death” problem**

As big of a wakeup call the preceding section will be, to those just coming to a knowledge of Biblical divine law truth, this section is even more harsh. It does not do any good to mince words, so your author will not.

“Behold, all souls are Mine [God’s]. As the soul of the father, also the soul of the son, they are Mine. **The soul that sins, it shall die.**”  
Ezekiel 18:4, MKJV

**"The soul that sins, it shall die.** The son shall not bear the iniquity of the father, nor shall the father bear the iniquity of the son. The righteousness of the righteous shall be on him, and the wickedness of the wicked shall be on him. But if the wicked will turn from all his sins which he has committed, and keep all My statutes, and do justice and right, he shall surely live; he shall not die. All his transgressions that he has done, they shall not be mentioned to him; in his righteousness that he has done he shall live. Do I actually delight in the death of the wicked? says the Lord Jehovah. Is it not that he should turn from his ways and live?" Ezekiel 18:20-23, MKJV

**"For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord."** Romans 6:23, MKJV

God the Father and Jesus Christ have high standards of divine law ethics. Human beings, complete with minds that can think and free moral agency, can choose to obey God's laws, but we do not – at least not consistently and perfectly. This leaves both God and the human race with a dilemma. God the Father left the divine law standard intact because what good is a standard if that standard is changeable? But

then God the Father solved the problem by providing a perfect sacrifice in the person and being of Jesus Christ. This is well known and does not need much authorial comment here.

"For God so loved the world that He gave His only-begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life. For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but so that the world might be saved through Him." John 3:16-17, MKJV

The key points of this short section and the short section immediately preceding this one, are as follows: 1) there is a divine law standard that is in place at all times 2) all men have sinned against that standard, i.e., against God who set and upholds the standard 3) this puts all men under the penalty of eternal death 4) God could have either killed all of us, or lowered his ethical standards, but instead God the Father kept his high ethical standards in place and to solve the obvious problem of having to kill everyone he offered his own son, Jesus Christ, as a perfect sacrifice to potentially provide atonement to all who will acknowledge their need and change (Acts 2:38). Most people focus on the first phrase in Romans 6:23, instead of the much more hopeful second

phrase. For the reader's benefit, your author will quote it again directly below:

"For the wages of sin is death, but **the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.**" Romans 6:23, MKJV

A very real part of The Tragedy of Being is the human race's failure to appreciate and live by God the Father and Jesus Christ's divine law standards.

#### **4.7 Christ came to undo the works of Satan the Devil, but for now, The Law Of Solidarity is fueling The Tragedy Of Being**

Part of the peculiarity of God's Strange Plan is that the two Jehovahs, the Father and Jesus Christ, are without question the two most powerful beings in the universe ... and yet, there is The Tragedy of Being. Further confusing the minds of many Christians is the below scripture:

"The thief does not come except to steal and to kill and to destroy [a reference to Satan]. I [Jesus Christ] have come so that **they might have life**, and that they might have it more abundantly." John 10:10, MKJV

Obviously, there is a time lag in play here and explaining all of this is the main purpose of this book. Free will is messy and when used according to Satan's force and fraud anti-value system, we get The Tragedy of Being instead of an abundant life – at least at this time.

Much that is written in the first chapters of this book are a tough read, but they are necessary to explain how the human race got to where it is today. The last few chapters of this book contain a lot more hope for the human race, but it is better to walk through what has happened a step at a time. To that end, another contributor to Being becoming tragic is that men did not follow the below divine law instruction:

"And God said, Let Us make man in Our image, after our likeness. And let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the heavens, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over all the creepers creeping on the earth. And God created man in His image; in the image of God He created him. He created them male and female. And God blessed them. And God said to them, Be fruitful, and multiply and fill the earth, and subdue it. And have dominion over the fish of the sea and

over the fowl of the heavens, and all animals  
that move upon the earth [implied: but not each  
other, not your fellow men and women]."

Genesis 1:26-28, MKJV

Unfortunately, all too many men have attempted to live their lives as, in essence, hunters and conquerors of their fellow man. They did this because they rationalized the evil that it is easier to obtain a living by exercising dominion over their fellow man, instead of over the earth. Sometimes the domineering takes the form of actual conquest, including government "elite leadership" teams, and other times it takes the form of, in essence, preying on human weakness. Preying on human weakness can include glitzy gambling establishments, selling drugs, running prostitution rings, government run lotteries, and other illicit "services" offered to their fellow man. Conquering nature and learning to be productive takes a lot of thoughtful, hard work, including the self-denial phase where one accumulates and then deploys capital in the form of various production-aiding tools. The rationalization of the evil of dominating others, instead of having dominion over nature, is a grotesque and blatant violation of the divine law instruction above and it will be dealt with in the harshest of terms, as will be

explained in chapters nine and ten. For now, the bad guys are largely getting away with it.

God gave men free will. Those men who are hunters and conquerors and rulers over the rest of the human race (the worst get on top) always try to put people control systems in place to lord it over the “non-elite.” The people control systems are an attempt to take away other men’s free will and other men’s individual natural rights. Ironically, in attempting to play god they do something that the real God did not do ... because the real God did give all men free will and individual natural rights. This will be explained in more detail in chapter seven. God also gave each person a mind and they are expected to use it to think for themselves. Thinking is hard work. The conquerors and dominators of their fellow man are wrong on many levels:

1. They broke the divine law instructions contained in Genesis 1:26-28
2. They try to take away other men’s free will (or at least to reduce the choices to what the dominators are comfortable allowing for)
3. They take away other men’s individual natural rights.

4. They attempt to indoctrinate other men's minds through the dominator's control of the public schools and universities and media, etc.
5. They want to herd men like one would herd non-thinking farm animals

For all these things they make the two Jehovahs their enemies. For now, a big contributor to The Tragedy of Being is a self-styled elite, really a morally and intellectually corrupt group of determined, conquering parasitical thugs, attempting to dominate and control the rest of the human race. They will ultimately fail and pay a huge price. But for right now the world is going in the wrong direction as it must when it is led by amoral, immoral, and irrational actors – a band of the worst who are working hard to get on top and to stay there. Of course, they will betray each other and turn on themselves, but that is a subject for someone else to write about.

God is not guilty of evil, but is “guilty” of free will.

God is not guilty of evil, but is “guilty” of being willing to risk so much by creating complex life.

To human beings, free will and complex life does not currently seem like love because we are often forced to experience so much pain.

For the reader's benefit and interim encouragement your author wants to point out that the entire universe is actually structured for the good guys and against the bad guys. But, for now, God is allowing the bad guys to use their free will. Their amoral, immoral, and irrational choices are poisoning Being for all of us through the operation of The Law of Solidarity. Nevertheless, later in time, the below and much more will be made plain and will play out in favor of the good guys, those who choose to cooperate with the two Jehovahs (which most people will do, in time):

Light > darkness  
Good > evil  
Forgiveness > revenge  
Love > hate  
Truth > error  
Clarity > confusion  
Prudence > short-term reactions  
Prudence > feelings, wishes, and sentiment  
Etc.

Part of the purpose of The Tragedy Of Being is for the experience of the pain and suffering of it to teach mankind to revalue their values and to learn how to make better choices so as to achieve better results. Being is painful and it is evidently meant to be so (the tree of the **experiential knowledge** of good and evil). But, the two Jehovahs do not want us to give up on life; they want us to give up on evil and on Satan's values that evil springs from.

The two Jehovahs do NOT want us to give up on life = True

The two Jehovahs want us to experience and then to give up on evil and the values that evil comes from, (Satan's anti-values) = True

"He who practices sin [evil] is of [Satan] the Devil, for the Devil sins from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God [Jesus Christ] was revealed, that He might undo the works of the Devil." 1 John 3:8, MKJV

Satan's values → bad choices (sins) → pain + suffering + death

Satan's values → practiced by billions of human beings at the same time → Being → becomes tragic

The Tragedy Of Being = the results of → The Law Of Solidarity in operation → when → men make choices based upon → bad values

Most men do not seriously think about the values they live their life by. They should. All of us should. But we aren't taught much about either values or virtues when we are young and so we make too many non-prudential choices that end up being bad for our lives. And then we want someone to blame beside ourselves. But whether we seriously think about values or not, each one of us is making choices based on what we think is valuable. If we are not correct, we get a bad result, experience a psychic loss, and contribute in our own small way to Being becoming more tragic. Then we tend to reason God out of existence, or try and put the idea of God out of our minds, or look to blame "an evil God." Here is one of the main things to consider from our life experiences, including our suffering from being exposed to and contributing to Being:

God wants us to fully realize that the good and blessed things in life come from him (James 1:17).

God's values → good choices → good consequences

And God also wants us to fully realize that the bad things in life, the cursed things, come from Satan the Rebel Nihilist and his corrupt anti-values.

Satan's values → bad choices → bad consequences

One of the ways that Jesus Christ will someday undo the works of Satan the Devil is to allow Being to eventually become so tragic that men will finally realize they need to:

Revalue their values, rejecting Satan's anti-life values and accepting the two Jehovahs' unity of the package of values that pertain to life

Value the virtues much more highly

Think more prudentially - longer term and wiser

Realize that **it is in their interest to be principled**. Said another way, **it is practical to be principled**. Said another way, **it is impractical to be unprincipled**.

Yes, Jesus Christ will undo the works of Satan the Devil, but it will take your author the rest of this book to explain in more detail just how it is to be done ... and it will be done. For now, Being has become tragic and then God gets the blame, while it is Satan and those who follow him who do the dirty work.

#### **4.8 Human reactions to attempt to solve The Tragedy of Being, or to ease the pain of it**

Once again, Being is so very complicated that it is difficult to write about it in a comprehensive way. This section will discuss a few new points, summarize some old ones, and then also go over various attempts men make, both individually and collectively, to either "solve" Being or to cope with the pain and suffering from being exposed to it. Author apologizes in advance, this will also not be an easy section to read.

Often not thought about ... congregating into large cities contributes a lot to Being. Many times, unfortunately, what is contributed are a concentration of easy opportunities for various vices, such as illicit drugs, gambling, bars, prostitution, gang activity, con men practicing their craft, professional thieves stealing for a living, etc. Even local and state government officials get into some of this by sanctioning some legal gambling, e.g., offering lotteries or allowing card rooms, as well as often being corrupted by the criminals operating in their territory. Much of what goes on late at night in many cities is, for the most part, not good at all. On the other hand cities also allow for more varied job opportunities, greater social opportunities, more restaurants, better health care, more places of religious worship with larger numbers of congregants, and a much larger selection of other legitimate goods and services. Not all of city activity is bad, but for those lacking in the virtues a city is tailor-made for indulging the worst parts of human nature. Unfortunately, the professional predator criminals are good at exploiting weak human beings. Like all predators, they hunt the weak. The best place to hunt for them is in the cities. Ergo, crime of one form or another is much more likely in a city. Back to the less dark side,

people want a sense of belonging, social connection, and an easier way to make a living than by fighting with nature and so evidently many people believe a city is the best place to be. This paragraph is a long way of saying that cities can and do contribute to Being from both a good and a bad point of view. However, from a negative contribution to Being point of view, the aggregation of large numbers of people, particularly in really large cities, if many of those people have bad values and are also lacking in the virtues allows for a concentration of the worst part of human nature to be exhibited daily in deplorable activities.

As previously mentioned, Satan the Devil, his team of the fallen angels and his human spiritual seed line (those men beholden to Satan and actively doing his will on the earth), corrupt governments and government sponsored institutions, e.g., central banks and non-government organizations. They also corrupt state and local governments. They further corrupt many religious institutions and encourage militant religions. They also corrupt the legal, banking, financial, and accounting institutions and also public schools and higher educational institutions like universities. Satan's spiritual seedline are men domineering over

other men. This evil spiritual seedline leads, is in cooperation with, or otherwise allows organized crime, like mafias of every flavor. When we further recognize the fact that nature has been cursed by God due to sin, men have been infected with Satan's nature (which is a curse), women have been cursed, and there are too many human beings not caring at all, for the present time, about either good values or the virtues, means that all too many human beings are making irresponsible, immoral, and/or foolish choices having bad consequences – sometimes under the influence of pseudo-leaders and their corrupted institutions. All of the above and more have caused Being to become even more tragic.

Men all over the earth are taxed and regulated to death. This is government's attempt to control the human herd, which is how the "elite" views the average man and woman. Since sub-elite men and women cannot simply be trusted to do what the elite dominators want, one way to engineer human nature is to use taxes as incentives and punishments and to attempt to regulate human activity. None of this changes human nature, but it does complicate life for those men and women who are actually trying to be moral,

reasonable, and productive, which is to say, they are trying to be good people.

All of this section's mentioned contributors to The Tragedy of Being, particularly including the government's attempt to tax and regulate and to socially engineer human nature, tend to sap the time and energy and hope of the average man and woman and this leads to confusion, despair, and wasted human energy. Our lives are, in effect, stolen from us and we are worn down and not valued as the unique individuals we are. In effect, a large part of our lives end up being used by dominating others, the self-styled elite, for their purposes, not our own. This means that too many of us end up being used by ignorant, irrational, and sometimes evil men for their purposes and this defeated or minimized us using our own resources to better our own individual lives. In effect, the government and religious and other "leaders" who were supposed to educate and guide us ended up stealing much of our lives from us. Unfortunately, when we abandoned the standard of the right of God's divine law instructions and also did not force our leaders to respect our individual natural rights, we let them get away with it.

It is difficult to talk about evil and even more difficult to interact with it – evil and irrationality, of course, being the major contributors to The Tragedy Of Being. The philosopher and author Ayn Rand made a few telling points about interacting with the evil (moral error) and the irrational (intellectual error). It seems appropriate to share her observations below. The quote is dealing with appeasing or compromising with evil and/or moral or intellectual determination of right or wrong (from the online Ayn Rand Lexicon) [emphasis and bracketed comments mine]:

"The three rules listed below are by no means exhaustive; they are merely the first leads to the understanding of a vast subject.

In any conflict between two men (or two groups) who hold the same basic principles, it is the more consistent one who wins. [The one who actually practices the principle consistently well.]

In any collaboration [or compromise] between two men (or two groups) who hold different basic principles, it is the more evil or irrational one who wins. [Evil gains ground and good loses ground. Evil is advanced towards its goal.]

When opposite basic principles are clearly and openly defined, it works to the advantage of the rational [or good] side; when they are not clearly defined, but are hidden or evaded, it works to the advantage of the irrational side. [The immoral and irrational have to muddy the moral and intellectual waters lest other human beings are able to clearly see the evil or irrational actions that they wish to get away with.]”

Ayn Rand made a really nice point when she observed (in so many words) that in any compromise between evil and good, it is evil that wins. Her other points are also well taken. Ethical and rational and productive actors want clear meaning to words because properly defined words do not just enable good and honest communication, they enable good and rational thought.

Many others have observed that you cannot compromise a principle you can only abandon it. The Bible warns against practicing and even exacerbating evil.

**"See that none gives evil for evil to anyone,  
but always pursue the good,** both towards  
one another and towards all."  
1 Thessalonians 5:15, MKJV

Aristotle, in so many words, observed that it is never our duty to love evil or to become like what is bad.

Being is not all bad, as we can experience genuine friendships, positive achievements, love, joy, companionship, hope, faith and learn some wisdom, understanding, and knowledge. It is just that with so many spirit beings and human actors having what amounts to bad values (or very incomplete knowledge) there are so many bad choices and then the bad consequences. It is pretty easy to get caught up in the wake of other people's bad decisions and to, in effect, get roughed up by Being. But Being is both good and evil with positive and negative emotions and reactions to events unfolding in our own lives, the lives of those we love, and in the greater world at large.

After an interaction with Being, particularly after getting roughed up by someone or something, we can experience one or more of the following (which we can sometimes think are

personal thoughts, unique to us - but others feel them, too):

I am alone, in a dangerous world I did not make, and I have very limited power to protect myself against it.

I did not ask to be created and yet here I am in pain, suffering, frustrated, confused, anxious, hurting, or embarrassed ... and angry at it all.

At other times, far briefer than any of us wish for, things are going quite well and you are happy, not sad. Then your thoughts might be:

Why can't I always be happy and safe, surrounded by my loved ones? Why is life so hard?

My life's clock is ticking away. Why is life so short and filled with so much suffering?

The truth is, our life's clock is ticking away and the angst of Being can be maddening. Living in and interacting with others as a part of Being all too often creates personal anxiety, sometimes even depression.

The above human emotional responses are a part of Being and are very understandable. In addition to their emotional responses to Being, **people will do almost anything to get rid of anxiety**, including the misuse of drugs, alcohol abuse, watching pornography, viewing and playing sports, overeating, over-working, gambling, playing video games, TV binge watching, trying to live in a digital world through avatars, spending too much time on social media, indulging in escapist fantasies of all kinds, etc. People want to escape from Being, or to lessen the anxiety of it and they make efforts, however misguided, to do so.

There are also “good” and not so good attempts to influence and/or to fix The Tragedy of Being. All of them will fail because The Tragedy of Being comes about from bad individual actors having bad values and then making bad choices. In short, you cannot fix a moral and intellectual problem with “solutions” that do not address the underlying fundamentals. Further, as your author will explain at length in chapter ten, the two Jehovahs are actually using The Tragedy of Being for their own purposes. That said, the below is not even close to a complete list, but will illustrate some individual, collective, and

institutional efforts to address Being, along with some authorial comments regarding same:

Individual(s) → **Caring** → Attempting to demonstrate how much they care → but caring about Being does not change other people's values or the choices flowing from them with the attendant ultimate consequences

Collective(s) + individual(s) → **Effort** → there is no question that effort in the right direction, e.g., encouraging other people to adopt better values and to obtain and use the virtues will do some good → but no reform effort guarantees that others will actually change their values and work to obtain and use the virtues → and → one thing all of us should have learned by now is that effort, while good, might not yield anything substantive in terms of a solution, but we can wear ourselves out trying

Institutions → set up with **no regard for God's divine laws** + disregarding the secular standard of the right which is respect for all other men's individual natural rights → means fighting between conflicting institutions and within an institution over the institution's goals, fighting over sources of funding, fighting over programs → none of which change human

nature → none of which cause individuals to  
revalue their values and to change their choices  
→ so no secular institution is going to make  
much of a dent in Being (if there is no standard  
of the right, there is nowhere any institution can  
lead human beings to)

Institutions and collectives → have → **no**  
**external standard of the right** → and so they  
advocate morality by assertion and truth by  
assertion → morality by assertion is not morality  
(not the good) → truth by assertion is not truth  
(it is intellectual confusion) → institutions and  
collectives are supposed to be instruments for  
bettering the lives of men → instead they are  
damaging to human morality and thought → the  
leaders themselves are human and are lacking  
in → goodness + wisdom → they engage in non-  
prudential “thinking”

**Utopian designs** → the authors of their utopian  
design → exempt themselves from the human  
race → and advocate and allow for → human  
experimentation of their ideas on innocent  
others → further → if God exists, why not use  
God’s design? → further still → if evolution is  
correct, utopia is not possible → we all live so  
many years and then die ... and then what?

Collectives and tribes → engaged in **win-lose / us-them “thinking”** → usually disregard → individual natural rights → and so engender conflicts of various kinds → none of which change other men's values or choices and the conflicts created negatively contribute to Being becoming tragic

Individual(s) + neo-Platonic elites → **Hoping** → for a different result while trying the same things over and over again → hoping without cause → hoping → without a knowledge that values + virtues + choices of individuals → must change → for Being to change

Individual(s) and collectives and institutions and tribal leaders → **passion + “good” intentions** → without a standard of the right → could very well mean a rapid worsening of Being → because passionate amoral/immoral + passionate irrational actors → always do far more harm than good → even if said actors have → “good” **intentions** (good by what standard?) → Is it good by divine law, by respect for others' individual natural rights, or are their intentions only “good by assertion”?

Religious attempts to fix The Tragedy Of Being usually are sincere and most likely involve

some form of **sympathetic magic**. For your author's purposes sympathetic magic is an attempt to placate God(s) by engaging in some form of religion-prescribed self-denial, ritual practices, including sacrificial activities, and/or doing good works so as to earn the practitioner divine favor. Then when God dispenses said divine favor upon the earth, presumably due to the correct form of sympathetic magic being practiced, it will make things right or better, perhaps even actually solving a problem in the here and now. Almost all religions have some ritual beliefs and these usually involve some kind of sacrifices, such as fasting, praying, giving alms to the poor, doing other good works, and sometimes actual animal sacrifices, etc. There are at least a couple of problems with sympathetic magic. The first is that a leader of a local group, or a religion's overall human leader, can easily be fooled into "thinking" that their will is God's will (they can conflate what they want with God's actual will). In other words, due to greater righteousness, more years of experience, better adherence to the sacred rituals, the leadership position itself, more prayer, fasting, etc., the human leader believes that their own will should be God's will. They are projecting what they want onto God based on their own background, their personal needs,

and their desires of the moment. But why should God lower his overall plan to the level of the mind of a religious leader, or for that matter to the mind of any religious follower? It is true that prayers can be answered, but they are answered according to God's will and that includes God's timing. A human religious leader is not entitled to engage in some form of sympathetic magic and then, the sympathetic magic rituals being correctly performed, to project their will onto God and then expect the universe to, in effect, turn right or turn left upon human command. In other words, no matter what sympathetic magic gets practiced by a human religious leader, God is largely going to stick to his strange plan. The first part of Malachi 3:6 says: "For I am the LORD, [I] change not." MKJV. It is the best plan that the supreme two minds in the universe came up with so why should they change it? While God does appreciate many of the elements of what might compose a sympathetic magic plea, God cannot change or lower his plan or change his overall timing to accommodate the hopes, wishes, feelings, and thoughts of any small group of human beings, no matter how passionate and sincere they are, particularly since many times their hopes and wishes contradict each other. Many "lay" members,

too, not just religious leaders also engage in their own form of sympathetic magic. Your author's comments in this paragraph apply to them, too. The second major problem with sympathetic magic is the sometimes shattered expectations and weakening of the faith of the practitioners should God say, "No" or "Not at this time." Most religious people do not understand God's Strange Plan – hence this book. God's plan, his will, and his timing have to have preeminence over any individual human, most assuredly including your author. All this said, God can show mercy and use his free will to answer prayers and sometimes he does. So people continue to practice sympathetic magic because sometimes it works. What it does not do is to change God's Strange Plan.

Sympathetic magic → sometimes works

Sympathetic magic → will not change → the big picture concerning → God's Strange Plan

Before the secular elite and their more rabid followers get too high and mighty ridiculing religious practitioners of sympathetic magic, many of them, whether they realize it or not, practice a form of what amounts to **secular sympathetic magic**. A good example of this

involves those secular “elite” leaders who attempt to play god and re-order both human nature and also society. Their attempted rearrangement is basically an appeal to Plato’s perfect un-seeable forms or an attempt to carry out some Philosophy of History, both beyond the scope of this book (your author’s *Life Charts* book discusses both in more detail). Basically, it comes down to, if the deck chairs on the cruise ship of the earth can be arranged correctly, with enough human beings being “perfected” through adopting and practicing the prescribed correct-by-assertion secular practices, through tax incentive and disincentives, through regulations, and any other behavioral modification techniques employed to change and perfect human nature, then “Walla!” The expected results include: incredible economic growth from people who have better education, better health care, greener jobs, etc., and better people, happier people, lots of tax income to redirect where the top secular elite leaders wish, etc. It is metaphysical and intellectual drivel. Some of the secular elite are not even aware they are Neo-Platonists. Many of the secular elite would like to set up society with a top tier of elite secular philosophers and planners, protected from the citizenry by a police and military tier, with both top tiers supported by the laboring

masses. As your author will point out in this book's chapter seven, there are both divine laws and natural laws that govern the universe. Some of those natural laws include economic laws that the secular elite routinely ignore and hope to get away with. And, as previously pointed out, the secular elite and governments worldwide rationalize the widespread violation of individual natural rights. Any society not built in accordance with both divine and natural laws, including the respect for individual natural rights is inherently unstable and will eventually fail. Further still, if there is no standard of the right and if, according to "evolution as science" this life is all there is, who can know what to do or where to lead? Not the Neo-Platonic secular elite, or anyone else. How is one considered to be elite if there is no standard of the right? How is one considered a leader if there is no divine laws or natural laws to use to guide decisions in order to be both ethical and rational? The self-proclaimed elite, experimenting on human beings and forming human institutions to carry out their behavior and society-modifying desires, will not solve The Tragedy of Being, either. They will only waste and destroy human lives and centuries of accumulated capital in a failed attempt.

Some innovative and enterprising men want to better human life by developing and implementing technological breakthroughs. Of course, scientific, engineering, and technological breakthroughs that help human beings live better lives are to be commended. This is a part of fulfilling the command to have dominion over the earth found in Genesis 1:26-28. The problem with technological advances and implementations is that they can be for good, e.g., medical and agricultural advances, or for bad, e.g., more powerful and potentially lethal nuclear and other weapon systems. Counter-veiling competing forces are at play. The central problem here, in an era where there is no widely agreed upon standard of the right is this: modern technology in the hands of ethical infants puts all of us at risk. The Tragedy of Being comes from bad values, the lack of virtues, and then bad choices leading to bad consequences. Technology does not change people's ethical values or choices, or the resulting consequences. In short, technology can make Being better, but it cannot ultimately change The Tragedy of Being. Even though some of the technological innovations can make our standard of living and our physical health better, there is an overall limit to what

technology can achieve, e.g., it cannot give us eternal life, nor bring back Grandma.

Without getting too much into economics, people are forced to value, choose, and then to take actions in building out their lives. Many choices that we are forced to make are binary choices. A binary choice for your author's purposes here is when choosing option "A" means you now must forego also pursuing option "B." And human nature being what it is, we would like to have both options A + B. Losing out on option B means that choosing option A had an **opportunity cost** associated with it. People hate opportunity costs, but they are inescapable. People further hate **executional risk**, the chance that their desired course of action might end up taking more time or costing more than they originally thought. In short, choosing option A might end up being a loss and all of us hate to lose, some more so than others. It is also true that each human being has what amounts to shifting personal values; we sometimes change our minds about what we want even while we are still in the process of executing option A. Also, even if we succeed in executing option A, if our personal values did shift, we might, though successful at executing option A, nonetheless experience a

**psychic loss.** It happens to the best of us from time to time. Ergo, many people, not all, would like to escape from the reality of valuing and choosing and taking action by: 1) delegating their decision making to a tribal or collective leader, or 2) to somehow being taken care of by the government, i.e., sometimes people are impatient or lazy or afraid and just want to take some kind of a shortcut (like a government handout from "taxing the rich") so they covet what is not available to them and then rationalize how they will take what other people have produced. In the modern era, for all too many, **majority vote** is thought to excuse evil. It does not. And delegating your personal choices to the leader of some collective or to a government is not going to exempt you or anyone else from the consequences of: 1) not valuing your own mind, 2) choosing to have someone else choose for you, or 3) the results of your delegation, including harm to others, even if said harm was the result of a political process. Trying to hide in a collective, e.g., a labor union, a political party, a religion, a racially-motivated group, a gender-based group, a trade association, etc., is not going to save you from reality, nor will it save you from The Tragedy of Being.

The leaders of a collective including all government leaders are also human beings and even when they are valuing, choosing, and taking action for their collective or government they, too, are subject to economic laws. They, too, will experience opportunity costs lost, and they might very well experience failures from executional risk, and psychic losses from shifting personal value scales. In short, no government or collective, no matter how well managed, can save anyone from The Tragedy of Being and they cannot exempt themselves from God's Strange Plan or the natural laws that are extant in the universe. Governments can only give to one group of people (the non-productive tax receivers) what they have first taken from another group of people (the productive tax payers). Because of this and many other reasons beyond the scope of this section of the book, governments can rarely make things better, but they can absolutely make things much worse.

God will solve The Tragedy of Being ... after he is done using it for his purposes. It will not be solved in a human way, such as through all of the attempts listed in this section, but, strangely enough, it will be done with some human cooperation. And no human being can

escape from The Tragedy of Being, nor completely kill the pain of it. Until God does solve the problem, there is a lot of truth to the saying, "Hell is other people," ... along with some evil spirit beings, too.

## **Chapter Five**

### **Why The Left Can't Deliver**

There are no political solutions to spiritual problems. Government rules and regulations and power cannot force virtue into human beings, nor can they function as a substitute for good human values. Some human efforts to escape from or to fix The Tragedy of Being were detailed in the last chapter. This chapter will focus on some of the main efforts of those known as "The Left" to use the power of government in an attempt to change society and the world to what they regard as better. The next chapter will do the same for "The Right." Again, there are no political solutions to spiritual problems. Because this is a book on God's Strange Plan, and not a book on politics, per se, your author is going to try and hit the high points of why neither The Left nor The Right can deliver a satisfactory solution to the ongoing and

very tough human problem of The Tragedy of Being.

### **5.1 Secular Humanism – once again, And Then What?**

The intelligentsia of The Left has **a wrong model of the world** and how it operates. Because of this, any “solutions” offered by The Left are usually glaringly wrong. As a housekeeping point, those known in the USA as “liberals” are different from their running mates of The Left. This much is true. However, if liberals are taking moral and intellectual leadership from The Left and liberals are lending their political power, time, energy, and money to The Left, then liberals have, in substance and effect, joined with The Left to their own harm and to the harm of the general population.

As a further housekeeping point, when your author writes, “The Left,” and then writes something like, “The Left wants,” it must be understood by the reader that an ideology does not choose or want anything. It is the leaders of that particular ideology, the individual people who function on behalf of the ideology, that value, choose, and act. It is just easier to write something like “The Left wants power.” And it is

easier to read, so that is your author's convention throughout this book. But it is always an individual(s) that values, chooses, and acts, whether for themselves or as a leader for a collective of some kind.

The Left likes to use the concentrated power of government in their attempt to remake the world and people into "the correct image" that is in political fashion at the time. Of course, The Left's correct image is by assertion, irrespective of what individuals may want themselves. The first big problem with trying to use the power of government to make the world better is that government is organized force and force cannot really change human valuations, human choices, or their consequences. Nor can force be used to convert human beings from being vicious to being virtuous, which is necessary for Being to change for the better. What force can do is it can punish those who disagree and it can attempt to silence those who disagree. Force can tax and regulate and spend, and in so doing take away some otherwise permissible choices, but it cannot fix Being. In point of fact, the wrong use of force makes Being worse, much worse, certainly not better. And this is why it is so tragic in the modern era that the secular standard of the right of the respect for others'

individual natural rights has largely gone by the wayside. **Rights are legally changed to privileges** (not lawfully) and anyone who dissents with The Left's morality by assertion or The Left's truth by assertion is then stripped of their privileges - natural rights having been converted into government-allowed privileges. In short, **The Left is dangerous**. Those having a wrong model of how the universe is ordered and also a wrong model of how the world is ordered, who also believe in concentrating and using force in an attempt to make things better, are ethical infants, intellectually confused, and, should they ever get their hands on real power, tyrants to everyone who disagrees with them.

The Left has an incorrect model of the world.

The Left believe in the use of force to change human nature and to solve world problems.

The Left changed individual natural rights → to government-dispensed privileges

The Left punishes those who disagree with them  
→ taking away privileges, if necessary

The Left → should they get their hands on power  
→ are dangerous to the entire human race

The above should be enough to end The Left receiving any political support at all and certainly should be enough to deny them power because they will not hesitate to use power on anyone who stands in their way to remake the world and human nature itself into whatever the leaders of The Left decide is for the common good.

It gets even worse and this was covered, in essence, in this book's chapter one. Even if The Left were correct in their metaphysics that there is no God, what possible good would it do for the vast majority of the human race to cede political power, dangerous concentrated governmental power, to a group that will not answer your author's two questions:

1. What is your (The Left's) standard of the right?
2. How did you arrive at said standard?

The Left have no standard of the right they could articulate without being ridiculed by the vast majority of the human race. Articulating a standard of the right, with clearly defined terms, pristine identifications showing facts, detailing

out cause and effect, etc., would be a lot of serious ethical and intellectual work and would subject The Left to criticism. For your author's purposes here, criticism means reasoned ethical and intellectual discourse – in other words, for constructive criticism. If the leaders representing The Left want to lead the world they should be forced to answer your author's two questions. They will not. To do so would expose them as the Emperor with no ethical or intellectual clothes. Equity will be discussed later in this chapter, particularly section 5.5, and in other places throughout this book. As a placeholder here, The Left does not understand justice and their attempt at "equity" would destroy most of the people of earth and impoverish the rest.

Another very large problem for anyone foolish enough to give his or her time, energy, money, emotional support, etc., to The Left, is the already discussed question: Follow you to where, exactly? What will it be like when we get there? An individual human being only has so many years of life and precisely how many are not known in advance to any of us. If The Left is correct, evolution really is a science, and there is no God ... then why should any of us care about or waste any of our resources on

politics at all? To what end? And then what? If there is, de facto, no purpose to human life, we live 70-90 years or so and then die, and then we are dead for all eternity, why should anyone waste what precious little time they have on politics? Why not work as little as possible, play as much as possible, and try to make the best of a tough situation for as long as we can? The Left, even if they are metaphysically correct, which they are not, cannot lead anyone anywhere. There is no "THERE" there to lead to. In short, **The Left are game theory morons.** And those following them are, too. Even if The Left is correct that there is no God, they lose. Following a game theory strategy where even if you are correct you lose is what a mental defective would do.

The Left → are → game theory morons

Any people → following The Left → are game theory morons, too

For the most part the vast majority of the world's public school systems and also the world's university systems are greatly influenced by or under the control of The Left and they have poisoned the minds and hearts of generations of men and women. The negative

fruit is before us. The systematic education of the people of the world to disbelieve the existence of God, to take out all forms of divine law, to strip away any purpose to human life, and to leave mankind ethically confused and intellectually confused and/or wrong is a tragedy for the human race. Further, it leaves men and women searching for meaning when no meaning is possible because they are taught that man is a happy evolutionary accident. The Left's "the good" by assertion, i.e., ethics by assertion is not ethics, nor is truth by assertion truth. Most of the educational systems of the world have devolved under the influence or control of The Left to the point where morality and truth are asserted, instead of systematically and logically explained. The irony of those who advocate "Critical Theory" is that they are not good at critical thinking, which will be covered in the next section. The educational system of the world, under the influence or control of The Left, produces ethical infants and intellectually confused or even **brainwashed people**. In short, instead of helping men and women to become good, intelligent, independent, and mature The Left is in the process of creating the opposite. People who believe it is all right to dispense with other people's individual natural rights by majority vote and who are ethically

and intellectually confused become perfect followers for those who believe in government power, a power that will be unethically used on dissenters to The Left's quest to substitute themselves for a real and living God.

The Left cannot change human nature.

The Left cannot remake society in order to deliver utopia.

The Left are no substitute for a real and living God.

The Left cannot give eternal life to anyone.

The Left cannot bring Grandma back.

The Left are intellectually confused, ethical infants, with a wrong model of how the universe operates.

The Left are power hungry political animals that wish to rule over their fellow men and women.

While The Left cannot provide a meaningful, substantive, and abundant life, much less give anyone eternal life, they can waste their

follower's precious lives, emotional energy, and resources.

If given enough power The Left can destroy the entire human race. This is because they have no rational standard of ethics and are willing to use concentrated power on their enemies, i.e., all who would dare to disagree with their → ethics by assertion + truth by assertion

The Left → ethical infants → who want power

The Left → the intellectually confused → who want leadership

Because The Left possesses no standard of the right they will logically articulate, other than their ethics by assertion, they engender conflicts between religions, races, genders, economic classes, unions versus management, citizens versus government workers, nations against nations, etc. With no standard of the right being readily available to most men as a result of The Left, there is nothing rational with which to appeal to that is higher than every human being to which standard we all must aspire to in order for their to be peace among men. The Left are local, national, and international breakers of the peace, i.e., they are warmongers.

The Left → are peace breakers ... worse still

The Left → are actual warmongers

A further human tragedy as a result of The Left is the breaking of the peace in families at home. This breaking of the peace at home occurs when parents try to install their religious and other family values to their children, but the children have already been taught at school to, in effect, disbelieve what they are being taught at home. This engenders constant generational family conflict that can last for years and all this further guts human happiness due to the lack of real family harmony. As previously reported, about 85% of the people of the world have some kind of religious beliefs with only about 15% not believing in a God of any kind. This means that about 85% of all homes are in constant conflict with the public schools and universities of the world.

Because this is a book about God and man it behooves your author to point out there are divine laws. The Left disregard divine laws in an organized way, as do The Right, and so does virtually every other man and woman on earth at the present time, but not all. There are huge

consequences concerning this disregard, but this will be covered in more detail later in this book.

Human nature has been corrupted and is sinful, but human beings can use their free will to overcome vices and to become better, wiser people. Human beings can also learn how to revalue their values. This will be explained in chapter ten as part of your author's explanation of God's Strange Plan. The purpose of this brief paragraph serves as a placeholder until that time with the main point right here being that The Left and Secular Humanism are wrong about human nature being perfectible via governmental education, incentives, and force. Similar to your author's two pointed questions being asked about any ethical assertions, e.g., about The Left's standard of the right, the human race should ask the elite leaders of The Left to provide evidence in their own lives of the perfectibility of human nature. This, of course would be rebuffed out of hand because to attempt to show perfection in a leader of The Left would not be possible and The Left knows it. To even attempt such a demonstration would use up the wannabe leader's entire life ending with a display of futility that would expose, once again, that the human-race-perfecting Emperor has no clothes. They never do because they are

also members of the human race, not exempt from it, and also not above it.

Any leader of The Left who believes in and advocates for human nature being perfectible should be forced to prove it first in their own life BEFORE they would be entitled to then use power or influence on any other human being's life. The human Emperor never has any clothes.

The Left is "leading" the human race to → an even **Greater Tragedy of Being**

Secular Humanism, the "religion" or metaphysics of The Left, cannot solve the problems of Being, cannot provide an abundant eternal life, and cannot lead any human being anyplace meaningful. The Left's attempt at secular leadership has wasted valuable human lives and it has peopled the world with ethical infants and intellectually confused, frustrated, and angry human beings. Further, it has also spawned unending human conflicts between and within nations. In short, The Left is actively leading the human race to an even Greater Tragedy of Being. The Left cannot deliver a utopia in this world. The Left cannot deliver eternal life. And The Left cannot bring Grandma back, either. No one in their right mind would

follow them, but the problem is that under the ethical, intellectual, and educational leadership of The Secular Humanist Left, people are no longer in their right minds. And then what?

## **5.2 Postmodern Critical Theory is nihilistic and dangerous for the human race**

One of the central things that differentiate homo sapiens sapiens (anatomically and behaviorally modern man) from all other species is our ability to think. Of course there are other things, but they are not necessary to discuss in this section of the book. Without man's ability to think, to plan, to project, to learn, to communicate, etc., we would likely get outcompeted in nature by other species who are faster, stronger, more vicious, etc. Thinking is necessary for man to survive and to have the chance to thrive. Reason is what man uses to discover and then apply the laws of nature for our benefit. Writing secularly, reason is man's primary survival tool.

All thinking is logical or it is not thinking. Thank you Ludwig Wittgenstein. Without logic you don't have thinking and thinking is necessary for man to survive. Any attack upon logic is an attack on man's ability to survive.

Thinking → is necessary → for man

All thinking = logical, or it is not thinking

Logic (reason) → how man discovers the laws of nature

Logic (reason) → how man applies the laws of nature for his benefit

Any attack upon logic/reason = an attack upon man's ability to survive and thrive

One would hope the above would be so patently obvious and clearly true that there would not be the need for this section of the book. Unfortunately, The Left has adopted as a philosophy that has come to be known as **Critical Theory**, which is part and parcel of postmodernism. And now this section of the book is necessary.

"**Critical theory** (also capitalized as 'Critical Theory' to distinguish the school of thought from a theory that is in some way 'critical') is an approach to social philosophy that focuses on reflective assessment and critique of society and culture in order to reveal and challenge power

structures. With origins in sociology and literary criticism, it argues that social problems are influenced and created more by societal structures and cultural assumptions than by individual and psychological factors. Maintaining that ideology is the principal obstacle to human liberation, critical theory was established as a school of thought primarily by the Frankfurt School theoreticians Herbert Marcuse, Theodor Adorno, Walter Benjamin, Erich Fromm, and Max Horkheimer. Horkheimer described a theory as critical insofar as it seeks 'to liberate human beings from the circumstances that enslave them.' Quoted from Wikipedia's entry on Critical Theory, sans footnote notations [any emphasis mine]

"**Postmodernism** is generally defined by an attitude of skepticism, irony, or rejection toward what it describes as the grand narratives and ideologies associated with modernism, often criticizing Enlightenment rationality and focusing on **the role of ideology in maintaining political or economic power**. Postmodern thinkers frequently describe knowledge claims and value systems as contingent or socially-conditioned, framing them as products of political, historical, or cultural discourses and hierarchies. Common targets of postmodern

criticism include universalist ideas of objective reality, morality, truth, human nature, reason, science, language, and social progress.

Accordingly, postmodern thought is broadly characterized by tendencies to self-consciousness, self-referentiality, **epistemological and moral relativism, pluralism, and irreverence.**" Quoted from Wikipedia's entry on Postmodernism, sans footnote notations [any emphasis mine]

Critical Theory probably started as some sloppy "thinking" synthesis of incoherent social philosophy and literary criticism. It is one thing to read and criticize a novel concerning: 1) how the novel depicted or failed to depict the real world, or 2) what the novelist should have chosen to portray in their story but did not, or 3) if a particular character in the story was sufficiently developed to be believable or not, but it is an entirely different matter to then jump to 4) what the actual real world should be, but is not. This may seem unfair, but it is not a very large step from criticizing fiction and wishing the world being depicted in the novel were different, to all of a sudden thinking you can edit the actual world with the proper criticism. Novels are not the real world. It is true that a good critic can provide a useful

public service if they are intelligent, honest, and a good communicator, e.g., a restaurant critic, or a literary critic. That said, while a literary critic can provide the service of saving your time and money because you don't buy and read a really bad novel, it is an epic fail to then "think" that literary critics masquerading as social philosophers can somehow edit reality.

**Reality cannot be edited with a red pencil.** There are natural laws that govern the universe and humans are not able to edit them. We can manipulate nature to make useful products and we can overcome gravity by launching a rocket into outer space, but that is not the same as editing the natural laws that are always operational in the universe. In other words, the critical theorist's or the social philosopher's wish is not reality's command. There are also divine laws constantly operating in the universe, but this will be covered more in the last four chapters of this book, and not here.

Reality → CANNOT be edited with a red pencil!

If men abandon reason → reality → cannot be discovered because reason (logic) is the tool men must use → in order to discover reality

If you do not follow the rules of logic → you will miss the truth

Thinking they do mankind service → critical theorists are → intellectually confused

Thinking they do mankind service → critical theorists → attack man's best survival tool → logic (reason)

What post-modernism in the form of Critical Theory leads to is: 1) intellectual nihilism and then 2) actual nihilism. Critical Theory leads to intellectual nihilism because after the critical theorist's attack on logic itself, they then seek to tear down scientific and moral accomplishments in other fields. All of those other fields use logical principles to establish truth. The acceptance and practice of Critical Theory leads to actual nihilism because when there is no longer an appeal available to: 1) divine law or 2) to natural laws discoverable by reason or 3) to unassailable individual natural rights, then the only avenue left with which to ultimately resolve disputes is the use of **superior force**, which is the main reason why the postmodernists and critical theorists are obsessed with power structures and power itself. ("If the world is one way, a way we do not like, due to historical

power structures and superior force, it can be altered to be the way we want it should we get our hands on said superior force," says the postmodern critical theorist.)

After being "educated" (brainwashed) by postmodernists and critical theorists it is no wonder that in order to "protect themselves" frightened people then band together into political parties, tribes, gangs, militias, militarized nations, etc. In an immoral and irrational world it is more dangerous to be by yourself because it leaves you more vulnerable to power being used against you in an attempt to either kill you, steal your property, or to enslave you. So people join collectives and tribes as a survival mechanism in order to try and obtain as much power as is possible. Of course, in an immoral and irrational world, if the acquisition of power is actually achieved, then said power would very likely be used on others if the wielders of power believe they can get away with it. So we have now entered into an **age of immoral and irrational activism**, coupled with modern weaponry and people-control technology. All of this is why postmodernism and its Critical Theory is so very dangerous. They are leading the human race towards actual nihilism where modern weaponry could end life

on earth, as we know it. This is because: 1) said modern weaponry exists, 2) it could end up in the hands of those obsessed with power structures, power, and the use of power over others, and 3) if said wielders of power believe Being is not fair, right, correct, unjust, etc., they will “rationalize” the use of power in an attempt to “make things right.” But power cannot solve problems whose sources are a lack of morality, a lack of rationality, a lack of human virtues, bad values, bad choices, etc. Power can only breach the peace and start the next war. Power destroys, not builds. The immoral and irrational actors spawned by and children of postmodernist “thought” and Critical Theory actually believe they can somehow edit reality with their red pencil of power. They can somehow change human nature, disregard God, change the laws of nature, etc. And when they find out they cannot do any of those things, they will be angry, they will be vicious, and they will want to take out their frustrations by using their power on someone somewhere. Unwittingly (for the most part), under the influence of Satan the nihilist, these spiritual and intellectual children of Satan will rationalize that if they can destroy in their minds a flawed structure, such as Western Civilization, it will somehow make them important, or good. It will not. (All civilizations

are composed of human beings and because of this all of them are flawed, including any a postmodern critical theorist would attempt to construct.) It is as if an act of destruction, if great enough, equates the immoral, irrational destroyers with moral, rational, achievers (builders). It does not. It only takes moments to destroy what it takes a peaceful creator days, months, or even years to build. Destruction is always easier than doing the moral, thoughtful, patient, and hard work of building.

Moral, rational, production > immoral, irrational, nihilistic destruction ... and it always will be

The postmodern activists are on a “quest for universal justice.” They evidently do not understand or care about how important it is for morality and reason to function side-by-side in creating a social environment where there are known and respected laws and enough trust for production and trade to happen. In other words, there must be a widely accepted standard of the right that most people accept and adhere to as a prerequisite to the formation and deployment of capital as an aid to production. They further do not understand how important the creation and deployment of capital is. Without adequately deployed capital,

production plummets. Perhaps even more worrisome, they believe there are too many people on the earth and would actually be pleased if human beings were killed – so long as it is not them or their loved ones. This last fact further confirms them as enemies of God and man.

Critical Theory has led to a general systemic failure of reason in the minds of the people of The Left. And since The Left has long ago abandoned God and divine laws, but feels somehow entitled to play God while ignoring other men's individual natural rights, The Left, under the influence of postmodernist Critical Theory, are, in substance and effect, morally and intellectually rudderless ... as are those who follow The Left. But man needs known-in-advance-of-decisions ethical guidelines. And man needs reason as his tool of survival. Man needs a standard of moral and intellectual right. Critical Theory destroys both. In short, Critical Theory has been the accelerant to an age of immoral and irrational activism - an activism that is not checked by either reason or ethics, and, hence, dangerous to man. Reason and ethics interweave with each other to help man and we need both of them.

Critical Theory → the accelerant → to an age of immoral and irrational activism

**Moral nihilism** leaves mankind without ethical knowledge. Every man needs to know right from wrong before they value, before they choose, and before they take an action. Moral nihilism leads to “might makes right” and “the winners write the history.” As a footnote, it can even lead to attempting to change history, as if that were possible (it is not), which is to say that now we are even starting to have **history by assertion.**

**Intellectual nihilism** leaves mankind without wisdom, without an understanding of the context of situations, and largely without trusted knowledge. Everything is suspect. Intellectual nihilism also hurts ethics. As an example of how reason and ethics interweave, man needs to use reason to help establish an ethic, at least at the secular level, i.e., what is good? Ironically, The Left likes attempting to govern through institutions and without intellectual certainty people distrust the institutions The Left has set up. People engage in political or actual fighting over who gets to control the institutions because those

institutions have the “all important” power. Ergo, without intellectual wisdom or understanding, and only partial knowledge disconnected from reality and out of context, you basically have **group existentialism** and institutions engaging in human experimentation and then also **personal existentialism**. Both moral nihilism and intellectual nihilism lead to political and actual fighting over who gets to have power and whom do they get to use it on? Critical Theory leads to obsessions over power. Just who has power of all kinds, how did they get it, and how do we get some of it so we can use power on others in order to make things right? This is all a complete disregard of God and the divine laws and of individual natural rights as ethical standards. Under The Left the instruments that were supposed to be helping men to lead better lives have become **corrupt institutions** morally and intellectually poisoning men.

What the Critical Theory adherents have evidently not thought through is this: if logic cannot be trusted then there is no intellectual standard of the right, either. All logical arguments go by the wayside. This includes political arguments. Political assertions to gain power are not truth because assertions are not

truth. No unsupported assertion is truth; it is merely an assertion, which is to say, a hope, a wish, a fantasy, or a daydream. **An unsupported assertion is a fantasy attempt to edit reality with a red pen.** “If only I had power then I could edit reality to bring about my version of utopia.” Really? How? Can anyone edit God out of his universe? Satan already tried and failed (Isaiah 14 and Ezekiel 28). Can anyone really dissolve divine laws instituted by God? Can anyone change natural laws instituted by God? Can someone violate other men’s individual natural rights without experiencing fighting and warfare, i.e., dangerous pushback? If logic is not something we can trust then no one, including The Left, can make a fully supported winning argument using facts, logic, cause and effect, etc. The Left’s “logic” is also not logic and therefore not trustable, either.

If logic cannot be trusted → there is no → intellectual standard of the right

If logic cannot be trusted → The Left also cannot make a reasoned argument

It is not just intellectual nihilism that is a problem for The Left. The bigger problem, in

the eyes of those wanting to obtain power they can then wield over others, is this: if there is no standard of the right, then The Left, too, cannot be right – so there is no point in following them.

**No one can be right if there is no standard of the right.** All of this is sad for the confused products of the government school and university systems because people end up being brainwashed and programmed to be used for their time, energy, and resources under the ruse of caring, sharing, togetherness, compassion, establishing social justice, etc.

Taken into account what your author has written so far, the predictable and standard calls from The Left for “unity” become a moral and an intellectual bad joke. The Left has no moral standard they can rationally espouse for the following reasons: 1) the rejection of God by the teaching of evolution as a science, 2) the rejection of all forms of divine law, 3) the wanton disregard of other men’s individual natural rights, 4) The Left’s unwillingness to fully articulate and rationally defend any other standard of the right, and 5) The Left’s attack on logic leaves them without reason to use to articulate a standard of the right, if they chose to, which they do not. So to what standard of the moral right should the followers of The Left

aspire to? Should anyone just agree with an arbitrary, non-objective, list of political assertions? Trying to unify around a set of “politically correct,” but baseless assertions is similar in a way to trying to follow The Left, or other secular leaders, when there is no “THERE” there to be led to. In this case there is no MORAL “THERE” there to be led to so as to inspire a desire for unity. Ethical and honest men do not aspire to unity with a Hitler or a Stalin. It is not to be desired and both Hitler and Stalin had a lot of power to bestow onto their loyal followers. So does Satan for his spiritual seed line, but only until the two Jehovahs decide to put an end to all this amoral and immoral stupidity.

There is no possibility → for Unity → to an ethical standard espoused by The Left → because The Left destroys any rational standard of what is correct and then → refuses to articulate a coherent replacement standard

The Left simply wants → POWER → to use on their fellow men, in particular their fellow men that commit the greatest moral breach of all → disagreeing with The Left’s arbitrary “moral” assertions

Similar to The Left's problem with trying to rally followers to an amoral/immoral unity standard of ethically hollow and baseless assertions, The Left cannot inspire intellectual unity either. Here is why. If an important part of your standard method of operation hinges on attacking logic then you, too, in effect, destroy any capacity of your own to make a reasoned argument. Everything that The Left writes or that comes out of their mouth also cannot be trusted, even if what comes out are The Left's "hallowed" politically correct assertions.

Assertions are not truth, nor are they, de facto, correct. Facts, evidence, clear identification, a showing of cause and effect, a realistic assessment of the context of the situation, clearly defined terms, etc., along with coherent and consistent reasoning must establish and support truth. Your author has written an entire book on the corruption of thought. For the reader's benefit the title is, *Intellectual Warfare: The Corruption Of Philosophy And Thought*.

The "best" case for → The Left → intellectually confused muddleheads

The secular worst case for → The Left → destroyers of ethics and intelligence →  
breachers of the peace → dangerous to mankind

The absolute worst case for → The Left →  
Satan's spiritual and intellectual seed line, slated  
for eternal destruction → Why?

Satan → Satan's spiritual and intellectual seed  
line → The Left → Critical Theory → moral  
nihilism → intellectual nihilism → obsessions  
over power → lack of peace → political fighting  
→ actual fighting → potential destruction of the  
human race, i.e., actual nihilism

Postmodernism and Critical Theory are  
morally and intellectually incoherent and  
dangerous to the human race. Man needs both  
a code of ethics and reason to use to build out a  
successful life. Postmodernism and Critical  
Theory, espoused by The Left, undermine both  
ethics and reason to the detriment of the human  
race. It leaves the human race morally and  
intellectually rudderless against the storms of  
life ... and many of those storms The Left  
themselves are generating through their amoral,  
immoral, and unreasonable grasping for power.

### **5.3 The Left does not value actual individuals**

Can anyone really be considered to be intelligent, to care, to have good intentions, to be wise, and to be a benefactor of mankind if they do not really respect the individual natural rights of others? Other people are individuals. Each individual has hopes, dreams, plans, family and friends, etc., that are important to them. Each individual man and woman values their life, their liberty, and their property. How does being willing to violate others' individual natural rights, even through a political process, make doing so right? It does not. How could it? Tax slavery by majority vote is wrong. As previously mentioned, the government is not a gigantic washing machine that clears away moral and intellectual stains. This is also true for collectives of all kinds, including tribes.

A central and very real problem behind The Left wanting to obtain and then use power on others is to be found in the realization that The Left does not actually value individual, particular, concrete men and women. This is because what The Left values is power itself. And you cannot use the kind of power The Left wants to achieve for itself on others if you value

those others as individuals, if you are forced to acknowledge that those individuals might use their own minds, dare to disagree with you, and then to do something you do not approve of, something that would foil your big utopian plans for **mankind**. The Left almost always sees “mankind” in their plans, but not distinct individuals with hopes, dreams, resources, and plans of their own.

The elite leaders of → The Left → do not actually value individual men and women

The Left cannot value individual men and women because to do so would require actually respecting and not just paying lip service to the life, liberty, and property of others. If The Left valued actual individuals and respected natural rights then they could not use power on those individuals and this The Left cannot abide. What is the point of obtaining power and then not using it to remake the world in your utopian image? When forced to choose between individuals and power The Left “has to” choose their god, power, and they do (Daniel 11:38).

When faced with the choice between → individuals OR their God, power → The Left →

chooses power AND then rationalizes the violation of individual natural rights

Because The Left wants to somehow hold in their minds they are “the good guys,” they have to disregard other individuals and treat them as if they are inanimate objects to be moved around or disposed of, if necessary. The Left thinks nothing of dispensing with others’ property through egregious taxation, others’ liberty through prohibitions against dissenting views and through people-control laws and regulations, etc. If you resist a government dominated by The Left you will be imprisoned or killed.

To further confirm that The Left does not actually value individuals is the willingness of “the cancel culture” to try and cancel the careers and lives of individuals who have made mistakes, even mistakes made many years in the past. There is no regard for any good or human potential in a person who has made a mistake; the erring person is to just be disposed of, with no regard for what it will do to them or their families. There is no mercy. No sane person would advocate for the treatment of others like this because of **the hypocrisy involved** and because of the below scriptures:

"for all have sinned and come short of the glory of God," Romans 3:23, MKJV

"**For the wages of sin is death,** but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord." Romans 6:23, MKJV

"Judge not, that you may not be judged. **For with whatever judgment you judge, you shall be judged;** and with whatever measure you measure out, it shall be measured to you again." Matthew 7:1-2, MKJV

"Judge not, and you shall not be judged. Condemn not, and you shall not be condemned. Forgive, and you shall be forgiven."  
Luke 6:37, MKJV

The Left → shows → no mercy → to any who have violated or disagree with → their morality by assertion

In addition to choosing power over individuals and being without any mercy at all, The Left is impatient. They have to be. After all, if you want to remake the world in your image it is going to be a lot of work and take a lot of time and resources (other people's

resources). It will certainly take too much time to actually use a moral and rational argument in an attempt to peacefully persuade other individual men and women. The Left's "solution" is to disregard "inferior others" and to disregard those inferior others' individual natural rights. This way they don't have to convince anyone; they can just order other people around and take their property (their life savings) to use in The Left's attempt to play god and remake the world into an image of their liking in order to "make things right."

Being impatient with others, being mercilessly willing to cancel others, and choosing power over people instead of respecting the individual natural rights of others is a wanton **lack of empathy** toward others. This is the mentality of a **psychopath**. A psychopath does not care about other individuals, or the harm he/she does to them.

The Left → exhibits many of the tendencies → of psychopaths

The Left → values → power > individual people

The Left does not actually value other individual men and women because it values

power more. The Left is lacking in mercy to those they regard as having made a serious mistake and they will not hesitate to cancel the perceived offender. The Left will also attempt to cancel any who pose opposition to their ideology's assertions. And The Left is impatient. Rather than make a moral and rational argument (how could they if they wanted to?) they prefer to put out of their mind the fact that their policies will wantonly violate the individual natural rights of others. Your author has heard them make sick jokes, something like, "Well if you want to make an omelet, you have to break a few eggs." To speak or think like that shows just how little The Left values individuals because those are not eggs we are talking about. We are talking about valuable individual men and women who have hopes, dreams, goals, families needing resources, and cares of their own. No one wants to be broken like an egg to make an omelet for some immoral and irrational psychopath's vision of utopia.

#### **5.4 The Left and the natural scientists are confused about human consciousness, uniqueness, and individual choice**

The Left put themselves into a difficult situation when they threw God out of his

universe, questioned the consistency of natural laws, questioned logic itself, rationalized that individual men do not really have inviolable natural rights, adopted intellectually nihilistic Critical Theory, and then are stuck with trying to convince themselves and others they actually believe in science and reason. Once again, and it cannot be written or said too many times, “all thinking is logical, or it is not thinking.” Further, please allow your author to point out an important fact: **if you do not have the right answer, you are not the leader.** The Left does not have the right answers and they never will until they change their incorrect beliefs.

If you do not have the right answer → you are not the leader

The purpose of this section of the book is to show that the natural scientists, not just The Left, are also missing on some key intellectual points: human consciousness, human uniqueness, and human choice as a causative factor being the major ones. The reason this needs to be pointed out is because when natural scientists inform politicians, of both The Left and The Right, and when the natural scientists inform university and public school educational institutions, they, too, are wrong ... and so are

not leading the human race in the right direction. This is in addition to the gross error, with all its implications, of teaching evolution as a science.

Human consciousness has never been adequately explained by the natural scientists. They know it and they are not comfortable with the entire arena surrounding human consciousness, or human beings valuing, choosing, and then taking action. Further, The Left is not comfortable with human individuality. Individuals are hard to account for and even harder to plan for. As an aside, this is why a free market adjusts and accounts for a constantly changing world better; it is because individuals are left free to choose in order to adapt as they best see fit. In other words, the individuals plan, not the State. The Left hates this. In the real world, the fact of the matter is that the same individual might choose one way this time and a completely different way the next time, even when presented with the same basic choice. A further fact of the matter is that two different individuals faced with the same basic choice choose differently. Further still, an individual might choose one way when they are younger and then a different way when they get older, i.e., as their tastes hopefully refine, etc.

And so human beings are **unpredictable** and very hard to plan for. This drives The Left crazy. It almost seems like The Left would like to freeze the universe into a static state with them at the top of a human pyramid and then put a master plan into place whereby they stayed on top so they can plan for other people (actually for themselves). Individuals, on the other hand, want pesky things like controlling their own lives, liberty, and private property and so are an obstacle to all this. Individuals choosing to believe differently than The Left's set of assertions is an additional complication. And when an individual or group of individuals dare to openly disagree with and oppose the "**asserted official orthodoxy**" it drives The Left crazy. Further yet still, when individuals value, choose, and then take action in ways The Left's asserted official orthodoxy would not approve of, then it is time for The Left, in their way of "thinking," to institute people-control systems. **The Left always want people-control systems.** This is because they are confused about what is actually going on in the universe.

Each human being → is a unique individual

Unique individuals → value and choose differently

The idea of a God who has created the universe with a set of both moral and natural laws, who also created the earth as a special habitation, with man as God's crowning creation (Genesis 1:26-28), and who gave each man a mind is either foreign to their thinking or disregarded by The Left and most natural scientists. There is a reason for God to create individuals, each with a mind. The really short answer is because God wants men to be moral and to be moral the individual in question must choose the right and also do the right. This requires a mind, free will, and time. Neither the natural scientists nor The Left get what God is doing, which is to say they do not understand what is really happening in the universe or on this earth. Ergo, neither the natural scientists by themselves, or The Left can provide valid answers to important questions. If they had taken God and the Bible seriously, they would know a lot more than they do.

The Bible, in effect, has actually answered how it is that a man can think and that is something the natural scientists will never be able to figure out on their own. This is because

there is **a spirit component** added to each human brain that enables thought. It also enables each human being to value, choose, and then take action. Your author has already pointed out some of the below, earlier in this book, but it is so important he will do so again.

"But a spirit is in man giving them perception, even the breath of the Almighty."  
Job 32:8, MKJV

"So says Jehovah God, He who created the heavens and stretched them out, spreading out the earth and its offspring; He who gives breath to the people on it and spirit to those who walk in it." Isaiah 42:5, MKJV

"The burden of the word of the LORD for Israel, says the LORD, who stretches forth the heavens, and lays the foundation of the earth, and forms the spirit of man within him."  
Zechariah 12:1, MKJV

"For who among men knows the things of a man except the spirit of man within him? So also no one knows the things of God except the Spirit of God." 1 Corinthians 2:11, MKJV

the human brain + the spirit God gave to man =

the human mind → the ability to think → the ability to value, choose, and act

For centuries men have pondered how it was possible for men to be conscious, not just of themselves and others, but also of reality, i.e., our earth and the universe. In the past there were intelligent men who actually speculated that some day doctors would find a hidden organ in the brain that would explain thought, or that the biological functioning of the brain will eventually be reduced to explainable chemical reactions which will ultimately be explainable via the laws of physics. This is known as **scientism**, or a form of reductionism. Not so. The Bible explains that the two Jehovahs gave mankind the gift of thought by placing a unique spirit within us. This unique spirit enabled thought and the consciousness/thought of men has a logical structure that corresponds with the logical structure of the universe, i.e., reality. The two Jehovahs did not play games with the mind of man and make the structure of thought different somehow from the logical structure of the universe. Man was created with both the need and the ability to be able to think. This is a great gift from God and so thank you, God.

The reader can notice, from the two scriptures quoted from Isaiah and Zechariah above, that both the creation of the universe and the placing of a spirit in man, which enabled thought, are both included within the same verses. This is not an accident. It is the two Jehovahs confirming that there is no contradiction between the logical structure of reality and the logical structure of the human mind. There could not be a contradiction because man had to be able to think clearly in order to fulfill his Creator's purpose for him.

Man had to be able to think and to have freedom of choice in order to be moral. And man had to be able to think in order to live effectively and to have dominion on this earth. Without the ability to think there could be no accurate identification of things and abstraction of concepts. There could be no learning of cause and effect. And there could be no effective goal setting, no effective means selection, and no effective actions undertaken. A confused man, unable to think clearly, or to figure out what was really going on, would be at the complete mercy of his environment and man would be outcompeted by mere animals.

Thankfully, none of this is so. More on this will be explained in greater detail in chapter seven. It was mentioned here because it does form an

important part of the understanding of the context of the human condition. Again, we have the ability to think and to make choices in order to be successful in our actions and to be moral.

The natural scientists are not going to reduce biology to chemistry and then to physics or the reverse sequence and then explain the human mind. The natural scientists engage in experimentation with complex empirical phenomena. The spirit that God gave to the human brain enabling thought is not discoverable or measureable with natural scientific equipment. But no one can deny that men can think. And no thoughtful honest man can deny that human choice is a causative factor in our own lives and in the lives of others.

Human choice is a causative factor → in the plethora of phenomena in the world

Scientism = wrong

To be a true scientist or a complete scientist your theories have to stand up when measured against reality and logic. Human consciousness and choice being a causative factor in reality requires one additional scientific method to account for this. This is why the great Austrian

economist Dr. Ludwig von Mises pointed out science needs **methodological dualism** - the empirical method for the natural sciences and a praxeological method for the social sciences. Praxeology is beyond the scope of this book, but is explained by your author in his previous *Life Charts* and *Economic Fallacies Versus Rational Thought* books. The short explanation is that praxeology is a method that yields a body of knowledge pertaining to human action, human action consisting of valuing, choosing, and then taking action. There is actually logic of action and said logic of action yields surprising results, which corresponds to the real world and what is happening in it.

Dr. Ludwig von Mises also explained that within the social science of praxeology one must further concentrate on the acting individual. This is known as **methodological individualism**. It is always an individual that acts and so true social science must have an individual-oriented method, not a societal or groupthink method. And this is where The Left goes further wrong. The below few paragraphs are from your author's previous *Life Charts* book concerning how each man and woman are unique.

The fact that each person's DNA, each person's fingerprints, and each person's retinas are distinguishable shows quite clearly, from a biological perspective, that we are all different. We have different voices, shapes, ages, talents, etc. And we each have our own individual body, i.e., we inhabit a separate physical place from everyone else. Each of us also has a personality type and a temperament. Some of our human behavior is evidently genetically pre-disposed, which is not to say that rational and intentional choice cannot override this genetic pre-disposition. At any rate, our genetics are different from everyone else, ergo we are unique. There can be no question regarding our **genetic uniqueness**.

Each person also has a unique cultural upbringing. This is true even for different siblings in the same family. The oldest child, the middle children, and the youngest child each have different experiences, even within the same family. Further cultural upbringing variations include language differences, differences in religious training and beliefs, parental beliefs and training differences, formal and informal educational differences, race differences, national and governmental differences, neighborhood differences, travel

and experience differences, economic differences, differences resulting from living during different time eras, etc. All of these cultural differences (**cultural differentiators**), listed above, compound onto our genetic differences making each of us even more unique.

As we go through life, human beings have the freedom to make choices. These choices are causative factors, which have consequences, and we are responsible for those consequences. We can think and we can take action. **Human choice** is a causative factor regarding shaping the world we live in, in particular, in shaping our own world (our own life). When presented with a choice, the same human being can choose one way this time and the opposite way at a later point in time. And, when presented with the same basic set of circumstances, different men and women can and do choose differently, despite being presented with the same choosing alternatives. Human choice is a differentiating feature of human life. This is why there needs to be what is known as methodological dualism for the sciences. The natural sciences rely on the experimental method and the social sciences cannot properly use only such a method because to do so would involve human experimentation.

Further, the social sciences have to account for human choice as a causative factor, which the natural sciences do not. Human beings are not particles in motion, moving according to natural scientific laws. As a scientist, to not recognize human choice, and its effects, is non-scientific – because human choice is reality and science should conform to reality. Science should provide men with results that are in accordance with reality. In addition to genetic uniqueness, compounded by cultural differentiators, human choice itself is a further compounding differentiator resulting in even more distinctly unique individuals.

genetic uniqueness x cultural differentiators x human choices over time = individuality

As a person lives out their time on this earth all of the above differences compound over time. Our tastes change over time. As we mature, and this takes time, what we value changes as well. The bottom line result is that for everyone who has ever lived, and for everyone who ever will live, there is quite literally no one like you. There has never been anyone like you in the past. There is no one like you in the present. There will never be anyone like you in the future. You are unique. We all

are. No theory can ever argue away reality and **any theory contrary to human uniqueness and individuality is wrong.**

The Left wants to plan out human society for others and their focus tends to be on collectives or groups, not individuals. Individuality, consciousness, free will, and human choice make it impossible to plan for an entire society. Ironically, the leaders of The Left are all individuals, who have minds, and want to take the action of planning for others. They are engaged in the very activities they dislike others engaging in. As is usual among kings, religious leaders, politicians, and social reformers the “elite” leaders, in this case of The Left, hypocritically exempt themselves from the human race and assert freedoms they wish to deny others. Individuality and logic lead to individual natural rights. Human consciousness and action with natural rights mean individuals plan for themselves and don’t want or need the elite leaders of The Left. This they cannot abide so The Left blanks out on human consciousness, trusting the also blind natural scientists to come up with a credible explanation, which they do not. Next The Left rationalizes away individual natural rights or thinks the government is a very large washing machine. Then they try to

overcome human individuality and choice by instituting mass “education” and people-control systems. But individuals still choose and take action and remain unique with potentially valuable minds. Hopefully more men and women will wake up and stop following the “leaders” with the bad theories. Sorry to keep repeating, but if you do not have the right answers, you are not the leader. The Left and the natural scientists do not have the right answers pertaining to individuals and choice.

### **5.5 Social Justice Warriors do not understand justice**

As previously pointed out, peace is necessary for men on the earth to have an opportunity for good and abundant lives. Without peace you have war or the preludes to war and war destroys the lives, liberty, and property of men. War also impedes personal, national, and international planning and the fulfillment of contracts. War is absolutely devastating to the human race. The very idea of “warriors” in actuality, attitude, or rhetoric is harmful. It breaches the peace before there is war and is not constructive in any possible way. War and warriors are not the way to a better life for

mankind. Ergo, the “Social Justice Warriors” have **strike one**, using a baseball analogy.

Strike two for the Social Justice Warriors amounts to a follow-on point from strike one. Any attitude, rhetoric, or actions that lead to war are decidedly not social. People tend to threaten or use violence when they do not have either a moral or a rational argument. Someone may point out that the Social Justice Warriors are just impatient, but the impatience comes about because other men have minds and their own ideas of how to spend their time, energy, and resources in the pursuit of their own goals. The Social Justice Warriors do not want to engage in moral or rational arguments to persuade and so they engage in rhetoric and actions that are harmful. None of their attitudes, rhetoric, or actions could be construed as actually social by honest other men. Breaching the peace and violating or advocating for the violation of other men’s individual natural rights is the very opposite of being social, hence **strike two**.

The Social Justice Warriors then have **strike three** called on them because they do not even understand what the word justice means. Everyone interprets what they think justice is or

should be to their own advantage, but this cannot be since justice is both a moral and a rational principle and ergo must have a standard of the right which is unwavering. Neither moral principles nor intellectual principles should shift based on personal hopes, wishes, dreams, or interpretations, or what is happening in the world at the moment. A standard of the right is just that, **an unwavering standard**. To be fair to the Social Justice Warriors, your author has never heard or seen anyone actually accurately explain justice, so it is not only the Social Justice Warriors who are confused, it is the entire human race. Yes, justice has a dictionary definition, with aspects of what your author is about to teach below, but the problem lies in only having one word for justice. Because the human race only possesses and then uses only one word for justice, when justice incorporates two different central components, what almost always occurs in effect is a conflation of the two different and very important concepts. With no authorial apologies for this attempt at clarification, here goes:

Justice → must have a standard of the right → that is unwavering

For justice → to be justice → when dealing with individual natural rights OR when administering and applying the laws to the citizenry → it must be → **EQUAL** (everyone has equal individual natural rights and everyone must be treated the same before the laws of the land)

For justice → to be justice → when dealing with productive achievement → it must be →  
**PROPORTIONAL**

Productive achievement → means → in terms of either intellectual or economic achievement or any other kind of human achievement

The human race actually would be better served if there were → two different words → for the two central concepts encompassing → justice

People of The Left and The Right talk past each other because there are not two different words defining the two main aspects of what justice is. The Social Justice Warriors certainly do not understand what your author has contributed to the human race above. But neither does anyone else. We just use the word "justice" and presume the other party to the intended communication will understand. Usually, they do not.

Justice is important for a stable peaceful society, without which we will not have social harmony, or peace. And without peace, there will be either war or preparations for war and that can be and usually is catastrophic for the human race. The social science causal chain sequence to the betterment of the human race is as follows:

Justice → social harmony → peace → life

People in their right minds want to possess their individual natural rights and to be treated fairly and equally before a judge administering the laws of the land. Further, productive achievers want to be treated fairly by receiving the fruits of their labors. Without either, there is no justice.

This solves a central fallacy driving the Social Justice Warriors because, if possible in your author's baseball analogy they would get "**strike four**" and be thrown out of the game for making the preposterous argument that everyone should be equal in terms of outcome. When weighed against the wisdom of what your author has contributed above their idea comes up lacking. Everyone should be equal in terms of

their individual natural rights being respected and being treated equally by the laws and courts of the land. But for justice to be justice the productive achievers must receive the fruits of their rewards. A fair comprehension of reality is this: there are a variety of human intellectual and physical gifts and different individuals care more and try harder so there is no way equality of outcome can be ever be achieved. Some men and women produce more. This is how it is.

With a correct understanding of the productive achievement aspect of justice there is no need to attempt the impossible, to equalize outcomes. There is no peaceful way to equalize the unequal outcomes stemming from differences in people, including differences in personal initiative. To attempt to equalize intelligence would require killing all of the smart people and to attempt to equalize the outcomes pertaining to athletics is to kill all of the good athletes, etc. It is impossible to equalize what is inherently unequal and peace would be destroyed in the failed attempt. In short, The Left's concept of 'equity' is incoherent and also unjust.

"Please hear this, heads of the house of Jacob, and magistrates of the house of Israel,  
who hate [real] justice and **pervert all equity**."  
Micah 3:9, MKJV

In order to do justice, you first have to know what it is. Further, to walk humbly with your God you have to realize that you, as a human being, are not God and have no right to play God with other men's lives.

"He has shown you, O man, **what is good**. And what does the LORD require of you but to do justice and to love mercy and to walk humbly with your God?" Micah 6:8, MKJV

A couple of side bar points are as follows; they mainly concern the fact that many Social Justice Warriors resent some men and women for having more than they do. First, if the person who has more honestly earned it in the marketplace by serving their fellow man better, it is just that they have more. Second, even if the person who has more got it through an inheritance and not by their own productive achievement, it is a well-established economic principle that for the inheritor to continue to own the same amount of net worth (capital) they must employ what they have in service to others. If not, their capital and net worth will go down and fall into the hands of those who better know how to serve their fellow man. In other words, there is no need to envy and covet what

others have. The marketplace will sort things out over time. If it is true that the person who has more got what they have through actual criminal activity, it is a failure of that nation's legal system and not a failure of the concept of justice. And, once again, the person with more still must employ what they now have in the service of others or it will dissipate over time.

An additional point of this shorter, but important section, is this: The Left clearly has a misunderstanding of what justice is, but then they make a second error by seeking power "in order to make things right." There are several problems with this. First, they don't understand justice. If they did, they would realize their efforts are not needed, other than to acknowledge and restore the individual natural rights of each man, which they are not interested in. Second, power is not a solution to building out a better society because the use of power destroys, not builds. Third, how do you make things "right" if you do not have a well thought out and articulated standard of the right? In other words, just what is RIGHT to those with no standard of the right? The Left evidently believes and acts like they can actually change The Tragedy of Being for the better with force (power). They cannot eliminate The

Tragedy of Being with force, but they can make it worse by using misguided force. In short, The Left's immoral, irrational, and delusional activism will make Being more tragic, not less.

The Bible essentially confirms your author's bifurcation of the two different concepts encompassed in the word justice. Individual natural rights are protected through the Ten Commandments prohibiting murder, theft, lying, and even coveting (Exodus 20, Deuteronomy 5). Further, the Bible also prohibits kidnapping (loss of liberty against one's will, Exodus 21:16). Further, the Bible emphasizes one law for all pertaining to the concept of equality under/before the law.

"One judgment shall be for you whether an alien or a native; for I am the LORD your God." Leviticus 24:22, MKJV

The Bible also recognizes the concept of proportionality in terms of productive achievement, via the below scriptures:

"For the Son of man [Jesus Christ] shall come in the glory of His Father with His angels, and then He shall reward each one according to his works." Matthew 16:27, MKJV

"But I say this, **He who sows sparingly shall also reap sparingly**, and he who sows bountifully shall also reap bountifully."  
2 Corinthians 9:6, MKJV

"Do not be deceived, God is not mocked. For whatever a man sows, that he also will reap."  
Galatians 6:7, MKJV

The Left tends to dismiss religion because it does not fit with their secular humanist agenda. Ironically, if mankind would have yielded to God and accepted the divine laws and also yielded to each other by respecting others' individual natural rights, here is a brief snapshot listing of what men could have had by following God instead of human kings and insane philosophies:

Justice through individual natural rights being protected by divine decree and also the equal administration of laws for the benefit of all citizens

Justice through productive achievement being proportional and protected (envy is banned, Exodus 20:17, Deuteronomy 5:21)

**“Do not covet your neighbor’s house. Do not covet your neighbor’s wife, male or female servant, ox or donkey, or anything else your neighbor owns.” Exodus 20:17, NLT**

Each citizen would have enjoyed the basic human dignities of having life itself, their mind, their free will, their individual natural rights and equal treatment before the law and God also would have given each family land to be owned by that family in perpetuity. This would have provided a lot of equal justice to a lot of people, but people do not want to acknowledge or serve God and then do what he says.

“And you shall divide the land by lot by your families. And you shall give the more inheritance to the many; to the few you shall give the less inheritance. Wherever the lot falls out to him; according to the tribes of your fathers you shall inherit.” Numbers 33:54, MKJV.

“But they shall sit each one under his vine and under his fig tree; and there shall be no trembling; for the mouth of the LORD of hosts has spoken,” Micah 4:4, MKJV

There are other aspects of justice and why it is that there does not seem to be very much of

it today, but this is beyond the scope of this section of this book. For the reader's benefit, your author has written an earlier book entitled, *Why There is No Justice: The Corruption of Law*. This book explains things a bit more systematically than a short section in this book will allow for. Suffice it to say that if human legislation does not conform to the divine laws outlined in the Bible and/or disregards the secular standard of the right of respecting other men's individual natural rights, there will be a lack of justice somewhere that could have been avoided.

Social Justice Warriors are intellectually and morally confused. They and the other followers of The Left do not understand justice. And because seemingly no one in the modern era wants to turn to the Bible and then do what it says to do it will be a while before the human race actually experiences justice. Until then, we have immoral and irrational activism in the name of asserted good. If The Left and their Social Justice Warriors ever actually obtain power to use on their fellow man, we will have a morally flawed and intellectually confused widespread lack of justice. Being will become less just and more tragic.

## **5.6 Economic Fallacies and Failures**

Under the educational and propaganda influence of The Left, most regular citizens, as well as those of The Left themselves, believe in many fallacies pertaining to the subject of economics. This belief in said fallacies allows for a lot of unwise and downright foolish personal and public policy decisions. The foolish public policy decisions waste a great deal of societal capital, as well as people's time, talents, emotions, and lives. This is not a book on economic fallacies per se, so your author is only going to write what amounts to summaries on each major fallacy. Your author has already written an earlier book covering the subject in more depth entitled *Economic Fallacies Versus Rational Thought*. Further, your author has two extensive chapters pertaining to economics in his *Life Charts* book, specifically chapters seven and eight. The reader is referred to either of the above two references for a much more in depth discussion pertaining to each fallacy.

The first problem with most people, and this certainly applies to The Left, is that **they cannot see the unseen**. The economics journalist and author, Henry Hazlitt, wrote a great book teaching people how to see the

unseen namely, *Economics In One Lesson*. It is highly recommended and once someone reads it they will never think the same. It is a modernized version of an essay written about 170 years prior by a great French economist named Frederic Bastiat. One of his greatest offerings was, *That Which Is Seen, And That Which Is Not Seen*, published in 1850. It can be found in the book by the same author, *Selected Essays On Political Economy*. Your author will below quote a few paragraphs from his Life Charts book to help highlight the main points. Bastiat and Hazlitt both give numerous helpful examples to make the case plain to the reader.

"Bastiat starts out by pointing out that most of us can easily see the immediate and visible effect of something that happens, but the difference between a good economist and a bad economist is that the good economist also sees the medium, long-term, and not so visible effects of an occurrence. The bad economist only sees what is immediate and apparent, that is the short-term and visible effect of the occurrence. Quoting from Bastiat and his famous essay [emphasis mine, throughout]:

'In the department of economy, an act, a habit, an institution, a law, gives birth not only

to an effect, but to a series of effects. Of these effects, the first only is immediate; it manifests itself simultaneously with its cause - **it is seen.** The others unfold in succession — **they are not seen:** it is well for us, if they are foreseen.

Between a good and a bad economist this constitutes the whole difference - the one takes account of the visible effect; the other takes account both of the effects which are seen, and also of those which it is necessary to foresee.

Now this difference is enormous, for it almost always happens that when the immediate consequence is favourable, the ultimate consequences are fatal, and the converse. Hence it follows that the bad economist pursues a small present good, which will be followed by a great evil to come, while the true economist pursues a great good to come, - at the risk of a small present evil.'

An action or a law or a habit → gives birth to i.e., causes → a series of effects → some seen + others unseen

The immediate effect → manifests itself simultaneously → with the cause

The immediate effect → the seen

The other follow-on effects (not immediate) →  
the unseen

The unseen effects → unfold in succession

A good economist → considers both → the seen  
+ the unseen → effects

Many times → an immediate good → is followed  
by → greater evil (a greater bad) (unacceptable  
costs)

Many times → an immediate evil (bad) (short-  
term cost) → is followed by → greater good

Bastiat is making the point that the non-immediate effects are not visible and we have two main ways to learn about them. One way to learn about them is to ignore them and to experience the future negative results firsthand. Unfortunately, experience is not the best teacher. It is the most painful teacher. The other way, to learn about the future negative results, is to think through what must happen if A causes B. If A and B are both good, but B causes C, which then causes D, what happens, then, if it turns out that D is really bad? Do we really want to go there? We do not, even if B is seemingly good.

There are two ways → to learn about the unseen, non-immediate effects → 1) to learn the hard way, via experience, or 2) to think (to foresee)"

In addition to not being able to see the medium and longer-term follow-on effects, the bad economist usually only considers one group of people to the also affected other groups of people. For example, a politician may point to a new public park that was built and the workers who built it, i.e., the park and the construction jobs. All that is the seen. However, what the politician is not very likely going to point out is that the park was constructed with the taxpayer's money and now the taxpayers cannot spend that money on things of their own choosing to improve their own lives. The taxpayers and those businesses that would have received the taxpayer's money, but now will not because it was taxed away from the taxpayers before they could spend it on items of their own choosing, are the unseen. Maybe it was the politician who wanted a new park and not the taxpayers. Virtually no one thinks about the unseen. They behave like it does not exist, but it does. Further, perhaps there were already nine other parks in town and this one was not

really needed. Ergo, maybe the municipal hospital did not get a much-needed additional magnetic resonance imaging machine or the town's sewer system could not be upgraded. This leads to two further suggested questions from your author to politicians of all parties and kinds everywhere:

- 1) Instead of what?
- 2) At whose expense?

These two questions politicians will be very reticent to answer. This is because if they did provide an answer the answer would very likely begin a lively debate among the citizens, particularly concerning just how badly a particular budget item is needed relative to other alternatives, just how expensive it will be, and what is going to be required to pay for it and at whose expense.

In addition to behaving as if the government is a gigantic washing machine that washes away moral and intellectual error, The Left evidently believes in government as a magical apparatus that can dispense unlimited gifts to the citizenry. They clearly have a belief in an unconstrained vision. Those with an unconstrained vision tend

to not be able to see that resources that are used on one thing, e.g., our park, also cannot at the same time be used for other projects. In other words, those with an unconstrained vision cannot see opportunity costs clearly. This is the economics of The Left. But when the citizens take into account the bloated government bureaucracies, the taxes and regulations that have been heaped upon them, the loss of their individual natural rights that are now treated as government-dispensed privileges, enormous unpayable government debts, the cost of servicing even the interest on said debt, the loss of the ability of citizens to improve their own lives with the funds that are taxed away from them, etc., all of which are the unseen, then it becomes clear that The Left, with their unconstrained visions of grandeur, are leading the citizenry toward large-scale financial disaster. There are life-affecting negative consequences to not being able to see the very real, but evidently mainly unseen to most, long-term effects of constrained resources being largely wasted and the ongoing bloated costs of big government. As pertains to economics and government programs, it is **literally** a case of the blind, The Left, leading the blind, the citizenry.

"Let them alone. They are blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch." Matthew 15:14, MKJV

Capitalism has gotten a bad name in the modern era, through little fault of its own. When workers and business owners produce, they can save part of that production and then invest in better longer-term methods of production for greater future production. The act of saving (short-term self-denial) and investment is the deployment of capital toward greater long-term production. Unless we all want to dig with our hands or use rocks and tree branches as tools it is the better way. Greater capital employed in production generates a higher standard of living for everyone and allows for more people to live on the earth. The deployment of capital in production is a form of men obeying God and having dominion over this earth. Government interventions affecting business owners, workers, and investors cause negative marketplace distortions that capitalism then gets blamed for. And because the government-controlled public school systems and government-funded universities favor big government, or even outright Socialism, the students are negatively influenced against the free market economy, i.e., against capitalism.

This will be discussed later in this section. In addition to men being much freer in free market societies embracing capitalist principles, and in addition to the greater production of useful goods and services, there is another crucial benefit to societies that are largely capitalist. This benefit is not taught in the public schools or at the universities, at least not in most of them.

**This crucial benefit is only available in capitalist societies**, those societies that allow for men to be free, to freely produce and exchange goods and services, and that use money as an indirect (but faster overall) medium of exchange. The crucial benefit is there are money prices. Without money prices, individuals, business owners, and investors cannot plan. No one can. All goods and services have a price in money and that price can be observed by other participants in the marketplace and used to make their own plans. Without money prices, planning is not possible. And this central fact leads us to a fairly brief discussion about Socialism.

As a housekeeping point, the word "Socialism" is capitalized throughout this chapter. This is done, not as a sign of respect, but because it is recognized that Socialism, in essence, is a movement.

The Left advocates for and pushes for large-scale government interventions into the economy, or for outright Socialism itself. Later in this section your author will touch on why large-scale interventions in the economy must inevitably lead to Socialism. For now, again for emphasis, without money prices “Socialist planning” is not possible because there are no money prices with which to plan. The great Austrian economist, Dr. Ludwig von Mises figured this out about 100 years ago and wrote a 500-page book entitled, *Socialism, An Economic and Social Analysis*. In his epic book Mises looked at the feasibility of Socialism from every possible angle and then intellectually demolished it. The belief that Socialism could ever be better than capitalism because of its central planning was left intellectually shredded. Your author highly recommends this book to anyone who will otherwise waste years of his or her precious life believing in an **economic fairy tale**. Socialism will never work in practice. It has been intellectually shredded by Mises and it lies dead at his feet. Socialism has never worked empirically anywhere it has ever been attempted. There are reasons for this. Mises explains why.

Socialism → intellectually demolished → by Dr. Ludwig von Mises, about 100 years ago

Socialism → has never worked in practice

Socialism → is an economic fairy tale

Perhaps an example of why it is so critical to have money prices with which to plan would prove helpful. People, when they shop, which is often, are acting as consumers. People buy what are known as consumer products. The government, in most of their economic statistics, not all, emphasizes consumer prices. The news media disseminates mostly the same. This is only natural as people do not really care about what a business had to go through to make a finished consumer product, they only want to go the store or shop online and to buy the finished product. The reality of the economy, however, is that most of the economic activity supporting the production of consumer goods (other than directly provided consumer services) is like a giant iceberg under the water with only the consumer goods part of the iceberg visible above the water. The entire part of the iceberg not visible under the water is various businesses making specialized parts, industrial solvents, jigs, dies, tools, specialty

metal and plastic parts, part-making machines, and other non-consumer parts of what will eventually be used to make consumer products. The vast majority of economic activity is not direct to consumer. Only a smaller part of the economy could be considered direct to consumer, e.g., like a barber cutting hair. The largest part of the economy, by far, is all of the production steps, methods, parts, and business services leading up to the manufacture of the final consumer product. A simple electronic coffeemaker that almost all homes have might have a Bill of Materials with 200 or more parts in it. For our purposes, a Bill of Materials is a listing of all of the parts it takes for a manufacturer to put together the finished consumer product. For ALL of those 200 or more parts it takes to make a simple coffeemaker **there are no consumer or any other prices available if Socialism is the economic system.** None of those 200 or more parts could ever possibly have a consumer price associated with them for the simple reason they are not consumer products and never will be. No one buys parts that are used to make coffeemakers except those manufacturers who are making coffeemakers. All of those 200 or more parts have to be manufactured by someone and they only will be if a business

owner believes he or she can make that non-consumer part for less than he or she can sell it for to the coffeemaker manufacturer. If there are no money prices, because Socialism is the economic system that is foolishly being attempted to be implemented, then no one on earth knows if that part #1 out of the 200 or more parts necessary to make the coffeemaker should be manufactured or not. The same holds true for all of the other 200 or more parts. No one can actually plan anything without money prices, especially without money prices for non-consumer parts. True money prices are ONLY AVAILABLE when men and women are free to engage in private property for private property exchanges in which they use an indirect medium of exchange, i.e., money to make the exchange. Socialist economies do not allow for this so **there are no money prices in Socialist economies.** There are pretend prices for consumer products and NO PRICES for non-consumer parts and services. Socialist economies fail because they cannot plan. They cannot plan because they have no money prices with which to plan. Because of all this Socialism results in **calculational chaos** – a phrase coined by another great Austrian economist, Dr. Murray Rothbard. Socialism promises central planning, but it cannot deliver because there are

no money prices in most of the economy with which to plan. Instead, there is calculational chaos resulting in wasting precious capital, minimal disjointed production not serving consumer needs, and there is also the widespread loss of individual natural rights. Socialism always fails because it has to; there are no money prices with which to plan so production is dismal and lives are wasted. This is why in the old U.S.S.R. their economy failed. Rather than using money prices, because none existed and never do exist in a Socialist economy, they had production by decree, ergo **unscientific and irrational decree**. Instead of the promised "central planning," you have unscientific and irrational decree. To fit this into one of the ongoing themes of this book let's call it what it is ... **production by assertion**. This production by assertion is always of inferior quality, late, and wastes huge amounts of accumulated societal capital to obtain minimal output, thus making that society poorer. Misallocated and wasted capital is gone forever and now new capital has to be generated or that society's standard of living falls sharply. Capital must be intelligently deployed in order to advance production and to produce goods and services that actually satisfy people. Only capitalism can do this because only capitalism

has money prices with which to plan. Foolish apologists for Socialism try and throw dust in the air and tap dance and use fancy emotional appeals or resort to pretending that computers can plan, but computers can only add, subtract, multiply, and divide using data and **the data that is necessary for planning can only be market prices**. Once again, prices come from using an indirect medium of exchange (money) in a society where private property in the form of goods and services are freely exchanged.

Socialist central planners cannot insert prices into the marketplace because prices come from the marketplace.

Socialism results in → calculational chaos

Socialism → always fails → because it has to

Your author only has the space in this book to discuss a few more points critics of capitalism sometimes make. The first is that capitalism results in great disparities in wealth. Per your author's earlier teaching regarding justice being proportional in terms of productive achievement, this is a criticism based on envy and can thus be disregarded. If the disparity is caused via political pull and not via honest

entrepreneurship then it is a valid criticism whose solution is obvious - get rid of unfairly awarded government contracts. A second criticism is that some business owners pollute and get away with it. The obvious solution here is for the government's legal system to not allow for said harmful pollution affecting other property owners. A third criticism is that the laborers are beaten down by the business owners and only paid enough to barely survive. This is historically empirically false as wages have risen steadily in capitalist countries and it is theoretically false, too, but that is beyond the scope of this book. The bottom line is that over time the share of productive achievement going to labor rises. Your author's earlier *Life Charts* book handles this in more depth. Further, The Left does not understand that labor benefits in terms of using capital in production in at least three important ways: 1) there are funds to hire and pay the workers with 2) the laborer's wages go up to the level of their productive contribution 3) their standard of living goes up because consumer prices fall (real wages rise).

Moving on, the next thing that The Left and most citizens do not understand is that there is no hoped for third way that takes the best elements of capitalism and Socialism and fuses

them together into a new, better, third way of organizing a society's productive efforts. Mises demolished this over 90 years ago when he came out with his famous book, *A Critique Of Interventionism*. Your author will quote a few paragraphs from his *Life Charts* book:

"Many people dislike what they regard as capitalism, but at the same time realize that Socialism could never work in practice. Many other people realize that Socialism could never be overtly implemented politically, or they believe in a big State, or they foolishly do not realize there are economic laws. In short, for varied reasons, many people advocate for what they believe is a balanced approach concerning the economic organization of society. They advocate for a hoped for third way of economic organization. This hoped for third, or middle way would somehow miraculously take the good from both capitalism and Socialism and leave off the bad from both. While this might sound like a nice and balanced approach, it is never put forth how this supposedly possible third way could actually accomplish the hoped for economic reorganization of society – and then maintain that economic reorganization in at least a somewhat stable manner. This section of this chapter of the book will demonstrate that

the reason such a third way is not specifically proposed is because no such third way is in fact possible.

The Austrian economist, Dr. Ludwig von Mises, named this hoped for third way “**interventionism**.” He called it interventionism because the government intervenes into the capitalist market economy in an attempt to achieve results which government politicians and planners prefer to those the actual free market is delivering at the time of the government intervention. Mises wrote an entire 164 page book entitled, *A Critique of Interventionism*, where he scientifically put forth why interventionism will not achieve the goals the government planners hope for. He shows that what will ultimately end up happening, as a result of the government intervention, is a result that even the authors of the government intervention consider bad. Even worse, he further shows that the government planners, instead of repealing their original misguided attempt to influence the marketplace result, will then usually engage in further interventions, which will cause even worse results for the marketplace participants and the government itself. Mises then brilliantly shows that interventionism, if not abandoned as a failure,

will ultimately lead to full-scale Socialism, in substance, if not in fact. And as was discussed earlier in this section, Socialism cannot work - no matter who is in charge of the Socialist system. In short, Mises scientifically and logically demonstrated there is no possible interventionist third way.

Ayn Rand, novelist and philosopher, called the third way "**a mixed economy**." In so many words she described the mixed economy as a semi-socialized economy, which means a semi-enslaved society, which means a nation torn by irreconcilable differences and contradictions, **which nation is in the process of disintegration**. Rand further commented that a mixed economy has the element of economic freedom mixed with government controls. Unfortunately, this leads to pseudo-businessmen, who are good at exercising an aristocracy of pull, men who are adept at getting laws passed granting them special government favors. However, when this happens and it does all the time, the real entrepreneurs and producers have to pay for it. These pseudo-entrepreneurs want and prefer a government partner with a gun to actually competing in the marketplace with no special advantages other

than a better product or service to provide to the customers.

A mixed economy → elements of freedom + (mixed with) government controls → a semi-socialized society → with semi-enslaved citizens → torn by irreconcilable differences → unstable → in the process of disintegration"

There are two main ways for the government to intervene into the economy and neither of them will work in the way the government wishes. This will then lead to more and more other interventions (what Mises calls a hampered market economy) until the entire economy is controlled by the government and then you ultimately end up with Socialism, which does not work and never will. In short, economic laws exist and they limit what even governments can do. The Left hates this and tries to wish and argue economic laws out of existence, to no avail. The government is not a magical giant diner where anyone can stop in and get a free lunch, because there is no such thing as a free lunch. The first way the government can intervene is for the government to issue decrees that restrict production. The second way is through price controls. Private property is left in the hands of the now-

hampered private sector but the owners are not free to produce and exchange in the most optimal way. The below quotes from Mises and *Life Charts* discuss production restrictions and price controls.

*"Intervention is a limited order by a social authority forcing the owners of the means of production and entrepreneurs to employ their means in a different manner than they otherwise would. A 'limited order' is an order that is no part of a socialist scheme of orders, i.e., a scheme of orders regulating all of production and distribution, thus replacing private property in the means of production with public property. Particular orders may be quite numerous, but as long as they do not aim at [1)] directing the whole economy and [2)] replacing the profit motive of individuals with obedience as the driving force of human action they must be regarded as **limited orders**. By 'means of production' we mean all goods of higher order, including the merchants' inventories of ready goods which have not yet reached the consumers."* (quoted from Mises)

"A particular order = a limited order IF: 1) it does not aim at directing the whole economy + 2) it does not attempt to do away with the profit

motive by substituting obedience instead”  
(quoted from *Life Charts*)”

“Mises then goes on to state the obvious, which is that those interventions known as “restrictions of production” restrict production, which makes all mankind poorer, as less is produced. The government planners almost always sell the production restriction as a boost to production in an upside down use of terminology and logic. But that does not change the fact that a production restriction does achieve what the government planner wanted, which is to restrict production in some industry or location. That is the seen. The unseen is that this forces marketplace demand to be satisfied from production elsewhere – and this make-good production occurs in less favorable conditions and circumstances, i.e., resources are wasted in producing under less optimum conditions. And the inevitable result is that we are all poorer for the government intervention. It is true that a politically favored specific local industry might benefit from being able to charge higher prices for a time. But, from the point of view of the entirety of marketplace consumers, resources have been misallocated and wasted - resulting in less overall satisfaction.”

"[Quoting from Mises book, *A Critique Of Interventionism*] ... An import duty, for instance, is surely practical, and its immediate effect may correspond to the government's objective. But it does not follow at all that the import duty can realize the government's ultimate objective. At this point the economist's work commences. The purpose of the theorists of free trade was not to demonstrate that tariffs are impractical or harmful, but that they have unforeseen consequences and do not, nor can they, achieve what their advocates expect of them. What is even more significant, as they observed, protective tariffs as well as all other production restrictions reduce the productivity of human labor. **The result is always the same:** a given expenditure of capital and labor yields less with the restriction than without it, or from the beginning less capital and labor is invested in production. This is true with protective tariffs that cause grain to be grown in less fertile soil while more fertile land is lying fallow. ..."

Mises goes on to say that **production restrictions reduce labor productivity** because: 1) they reduce the scope of the international division of labor (they force less efficient local production at the expense of more efficient international production) and 2) prevent

the advantages of specialized large-scale production (force higher cost smaller scale production at the expense of lower cost larger scale and more specialized production) and 3) the employment of labor at the most advantageous locations (they force production to occur at less efficient locations at the expense of production at more efficient locations).

The economic policy → interventionism

The system itself → the hampered market order

Government interventions → 1) production restrictions or 2) price controls

The results of → governmental interventions → 1) poorer people 2) misallocations of capital 3) a hampered market economy

Regarding price controls and their negative effects, a full discussion is beyond the scope of this book, but your author will quote a few things from Life Charts to show what must occur. What must occur is that the government must not only issue the first price control edict, but additional edicts, too. This is because marketplace actors react and do what they believe is in their own interest and this ends up

defeating what the government “planners” had hoped to achieve. This necessitates a series of additional price control edicts, with additional reactions by marketplace actors frustrating the government planners until the frustrated government planners must ultimately issue more and more edicts until the entire economy is under their effective control. And this is Socialism in substance, if not in fact, and then all of the harmful misallocations of capital occur that must occur under Socialism because there are no longer real market prices to guide in planning anything effectively. Quoting again from Mises, followed by quoting the life charts diagrams from *Life Charts*:

“**Price intervention** aims at setting goods prices that differ from those the unhampered market would set.” ...

“**Genuine Controls.** We may call those price controls ‘genuine’ that set prices differing from those the unhampered market would set. If government seeks to fix a price higher than the market price, it usually resorts to **minimum prices**. If government seeks to fix a price lower than the market price it usually imposes **price ceilings**. ...

It is inconceivable to resort to price controls as **an isolated intervention** in the private property order = True (because the marketplace participants react generating consequences unintended by the government which are then dealt with by new and additional government orders)"

"Genuine price control → sets prices differing from what the unhampered market would set

Genuine price controls are either: 1) a minimum price order, e.g., a government mandated minimum wage for workers or 2) a price ceiling order (businesses cannot charge more than the price ceiling)

If the government wants a → higher price > market → **a minimum price order** is used

Government non-market intervention → via a limited order → e.g., a minimum price for wages order → in a particular industry, not for all industries → business costs rise → demand for the produced products or services falls → workers are discharged → the discharged workers compete with workers in other industries → wages in those industries fall → the government must intervene again → a

prohibition to fire workers → the industry suffers losses → some companies go broke and industrial activity declines → even more workers are laid off → (the effect-on-wages result is the workers in the minimum wage industry, who keep their jobs, get higher wages at the expense of workers in other industries who have to accept lower wages) (the government did not intend this and so their policy failed)

Government non-market intervention → via a limited order → a minimum price for wages order (minimum wage) → applying to all industries → across an entire economy → wages rise, but → business costs rise → prices for produced products rise → THEN EITHER → 1) the intervention fails in substance because the workers have no real wage increase, as while their wages rose so did the prices of the goods and services they have to buy – leaving them without a real increase ... OR → 2) the price rise of the goods and services is less than the increase in wages BUT → this means that entrepreneurs and capitalists lose money or make less → entrepreneurs and capitalists have to live so they → consume their capital and since → capital supports production → production itself then falls → workers are discharged or would be unless → the

government intervenes again with another order  
→ setting off another chain of unseen and  
unintended negative consequences → which  
ultimately leads to Socialism

Further → if a particular worker → does not produce > their wage cost + overhead burden (social taxes, unemployment taxes, workers compensation insurance, etc.) → they are discharged OR not hired in the first place → workers are "permanently" displaced from the labor force → production is less than what it could be → society is poorer → the mental and emotional state and character of those unable to obtain work is negatively impacted → human development is injured

If the government wants → a price < market → **a price ceiling order** is used"

Price ceiling orders → a maximum price order → goods are withheld by sellers → a forced sale order to supplement the original price ceiling order → a rationing of existing inventory → further regulations of production and distribution in an attempt to replenish depleted business inventories → central "planning" of all production and distribution → Socialism"

Again, this is not an economics book but you, dear reader, can read about the step-by-step explanation from either Mises or your author from the books quoted above. There is no third way between Socialism and capitalism because when the government intervenes into the market by issuing interventionist decrees there are marketplace reactions upon reactions forcing the government to continue to issue more and more edicts until the point that government must either admit failure and stop, or go on and on and on until there is Socialism in substance, if not in fact, and then there is calculational chaos everywhere and a collapse of production in that society to the detriment of all. Just like reading Mises's book, *Socialism*, will forever vanquish the idea of Socialism ever being workable anywhere, so will the reading of Mises's book *The Critique Of Interventionism* forever vanquish the idea of any possible third way between capitalism and Socialism. It is just not logically or empirically possible. That The Left believes in either interventionism or Socialism shows they do not know what they are talking about. In short, **The Left are intellectually unfit to lead.**

Statists prefer → their arbitrary ethical judgments > economic principles (laws)

Statists prefer → political power > voluntary cooperation

Government interventions → superfluous → all men are subject to economic laws anyway

Government interventions → useless → they cannot achieve the government's objectives without causing more harm than good (even in the eyes of the intervener's themselves)

Government interventions → harmful → they hamper and lower production → in those products and services consumers consider most useful and valuable

Every marketplace intervention by a government planner, whether it is from a production restriction, or from an attempt at price control, results in a chain reaction of marketplace consequences that are negative – even from the point of view of the "well-intentioned" government planner. Each negative unintended and initially unseen consequence leads to further government interventions. These further government interventions lead to further unintended negative consequences, such as production

ceasing and the best and brightest people and also capital fleeing an industry - thus wrecking efficient production in that industry. From the point of view of entrepreneurs, and those investing and lending to them, it is wiser to reallocate capital and brains somewhere else. The better, more far-sighted and skilled workers also start shifting to industries with more promise. This is all logical because if entrepreneurs cannot cover their costs and also earn at least a marketplace-competitive return on investment then they have to shift to a different industry. After all, the government may lower the maximum price allowable to be charged even lower still, or provide cost-boosting edicts like an increase in minimum wages even higher. And so Mises astutely points out the government must move step by step toward seizing control over the entire economy. If the government leaves a marketplace sector open, the brains and capital will flee to it. Interventionism cannot work and inevitably leads to Socialism, which cannot work. There is no third way.

Interventionism cannot work = True

Interventionism leads to → Socialism = True

There is no third way or middle ground between Socialism and capitalism = True

Government interventionist decrees → make it illegal → to act rationally

Government interventionist decrees → cause calculational and actual chaos + waste capital + waste men's lives

Interventionism leads to Socialism and Socialism does not work. And so the next idea offered, in clear opposition to capitalism, is to advocate **state-owned-enterprises**, or **bureaucratic management**, as a way to structure production – at least in some fields. That these two ideas would lead to positive results is also a fallacy. There are scientific and logical reasons for this. There are reasons why bureaucracies function as they do, with poor results. And there are reasons a private sector company functions with much more flexibility and much less bureaucracy than a public sector bureau. The subject of bureaucracy is actually not that difficult to understand. Mises wrote another great book, *Bureaucracy*, which your author will quote sometimes below.

"There are two methods for the conduct of affairs within the frame of human society, i.e., peaceful cooperation among men. One is **bureaucratic management**, the other is **profit management**.

It is well known that profit management is highly unpopular in our age. People are anxious to substitute allround planning by a central authority – i.e. Socialism – for the supremacy of consumers as operative in the market economy. But at the same time people severely blame the shortcomings of bureaucratism. They do not see that in clamoring for the suppression of profit management they themselves are asking for more and more bureaucracy, even for full bureaucratization of every sphere of human affairs.

There are areas of man's activities in which there cannot be any question of profit management and where bureaucratic management must prevail. A police department cannot be operated according to the methods resorted to in the conduct of a gainful enterprise. A bakery serves a definite number of people – its customers – in selling them piecemeal what it has produced; it is the patronage of its customers that provides the

social legitimacy – the profitability – of the baker's business. A police department cannot sell its 'products'; its achievements, however valuable, even indispensable as they may be, have no price on the market and therefore cannot be contrasted with the total expenditure made in the endeavors to bring them about."

The giant boat-sinking hole in Socialism is there are no prices for central planners to plan with and so Socialism misallocates resources, fails to deliver the goods, and consumes capital leading to the impoverishment of everyone in that society. Calculational chaos leads to production by decree and then to actual chaos in that society. A similar problem can occur with bureaucracy. There are no market prices for the services provided by a police department, or for the legitimate services provided by other necessary government functions. And so, again, we have calculational chaos. This is not to say that the police department is not indispensable, only that there are no market prices for the services to society that the police provide. And without prices you cannot rationally calculate.

It is all very different with a business intent on making profits, which all businesses are. They do have prices with which to calculate.

They do know how much in total they can pay for labor, material supplies, and all of their other costs. In other words, they can budget, perform financial accounting, and they can also perform the very important cost accounting. The latter, **cost accounting**, allows for senior managers to tell lower level department or branch managers a very simple overall macro objective, make as much money as you can. They do not need to specify much more than that. If the overall business loses money it will have only a short period of time to turn things around or it must cease operations. In other words, there is not a need for a lot of unnecessary rules. Businesses must continually innovate or be supplanted by others who do. We live in a world of permanent change. Unnecessary rules inhibit creativity, adaptability, and the ability to adjust to constantly changing consumer preferences and marketplace competition. Flexibility to adapt and innovate is critical for a business to survive and make a profit. The department or branch manager already knows if they do not perform they will lose their job. They know if they hire the wrong people or incur unnecessary expenses their department or branch will suffer for it and it will show up in the cost accounting. The key points are these: A) prices allow for financial planning and accountability and B) there is no

need for a lot of rules, particularly rules from the top down that would unnecessarily impede the flexibility of the local branch manager or department head to heed big picture rule #1, make as much money as possible for the company.

Per Mises, and your author's personal experience, the main reason that companies become more bureaucratic is if they must comply with government rules and regulations foisted upon them. Your author, once again, quotes from Mises's *Bureaucracy* book.

"... This book will try to demonstrate that no profit-seeking enterprise, no matter how large, is liable to become bureaucratic provided the hands of its management are not tied by government interference [Mises refers to interventionism here]. The trend toward bureaucratic rigidity is not inherent in the evolution of business. It is an outcome of government meddling with business. It is a result of the policies designed to eliminate the profit motive from its role in the framework of society's economic organization."

Private sector businesses → become more bureaucratic → in response to → governmental interventionist decrees

It is completely different with a bureaucracy, as **they are bureaucratic due to their nature.** Public sector bureaucratic management is entirely different. Mises gives an example of an ancient tribal leader who has all administrative, legislative, and judicial power in his own hands. But then he expands his realm and becomes, as it were, a king. Because the king cannot be everywhere, he appoints deputies to rule provinces or districts. In so doing the king temporarily renounces his own power to the benefit of his appointed local district ruler. The appointed local district ruler is now in a position to do things differently from what the king might prefer, however. In order to control this possibility, resulting from the initial delegation of power, the king then takes subsequent steps **and this results in there being many consequences that unfold.**

"In order to avoid this outcome [of doing something the king would not prefer] the king tries to limit the [local] governor's powers by issuing directives and instructions. Codes, decrees, and statutes tell the governors of the

provinces and their subordinates what to do if such or such a problem arises. Their free discretion is now limited; **their first duty is now to comply with the regulations.** It is true that their arbitrariness is now restricted in so far as the regulations must be applied. But at the same time the whole character of their management changes. They are no longer eager to deal with each case to the best of their abilities; they are no longer anxious to find the most appropriate solution for every problem. Their main concern is to comply with the rules and regulations, no matter whether they are reasonable or contrary to what was intended. The first virtue of an administrator is to abide by the codes and decrees. **He becomes a bureaucrat.**"

The king (President or Prime Minister or other head of government) → to prevent those with delegated power from acting differently from how they would → issue regulations (directives, decrees, etc.) → the whole character of the management changes → the delegated local manager's first duty and virtue → is to abide by the regulations → the manager becomes → a bureaucrat → the local entity managed becomes → bureaucratic

Mises step-by-step analysis of bureaucratic management, is that such management is bound to comply with detailed rules and regulations [primacy of law]. These laws are fixed by a superior authority and are designed to both: 1) limit the use of power and 2) to authorize the use of authority in certain prescribed conditions. If a bureaucrat did not have these legal limitations he might be tempted to exercise unrestrained power over the people he was supposed to be serving.

Bureaucratic regulations are designed to → 1) limit the use of power and 2) to authorize the use of authority in certain prescribed conditions

Further, if a bureaucrat did not have **budget limitations** he would just spend untold amounts of money to provide what he regarded as more and better services, i.e., to do his job “better.” As Mises observed:

“The objectives of public administration cannot be measured in money terms and cannot be checked by accountancy methods. ... The expenditures of a police station are not reimbursed by its successful management and do not vary in proportion to the success attained. If the head of the whole bureau were

to leave his subordinate station chiefs a free hand with regard to money expenditure, the result would be a large increase in costs as everyone of them would be zealous to improve the service of his branch as much as possible. It would become impossible for the top executive to keep the expenditures within the appropriations allocated by the representatives of the people or within any limits whatever. It is not because of punctiliousness that the administrative regulations fix how much can be spent by each local office for cleaning the premises, for furniture repairs, and for lighting and heating. Within a business concern such things can be left without hesitation to the discretion of the responsible local manager. He will not spend more than necessary because it is, as it were, his money; if he wastes the concern's money, he jeopardizes the branch's profit and thereby indirectly hurts his own interests. But it is another matter with the local chief of a government agency. In spending more money he can, very often at least, improve the result of his conduct of affairs.  
Thrift must be imposed on him by regimentation."

Bureaucratic regulations are designed to → impose thrift by regimentation

Mises observes that in public administration (bureaucratic management) there is no connection between revenue and expenditure because in public administration there is no market price for achievements. This means the public administration must be operated **on entirely different principles** from those of private profit-seeking enterprises.

"Now we are in a position to provide a definition of **bureaucratic management**: Bureaucratic management is the method applied in the conduct of administrative affairs the result of which has no cash value on the market. Remember: we do not say that a successful handling of public affairs has no value, but that it has no price on the market, that its value cannot be realized in a market transaction and consequently cannot be expressed in terms of money."

Bureaucratic management → the method applied to the conduct of administrative affairs → the result of which → has no cash value on the market

In other words → there is no cash value because  
→ there are no market transactions and hence  
→ no market prices

Bureaucratic administration → can have value →  
but, there are no prices, ergo → rational  
economic calculation is not possible

Bureaucratic management is what is used for  
necessary government departments because  
there is a need for: 1) regulations to authorize  
and limit the use of power 2) budgetary  
limitations so the bureau managers do not go  
crazy and just spend virtually unlimited amounts  
of money thinking they better serve the public.

There really is not much more that needs to  
be written. The Left misunderstands Socialism  
and then they also misunderstand what a  
government can and cannot do. They do not  
see that there are no money prices with which  
to plan under either Socialism or the  
bureaucratic management involved in  
governmental operations. Ergo, any attempt to  
make government bigger and the private sector  
therefore smaller is by natural law going to shift  
huge segments of the economy from the ability  
to calculate and plan (the private sector) over to  
the arbitrary decrees of government. In other

words, in the name of planning the intellectually confused and/or ignorant Left is going to make less planning possible.

The Left → when they advocate for larger government → in the name of “central planning” → actually make less planning possible → more resources are misallocated and wasted → society as a whole becomes poorer

The next fallacy to be discussed in this section of the chapter relates to the mistaken idea that state-owned-enterprises can be as effective as private sector enterprises. It is sort of a hoped-for third way between bureaucratic management and profit management. Mises demolishes this false idea, but first, a couple of life charts:

State-owned-enterprises → are tantamount to → a hoped-for third way between → bureaucratic management and profit management

However, as interventionism inevitably leads to → Socialism, ergo → there is no hoped-for third or middle way between capitalism and Socialism, so also

state-owned-enterprises lead to → bureaucratic management, ergo → there is no middle ground between bureaucratic management and profit management

"We do not need to ask whether or not it would be feasible to manage such government, state, and municipal enterprises in the same way as private enterprise. For it is a fact that as a rule the authorities are inclined to deviate from the profit system. They do not want to operate their enterprises from the viewpoint of the attainment of the greatest possible profit. **They consider the accomplishment of other tasks more important.** They are ready to renounce profit or at least a part of profit or even to take a loss for the achievement of other ends.

Whatever these other goals aimed at may be, the result of such a policy always amounts to subsidizing some people to the burden of others. If a government-owned enterprise operates at a loss or with a part only of the profit which it could attain if it were conducted solely according to the profit motive, the falling off affects the budget and thereby the taxpayers. If, for instance, a city-owned transportation system charges the customers so

low a fare that the costs of the operation cannot be covered, the taxpayers are virtually subsidizing those riding the trains [or buses].

But we need not, in a book dealing with the problems of bureaucracy, bother about these financial aspects. From our point of view another outcome is to be considered.

As soon as an undertaking is no longer operated under the profit motive, other principles must be adopted for the conduct of its affairs. The city authorities cannot simply instruct the manager: Do not bother about a profit. **They must give him more definite and precise orders.** What kind of orders could these be?

The champions of nationalized and municipalized enterprise are prone to answer this question in a rather naïve manner: The public enterprise's duty is to render useful services to the community. But the problem is not so simple as this. Every undertaking's sole task is to render useful services. But what does this term mean? Who is, in the case of public enterprise, to decide whether a service is useful? And much more important: How do we find out whether the services rendered are not

too heavily paid for, i.e., whether the factors of production absorbed by their performance are not withdrawn from other lines of utilization in which they could render more valuable services?"

In other words, if losses are, in effect, imposed on the state-owned-enterprise by rules forbidding charging too high of a price to certain citizens, e.g., low income people, then these losses must be somehow held in check, i.e., restrained with 1) budgets and 2) rules and regulations. And so we are back to bureaucratic management. The whole character of the state-owned-enterprise changes away from what it would otherwise be, if it were a for-profit business operating in the private sector. If the goal were simply to have an enterprise that provided, e.g., transportation services, and enough customers really wanted to use such a service, then it would make far more sense to allow for private sector companies to compete with each other to provide the necessary transportation services. Financial and cost accounting would be available to the private sector firms because market prices for the transportation services would exist. Further, those firms would not be saddled with bureaucratic rules and regulations as they

provided the transportation services the public was actually willing to pay for.

There are a couple of further very large problems with the fallacy that a state-owned-enterprise could be made on par with a private sector enterprise. The first big problem is that if an entrepreneur and his financial backers lose money, they are losing their own money. This makes them very careful about how they spend the funds available to them because a financial misstep could wipe them out personally – at least the capital they have invested in the business. This is not so for the losses of a state-owned-enterprise. The taxpayers pay for any losses a state-owned-enterprise incurs. A second major difference is a little bit more nuanced, but understandable nonetheless. Entrepreneurs are typically the ones who generate the ideas for new products, or services. However, an idea is not enough. The entrepreneur also needs to obtain funding in order to be able to deliver the new product or service into the marketplace, i.e., to implement the idea. Ergo, with their idea in hand, an entrepreneur seeks out a private sector funding source. Each of these private sector financing sources always has a multitude of competing requests for financing that they are evaluating.

The financiers evaluate, to the best of their ability, which entrepreneurs and projects deserve funding. In short, there is a financial vetting process. And this financial vetting process always involves an estimation of what potential customers will want and be willing to pay for. The entrepreneurs who survive this financial vetting process now have the funding in hand with which to purchase the various factors of production to bring their product or service to the marketplace. Facilities are obtained, laborers are hired, tools and machinery are acquired, etc., and production commences. These entrepreneurs obtained financing because they convinced the financiers that they would be able to deliver products and services to the end customers that the end customers would be willing to pay for AND that the amount paid by these end customers would yield a profit for the new or expanded business. They further convinced the financiers that this profit would also include enough to provide for an acceptable return on investment for the private sector financiers. A state-owned-enterprise does not go through this financial vetting process. A government can decree a new rail line into existence even if it is unlikely that the new rail line will be able to charge enough to cover all of its costs of operations. It

is a fallacy that a state-owned-enterprise can somehow be a third way between bureaucratic management and management for profit.

Two further big problems with the idea of a state-owned-enterprise being somehow on par with a private sector business → 1) in a private sector business any losses are paid for by the entrepreneur and his financial backers. In a state-owned-enterprise, the taxpayers pay for any operating losses and 2) private sector business expansions and new businesses must survive a financial vetting process where only the best perceived projects obtain financing. In a state-owned-enterprise the state can simply decree a new project or an expansion of an existing project into existence.

When The Left, or anyone else, advocates for larger government, or for the government to take over and operate an industry in the name of better customer service, or the greater good, or for whatever other reason ... whether they know it or not they are actually advocating for less rational allocation of resources and for less planning, because only in the private sector are there monetary prices that can be used for actual planning. In short, state-owned-enterprises come about through political

decrees; they are **business by assertion**.  
What they are not is rational.

State-owned-enterprises → amount to →  
business by assertion

State-owned-enterprises → are not rational

The Left also misunderstands what government spending programs can and cannot do. The Left typically likes to advocate for government stimulus. The problem is government spending cannot stimulate the economy because any money spent to build, e.g., a public park must first be taxed away from the taxpayers. The net accounting looks like the below, in macro terms:

**Debit** Park  
**Credit** Taxpayer funds

What would have occurred if the government did not build a park is some form of the below:

**Debit** Taxpayer chosen personal expenditures  
**Credit** Taxpayer funds

The difference is who is going to spend the money and on what, the taxpayers who earned

the money in the first place, or the government leaders who arbitrarily decide to build a park? There is no net stimulus to the economy because the unseen, here, is whatever the taxpayers would have chosen to spend the money on themselves. No labor is stimulated by government expenditure; it is diverted to the government-decreed arbitrary project. This all gets worse, because usually once the taxpayers spend their money there is no ongoing obligation to spend more (unless they buy a consumer durable like a car or a house). The park is different. The government will have to keep taxing the taxpayers in the future to pay for the maintenance of the park. Many taxpayers will not ever use that park and may not wish to be taxed to pay for it. At any rate, the future unseen is the ongoing tax obligations the taxpayers will have to pay in order to maintain the park. There is no additional labor. There is no economic stimulus. There is only diverted labor away from those industries and businesses the taxpayers would have spent their own money on. It is a fallacy that government spending stimulates the economy or creates jobs. Further, there also is no government spending multiplier effect that some foolish, or bought and paid for, economists put forth.

Government spending of Z amount – prevented private sector spending of Z amount = 0 x  
“Multiplier Effect” = 0

There is no “Multiplier Effect” = True

The government can only make some politically connected businesses and individuals better off by first making other people worse off, i.e., the taxpayers. In other words there are: 1) tax-receiver government winners and 2) taxpayer losers. They are both arbitrary. There are **government winners and losers by assertion**. Justice, which the government is supposed to help ensure by protecting the natural rights of the citizens, is damaged because the government itself becomes the cause of injustice. There is no need for government to be involved with distributing what the taxpayers have themselves earned because the taxpayers themselves will distribute it based on how they choose when they either spend, invest, or save their own funds.

The next problem with government spending is that it is always consumption spending. In simple terms, funds earned in the private sector by taxpayers are either spent 1) for consumption items like groceries, a place to live,

etc., 2) saving for contingencies and the future, and 3) for investments of their choosing.

Savings, unless it is putting money "under the mattress," also indirectly involves investing because if the savings are deposited in a bank, the bank lends/invests the money to individuals and enterprises the bank deems worthy. It is good for the economy in macro terms if the citizens save and invest because in so doing they are increasing the capital employed in production for greater future production, which means greater future consumption (if all goes well). With government, the expenditures are always to be considered as consumption.

Properly understood then, **all government spending is, in effect, consumption**

**spending.** Resources that are produced in the private sector are consumed in the public sector. Even if a rail line or a bus is left over at the end of the year, it does not follow that a net societal investment has been made. This is because the taxpayers, representing the unseen, would have made their own decisions regarding how much to consume and how much to invest and in what to invest. And their investment decisions would involve a financial vetting process, which was enabled by rational economic calculation.

Government "investment" decisions are arbitrary

(i.e., political, not enabled by rational economic calculation) and do not go through the private sector financial vetting process. The French economist, Frederic Bastiat, used an example (unquoted by your author) of a soldier marching back and forth as unproductive labor via governmental expenditure, so is the labor to build a rail line for which there are not enough customers. This, too, is an unproductive “investment.” There is no rationale for “government investment” any different than the rationale for government spending.

Government “investment” → displaces, not enhances, private sector investment

Government “investment” → is arbitrary, i.e., political, and does not have the benefit of rational economic calculation

Unproductive labor by either the private sector or the government → a waste

Why do people believe in these fallacies? In your author’s opinion the belief in these fallacies results from one or more of the following reasons. The first reason is the lack of intellectual leadership from many in the economics profession. The fact is that many in

the economics profession have sold out to the government in exchange for funding of one sort or another – whether that funding be a position in government, or at a government licensed bank, or at a college or university, which are mostly funded, or enabled to operate in their current form, through government money. Once these economists start depending on government money they become government apologists and stop providing the intellectual leadership they could have provided. The second reason why many people believe in government program fallacies is that most people do not like competition and this ultimately leads to them disliking capitalism. In particular they do not like whatever or whoever is competing with them, and since capitalism uses competition as a marketplace discovery process, they do not like capitalism. Even though Socialism cannot work, neither can interventionism, neither can state-owned-enterprises, they still cannot bring themselves to only want the government to be strictly limited and finite in its responsibilities. They want to further believe that government's involvement as a player, as well as the referee, will somehow not disrupt the game. In short, they do not like capitalism and they want to believe in a fiction, so they do. People hate the limits scarcity

imposes and they hate competition, and they want to believe that the government can somehow eliminate both. But the government can solve neither. Any attempts to do so only destroys the marketplace intelligence, incentives, etc., necessary to rationally allocate resources. The third reason people believe in government program fallacies is because they want to be a recipient of government largesse – whether it be a businessman wanting a government contract or government protection from competition, or a welfare recipient receiving a monthly check, or a laborer wanting to escape into a government job. People want something for nothing and who better to give it to them than the government? Pseudo-entrepreneurs groveling for government contracts or protection are not much different morally than an able-bodied man who eats without working. The fourth reason people believe in government program fallacies is because they do not understand the social science of economics, in particular they do not understand that resources are scarce and wants are virtually unlimited. They also cannot see the unseen because they have not been trained to look for foreseeable, but not yet seen consequences. This makes the regular man on

the street an easy victim for the government and its various apologists, such as The Left.

To summarize the above reasons we have:

1) many economists sell out and become government apologists and this results in a lack of social scientific intellectual leadership; 2) many people do not like, or even hate, capitalism and want government involvement in "the game" as a player, not just as a referee; 3) the personal and widespread character defect of wanting something for nothing; and 4) too many citizens' lack of knowledge about economic laws and how they limit even governments - in particular not seeing the unseen, thus providing an easy way for governments and their apologists to fool them.

Government expenditures are consumption expenditures and they are decided upon by political decree, i.e., **government expenditures by assertion**. Your author has no quibble with taxation for the necessary government expenditures of a government limited to keeping the peace, protecting individual natural rights, arbitrating disputes via rational and just principles, etc. But the tragic irony for The Left, and other apologists for larger than necessary government expenditures,

is that these expenditures remove resources, via taxation, from the private sector, where rational calculation is possible to an area where no rational calculation is possible and this forces into play the bloated waste and inefficiency of government bureaucracies. To do so in the name of “central planning” is intellectual confusion. Again and again, The Left is wrong regarding economics and government, yet they want power over both in order to provide “rational leadership.”

The Left does not understand the economic doctrine of comparative advantage. This doctrine was extended by your author, via analogy, to everyone ultimately having a place at God’s dinner table of life. We can infer their lack of understanding because The Left’s Secular Humanism doctrine denies God and also because The Left, misunderstanding justice, want to equalize both opportunity and outcome. This is intellectual error to the point of being incoherent.

It is not possible to equalize opportunity because there are a variety of human beings, cultures, and God-given talents and abilities. There are a variety of human temperaments, people even in the same family experience

different parenting practices, and human beings apply themselves differently, etc. In point of fact, each human being is a unique creation and there is nothing The Left using the power of government can do about it. In further point of fact, God gave men different gifts (Romans 12, 1 Corinthians 12, and other places).

It is also not possible to equalize outcome because the only way to do so is to kill all the smart people, all of the talented people, and also all of the hard working people. As your author previously pointed out, actual justice in terms of productive achievement involves proportionality and NOT equality.

Further still, regarding attempting to use the power of government to do the impossible, The Left misunderstands what government can and cannot do. This is obvious because to use the government to tax some people more than others, in order to subsidize the government's favorites, there is inherent inequality in that this process creates tax payers and tax receivers. If The Left really cared about equality (it does not) the once thing most people should be able to agree on is the equality before the law aspect of justice entailing not favoring one man or group over another and respecting the individual

natural rights of all. This, The Left will not do. Once again, The Left is wrong on all of the central points - intellectually and morally confused.

Sometimes the propaganda the government and its apologists utilize to "justify" various programs comes from an old philosopher, e.g., a Machiavelli, or a Jeremy Bentham, who popularized utilitarianism. Way beyond the scope of this book your author, has previously written a section 7.9 in his *Life Charts* book attacking utilitarianism. The below quote introduces the topic.

"There is a philosophical doctrine known as utilitarianism and this doctrine is important for the subject of economics because some economists, including the great Mises, have used it to ground their writings. Mises, properly understood, however, would limit utilitarianism to mean that a proposed policy would achieve good results (good utility). Mises further knew the **things that are qualitative, e.g., "good," could not be measured quantitatively – no matter who was making the attempt.** Further, Mises would not accept social (collective) utilitarian's perversion into the government sacrificing some men to others in an attempt to

"achieve the greatest good for the greatest number." In other words, Mises would have the government be strictly limited and afford all men equal protection under the law. This would preclude some men being sacrificed to others. Unfortunately, this is not true with many pseudo-economist sellouts to the government powers that be. Rothbard, a Mises disciple, came to understand the problem and wrote strongly against utilitarianism, as it is commonly understood. He knew that using utilitarianism as the foundation of economic policy was bound to result in some men being sacrificed to others.

Unfortunately, that is what has happened. To Mises, utilitarian just meant the theory has to lead to a practice that will yield a good result, one that improves our reality. Your author will just touch on a few core problems with conflating what Mises was going for with the propaganda that utilitarianism has become. First, "good," when speaking of a personal judgment of value is, just that, a personal (not a collective) judgment of value and second, "good" is qualitative, not quantitative. There is no invariable standard of measurement available to measure good the way a ruler can measure centimeters or inches. Because of this, there

can be no adding up Person One's judgment of good and then adding it to Person Two's judgment of good and then using an equals sign to sum up the total. Your author is purposely using some mathematical symbols below as metaphors. Taking them literally would void your author's point, just above.

The concept of "good" → a personal judgment of value

The concept of "good" → qualitative

There are no "units of good" that can be added, subtracted, multiplied, or divided = True

Falsity → Person #1's good + Person 2's good = societal good (if society has two total members)

There is no adding up "good" because good is not mathematical, it is qualitative and also personally judged. To attempt to say something like, "Policy A will yield the greatest good for the greatest number" is yet one more assertion. We will obviously call this one: **the greatest good by assertion**. Advocates for big government, in particular The Left, use this subterfuge all the time and it usually works because the majority of the citizenry are as intellectually confused as

The Left because they were “educated” (propagandized) (brainwashed) by them.

The Left, self-styled leaders by assertion, want to be heavily involved in setting and then seeing through economic policies for the government’s interventions into the market economy. As pointed out in this longer-than-your-author-wished-for section, The Left has bought into and then advocated for virtually every economic fallacy known to the human race. In terms of economics, The Left is so muddleheaded and confused they are in no way intellectually or morally fit to be the leaders of other men. The government interventions that hamper the market economy also hamper the human race. Our children’s future is so heavily mortgaged they are starting life with incredible burdens and there is no way the bloated local, state, national, and international debts will ever be repaid in honest un-inflated, i.e., real money. If you really want what is best for you, your children, and your grandchildren then you must not follow The Left. They cannot lead anywhere except to a place where no rational calculation is possible, the citizens have no rights, and there is chaos and unhappiness everywhere. Follow you where – to a future where capital is consumed, valuable individual human beings are

tax slaves with no absolute rights, and lack of production and variety make life like hell on earth? I don't think so.

### **5.7 Monetary Fallacies and Failures**

Similar to the last section's comment that "this is not a book on economics," this is also not a book about money. The purpose of this section is to show that The Left, and anyone else who believes in "modern monetary theory," either do not understand money or actually want to deceive the people. If it is the former, they do not understand, then they are not the leaders because you must have the correct answer to be a leader. If it is the latter, that they wish to deceive the people, then they are morally unfit to lead. This section is limited to pointing out some of the major misunderstandings and/or deceptions. For a more detailed analysis and breakdown of monetary fallacies the reader is directed to your author's previous books covering same, which are *Life Charts* (section 7.6) and *Economic Fallacies Versus Rational Thought* (the "Money Fallacies" chapter).

Probably no area of economics is so riddled with nonsense than the subject of money. In actuality, the basics are not that complicated.

The problems come in when governments and some of their citizens want something for nothing and turn to money creation and other fantasies as a way of attempting to overturn economic laws and their operation.

The French economist Jean-Baptiste Say is credited with what is known as "Say's Law." Say's Law is worded in different ways by different authors. The essence of **Say's Law** is: production creates its own purchasing power. Another way to say it is: produced goods and services trade for other produced goods and services. Say was correct.

Say's Law → produced goods and services → trade for → other produced goods and services

Say's Law in operation, pertaining to a good → 1) produce a good → 2) with produced good in hand there is → purchasing power (exchanging potential) → 3) trade for a different producer's good that you desire OR use the produced good yourself for your own purposes

A non-produced good cannot be consumed = True

Production comes before consumption = True

Money is a commodity with its own uses, e.g., gold used as jewelry (a consumer good) and gold used to coat electronic components (a producer good), that has come to be valued more by marketplace participants for its use in facilitating other commodity and service exchanges and so it becomes money, i.e., a commonly accepted medium of exchange.

Money = a commonly accepted medium of exchange

Money is a commodity → that marketplace participants utilize more for → its exchange value → than for its consumer or production value (money starts out as a commodity)

Money substitutes arise when governments, central banks, and other banks linked to both governments and central banks are allowed to do things like print dollar bills, or euro bills, etc. If there is a one to one ratio of dollar bills to gold in the vault then there is no big problem. But that is not what happens with modern monetary theory. The government charters a central bank. The central bank in lock step with cohort banks and other financial institutions is allowed to create money substitutes via either

printing more paper currency, which is inflationary, or by granting what are known as checkbook loans, which are both inflationary and cause the boom and bust business cycle.

Checkbook loans are when the cohort banks linked to the central bank are allowed to create money by funding a loan with newly created money substitutes. The new money substitutes are created via an accounting ledger entry. The central bank and the government allow this money substitute creation in the hopes of generating the boom part of the business cycle, which they will take credit for, and they hope to somehow void the laws of nature by avoiding the bust part of the business cycle, which they will blame on anybody or anything but themselves, the actual culprits. For example, they might blame businessmen for raising prices too much or for being greedy. But the only way that a boom/bust business cycle can come to pass is through the checkbook loan process. It takes chapters of books to explain all of this and if the reader is interested your author has a step-by-step explanation in his prior books mentioned above.

Government → charters/allows → a central bank

Central bank + cohort banks → “legally” allowed to create money substitutes

If the money substitutes are from checkbook loans → the boom/bust business cycle is triggered

There is no escape from the bust phase of the business cycle.

There are many problems with central banks and their creation of credit. Some of them are as follows: 1) they buy government debt 2) if they did not then the government would either have to borrow from the citizens, thus crowding out private investment, or they would have to tax the citizens directly for the larger government that politicians of both The Left and The Right want. This would enrage many of the citizens and force politicians to answer hard and angry questions, which politicians do not wish to answer. Continuing, 3) the central bankers are not actually funding the government’s expenditures with gold, i.e., with real money. They are allowed extra-legal special rights to create money substitutes and then lend it to the government. The problems with this are too many for this short section of the book, but when they lend to the government they ask in

exchange that the citizen's individual natural rights be, in effect, cancelled because from the point of the creation of the central bank onward the citizen's lives, liberties, and properties, including the same for their progeny (children/grandchildren, etc.) are forever pledged to the private owners of the central bank. This is not just morally wrong. This is not just unwise. This is EVIL. The central bankers of the world work largely in concert with each other to establish the same basic system over the entire planet. The owners of the central banks want to own the world and everything and everyone on it. 4) If any government actually wanted to engage in "legal" money substitute creation, what the knowledgeable citizens would refer to, as counterfeiting, then that government still would not need a central bank. They could just do the process themselves. Of course, whoever does it is wrong and it should not be done by anyone.

The creation of the evil counterfeiting central banks probably occurred because government politicians were conned (and likely bribed) with an "A" or "B" contrived argument. Said argument your author will address with a few pages of quotes from his *Life Charts* book. Any

quotations below, other than from the Bible, are from your author's *Life Charts* book.

"Volumes more could be written on the evils of central banking and some day it will be. There is no doubt in your author's mind that central bankers, politicians that enabled them, cohort bankers, and anyone else involved on the inside will go down in history as the moral equivalents of a Hitler. They have severely injured or destroyed millions upon millions of lives. They have also destroyed currencies. For instance the purchasing power of money (PPM) of the United States Dollar (USD) has declined by about 98% [now about 99%] since the central bank of the United States came into existence. This is obviously a wholesale financial slaughter of anyone who saved funds in dollars. In some other nations it has been even worse. No honest historical assessment could say that the PPM of the USD or other currencies has been preserved or stabilized. Further, inflation-measuring mechanisms have been redefined in order to under-report consumer price increases. But there is an even bigger problem because for inflation to only measure consumer price increases is a sleight of hand. The increase in the money supply caused by the issuance of money substitutes beyond the

commodity money deposited does not just buy consumer goods. The money substitutes also purchase factors of production, stocks, bonds, real estate, etc. The prices of virtually all assets go up and this is a reason why, for instance, that the prices of stocks on the world stock markets are high in nominal (money) and historical terms (as your author writes this – July, 2021). In short, official inflation is under-reported and the effects of inflation on asset prices is either not reported at all, or not emphasized. But the real effects of inflation especially hurt those not favored by the inflationism-interventionism policy of the government. Some of the negatively affected are those who receive the money later than the government-elite first-receivers of money, e.g., those on fixed income like pensioners, private sector young people struggling to come up with enough money to buy a consumer durable like a home, private sector family savers, etc. The real effects of inflation hurt most people – particularly those in the private sector who are not involved in working on government contracts. Government is not supposed to favor some people at the expense of others. The Bible actually alludes to the above in many places and your author will quote just one such passage below. Those responsible will be

painted with divine radar and dealt with by the two Jehovahs.

"Once like pure silver [emblematic of commodity money], you have become like worthless slag [emblematic of money substitutes]. Once so pure, you are now like watered-down wine. Your leaders are rebels, the companions of thieves. All of them take bribes and refuse to defend the orphans and the widows. Therefore, the Lord, the LORD Almighty, the Mighty One of Israel, says, "I will pour out my fury on you, my enemies! I will turn against you. I will melt you down and skim off your slag. I will remove all your impurities. Afterward I will give you good judges and wise counselors like the ones you used to have. ... ""  
Isaiah 1:22-26, NLT

"The princes of Judah are like those who remove the landmark [the barrier between right and wrong]; I will pour out My wrath upon them like water." Hosea 5:10 Amplified Bible

A charitable interpretation of the original rationale for the men behind the formation of the central banks to manage the money supply probably involved a false 'A' or 'B' dichotomy and a bad theory resulting in the wrong choice.

The bad theory using the false dichotomy was something along the lines of either the central bankers will have to manage the money supply or the politicians will manage the money supply. Politicians clearly cannot be trusted to control themselves so the default choice (in their false dichotomy scenario) was made to allow the central bankers and their cohort banker team to manage the money supply. And then the central bankers over time set up their fractional reserve banking system with its special legal privileges like legal tender laws and the monopoly on banknote issue, etc. **But there was a third choice available and it was the correct and disregarded choice.** The third choice was for the people to use commodity money in their daily lives and to appoint any such agents as they might choose to in performing certain 100-percent-reserve banking operations for them – such as commodity-based lending. The people themselves should have been in control of the money supply and this would conform to both divine law and natural law and result in the respect of natural rights. Of course gold mining would slightly increase the stock of money but this has historically been very small – usually about 1.5 – 2.0 percent per year. This small increase can easily be handled by an economy (as could a larger increase

through larger price adjustments). This correct third option would have likely prevented huge government budget deficits because the government would either have to tax away the commodity money from the people (resulting in hard questions from citizens) or the government would have had to entice citizens to lend them commodity money (with higher and higher interest rates, but that would be somewhat self-limiting because it would affect the private sector money-price-of-interest rates). Both of those options have immediate visible negative effects because if the size of government in a society gets too large it shuts down economic activity in the private sector and even the man on the street not educated in money or economics can see what is going on. The PPM would likely increase over time as the production increases from the private sector delivered a larger amount of goods and services each year than the amount of new gold mined each year and nominal prices might very well fall because of this. But real incomes for laborers and landowners would increase. Young people could more easily form households. Older people would see the purchasing power of their hard-earned savings increase – not be inflated away like it is today. People could think and plan longer-term without being effectively

punished for it. It would pay to save and it is therefore much more likely that more capital would be created and utilized for greater production. And there would be the further benefit of justice in knowing that a gang of illogical, immoral crooks could not manipulate money, politicians, etc., in order to benefit their relatively small cadre of associates at the expense of most of the unseeing general public.

Of the choices of who should be in charge of a society's money supply → 1) central bankers 2) politicians 3) people and their agents (if any) → number three is correct → the first two are disasters

Even worse than all of the above, the people, their progeny, and their assets were all pledged to the central bankers and the men behind them. This means that today we not only have **fiat money** (substitutes) we also have what amounts to **fiat property**. This is because you do not really own something you have to pay property taxes on – the government does. The government functions as a collection agent for the central bankers. And even worse still, we have **fiat freedom** and that effectively means that in a sense we have **fiat people**.

With central banks in charge of the money supply AND governments acting as their collection agents AND 1) the people, 2) the progeny of the people, and 3) the property of the people → pledged as “security” for fiat money → we now have → A) fiat money B) fiat property 3) fiat “freedom” → all of which mean we have 4) fiat people (people who are actually legally enslaved to Satanic [central bank] monsters)”

The above sad state of affairs is really unfortunate because there is always enough money to allow for the honest exchange of private sector produced goods and services. The creation of inflation is neither necessary, nor wise, to “assist” with marketplace exchanges. Beyond the scope of this book, the short answer to posed money “problems” is that prices will adjust up or down in order to solve any exchange “problems.” Going back to Say’s Law to help find an answer, the “not enough money” problem comes about when marketplace participants do not produce enough to be able to sell enough to obtain the amount of money they desire, or they produce too much, or are otherwise unwilling to lower their prices to allow for honest supply and demand to clear the market, even if it is at a price they do not like.

In short, there is always enough money to facilitate marketplace exchanges. There is not always enough production and there is not always enough price flexibility ... but the problem is never "there is not enough money."

**" ... That money is a state creation is a modern organic-state big government fallacy.** Money preceded government. Gold has always been money and when your author says that gold was chosen as money, it is not likely that all the marketplace participants sat around a campfire or met in a village square and voted to choose gold, or silver, or both as money. It was probably more likely what Austrian economist Friedrich Hayek would call "spontaneous order." It happened as a result of human choices, but not necessarily by human design. And the same basic thing happened all over the world, across civilizations - despite the fact that communication across civilizations did not occur, or was difficult. Gold and silver are the indirect exchange, trade-enabling third commodity. In the modern era, real money is gold.

Money preceded government = True

Money is NOT a state creation = True

Productive men and women can engage in indirect exchange without government being involved in any way = True"

Since the creation of The Federal Reserve in the USA → the dollar has lost about 99% of its purchasing power (honest producers and savers have been inflation-taxed in addition to the loss of their individual natural rights and in addition to being responsible for an un-payable government debt)

Inflation → functions in substance and effect → like an additional tax (goods and services cost more to buy, lowering living standards, and when assets are sold for nominal profit, not profits in real terms, the taxpayer must pay taxes on what amounts to phantom profits)

Central banks → demand → governments surrender → the individual natural rights of the citizenry as collateral for un-payable government debts AND foolish governments comply

Central banks → fund → government deficits and allow for → accumulated debts, which can never be repaid

Inflation caused by central banks, cohort banks, and governments distort market prices because they put money substitutes functioning as money into the hands of the politically connected instead of into the hands of honest entrepreneurs. There is a big problem with this as it causes huge misallocations of capital as well as the destructive bust phase of the business cycle. "As Dr. Ludwig von Mises and the other Austrian economists (a school of economic thought largely corresponding to reality) have demonstrated, the use of money in indirect exchanges provides a very useful additional benefit to marketplace participants. This additional benefit is in addition to the enabling of the indirect two-step exchanges of goods and services in the first place. And that additional benefit turns out to be quite important. The additional benefit is that marketplace participants now have **money prices**, which they can use to calculate with. And **these prices enable economic planning** by the producers (and consumers) of goods and services. Since most production is sold for money it tells producers what to produce and how much. Producers can still make planning mistakes, but prices at least give them something quite important to go by. Because

markets generating prices occur everywhere there is private property, a commodity used as a medium of exchange, and freedom to trade, money prices are almost everywhere. And those money prices are, in essence, **distributed intelligence**. Mises would later figure out that without money prices, which Socialism cannot provide, Socialism is not possible as a rational and scientific economic system.

Indirect exchange → money prices → enables economic planning → a big additional benefit

Money prices are → distributed intelligence

A marketplace trade (transaction) occurs because → two individuals have → different and unequal valuations → at a moment in time

Values cannot be measured = True

Prices do NOT measure value = True

Prices do enable → economic calculation

Prices are → recent history

Prices fluctuate constantly = True

Economic calculation → is enormously valuable  
→ for human beings, → even though human  
beings are forced to use → prices, not values, in  
their calculations

Economic calculation → enables → the rational  
allocation of resources

Economic calculation → enables → estimations  
of proposed projects, i.e., → the financial vetting  
process (planning)

Economic calculation → enables → personal,  
household, and entity budgets

Economic calculation → enables → financial and  
cost accounting”

“The central bankers and their pseudo-economist apologists do not understand something Mises explained in 1912 in his *The Theory Of Money And Credit*. Robert Murphy also is to be commended for having a *Study Guide to The Theory Of Money And Credit* and your author will shortly quote several definitions and important points from him. Before that let the reader remember an important distinction concerning money versus other goods. There are 1) consumption goods (goods of the first

order) and 2) production goods (goods of higher orders) and 3) commodity money (the generally accepted medium of exchange). Money obviously is not a consumer good because it does not directly yield satisfaction, like eating a sandwich. The money is exchanged for a sandwich, which is eaten as a consumer good. One possible further way to look at it is that money is not consumed – it still exists before and after one obtains and then spends it. Money is not a producer good because it is not a commercial tool like a widget-making machine or a computer used to help in keeping the books and records. Of course money is used to buy the factors of production but it itself is not really a factor of production. The best economic practice is to recognize all of the above and use a threefold classification of goods. Money is not a consumer good and it is not a producer good – it is a medium of exchange.

The threefold system of the classification of goods is important = True

The threefold system → a good → is either: 1) a consumer good or 2) a producer good or 3) money

The reason to use a threefold system of classifying goods turns out to be very important to moral, rational, and productive thought. And that reason has escaped central bankers, politicians, most economists, and apologists for big government, The Left, and most of the general public. Money forms a part of what is called "**private capital**" but it does NOT form a part of what is called "**social capital**." Your author will let Murphy define both below:

"**Private capital** can be defined as the aggregate of the products that serve as a means to the acquisition of goods. Money should clearly be included in this category [because it can be used to buy the factors of production], and in fact historically an interest-bearing sum of money was the starting point of the concept of 'capital.'

Over time, theorists realized that money was 'barren' and did not directly yield its 'fruits' the way physical [agricultural] seeds or human labor could. To explain why people would be willing to pay interest on money loans, we must recognize that money can be exchanged for other, productive goods. This observation reinforces the decision to classify money as a medium of exchange, rather than a production good: the

only way to salvage the inclusion of money as a part of private capital, is to distinguish it from other production goods and recognize its special ability to be exchanged for them.”

Private capital = social capital + money

“Social (or productive) capital can be defined as the aggregate of the products intended for employment in further production. If we deny that money is a production good, then obviously it cannot be a part of social (or productive) capital.”

Social capital is the aggregate of the products intended for employment in future production. This would include tools, machinery, computers, etc. To remind the reader the factors of production are capital goods (reproducible means of production), land, and labor. **The key point is that none of the factors of production can be created via computer entry or printed like money substitutes can.** And money proper (commodity money, like gold) cannot be created by computer entry or printed either. Those running the central banks, the cohort banks, politicians, and the talking heads in media, pseudo-economists, and big government

apologists do not behave like they understand it is a falsity that the factors of production can be magically created by using a computer entry or a printing process. Money substitutes can be. When the central bankers create more money substitutes they are, in effect, adding to "private capital." But they ARE NOT adding to "social capital" and it is social capital that influences future production. The central bankers can create all of the money substitutes they want prior to the destruction of the currency and none of this money substitute creation will assist in actually increasing production. The money substitutes, though not commodity money, function as money in the broader sense – as long as they are accepted and used like commodity money by the general public. (As an economic note there is no need to get into the nuances of credit money, fiat money, fiduciary media, etc., right here, as your author does not need to do so to make the point of this series of paragraphs. Basically your author is using a simplified "commodity money" versus "money substitute" classification in this series of paragraphs in order to make his point.) Mises and Rothbard have demonstrated that any amount of money can effectively do its job as a commonly accepted medium of exchange (prices adjust in real time based on the dynamic real

world situation). By increasing the money supply the central banks do increase private capital – with the negative effect of altering and subverting marketplace prices. But this increase of private capital does not matter because in terms of increasing production the central bankers cannot just create social capital and the other factors of production (land and labor). It is beyond the power of any man or group of men to do so. **This is the delusion of trusting in central bankers.** They have no power to actually affect real production, but they can harm it by distorting the pricing intelligence that an unhampered market would have provided. Further, they can also destroy justice in a society whereby natural rights are lost. They can also enable out of control budget deficits and government debt accumulation. They enable the catastrophic destruction and waste of capital resulting from business cycles. And they can ultimately gut the PPM of a currency entrusted to them. Worse for them, they have made the two Jehovahs their enemy.

Social capital → cannot be created via computer entry or a printing process

Private capital → whose composition includes money, → thereby including “money”

substitutes," → can be increased via computer entry or a printing process

The central bank caused → increase in private capital → does NOT increase production → because the increase in private capital comes from → non-productive money substitutes

The central bank cannot → magically increase →  
1) laborers 2) land 3) capital goods → all of which are necessary for real production increases

Central banks are destructive of society for at least these reasons: 1) currency debasement 2) enablement of government deficits 3) leading to enablement of un-payable levels government debt 4) institutionalized injustice via the loss of citizens' individual natural rights, ergo we now have what amounts to fiat money, fiat property, and fiat freedom 5) institutionalized injustice via new money substitute creation going first to the government elite and central banker elite cohorts 6) misallocation and the waste of capital and also the individual and family pain experienced as a result of the credit-expansion-caused business cycles 7) the confusion-causing distortion of inflationary-contaminated marketplace prices impairing the ability of

citizens to make good decisions (real undistorted prices should have been available but were not) 8) the contaminated character and minds of bankers, lawyers, politicians, bureaucrats, etc."

The legal system itself, including bought and paid for politicians, has been corrupted through the central bank process, which bears comment below. Unfortunately, this section is longer than what would seem to be fitting in a book about God's Strange Plan. The reason for the length is because Satan and his spiritual seed line also have a plan and it involves privately owned central banks working together to ultimately enslave the people of the entire planet and then to force them to serve Satan as "God" (Revelation 13). Satan and his seed line's plan will not work because the two Jehovahs will defeat them and their plan. Your author again quotes from his *Life Charts* book.

"Attorneys have become, for the most part, representatives of the government creditors, and the courts have become a wealth transfer mechanism. The judges, paid by government, rule, over time, for expanded government power and against natural rights. It has been frequently said and is usually true that "the policies of the monarch are always those of his

creditors.” And this saying includes all forms of government. With control of the legal system the government creditors can license, regulate, tax, restrict labor, restrict property usage through zoning, etc. The people are now controlled for government creditor benefit. If the citizens understood why their life was hard, and if the citizens were also moral, neither of which is likely true, they would probably rise up against both the government leadership team and the government creditors in an attempt to regain their natural rights. But people do not understand why their life is hard. They complain about their life being hard, but they do not understand why it is so. Wanting something for nothing always has its price and that price will be paid. In this case the wanting something for nothing started with a king [of The Left or The Right] wanting a bigger government that he could pay for. But it also includes members of the governmental leadership team wanting big government with its created jobs of status and privilege along with government contracts. And many run-of-the-mill citizens want a big government dispensing government benefits which, of course, have to be taken from Peter before they can be given to Paul.

The government creditors have created and installed an elaborate legal system and banking system which functions as a trapper's net to catch men and to take their property and their energy from them. This was all described, long in advance, by the two Jehovahs in Habakkuk:

"Therefore the law has become helpless, and justice does not always go forth. For the wicked entraps the righteous; therefore justice goes forth, being perverted." Habakkuk 1:4, MKJV

"Must we be strung up on their hooks and dragged out in their nets while they rejoice? Then they will worship their nets and burn incense in front of them. "These nets are the gods who have made us rich!" they will claim." Habakkuk 1:15, 16, NLT

Your author believes it likely that at least some of these very worldly government creditors are actually in league with Satan to take over the earth and deliver it to him. Satan cannot destroy or hurt the two Jehovahs. He tried that and failed already (Isaiah 14:13-15). So Satan would now like to destroy men and/or enslave men made in God's image as a means to do so to God in effigy. All this is leading up to the final rebellion described in Revelation 13,

already mentioned above. The two Jehovahs long ago anticipated that **the rich men government creditors** of the earth would do all they have done and **the two Jehovahs have a prophecy specifically for them.** Perhaps this is a partial fulfillment, in principle, against those who encumber men's lives and property as recorded in Nehemiah 5:1-13, particularly the curse recorded in verse 13. At any rate, they are in trouble as they have been painted with divine radar and are as good as dead.

'Because you have said, We have made a covenant with death [a covenant with Satan], and we have made a vision with hell [a joint plan with Satan to enslave men and take over the world]; when the overwhelming rod shall pass through [of correction from God], it shall not come to us; **for we have made lies our refuge [fraud], and we have hidden ourselves under falsehood [a corrupted legal system]**, therefore so says the Lord Jehovah, Behold, I place in Zion a Stone for a foundation, a tried Stone, a precious Cornerstone [Jesus Christ, King of kings and Lord of lords Revelation 17:14, 19:16], a sure Foundation [morality + rationality]; he who believes shall not hurry. Also I will lay judgment

to the line, and righteousness to the plummet;  
and the hail shall sweep away the refuge of lies,  
and the waters shall overflow the hiding place  
[the rich men have prepared hiding places, to no  
avail, Psalm 107:26-27]. **And your covenant**  
**with death shall be wiped out, and your**  
**vision with hell shall not stand**; when the  
overwhelming rod shall pass through, **then you**  
**shall be beaten down by it.**" Isaiah 28:15-  
18, MKJV"

The Left wants big government and they want to be in control of it. Big government involves the evil central banks. This section shows what happens when the average citizen follows the "leadership" of The Left. Follow you where? To a hamster-on-a-wheel life as a tax slave so a small group of people can buy and intimidate politicians into stealing our lives and our children's lives under the banner of propaganda slogans like "modern monetary theory." The modern monetary theory espoused by The Left leads to tax slavery and no future for the masses, while the money monsters have an easy parasitical life protected by corrupt and stupid politicians who have sold out their nations.

## **5.8 The Left engages in unprincipled, unscientific human experimentation and their institutions are failures**

The Left rejects God and also divine law and they want to be able to engage in rearranging society to whatever current vision the leadership of The Left decides upon. We can call this one **societal vision by assertion**. Since you cannot rearrange society without trampling upon other men's individual natural rights, The Left cannot ever be moral unless they give up on their plans. This they will not do. The Left will not agree to or uphold your author's advocated for, minimum secular standard of morality, i.e., respect for other men's individual natural rights. Without either a divine law or a rational secular standard of morality, this leaves The Left with no standard of morality they can possibly articulate. Ergo, The Left engages in morality by assertion, which is not morality, nor rational, nor peaceful to others who disagree with them. If you are not leading the human race toward becoming better individual men and women you are not a real leader. Without a coherent articulated standard of morality it is not possible to help individual men and women become better people. In short, The Left is unprincipled and this disqualifies them from leadership if

anything ever would. **The Left are Satan's human assistants.**

As bad as the above is, it gets even worse. This is because The Left is also unscientific or wrong for at least these important reasons: 1) They do not really trust reason because reason can be used to discover the natural laws that govern the universe, including social scientific laws, including individual natural rights, which they wish to be free to violate while still believing they are "the good guys." 2) Your author suspects that The Left, probably following the debunked philosopher David Hume, is not really sure the laws of nature are consistent over time. 3) The Left does not understand methodological dualism in the sciences is necessary because human choice is a causative factor in our lives. 4) The Left rejects praxeology, the logic of action (human action mainly), because praxeology would allow for the establishment of precise economic laws and those economic laws place limits on what governments can and cannot do and they also do the same pertaining to individuals. 5) The Left does not really see or care about specific unique individuals because they basically view individual men and women as disposable building blocks for the society they wish to

construct (human fuel for their fire) and so they dispense with the correct social science method of methodological individualism. 6) The Left probably places too much faith in the natural scientists and follows them leading to believing in scientism and also behaviorism, which are both false (more on them immediately below). 7) This leads to disregarding human beings' personal hopes and dreams; our human minds are taken for granted and then treated as a blank slate that The Left would like to shape and mold into their societal-vision-by-assertion image. This can lead to engaging in behavior modification efforts on a large scale, such as those pertaining to public education, social media, Hollywood, television, the music industry, the news media, government pronouncements, advertising influences, etc. 8) The Left pushes for God to be put out of schools, governments, and society and encourages the teaching of evolution as a science and also secular humanist doctrines as though evolution and Secular Humanism were true; they are not. 9) The Left routinely propose collective "solutions" to what are largely individual problems, problems of individuals lacking in the virtues, having the wrong values, and so making poor personal choices resulting in bad consequences. 10) Because The Left has

the wrong answers they end up engaging in what amounts to human experimentation. They try their bad theories, fail, harm valuable individual people and their families, think they learned from their failed attempt, revise their theory, try again, fail again, in a repeating cycle of harm to people. The social “scientific” “leadership” of The Left is a disaster for the human race, a tragedy. There are more reasons, but this is enough for a reasonable person to conclude that not only is The Left immoral, they are not scientific, and their ideas and theories do not correspond with reality. Accordingly, in addition to being morally unfit to lead, The Left is also unfit to lead from a rational or scientific perspective.

The theories of → The Left → do NOT correspond to reality

The Left is → 1) morally unfit to lead + 2) rationally unfit to lead (they do not have the correct answers)

Your author needs to further discuss the two concepts mentioned in point #6, above, which are **scientism** and **behaviorism**. In doing so, a few paragraphs from your author’s previous book, *Intellectual Warfare: The Corruption Of*

*Philosophy And Thought* will be used (with some minor edits).

"Further there are actually those who, while realizing that man appears unique, are uncomfortable with all that man's uniqueness implies. They particularly do not know what to do with man's mind. These people are usually either advocates of what could be called **scientism**, the belief that eventually all biology will be reduced to chemistry and all chemistry will eventually be reduced to physics – particles in motion causing change according to the laws of physics. Or, these people are **behaviorists**, which is the belief that the actions of people can be explained in terms of conditioning without much regard to conscious thoughts or feelings.

Again, your author is amazed by **scientism** because quite contrary to the laws of physics (which are always consistent), men can actually be the source of causation based on how they think and choose and then act. Further, the same mind might respond to the same core situation by going to the left one time and the right the next time (a man while hiking might choose the left fork of a trail one day and the right fork of a trail another day) (inconsistent from a physicist's point of view). In other words

the same exact man with the same exact genetics chooses differently over time. And then a different result occurs. There never will be a regularity in how men choose to react because different men make different choices in response to the same exact phenomena, and the same exact man chooses differently from one time to the other in response to the same set of circumstances. Regarding behaviorism, it is the height of folly to think that stimulus and response applies to man like the behaviorists seem to believe. Behaviorism is ultimately scientifically false. Both scientism and behaviorism are intellectual dead-ends when it comes to explaining the choices of men and their actions. This is because men were designed to have minds and to be free to choose and so they do.

Scientism = False

Behaviorism = False

Human choice → obliterates → scientism and behaviorism

Because man is a being designed to be free to choose, his choices short-circuit both scientism and behaviorism. There is a need for

methodological dualism – two different, but complementary, scientific methods. The inductive method of the natural sciences will not work for the social sciences and vice versa.”

The reason your author mentioned scientism, again, and also discussed behaviorism is because The Left wants to somehow program the minds of individuals in order to have a more compliant populace, thus making it easier for the leaders of The Left to rule over mankind. To that end the institutions, now largely taken over by The Left, are working mainly in concert to recondition human beings for a new world order. Some of these institutions are central banking, the legal profession, parliaments, governments, bureaucracies, educational institutions, militaries, international organizations, large foundations, banking, Hollywood, television, the news media, trade associations, etc., etc., etc. Many of these institutions engage in what amounts to ongoing human reconditioning and experimentation to try and “get things right.” In short, **the immoral and irrational unscientific** are trying to remake man into a willing and obedient servant to The Left. The **instruments** to accomplish specific limited purposes, that decent men and women started, e.g., schools and universities to educate, etc.,

have now become **morally and intellectually corrupt institutions** seeking ever more funding, power, and influence over the human race. These institutions are failing and have failed the human race. The Left has for the most part taken over these institutions and ran them for their own benefit instead of for the benefit of the human race.

However, men were created by God to have minds, to have individual natural rights, and to have dominion over the earth, but not each other. Men were also given free will and time to develop so we can grow mature. The reason God gave men: 1) a mind, 2) free will, 3) time, and 4) told men to have dominion over the earth and to be fruitful and multiply was so that men, with all of these qualities, could be moral, rational, and productive, like God the Father and Jesus Christ are. Your author will write more on this in chapter seven of this book, but for now, human beings, unique individuals all of them, were given certain important gifts by God so that we could be moral, rational, and productive, like God is. We are not to be immoral, irrational, and parasitic like The Left is. We were made in the image and likeness of God and we are not to be remade into the image and likeness of The Left.

"And God said, Let Us make man in Our image, after our likeness. And let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the heavens, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over all the creepers creeping on the earth. And God created man in His image; in the image of God He created him. He created them male and female. And God blessed them. And God said to them, Be fruitful, and multiply and fill the earth, and subdue it. And have dominion over the fish of the sea and over the fowl of the heavens, and all animals that move upon the earth."

Genesis 1:26-28, MKJV

The Executive Summary of this section is The Left completely misunderstands the world and universe they live in, or they blank it out in their immoral, irrational, and unscientific quest for enough power to play God and to remake mankind into their image and likeness. They will fail. Any quest or "plan" or vision that does not correspond to either secular reality or to God's ultimate vision for mankind is going to fail. Part of the purpose of this book is to explain God's Strange Plan. Another purpose is to show why The Left cannot deliver, hence this

chapter and the tough early chapters of this book.

The Left → wants → to play God

The Left → wants → to remake man into → their willing servants

The Left → being immoral + irrational + unscientific + parasitical → will ultimately fail

God's Strange Plan → will succeed

The Left → being immoral + using the wrong methods + angering the two Jehovahs → can only "lead" mankind → to Satan for → enslavement + destruction

The two Jehovahs → will defeat Satan + his spiritual seed line, The Left

## **5.9 Educational system failure**

While most parents are working hard and sacrificing in the hopes their children will have a better life than they have had, parents taken as a whole have made a very big mistake by allowing the influence of The Left into the public school systems. Our children's minds are being

propagandized and systematically poisoned as a result. And this is not just in the United States of America; The Left has also exerted huge influence or outright control over the public school systems of many other places around the world. The same also holds true for most colleges and universities. Our children have been negatively affected as a result and their future has been impaired.

The Left, with their anti-God, secular humanist agenda, and with their confusion over the proper role of government, is pushing various forms of Socialism, or interventionism into the minds of our children until the government comes to be regarded as almost a secular god and savior.

There are numerous problems with The Left being involved in education, far too many for this short section of this book to enumerate, but the below listing should suffice to make your author's point that it is a disaster to allow The Left to be involved in education in any way:

1. The Left wants evolution taught as a science. This gets God out of the universe, takes out every form of divine law known to man, puts mankind into a position where ethics must now

be completely secular, and causes about 85% of the world's children to be taught one thing at school while their parents, believing in some form of religion, are attempting to teach their children something else at home.

2. Evolution is scientifically false, but God may have chosen to use natural selection. There is no way digestive and eliminative systems evolved at exactly the same time, males and females evolved at exactly the same time with oppositely matched reproductive systems, that biological life can randomly arise from non-life, etc. Further, honest natural scientists admit they really do not know what happened before the big bang, they cannot explain complex life, and they also cannot explain the human mind. In other words, natural scientists cannot explain how the universe really started, how complex life could actually exist, and how it is possible that man could have a mind. This is because none of these important things are possible to explain without God being involved to bring all of them into existence.

3. Mouthing support for "reason," The Left does not really trust that nature is consistent, nor do they actually trust logic. All thinking is logical or it is not thinking. Man must trust logic in order

to ascertain as many aspects of reality as possible in order to be able to successfully function on this earth. The use of Critical Theory is nihilistic toward all fields of knowledge and is the opposite of what children should be taught in school, which is to apply their minds to the understanding reality using logical principles as their tool. The Left, advocating “reason” but not practicing the use thereof, is not intellectually fit to lead anyone anywhere positive. Critical Theory is intellectual nihilism and gross stupidity.

4. The Left, not wishing to use logic to establish a secular standard of the right, rejects the sanctity of individual natural rights. In doing so, they have now taken out both divine law and what could have been a highly useful secular standard of the right. Without either divine law, or a secular standard of the right, man now has no ethics other than The Left’s morality by assertion, which is not morality.

5. With the rejection of God, divine law, and natural rights, The Left thinks they are free to obtain and use power over other people for “the greater good.” While it may be to the short-term greater good of The Left, it is destructive to the human race. The Left wants big

government with them in charge of it. They teach students some form of Socialism or interventionism, both of which are anti-truth and cannot deliver in the real world. A previous section explained the failings of each, which have been known for about 100 years. There is no excuse to knowingly teach falsehood as social science to unsuspecting students, thus biasing their minds in favor of a big government that cannot deliver. All that The Left's vision of big government can deliver is calculational chaos and wasted capital and lives.

6. Without really trusting and teaching moderate realism, ascertained by the use of logic, and instead teaching Critical Theory, The Left has now also gutted any intellectual standard of the right.

7. All of the above leaves far too many students indoctrinated, not educated, and not able to use their minds to reason effectively. If the students actually believe what they are being programmed to believe, then they will end up believing that this secular world is all there is pertaining to life, with big government as, in effect, savior and favor-dispensing god. It is even worse than this because The Left has effectively removed moral and intellectual

standards, plus they have taught students to not really trust their minds with the use of logic as an important tool to comprehend reality. In short, The Left has gutted both ethics and reason/critical thinking. The ability to reason, to think critically is good; but Critical Theory is intellectual drivel (wrong theory), nihilistic, and false.

8. This leaves our students, who will become adults and take their place in society, without a standard of ethics, without individual natural rights, unable to think critically, not really trusting logic, and believing in some form of either Socialism or interventionism, neither of which are intellectually coherent and neither of which can deliver a higher standard of living to the citizens.

9. The cost of elementary to secondary education in the USA is now over \$11,500 per student per year and this is very expensive. Estimates are that about 50% of this money goes to education bureaucrats (educrats), so this money does not even make it into the classroom. In short, education is a financial/propaganda racket and our children are the lifelong victims. They leave school unprepared ethically and intellectually to face

the world. Even worse, the propagandized children vote for bigger and bigger government because they see nothing wrong with Socialism, or interventionism, or with a government that is bloated. Our society is being destroyed from within under the educational influences of The Left.

10. Worse still, many students probably innately realize something is wrong with much of what they are being taught and so they tune out, doing one or more of the following: escaping into social cliques, using drugs, smoking marijuana, drinking too much, playing video games, experimenting with sex, being too engaged in social media, etc. They realize the world is getting worse, not better, under the influence of The Left, but they probably don't have the concepts or words to describe it all. They certainly do not if they have been taught to believe in Socialism and government interventionism.

11. Students are also, in effect, taught personal existentialism and this leaves them without a good understanding of context, or cause and effect, and this, coupled with the inability to think critically, leaves them unable to accurately identify what is actually really going on in their

lives and in the world at large. In short, our young people end up trying to make their way through life in an intellectual and moral stupor.

12. Self-esteem is taught in reverse, which is to say in error. Instead of teaching students they must comply with an objective code of ethics and also achieve an intellectual standard, thus being good people and good thinkers and students, self-esteem awards are given out for comparatively trivial reasons such as attendance or effort or intent. Competence and goodness are far more important sources of true self-esteem than trivialities. As a side note, attendance is more important than producing good thinkers and good people to the educrats because the State usually pays them so much money per student per day.

13. The educational standards of the 8<sup>th</sup> grade 150 years ago exceed the educational standards of high school (secondary school) today. Today, education under the influence of The Left is expensive, poor, and counter-productive to having ethically good and intellectually capable citizens. To their credit, many students regurgitate what they are taught in school and pretend to go along so they get good grades at school (and a credential), but then supplement

their education themselves with materials they study outside the school system.

14. Huge amounts of time are wasted teaching things like **gender by assertion**, etc., instead of educational fundamentals, including how to think clearly. There is no orthodox religion on earth that accepts anything pertaining to the sexes other than biological male and female and there is no actual evidence in the sciences that there is anything other than the male or female sexes. And yet, gender by assertion is taught and encouraged. In short, there is nothing in nature or religion that would allow for gender by assertion, but the evil fools of The Left are cramming it into student's minds and destroying lives.

Satan → The Left (Satan's spiritual seed line) → gain control of government → gain control of education → poison our children's minds + gut ethics

The Left → have no articulated ethical standard of the right they can elaborate or logically defend

The Left → not trusting or using reason  
consistently → have no intellectual standard of  
the right they can elaborate or logically defend

The Left → instead of facts, logic, evidence, or  
divine law → assert, not prove, almost  
everything

### **5.10 Summation regarding why The Left can't deliver**

The Left has a wrong model of the universe because they reject God and his divine law instructions. They also have a wrong model concerning how the world works, for all of the reasons elaborated earlier in this chapter. In short, they are looking at things through the wrong lens and miss the truth, both morally and intellectually. Their obsession with obtaining and using the power of government on their fellow man is perverse and unwise. And because unprincipled power corrupts, it is also evil. The secular humanist doctrines espoused by them are not only not going to "perfect" the human race, they are destroying civility among men, destroying morality, and undoing the individual natural rights that men are supposed to enjoy. The Left wants to convert individual natural rights to government-granted privileges

and then to withhold those privileges from anyone who disagrees with their morality by assertion, truth by assertion, and the greatest good for the greatest number by assertion. Almost everything put forward by The Left is by unproven assertion backed up by an unrelenting flow of propaganda from the institutions they control and/or influence. They are morally flawed, intellectually confused and in error, and bullies toward their fellow man. And they can lead nowhere because without a God who can forgive sins and heal and provide eternal life, there is nowhere for anyone to go to, including those who are foolish enough to follow The Left. The Left has gutted morality and removed any credible substantive purpose for human life. They are moral and intellectual nihilists and following them will lead to the actual nihilism that comes when there is a war of all against all. Governmental power, however applied, cannot solve the problems of human beings lacking virtues and having bad values and then choosing accordingly, with the predictable negative consequences. Morality by assertion is not the establishment of morality; it is the negation of morality. Truth by assertion is not truth; it is the negation of the necessary logical thinking and epistemology necessary to establish the truth. Ironically, the God who The Left rejects

and pretends does not exist saw this coming. Take a look at the below scriptures and see if you can recognize the world we are now living in.

"For they are a nation without wisdom, neither is there any understanding in them. If they were wise, they would understand this; **they would consider their latter end!** [A warning to The Left and their followers]"  
Deuteronomy 32:28-29, MKJV

To waste your precious unique life giving your time, energy, and money to The Left is going to get you nowhere.

The Left is intellectually confused about the need for two different scientific methodologies, focus their efforts on the collective instead of the individual disregarding that human consciousness and free will and choice are causative factors in our world, advocate for Socialism and interventionism, which have both been intellectually demolished 100 or so years ago and have never worked in human history, etc. The Left are godless, immoral, want power to use on others, and they are intellectually confused and have the wrong policies even at

the secular level. Critical Theory is intellectual nihilism.

“God is strong and always victorious; both deceived and deceiver are in his power. He takes away the wisdom of rulers and makes leaders act like fools.” Job 12:16-17 TEV

“If God decided to do nothing at all, no one could criticize him. If he hid his face, we would be helpless. There would be nothing that nations could do to keep godless oppressors from ruling them [because the worst get on top].” Job 34:29-30 TEV

“**But thieves and godless people** live in peace, though their only god is their own strength.” [The Left are godless men who are obsessed with power and have a “might makes right” operating methodology they use to steal the natural rights from their fellow men.]  
Job 12:6 TEV

Regarding The Left and their backing of the central banks of the world:

“**Evil people** make slaves of fatherless infants and take the children of the poor in payment for debts.” Job 24:9 TEV

Regarding the educational systems of the world, largely under the control of or influenced by the Secular Humanism of The Left:

Those who claim to be respectable are more and more convinced they are right [according to what ethical or intellectual standard?]. But if all of them came and stood before me, I would not find even one of them wise."

Job 17:4, 9-10 TEV

The Left does not really trust in reason or logic. If they did and if they thought clearly then they would not have all of the wrong social science policies, e.g., advocating for Socialism, interventionism, government fiscal spending, state-owned-enterprises, bureaucracy, social utilitarianism, etc., and they would realize they must put forth more than unsupported assertions. They must put forth facts, evidence, accurately identify entities, show cause and effect, use pristine definitions, make coherent arguments in the attempt to persuade, not bully others, etc. The unsupported assertions of The Left, taken as a whole, are intellectually tantamount to a muddleheaded attempt to reorder the world from how it actually is to what

they wish it were, i.e., The Left is completely out of touch with reality.

"I am being honest, God. Accept my word. There is no one else to support what I say. You have closed their minds to reason; don't let them triumph over me now." Job 17:3-4 TEV

If there is no objective standard of the right, no one can be right, including The Left.

Because The Left cannot see the unseen they disregard the government losers that are also made by governmental interventionist actions making artificial winners. The Left also disregards the long run, which always arrives. Social Justice Warriors are not peacemakers or social; in actuality, they are nihilists and warmongers. Sadly and ironically, the Social Justice Warriors do not have a clue when it comes to the subject of what justice should consist of. To refresh the reader's memory:

For justice → to be justice → when dealing with individual natural rights OR when administering and applying the laws to the citizenry → it must be → **EQUAL** (everyone has equal individual natural rights and everyone must be treated the same before the laws of the land)

For justice → to be justice → when dealing with productive achievement → it must be →

**PROPORTIONAL**

Productive achievement → means → in terms of either intellectual or economic achievement or any other kind of human achievement

The institutions The Left founded, or for the most part have taken control over, were supposed to be instruments to be used for the benefit of the human race. Under the “leadership” of The Left, however, the human race has been slowly and systematically ethically and intellectually poisoned. We have been placed onto a road that is leading toward nihilistic destruction – the kind of destruction that will result from a war of all against all. What else could come of a world where life has no purpose, there are no ethical standards other than politically motivated assertions, and there is the intellectual confusion and nihilism left in the wake of incoherent Critical Theory? What the human race is going to learn the hard way from following the lunacy of The Left is that **reality cannot be edited with a red pencil.** And it cannot be edited by the assertions of The Left. There are divine law instructions and

natural laws that we must comply with if we wish to be successful in our human pilgrimage.

The sad reality is the human race could hardly find a more morally perverse, corrupt, intellectually confused, and blind set of leaders to follow than The Left.

Not previously discussed in this book, but in two of your author's previous books, *Why There Is No Justice: The Corruption Of Law* and also in *Life Charts*, it seems that the central bankers are behind The Left and using them. Somehow these central bankers believe in a survival of the fittest evolutionary approach to taking over the monetary and legal systems of the world so they can impose their will upon it. Your author will quote what he personally believes, but cannot of a certainty prove, this will all lead the human race to some day. It is a bit of a lengthy quote, but it is important to reveal what happens when unprincipled men believing in personal fame and big government start wars and projects that have nothing to do with benefitting the unique and valuable individuals who are the citizens they are supposed to be serving, but are not. Immorality and irrationality and parasitism always lead to the same horrible place.

"Sir William Blackstone, in his *Commentaries On The Laws Of England In Four Books*, Volume 1, provides some history and some clues to what has transpired. Though Blackstone has a nice discussion of natural laws and provides them very nice lip service, his justification for the supremacy of Parliament is that the citizenry has socially contracted away their absolute natural rights in exchange for state privileges – which state privileges can be lost if the state maintains that the individual in question violated the state's municipal laws. He provides no explanation why anyone in their right mind would make such a contract (trading rights for privileges) nor is any evidence of such a contract provided – because there is none. It is a rationalization for England's legal system. That is all. Blackstone further explains that despite a long list of taxes and revenues for the king, the king would overspend his revenues, usually due to wars, and would need to borrow money. The king was already taxing people to the limit Parliament would approve. The additional funds could somewhat be procured by borrowing from the wealthier segment of the population, but the borrowed funds were not enough to fund the king's wars and special projects, along with the normal costs of government. So the Bank of England, a private

bank, got created and soon after money (substitutes) starting being "created," (think printed) - whether the money substitute creation was via actually printing or it occurred via a bookkeeping entry. This created money (substitutes) was then lent to the king, resulting in additional debt. Per Blackstone, the king was able to access this additional source of debt financing by pledging his tax and revenue stream to secure the debt. The reader will please remember that under a feudal land system all property ownership is basically by grant or permission of the king. And, per Blackstone [emphasis mine]:

"It was therefore the policy of the times to anticipate the revenues of their posterity [borrow against the tax revenues of their children and grandchildren], by borrowing immense sums for the current service of the state, and to lay no more taxes upon the subject than would suffice to pay the annual interest of the sums so borrowed: by this means converting the principal debt into a new species of property, transferable from one man to another at any time and in any quantity; a system which seems to have had its original in the state of Florence, ad 1344 ..."

"By this means the quantity of property in the kingdom is greatly increased in idea, compared with former times; yet, if we coolly consider it, not at all increased in reality [there are artificially created claims on real goods and services which exceed the real goods and services]. We may boast of large fortunes, and quantities of money in the funds. But where does this money exist? It exists only in name, in paper, in public faith, in parliamentary security; and that is undoubtedly sufficient for the creditors of the public to rely on [for a time]. But then **what is the pledge which the public faith has pawned for the security of these debts?** The land, the trade, and the personal industry of the subject [the people, their liberty, and their property were pledged to secure the creditors. In other words, the people lost their natural rights because the government overspent and pledged the people themselves as collateral, including the people's children and future posterity]; from which the money must arise that supplies the several taxes. In these, therefore, and these only, the property of the public creditors does really and intrinsically exist; and of course the land, the trade, and the personal industry of individuals, are diminished in their true value just so much as they are pledged to answer. If A.'s income amounts to

100l. [100 money units] per annum, and he is so far indebted to B. that he pays him 50l. [50 money units] per annum for his interest; one-half of the value of A.'s property is transferred to B. the creditor. **The creditor's property exists in the demand which he has upon the debtor**, and nowhere else; **and the debtor is only a trustee to his creditor for one-half of the value of his income.** In short, the property of a creditor of the public consists in a certain portion of the national taxes: by how much therefore he is the richer, by so much the [people of the] nation, which pays these taxes, is the poorer."

The king (or government) overspends its revenue stream and "needs" more money, but Parliament will not approve more taxes on the people = True

The Bank of England, a private bank, gets created to create money substitutes, which will be lent to the king = True

The Bank of England was granted the legal status of "creditor" and the king pledged his subjects (legally demoted to "debtors"), their liberty, and the land of the kingdom as security to the government creditors = True

The people of the land + their progeny (future children, grandchildren, etc.) lose their individual natural rights by an unnatural legal agreement and process = True

The people of the land → must now function → as Trustees, in effect, → for the government creditors → and are legally obliged → to work for the government creditors → in addition to working for themselves and their families

Government debt → becomes, as it were → a new species of property → BUT → it is, in effect → trading in the proceeds of slave paper

From a societal point of view, using an accounting metaphor, it looks much like this:

**Debit** War (unwanted by the people)  
**Credit** Debt (un-payable debt) OR

**Debit** Monuments (unwanted by the people)  
**Credit** Debt (un-payable debt) OR

**Debit** Governmental waste (standing army, bloated bureaucracy, etc.) (unwanted by the people)  
**Credit** Debt (un-payable debt)

RESULTING IN →

**Debit** Slavery (being pledged for debt)

**Credit** Natural Rights OR

**Debit** Privileges (which can be revoked)

**Credit** Natural Rights (irrevocable)

The government leadership team + the creditors  
→ exceeding both divine law AND natural law →  
betrayed their citizens and became → the  
enemies of God and man

Blackstone's intricate and excellent mapping of the English legal system gave away what has happened. The government (in this case the king and Parliament) pledged the property of the land, the people themselves, the people's posterity, and any taxes upon the same to the creditors of the government. Instead of the government safeguarding the natural rights of the citizens, it sold them off to the government's creditors. And now, as Blackstone further astutely observed, the citizen is really only a trustee for the government creditors for about one-half of his income. The citizen lost his natural rights and is now pledged and enslaved to government creditors. It is a betrayal of

**the worst kind.** The citizen lost his rights so the government leadership team could pay for wars he does not want, government projects (monuments) he does not want, and a bureaucracy he does not want. The citizen lost, but the government leadership team members got temporary and short-sighted benefits through military increases, an artificial boosting of the economy, governmental contracts for the privileged, government perks and pay for the bureaucracy, privileged work for bankers, lawyers, and accountants, all via an unnatural and unlawful source of seemingly easy money creation and credit, etc.

While Blackstone does not comment directly on the citizens being co-guarantors of the government debt (co-suretyship, as it were) it is clear that the government creditors and government leadership team hold that **each citizen is a co-guarantor of ALL of the government debt**. Because the government debt is not payable, each citizen can expect to be a now-enslaved debtor for the rest of their lives and they can expect the same for their children and grandchildren, etc. It is perpetual slavery. The Bible comments on this, where in the below scripture the government creditor very much qualifies as the “stranger” in the

verse. The government creditor cares nothing for God, divine law, the citizens, or their natural rights.

**"He who is surety for a stranger [behind the scenes government creditor] shall be ruined;** and he who hates suretyship is safe."

Proverbs 11:15, MKJV

Blackstone also mentioned that one of the duties of the king was to "**maintain the established religion.**" Please keep reading.

Blackstone, in his commentaries, further mentioned something very interesting regarding bankrupts. Someone who has been cleared of his debts through bankruptcy **had a mark put upon them.** And Blackstone also mentioned that bankruptcy fraud was **punishable by death.** This reminded your author of the prophecy in Revelation where the Beast system (at the end of this present age) required a mark to buy or sell, i.e., in order to participate in commerce. This is pure speculation, but your author wonders if the government creditors, after a financial collapse, will have not been paid their interest they regard as being due on the government debt outstanding. (Of course, the principal is way beyond repayment.) Could this

lead to a financial and governmental reorganization - a financial and legal reboot as it were? This speculated financial and governmental reboot would be necessary because of the financial collapse causing havoc. And it would imply that all men everywhere, who were co-guarantors of the government debt, would get a new issue of created money, but the debtor governments and their citizens would be deemed to have defaulted on the debt. In other words, the citizen co-guarantors (as co-sureties) would be regarded the same as a bankrupt. In order to be given the privilege of participating in the newly restructured economy, each must receive **a bankrupt's mark** and **accept the "established religion."**

"And there was given to it [the second beast] to give a spirit to the image of the beast, so that the image of the beast might both speak, and might cause as many as would not worship the image of the beast to be killed [not practicing the established religion]. And it causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, **to receive a mark** on their right hand, or in their foreheads, even that not any might buy or sell except those having the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of its name."

Revelation 13:15-17, MKJV

Oliver Wendell Holmes, Jr. had some insights that are helpful in explaining the corruption of law and justice we find ourselves living under today. These below paraphrases of Holmes are found in his book, *The Common Law*. Holmes, under the influence of Darwin's natural selection, believed that the law ends up reflecting the interests of a dominant class (like the government leadership team and their creditors) and not the interests of the community at large. **In other words, law was an instrument and a result of natural selection.** The law was an instrument to accomplish certain material ends and not necessarily moral. The lawyer (fraudulently) and the soldier (forcefully), dutifully representing their causes, were advancing truth. In this case truth has nothing to do with honesty. Truth means being on the winning side, i.e., assisting evolution, via a "natural selection process" in favor of the government creditors. **It is truth by conquest, not by principle.**

The government creditors → view control of the legal system + control of the monetary system → as proof of → their superior natural selection → to rule > men, in place of the two Jehovahs

Satan → government creditors → outsmart government leadership teams → control of governments through the legal and monetary systems → control of men + their liberty + their property → becomes the god of this world (2 Corinthians 4:4 and other places) ... HOWEVER

If Satan and his team, the government creditors, want to play the → "we are the Creditor's" game THEN

When the two Jehovahs → the original appropriators of the universe → who in right and in truth → own the entirety of the universe AND are therefore → **THE CREDITORS** → assert their rightful, honest ownership over all → then Satan, the fallen angels, and men pledged to them, e.g., the government creditors → are as good as DEAD (they will have to be exterminated from the universe because they are not open to reasoned persuasion (argumentation) and only respecting superior force they will experience the superior force which the two Jehovahs' possess and will use) (Revelation 12:7-9 below and Isaiah 27:1)

"And there was war in Heaven. Michael and his angels warring against the dragon [Satan

and his angelic team]. And the dragon and his angels warred, but did not prevail. Nor was place found for them in Heaven any more. And **the great dragon was cast out**, the old serpent called Devil, and Satan, who deceives the whole world. He was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him."

Revelation 12:7-9, MKJV

Holmes further observed that no society (he means government) has ever admitted that it could not sacrifice individual welfare to its own existence. Holmes further disclosed that **the ancient surety was a hostage, but his liability was transferred into a money payment**. To your author this sounds like the "Organic State" eating its citizens to stay alive.

Holmes admitted that the law was administered in the interest of the upper classes (who are part of the government leadership team). For example, Holmes disclosed that the common carrier was presumed against in law, aka everything is negligence in a common carrier that the law does not excuse. The law presumes against the common carrier. Your author believes that the citizen-debtors are presumed to be common carriers (for the government creditors) by the government

creditor-inspired legal system, and that is a large reason why the citizens routinely are ruled against by judges.

Holmes further disclosed that over time mutual promises became consideration (thus weakening contract law) and this led to all of the liabilities of a bailee being considered as founded on a contract. A bailee is someone to whom goods have been delivered and who is then liable for their safekeeping. It is likely that the legal system regards the citizen as a bailee for government creditor property (the average citizen still believes it is his property, but the courts rule against the citizens). The title remains with the owner who transferred the goods. And Holmes also disclosed that the law defends possession of goods against everything except for better title. (And now the government creditors have been granted title to everything by the corrupted legal system.)

Your author believes that contracts have been entered into between governments and their creditors where the government creditors now have a de facto title (or a superior security interest as good as title) to all the government citizens' life, liberty, and property, including the life, liberty, and property of the citizens'

posterity. Everything has either been re-titled or had a creditor lien placed upon it. This is not to say that the change over of ownership or lien rights granted to the government creditors is all public record. Any such agreements entered into with government creditors would enrage the citizenry, and so those agreements will never see the light of day. The government creditors likely regard themselves as the legal system winners by natural selection (a form of "might makes right" without regard to principle), and now the legal system serves them and enslaves the debtor citizens. Holmes's disclosures, combined with Blackstone's disclosures, make this a more than likely scenario. At any rate, as the two Jehovahs predicted long ago, that men who essentially hate us rule over us and we have, for the moment, lost our natural rights (Deuteronomy 28:43-44).

How this all got accomplished legally is likely through a process where the old Law Merchant (laws between traders, their lenders, their shippers, their investors, etc.) got combined with common law and then statutory law. At this point in time common law has basically been excised from the legal system and divine law and natural rights are substantially disregarded. The government creditors, with

the government-granted “right” to create money, have bought the legislatures and thereby the legal system. Judges now rule for creditors (the government creditors) and against debtors (citizens, the co-guarantors of the government debt). In other words, by a perversion of what government leaders are supposed to do, which is to safeguard their citizens’ natural rights, instead of pledging them for what looked like an easy source of new government funding, there has been a turning upside down of law, justice, government, and natural rights. Now citizens have the “right” and the “liberty” to obey the Organic State government and the real rulers of that government - the government’s creditors. And speaking of perversion in law, words have precise definitions. The way positive statutory law is crafted is many times purposely linguistically deceitful. Definitions to ordinary language words are changed and also hidden in strange places in the statutes so that a careless reading of the statute deceives the reader. Only the attorneys, some members of the legislature, some staff members, and the government creditors know where the real definition has been placed into the statute. Instead of everyone knowing what the rules are, it perverts the law into a coded maze, not for the

uninitiated. It is deception, fraud, and a perversion of the worst kind. The government creditors and their knaves now control the legal systems and the monetary systems of the world. With the banking and legal systems already under their control they can buy, or effectively control, the media, the educational system, the militaries, mercenaries, and anything else they think will help them enslave mankind and take it all for themselves. All this is what God was referring to in Isaiah 10:1:

“Woe to those who decree unrighteous decrees, **and to the scribes who write toil [for the people to have work excessively hard, i.e., to be in slavery];**”  
Isaiah 10:1, MKJV

Attorneys have become, for the most part, representatives of the government creditors, and the courts have become a wealth transfer mechanism. The judges, paid by government, rule, over time, for expanded government power and against natural rights. It has been frequently said and is usually true that “the policies of the monarch are always those of his creditors.” And this saying includes all forms of government. With control of the legal system the government creditors can license, regulate,

tax, restrict labor, restrict property usage through zoning, etc. The people are now controlled for government creditor benefit. If the citizens understood why their life was hard, and if the citizens were also moral, neither of which is likely true, they would probably rise up against both the government leadership team and the government creditors in an attempt to regain their natural rights. But people do not understand why their life is hard. They complain about their life being hard, but they do not understand why it is so. Wanting something for nothing always has its price and that price will be paid. In this case the "wanting something for nothing" started with a king wanting a bigger government that he could pay for. But it also includes members of the governmental leadership team wanting big government with its created jobs of status and privilege along with government contracts. And many run-of-the-mill citizens want a big government dispensing government benefits which, of course, have to be taken from Peter before they can be given to Paul.

The government creditors have created and installed an elaborate legal system and banking system which functions as a trapper's net to catch men and to take their property and their

energy from them. This was all described, long in advance, by the two Jehovahs in Habakkuk:

"Therefore the law has become helpless, and justice does not always go forth. For the wicked entraps the righteous; therefore justice goes forth, being perverted." Habakkuk 1:4, MKJV

"Must we be strung up on their hooks and dragged out in their nets while they rejoice? Then they will worship their nets and burn incense in front of them. "These nets are the gods who have made us rich!" they will claim."  
Habakkuk 1:15-16, NLT

Your author believes it likely that at least some of these very worldly government creditors are actually in league with Satan to take over the earth and deliver it to him. Satan cannot destroy or hurt the two Jehovahs. He tried that and failed already (Isaiah 14:13-15). So Satan would now like to destroy men and/or enslave men made in God's image as a means to do so to God in effigy. All this is leading up to the final rebellion described in Revelation 13, already mentioned above. The two Jehovahs long ago anticipated that **the rich men government creditors** of the earth would do all they have done and **the two Jehovahs**

**have a prophecy specifically for them.**

Perhaps this is a partial fulfillment, in principle, against those who encumber men's lives and property as recorded in Nehemiah 5:1-13, particularly the curse recorded in verse 13. At any rate, they are in trouble as they have been painted with divine radar and are as good as dead.

"Because you have said, We have made a covenant with death [a covenant with Satan], and we have made a vision with hell [a joint plan with Satan to enslave men and take over the world]; when the overwhelming rod shall pass through [of correction from God], it shall not come to us; **for we have made lies our refuge [fraud], and we have hidden ourselves under falsehood [a corrupted legal system]**, therefore so says the Lord Jehovah, Behold, I place in Zion a Stone for a foundation, a tried Stone, a precious Cornerstone [Jesus Christ, King of kings and Lord of lords, Revelation 19:16], a sure Foundation [morality + rationality]; he who believes shall not hurry. Also I will lay judgment to the line, and righteousness to the plummet; and the hail shall sweep away the refuge of lies, and the waters shall overflow the hiding place [the rich men have prepared hiding places, to no

avail, Psalm 107:26-27]. **And your covenant with death shall be wiped out, and your vision with hell shall not stand**; when the overwhelming rod shall pass through, **then you shall be beaten down by it.**"  
Isaiah 28:15-18, MKJV"

The Left cannot deliver because they do not understand the world as it is, and for all of the other reasons detailed in this sad-to-have-to-write chapter. The only place they can lead the human race to is hell on earth. Not only can they not deliver a higher quality secular human life, they can in no way deliver what is really important for man, an abundant eternal life.

"When people are oppressed, they groan; they cry for someone to save them. But they don't turn to God, their Creator, who gives them hope in their darkest hours." Job 35:9-10 TEV

Not only is it true that The Left can't deliver, they are wittingly or unwittingly tools of Satan, who also has a plan in direct contrast to God's Strange Plan.

Satan → Satan's spiritual seed line → the central bankers → The Left → government power → hell on earth

## **Chapter Six**

### **Why The Right Can't Deliver**

Once again, there are no political solutions to spiritual problems, such as human beings lacking virtue, having bad values, and then making bad choices that engender bad consequences. Hopefully the last chapter made it very clear that The Left is not going to save the human race, but neither is The Right ... and that is the subject of this chapter. The Right also has a wrong model of the world, though they are much more open to acknowledging God and utilizing religion as part of what they perceive to be solutions to world problems. Because this is a book on God's Strange Plan and not a book on politics, per se, your author is going to hit some of the high points of why The Right cannot deliver, either. Obviously some of the people involved with or supporting The Right may have big differences of opinion with some of what your author writes about in this chapter, but your author is forced to write with a bit of a broad brush in trying to show why the "orthodox" Right in the USA, in particular, are also not going to provide the human race with solutions to the world's problems.

## **6.1 Dispensational Samaritanized Christianity is confusion, not leadership**

The Bible is written with some information encoded into it. This will be explained in more detail in a later section of this book. One of the interesting things that God has encoded is the principle, at times (not at all times), of a day in scripture representing a year (Numbers 14:34 below). Another interesting conceptual notation is that sometimes a day can represent 1,000 years (2 Peter 3:8 below).

**"According to the number of the days in which you searched the land-- forty days-- **each day for a year** you shall bear your iniquities, forty years; and you shall know my alienation."**  
Numbers 14:34, MKJV

**"But, beloved, let not this one thing be hidden from you, that **one day is with the Lord as a thousand years**, and a thousand years as one day."** 2 Peter 3:8, MKJV

Why bring this up? Because God gave us some important hints as to what would happen to Jesus Christ's teachings for the past 2,000 years. In short, they would be corrupted with a

mixture of truth and error, good and evil, intelligence and confusion.

It has been speculated that the weekly seventh-day Sabbath (Exodus 20:10-11, Leviticus 23:1-3, and many other places throughout the Bible) shows a period of rest for the human race that would involve 1,000 years of peace and prosperity starting with the return of Jesus Christ to the earth (Revelation 19). The return of Jesus Christ will also involve something known as the first resurrection (1 Corinthians 15, 1 Thessalonians 4). This will be explained in more detail in chapter nine and section 10.4. For now, the below scripture bears this out:

"And He said to them, Truly I say to you that there are some of those who stand here who shall not taste of death until they see the kingdom of God come with power. And **after six days** Jesus took Peter and James and John and led them up into a high mountain, apart by themselves. And He was transfigured before them. And His clothing became shining, exceedingly white as snow such as no fuller on earth could whiten them. And Elijah with Moses was seen by them, and they were talking with Jesus." Mark 9:1-4, MKJV

Moses and Elijah, being dead, were a vision showing that righteous men will also be changed at the resurrection and this first resurrection will evidently be about 6,000 years after the creation of Adam.

In another section of scripture Christ waited before coming to heal Lazarus, who had been dead for four days.

"Then Jesus said to them [the disciples] plainly, Lazarus is dead. And I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, in order that you may believe. But let us go to him. ... Then when Jesus came, He found him already being held in the tomb **four days.**" John 11:14-17, MKJV

This bears out in human history where God the Father did not send Jesus Christ to the earth to commence his ministry of healing until about 4,000 years after the creation of Adam.

This leads to another interesting and seemingly innocent passage of scripture where Christ was among the Samaritans for two days.

"Then as the Samaritans had come to Him, they begged Him that He would stay with them.

**And He stayed there two days.** And many more believed because of His own word. And they said to the woman [the Samaritan woman, verse 7], Now we believe, not because of your saying, for we have heard Him ourselves and know that this is truly the Christ, the Savior of the world." John 4:40-42, MKJV

Why did the Bible mention that Jesus would be staying among the Samaritans for two days? Because Jesus Christ knew his teachings would be somewhat corrupted and he wanted to warn those with eyes to see and ears to hear that much of "orthodox" or various flavors of "reformed" Christianity have almost nothing to do with what the Bible actually teaches. And this state of Christianity would largely take up about 2,000 years of human history. This leads to the question: who are the Samaritans?

The answer is a mixed grouping of mainly non-Israelite peoples who were imported into a region north of Jerusalem by the Assyrians who had conquered that area in the 8<sup>th</sup> Century B.C. These mixed peoples brought their own religious beliefs and practices with them. The few Israelites who remained in the land ended up being religiously, philosophically, and racially mixed up with them. The results over time were

the Samaritans, who generally are not well regarded in scriptural references (the Good Samaritan being basically an exception).

"And the king of Assyria brought men from Babylon, and from Cuthah, and from Ava, and from Hamath, and from Sepharvaim, and placed them in the cities of Samaria instead of the sons of Israel. And they possessed Samaria and lived in its cities. And it happened at the beginning of their dwelling there, that they did not fear the LORD. And the LORD sent lions among them, who killed them. And they spoke to the king of Assyria, saying, The nations which you have removed and placed in the cities of Samaria do not know the manner of the God of the land. And He has sent lions among them, and, behold, they kill them because they do not know **the way** of the God of the land. And the king of Assyria commanded, saying, Cause one of the priests whom you removed from there to go there. [But the Northern ten tribes of Israel had leaders and priests who had already perverted the teachings of God, e.g., they changed the Biblical Fall feast days from the seventh month to the eighth month, made idols of gold for the people to worship, etc., 1 Kings 12:27-33.] [Further, the Northern ten tribes referred to as "Israel" many times in scripture "rebelled

against the house of David to this day" 1 Kings 12:19.] And they shall go and live there, and he shall teach them **the way** of the God of the land. And one of the priests whom they had removed from Samaria came and lived in Bethel. And he taught them how they should fear the LORD. And every nation made gods of their own, and put them in the houses of the high places which the Samaritans had made, every nation in their cities in which they lived. And the men of Babylon made Succoth-benoth, and the men of Cuth made Nergal, and the men of Hamath made Ashima, and the Avites made Nibhaz and Tartak, and the Sepharvites burned their sons with fire to Adrammelech and Anammelech the gods of Sepharvaim. So they feared the LORD, and made to themselves, of the lowest of them, priests of the high places, who sacrificed for them in the houses of the high places. They feared the LORD and served their own gods, according to the custom of the nations whom they removed from there [which means they did not really fear the LORD and practice his way as he forbade other gods]. Until this day they do according to their former ways. They do not fear the LORD, neither do they do according to their statutes, or according to their ordinances, or according to the law and

commandment which the LORD commanded the sons of Jacob, whom He named Israel.”  
2 Kings 17:24-34, MKJV

This led to the Samaritans being an agglomeration of people with a mixture of religious beliefs from many different pagan cultures. And part of the religious mixture that ensued included some correct Biblical knowledge, but not all. It also led to a resulting mixture of apologetics and philosophical reasoning as to why their mixture of truth and error was the correct way to serve God. In short, when the Bible uses the word Samaritan it is usually not a compliment. Religious confusion is not new to the world or to Israel and it leads to religious argumentation and wasted resources, time, and lives. The scripture below pertains to the Israelites, but it can obviously be logically extended to the entire human race.

“They [Israel] sacrificed to devils, not to God; to gods whom they knew not, to new ones newly come up, whom your fathers did not fear. You forgot the Rock who brought you forth, and ceased to care for God who formed you.”  
Deuteronomy 32:17-18, MKJV

To summarize where we are so far: 1) the twelve tribes of Israel have almost always been in rebellion against the true God 2) the Northern ten tribes, who already did not follow God correctly, were defeated by the Assyrians in the 8<sup>th</sup> Century B.C. and largely removed from the land 3) a mixed grouping of non-Israelite other peoples were placed back into the land to replace the Northern ten tribes 4) some priest(s) of the Northern ten tribes were sent back to teach this mixed groupings of peoples 5) but those priests sent back to teach had already corrupted the law of God and could not properly teach even if they wanted to 6) the peoples attempted to retain the worship of their own gods and also try to worship the true God, but that does not logically follow and 7) the results were religious and intellectual confusion, neither of which is acceptable to the true God. Jesus Christ knew his teachings would go through similar religious and philosophical mixing leading to some truth being mixed in with a whole lot of error. This provides an explanation as to why some "Christians" will be shocked when the below happens to them:

"And then I [Jesus Christ] will say to them I never knew you! Depart from Me, those working lawlessness!" Matthew 7:23, MKJV

The result of the Samaritanization of much of what the world regards as Christianity is that many nice people are very confused, but have adopted some very good personal practices. Not all of Samaritanized Christianity is bad, but Jesus Christ himself will reject the totality of it and many of those who practice it, per the above scripture. As a side note and also as a placeholder there is still hope for Samaritanized Christians, as chapter ten will explain.

Because this is a book on God's Strange Plan and not a book on Samaritanized Christianity, your author will be mainly limiting himself to only pointing out several of the bigger problems with Samaritanized Christianity.

First, there is a misunderstanding of what law means and an over-emphasis on grace. Grace is component of the law and is crucial because all men have sinned (Romans 3:23) and the wages of sin is death (Romans 6:23). Law means instruction and one cannot reject the instruction of God and think they do themselves service. Christ is the end of the law (instruction) (Romans 10:4). In other words, the purpose of the instruction is to become like Jesus Christ and while grace is necessary and a

part of the instructions God gave to mankind, the rest of the instructions cannot be disregarded. If one commits the error of rejecting God's written instructions then God will not trust the person enough to give them eternal life. God does not want to fight with anyone for the rest of eternity because they will not follow divine law instructions. It is that simple. That's all that can be said for now. Your author has written a previous book entitled, *Life Charts*, that explains the instructions in more detail should the reader be interested. There is also an Internet website: teachingthelaw.org that has over 750 forty-five minute audio lessons teaching more about the divine law instructions, should the reader be so interested in learning more.

"Do not think that I [Jesus Christ] have come to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I have not come to destroy but to fulfill."  
Matthew 5:17, MKJV

Second, most of modern Christianity makes the mistake of being dispensationalists. Dispensationalism, at least for your author's purposes here, means that God realized the Old Testament instructions did not work and neither did his chosen people Israel fulfill his purposes

for them. This led God to “put down Israel and pick up the church,” including writing a New Testament as a modified rulebook. Taken in its entirety, this is false. The Bible is one undivided whole and God is still working through Israel (all twelve tribes, not just Judah), albeit very patiently. Again, chapter eight of this book and the chapter in *Life Charts* about Israel’s failure (thus far) explain this in great detail. Dispensationalism is false and believing in it will lead to widespread religious and intellectual error.

Third, determinism is false. Many people, e.g., Calvinists, believe in some form of determinism and there are many sects and denominations of Samaritanized Christianity under the ongoing influence of Calvinism, or determinism. This is too large of a topic for this section and *Life Charts* covered it adequately. The short answer is that determinism and free will are binary opposites and both cannot be operating at the same time. The correct answer to this is that God is using free will to achieve his goals and this will be explained later in this book.

Fourth, some parts of Christianity (and other religions) believe in dominionism where the

believers are to, in essence, take over the political and governmental machinery of the world in preparation for the coming of Christ or whatever Messiah is believed in. Dominionism is not Biblical. As will be explained later in this book, God the Father will send Jesus Christ back to this earth to save humanity and there will be no successful dominionism of any kind other than perhaps the short-lived and evil reign of the Antichrist who will be destroyed at Christ's coming (Revelation 13 and 19:20-21).

The fifth big error of most of Samaritanized Christianity is the doctrinal litmus test belief that God is a trinity. This is false. God is a family. Right now there are two beings comprising the family, God the Father is the most high and also Jesus Christ. Jesus Christ is the firstborn of many future brothers and by implication sisters and so the family will expand in the future.

"For whom He foreknew, He also predestinated to be conformed to the image of His Son, for Him to be **the First-born among many brothers.**" Romans 8:29, MKJV

There are two Jehovahs, distinct beings, with the Father being the most high.

**"My Father** who gave them to me **is greater than all**, and no one is able to pluck them out of My Father's hand."

John 10:29, MKJV

"A Psalm of David. The LORD [God the Father] said to my Lord [the being who would become Jesus Christ], Sit at My right hand until I place Your enemies as Your footstool."

Psalms 110:1, MKJV

Sixth, another big misunderstanding of many Samaritanized Christians is they believe the God of the Old Testament was harsh and hard, while Jesus Christ is kind and loving. They do not understand that Jesus Christ **was** the God of the Old Testament.

"And, brothers, I do not want you to be ignorant that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea. And all were baptized to Moses in the cloud and in the sea, and all ate the same spiritual food, and all drank the same spiritual drink; for they drank of the spiritual Rock that followed them, and that Rock was Christ." 1 Corinthians 10:1-4, MKJV

Seventh, another big error of many Christians, especially Samaritanized Christians,

is the thought that “God has a perfect plan for my life.” This was explained at great length in *Life Charts*. The bottom line is it is true that God has a perfect plan for your life and all other human lives in the general sense, i.e., he wants each human being to repent of their sins, receive the holy spirit (Acts 2:38), and to go on to become a moral, reasonable, and productive person, and then at the resurrection God will grant an incorruptible, eternal life. But because God is using free will to achieve his general plan for mankind, God is precluded from having a specific plan for an individual's life. In other words, when God gave you free will he gave up the idea of being able to have a “perfect plan” for your life. Your choices will determine your life. God can work to bring good out of bad (Romans 8:28), but it is work to do so, even for God. This is why we are to use our free will to willingly follow God’s instructions – but most people do not, including Samaritanized Christianity as a whole. It is true that we cannot pay our own penalty for sins and so we need grace, but God’s expects at least three main things from us: 1) love 2) belief and 3) willing obedience, not just love and belief. In short, the belief that God has a perfect detailed plan for our physical lives and the belief in what amounts to hyper-grace are both nonsense.

Eighth, there is an interesting irony pertaining to many Samaritanized Christians, specifically to those who live in the United States of America. Most of the Christians in the USA also believe in the strict construction of the Constitution of the USA. They want the government to be strictly limited to perform duties enumerated under the Constitution and they personally want to live under a literal interpretation of the Constitution. The irony is that the Anglo part of these Samaritanized Christians are likely mainly the descendants of Israelites ... and the Israelites were not willing to live under the strict interpretation of God's Constitution, the rules and regulations enumerated in the Old Testament.

"You shall not add to the word which I command you, neither shall you take away from it, so that you may keep the commands of the LORD your God which I command you."  
Deuteronomy 4:2, MKJV

Ninth, the last big error your author wants to cover in this section concerns the fact that many Christian churches use what amounts to a military-style form of organization – sending autocratic orders from the top down. The fact

that the worst get on top can also unfortunately apply to religious hierarchies, not just secular hierarchies. Jesus Christ specifically warned against domineering forms of religious organization and yet many Samaritanized Christians use just such an organization.

"Then the mother of Zebedee's children came to Him with her sons, worshiping and desiring a certain thing from Him. And He said to her, What do you desire? She said to Him, Grant that these my two sons may sit in Your kingdom, the one on Your right hand and the other on the left. But Jesus answered and said, You do not know what you ask. Are you able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? They said to Him, We are able. And He said to them, You shall indeed drink of My cup and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with; but to sit on My right hand and on My left is not Mine to give, but to those for whom it has been prepared by My Father. And when the ten heard it, they were indignant concerning the two brothers. But Jesus called them and said, You know that the rulers of the nations exercise dominion over them, and they who are great exercise authority over them. **However, it shall not be so among you.** But

whoever desires to be great among you, let him be your servant. And whoever desires to be chief among you, let him be your servant; even as the Son of man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give His life a ransom for many.” Matthew 20:20-28, MKJV

Your author is sorry to have to start this chapter by pointing out the harsh reality that Samaritanized Christianity is riddled with numerous very large errors that do not in any way conform to either the Bible or to proper logical thought. Your author only hit on some of the larger and more substantive errors; an entire book could be written on the topic. To not understand the nature of God, who the real church is (chapter eight below), to have the wrong form of Biblical organization, to reject the instructions (law) of God, instead emphasizing grace to the point of being incoherent, and to further be confused about dispensationalism, determinism, and dominionism, etc., means that those trusting they have the necessary skills to provide leadership to the world are, in fact, mistaken. Since The Right in the USA and Europe largely embrace some form of what amounts to Samaritanized Christianity, The Right is also not going to provide proper moral guidance, nor effective intellectual leadership to

the human race. In short, religious and intellectual confusion of whatever origin is not leadership. It is error, no matter how righteous it sounds or acts. Jesus Christ will end the confusion, starting with Israel, soon. Please notice, once again, the two days approximating 2,000 years in the scripture below.

“Come and let us [the twelve tribes of Israel] return to the LORD. For He has torn, and He will heal us; He has stricken, and He will bind us up. **After two days** He will bring us to life; in **the third day** [the Millennium] He will raise us up, and we shall live in His sight.”  
Hosea 6:1-2, MKJV

## **6.2 Tradition, by itself, is no way to defend anything**

The Right tends to use tradition as a defense or a hoped-for intellectual veto against whatever it is they don't regard as correct, helpful, or wise. To be fair The Right does have some important things correct, e.g., a belief in God, the Bible, personal responsibility, and a stated belief in individual natural rights, just to name a few (once again, your author is painting with a broad brush here). We will examine The Right's stated belief in individual natural rights in more

detail in a later section of this chapter. Further, tradition itself, especially in terms of law and societal customs tends to have some things right. This is because the people in a culture learn what works and what does not over time and then they tend to go with what works in terms of societal peace and harmony. Almost all societies have laws against murder and theft, for instance, and enforce legally binding contracts. Friedrich Hayek, the Nobel Prize winning economist, observed that the rules in a society tend to contain distributed knowledge. So tradition does have some wisdom, understanding, and distributed knowledge and the legal system of a society tends to be very reticent, for this reason, and for the reason of societal stability and predictability, to overturn the traditions of the past. Ergo, there is a role for tradition in society. That is not the problem.

The problem comes in when tradition is used almost as the sacred writings of a religion are used. But what will happen if and when different societies, i.e., different cultures, nations, and even sub-cultures within a nation have different traditions or believe there should be different traditions? For example, if a sub-culture within a nation disagreed with the heretofore widely accepted tradition of the

majority culture of a nation, what is the standard of the right to decide what to do next? In other words, if "traditions" start arguing sub-culture versus other sub-culture, or sub-culture versus majority culture, or nation versus nation, etc., how will satisfactory decisions get made to keep the peace and allow for all members of that society and the international community to be able to plan, grow, develop, and trade between and within nations and across cultures? There is only one answer to this dilemma.

There must be **an external standard of what is correct** to compare all individuals and cultures and nations against. In other words, it becomes a matter of ethical principles and logical truth.

Since the only solution for successful human development and interactions is an external standard of the right that all must conform to, why not just advocate for and then use said standard, instead of tradition, as a guideline for acceptable individual behavior? If this leaves certain elements of one's own heretofore accepted tradition itself needing to be revised then so be it.

An external standard of the right is necessary for human beings to properly function = True

Tradition, by itself → cannot be that standard

Earlier in this book it was mentioned that Biblical instructions from God is one method, a divine law way to determine an external standard of the right. A second method is for all human beings everywhere to acknowledge and then respect others' individual natural rights of life, liberty, and property. This second method becomes, in effect, a secular standard of the right. Though it is only a secular standard, its widespread use as an external standard of the right would allow for peaceful interactions between individuals, nations, races, genders, cultures, and even religions.

If there were even one nation on earth whose citizens lived by Biblical divine law or whose citizens as a whole consistently lived by the respect for others' individual natural rights, that nation would be an example to the world. Probably the two nations who came the closest were England and the United States of America. Alas, due to what was explained earlier in this book, both England (now part of the United Kingdom) and the USA are woefully lacking in living by either a divine law standard of the right or a secular standard of the right. Both nations

are now an obvious mixture of good and evil, wisdom and stupidity. This being said, The Right, particularly in the USA, tends to believe their nation is better than it actually is and so there is a dangerous weakness in this.

Another problem that can happen with a tradition is this: if your tradition gets corrupted or watered down over time and/or if you forget your history concerning the establishment of said tradition, you tend to end up morally and intellectually lost (like what has happened to both the USA and England). The worst case of all, concerning being lost, would be along the lines of: 1) there is no religious standard of the right, 2) there is no secular standard of the right encompassing the respect for individual natural rights, 3) the people don't know history, 4) the people start questioning the historical traditions, and 5) the people are in a hurry to change tradition even though they don't understand why aspects of the tradition were established and they further disregard the value of whatever wisdom, understanding, and knowledge were part of the tradition they are now attacking and wanting to change (two examples of this in the USA are the Declaration of Independence and the Bill of Rights). It can literally become unprincipled foolishness and historical

ignorance, with no external standard of the right, demanding that there now be a new tradition – **tradition by assertion**, as it were. Anything by assertion is arbitrary and probably false and it is ridiculous to expect that one could decree into existence a tradition merely by assertion because traditions normally require a lot of time to pass in order for them to become traditions in the first place. A tradition cannot arbitrarily be decreed into existence.

Ultimately you cannot defend anything with tradition only – you need **moral principles** and **logic**, too, so you might as well use them in the first place because they are better tools.

Further, you also cannot defend tradition itself without principles and logic because competing and conflicting traditions will refuse to accept your tradition as the analogous equivalent of divine sacred writings. Ergo, once again, you might as well use principles and logic in the first place. And once you use said principles and logic you might find that part of the “sacred” tradition of your elders needs to be amended to conform to ethics and truth. This is where the conservatives of The Right might really tend to resist what could be an opportunity to advance society toward what is ethical and logical. The conservatives of cultures, religions, etc., really

have a hard time examining and correcting tradition and one of the main reasons for this is because they tend to make the mistake of using the tradition itself they are attempting to uphold as the standard of the right, which it is not and never can be.

Traditions → usually contain → some wisdom, understanding, and knowledge

Traditions can be → in conflict with each other

Ergo

A tradition → is not → a standard of the right

Elements of a tradition + tradition itself → should themselves conform to → an external standard of the right OR those elements of the tradition should be changed

Conservatives hate → changing tradition

Proponents of an ideology, whether of The Left or of The Right → hate → having the ideology's individual elements examined and compared to → an external standard of the right → because that would require said ideology to change when incorrect (including traditions)

To bring this section to a close it is important to respect and also consider any wisdom, understanding, and knowledge contained in a tradition and it is also important to understand history, including context. But, no tradition as practiced by any human culture so far could ever possibly be used as a standard of the right. Traditions themselves can be and often are in conflict and the only way to peacefully resolve said actual and potential conflicts is to resort to ethical principles and logical truths – not to use the tradition of one of the conflicting parties as a club to beat into submission any people holding to a conflicting tradition.

Ayn Rand was a famous secular philosopher and novelist. *The Ayn Rand Online Lexicon* has a nice section containing several paragraphs concerning tradition and your author will quote one sentence from it below:

"The argument that we must respect 'tradition' as such, respect it merely because it is a 'tradition,' means that we must accept the values other men have chosen, merely because other men have chosen them - with the necessary implication of: who are we to change them?"

The “who are we to change them” implicates the conservatives, The Right. If we do not change the improper elements of our tradition(s) by comparing each and every element to the religious external standard of what is correct, as outlined in the Bible, and to the secular standard of the right - respect for others’ individual natural rights, then every culture and subculture runs the risk of the below scripture being cited against them, concerning their traditions:

“For you know that God paid a ransom to save you from the empty life you inherited from your ancestors. And the ransom he paid was not mere gold or silver.” 1 Peter 1:18, NLT

### **6.3 The Right also violates individual natural rights, but for different reasons**

Unfortunately, the people of The Right also tend to violate individual natural rights even though they believe they are for the most part upholding them. They just violate individual natural rights for purposes they advocate. In doing so they are as guilty of The Left of violating what could have been and should have been a secular standard of what is correct in interpersonal human ethics. The Right engage

in what amounts to rationalizations for their violations of individual natural rights instead of taking the principled stand to uphold them and sticking to that.

Your author has written a previous book on the meaning and purpose of human life entitled *Divine Individualism* and this will be discussed more at length in section 7.7, later in this book. For the purposes of this section, neither The Left nor The Right seem to understand that God the Father and Jesus Christ are using a divine individualism process in order to ultimately create eternal, incorruptible, unique, moral, reasonable, and productive individuals – individuals who have learned how to get along with others. This lack of understanding of the two Jehovahs' divine individualism process has caused individuals to be under-valued throughout human history. This under-valuation has been by tribes, religions, governments, and individuals themselves and this includes every political party and ideology on earth.

The Right falls into this trap concerning religion when they support churches with authoritarian organizational and operational structures. Instead of developing human beings to their fullest capacity, many human beings end

up being used as fuel for the church-organization fire. In Matthew 20 Jesus said don't do this, but people do it anyway.

The Right further falls into this trap, as does The Left, whenever what is regarded as a **righteous goal** ends up being enforced upon individuals. We can regard this as righteousness plus force, which is a non sequitur. The failed attempt at banning alcohol, known as "prohibition" in the USA and the failed "war on drugs" are two good examples. Many people of The Right tend to want to default to this righteousness plus force methodology, not realizing that it amounts to trying to change human nature by force, which will never work. The Left tends to do this, too, in many of the social policies they advocate, e.g., in regards to enforcing environmental concerns they have. Instead of being patient and educating people to understand and adopt better values, both The Right and The Left want to take a shortcut. The righteousness-plus-force shortcut always ends up violating the individual natural rights of others, particularly free will, which the two Jehovahs gave for their own purposes.

The Right also tends to be big on supporting the military and the military industrial complex,

so they advocate for the taxes and human lives necessary to feed them. The Right evidently disregards the fact that the militaries of the earth destroy human lives and property, i.e., they widely disregard individual natural rights. Jesus Christ will ultimately put an end to this, per the below:

"In the last days, the Temple of the LORD in Jerusalem will become the most important place on earth. People from all over the world will go there to worship. Many nations will come and say, "Come, let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, to the Temple of the God of Israel. There he will teach us his ways, so that we may obey him." For in those days the LORD's teaching and his word will go out from Jerusalem. The LORD will settle international disputes. **All the nations** will beat their swords into plowshares and their spears into pruning hooks. All wars will stop, and military training will come to an end."  
Isaiah 2:2-4, NLT

Similar to The Left, The Right also wants big government – just for its own purposes and those purposes always involve the time, energy, and property of the citizen victims. Neither The Left nor The Right truly respect individual natural rights.

You cannot force other human beings to adopt your values. Instead of trying to force other human beings to adopt better values via: 1) militaries, 2) churches organized along authoritarian lines (or functioning that way), 3) using some form of "righteousness plus force," or 4) allowing governments to violate individual natural rights, however rationalized, ... none of which will work, perhaps your author can remind you, dear reader, of what was previously written in section 3.6 of this book pertaining to the Law of Responsibility and the Law of Solidarity. It takes time for people to develop good judgment and it usually involves both personal experience from the Law of Experience and also the experience that comes with being subjected to the Law of Solidarity. If a man or a woman's mind is closed to reason (conceptual training), they might have to be allowed to learn things the hard way, experientially, and this takes time. Much more will be written about this later, pertaining to the human race. For now, either the Law of Responsibility is going to function or the Law of Solidarity is – and no human being has the power to alter this. When The Right also violates individual natural rights, for whatever reason, they, too, send the human

race in the wrong direction and make it difficult to trust in their leadership.

#### **6.4 The Right is also confused about science, just for different reasons**

A reasonably high percentage of The Right has adopted some form of Samaritanized Christianity, and many times they will regard the earth as being approximately 6,000 years old (some, obviously not all practitioners). At a minimum, the archeological record, as natural scientists have attempted to establish it, is suspect in their eyes. This harkens back to the prior mentioned “day for a year” principle of Bible interpretation elaborated in section 6.1. The basic idea is that God created everything 6,000 years ago in six days and then rested on the seventh day Sabbath. The belief holds that mankind is clearly coming to the end of the 6,000 years and Jesus Christ will soon come again to establish his kingdom on the earth. This 6,000 year ago belief, of course, flies in the face of archeological, anthropological, etymological, geological, and other scientific evidence, including the use of DNA to help establish what happened in mankind’s past. This leaves a large percentage of The Right in a quandary because if you want to govern or lead

you should be scientifically up to date – or at least not in conflict with widely recognized scientific facts.

There is a solution to this dilemma, where both the Bible and the scientific record can be in harmony, but The Right does not espouse said solution, probably because they do not know it. The solution is ... there is an unspecified time period, a gap, between what happened in Genesis 1:1 and then what happened beginning in Genesis 1:2. This is not a book on reconciling the Bible to the scientific record and so your author is going to quote a few paragraphs from a prior book with more information on this topic. The prior book is *Life Charts* and the discussion is found in chapter nine of that book.

"The natural scientists, including archeologists, anthropologists, etymologists, DNA specialists, biologists, physicists, and others have identified facts which they believe cannot be reconciled with the Bible. But your author contends that the Bible, properly understood, is endoxa for man. Who is correct? Let the reader keep reading and then you can decide for yourself. As an authorial reminder, without the correct theory you get the wrong answer. This holds true for both science and for

Biblical interpretation. There is an answer for scientific facts seemingly not in agreement with the Bible.

Your author has made the point on several occasions [in *Life Charts*] that **the Bible should be considered as the best source of endoxa** – the vetted information of the wise. Further, your author can accept the currently known archeological and other scientific record pertaining to human history. How can that be? It is because if you know where to look in the Bible and have the correct theory you can account for all of the above. Please read on.

Most people assume the creation story depicted in the Bible is, in essence, linear starting with Genesis 1:1. It is not. The Bible has the information pertaining to creation located in many different places and all of this various information taken together reveals important details.

For example, in Genesis 1:1 it is revealed that, "In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth." The word "created" is the Hebrew word "bara" and it means to bring into existence from literally nothing. Verse two reveals more information:

"And the earth was without form and empty.  
And darkness was on the face of the deep. And  
the Spirit of God moved on the face of the  
waters." Genesis 1:2, MKJV

The word "was" in verse two is the Hebrew word "hayah" which is translated in other places as "became" or "come to pass." The words translated as "without form" is the Hebrew word "tohuw," but it could also be translated as "waste." Ergo, a possible translation (and a better one in your author's mind) is as follows:

**"And the earth became waste and empty.**  
And darkness was on the face of the deep. ..."

Or, "the earth had become waste and empty."

Normally your author does not like to get into technical translation issues because generally speaking the translators do a good overall job. However, in this instance it is important. It is important for at least two reasons. First, we have to ask why did the earth become waste and empty? Second, it is clear there is an unspecified time period that occurred between Genesis 1:1 and Genesis 1:2. There is no reason why God would create the

earth in verse one - without any form issues - and then immediately in verse two cause what he created in verse one to become waste and empty. This makes no logical sense and it is almost certainly not what actually happened. It is clear an event occurred and whatever it was happened earlier in time than the events described in verse two, but after the events described in verse one. A distinct possibility for this event which resulted in the earth becoming waste and empty, is that a pre-Adamite creation of men (or pre-people) was wiped out by a great flood sometime prior to this current phase of the two Jehovahs' creation process. This current phase of the two Jehovahs' creation process is described starting in Genesis 1:3 (and in other places in the Bible).

Before we get into more specifics of what could have happened, there is another couple of Hebrew words that your author wants to reference. The first is "asah" which means to create from something that already exists. You could think of this perhaps like a furniture maker creating furniture out of wood and nails, which already exist. The word "asah" is more akin to making something than creating something from nothing (bara). The two words are not interchangeable, which is shown in that they are

both used in Genesis 2:3. Your author does NOT agree with everything theologian Frank Caw writes, but I believe he has the below explanation of "bara" and "asah" correct:

'Genesis 1 and Genesis 2:1-3 and Exodus 20:8-11; 31:17 sometimes are used to prove that God literally created the entire universe in six days and that, Scripturally-speaking, a pre-Adamite creation was impossible. But whenever it is stated that God 'made' the earth and the heaven, or any part thereof, it is referring to the restoration of the immediate heavens and earth sometime after the pre-Adamite destruction portrayed in Genesis 1:2. Since the word 'made' is translated from the Hebrew word ASAHI, meaning to make something out of already existent materials, it is in direct contrast to the Hebrew word BARAH, which means literally to create from absolute nothingness as in Genesis 1:1. Thus, after Genesis 1:1, the only BARAH acts of literal creation were on those occasions when God imparted life to Adam and Eve and the animals - after their physical bodies were ASAHI 'made' from the dust of the earth. Everything else was simply restored to its original condition or ASAHI 'made' from already-existent materials on earth. That is why Genesis 2:3 states that God both

'created' and 'made' during the six days of Genesis 1, and why the two words are not interchangeable as some critics try to argue.'

"And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created [bara] and made [asah]." Genesis 2:3, KJV

The second word your author wants to call out is the word "deep" in Genesis 1:2, but not to get into the Hebrew word and its translation as your author accepts the translation. The same Hebrew word is used in Psalm 36:6 and Psalm 104:6:

"Your righteousness is like the great mountains; **Your judgments are a great deep;** O LORD, You keep man and beast."  
Psalms 36:6, MKJV

"You covered the deep as with a robe; the waters stand above the mountains."  
Psalms 104:6, MKJV

The above two verses imply that God sometimes uses a great flood of water ... as his judgment upon evil. This is further confirmed by reviewing a few key points concerning the flood

that occurred when Noah was upon the earth. The same Hebrew word from Genesis 1:2, Psalm 36:6, Psalm 104:6, and Genesis 7:11 (Noah's time) is used pertaining to the great deep. It is "teh-home" Strong's word 08415.

"In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, in the second month, in the seventeenth day of the month, in this day all the fountains of **the great deep** were broken up, and the windows of the heavens were opened up. And the rain was upon the earth forty days and forty nights."

Genesis 7:11-12, MKJV

When we understand that God judged the earth during Noah's time, that only eight people were saved (Genesis 7:13), and this judgment was a "great deep" then we can infer that what happened which resulted in the earth becoming waste and empty in Genesis 1:2 was a judgment from God in the form of a flood.

Because there is no time period specified in the Bible for this time gap between Genesis 1:1 and Genesis 1:2, it could be any period of time – including up to many billions of years.

Because it is not easy to piece together all of the above your author understands that many

people reading this will be astounded.

Nevertheless, the Bible is endoxa if you know where to look. The Bible does allow for the earth to be very old and for there to be either men or what amounts to pre-people during that time period extending backward, prior to Adam. It should be no surprise that the evil being, Satan, could have morally and intellectually corrupted this world. That God destroyed this corrupted world with a judgment involving a flood should also be no surprise. And all of this is why your author can quite comfortably accept the archeological record as currently understood. It is also why your author can accept any subsequent corrections to the archeological record. The archeological record does not contradict the Bible, properly understood. That the archeological record relative to man goes back for hundreds of thousands or millions of years does not surprise your author at all. There are many possible explanations that can be reconciled with the Bible. The two Jehovahs could have used either natural selection as part of a very lengthy creative process pertaining to man, or they could have undertaken what amounts to a period of beta-testing with pre-people before making the final decision to proceed with Adam. The two Jehovahs might also have been testing

some of the angels' ability to administrate as much as testing pre-people. Or, there could be another reason as yet unknown."

The central point of this section is that The Right is also confused about science. The Right correctly rejects evolution, but the time gap that almost certainly exists between Genesis 1:1 and 1:2 allows for God to have used natural selection or beta testing on men or pre-people. Further, it is God's prerogative to name Adam as the first man since he is the creator of all and the owner of all. At any rate, it is no wonder that many thinking people, e.g., scientists and intellectuals reject the intellectual leadership offered by The Right if The Right rejects key aspects of science.

## **6.5 The Right does not really believe in free enterprise either, despite the rhetoric**

The Right typically believes that they are the party that is pro-business and there is always a lot of talk about free enterprise. But actions speak louder than words. Once again, your author is painting with a broad brush to make his point.

Free enterprise means there is a rule of law that applies to everyone equally and the purchasing decisions in the marketplace decide who the business winners and losers are. The government is a relatively minor referee in the process. Today, the problem is there is an incredible amount of government interventionism into the “free” market. Some of these government interventions are sponsored and endorsed by The Left and some of them are sponsored and endorsed by The Right. This leaves a muddied up, hampered market economy where false pricing signals distort real-world decisions and lead to a consumption or misallocation of capital. The result is everyone gets poorer, though there are some government-favored “winners” to go along with taxpayer and consumer losers.

The Right tends to support subsidies for farmers, a large military, the mining and oil and gas sectors, favors for certain large corporations, etc., all the while trying to be the party of “Main Street.” Tariffs, regulations, taxes, permitting, etc., etc., etc., have the cumulative effect that individuals and small-business innovators don’t have an easy time gaining the initial capital to start a company and then to innovatively expand it. The legal system

makes it almost impossible for the little guy to get justice in the courts because the legal process is so expensive. The actual solution to enabling individuals and small businesses to flourish would be to go back to a free market where only criminals were banned from participating and the government was basically a referee and an entity that catches and punishes bad actors. But this would mean an end to special favors dispensed by The Right to their political supporters and allies. Instead of taking a stand to get government right-sized and in its proper place as a servant to the citizens, The Right looks to expand government, too, just in different ways than The Left does.

All the above simply means that The Right is not as principled as they think they are and they are not as economically intelligent as they think they are, either. And this is a shame coming from people who advocate they have the correct answers and wish to provide political and economic leadership. It is true that The Right is not foolish enough to advocate for Socialism, but an ongoing problem is The Right evidently does not understand that government interventions into the economy ultimately lead to Socialism – which is a disaster for everyone.

## **6.6 The Right also allows fraudulent money and banking to continue to exist**

For all of the reasons your author criticized The Left in section 5.7 of this book, The Right is also guilty, perhaps for some slightly different motives. They, too, allow for central banks and their cohort banks to defraud and deceive the masses and to continue their existence, preying on the citizens.

The Right is terrified of honest money for several big reasons. First, because they are afraid of the deflationary monetary effect on asset prices that would occur if the inflation reflected in asset prices were reset to a level where honest supply and demand with real money would clear the market. Second, honest money would entail a reset of banking, including a new set of laws against committing fraud by the banks themselves that would also be painful in the short term. Third, government debt would be defaulted on, also including state and local government debts of all kinds. This would also be painful in the short run. Fourth, in order to fund government at all levels, including attempting to justify a large military, it would require getting the funding from the citizens on a real-time basis, which would reveal to the man

on the street a markedly lower standard of living, noticeable by everyone when their taxes were raised and had to be paid. People would ask hard questions if the central banks did not engage in money creation, farcically called quantitative easing. Citizens would demand more private sector activity and less wasteful government sector activity. They would also likely demand that the USA mind its own business in international affairs. If the citizen's choice was to pay for their pro rata share of a military base on the other side of the world, in a nation that is in no way a possible threat to the USA, versus a remodeled kitchen, most citizens would make the moral and rational choice to better their own lives and to leave the rest of the world alone. And there are many other reasons too numerous to mention, e.g., all of the money that flows to politicians for them to play with would likely diminish to a trickle if government were reduced in size to no longer be a menace to its own citizens. Dumping the central banks and going back to honest money would change the world in profound ways.

It evidently does not occur to politicians of The Right that if you really want to emphasize:  
1) God, 2) family, and 3) country, then you

should have a small enough government that government itself cannot be mistaken for "God." You also need to get rid of the idea that the government functions as some kind of a gigantic washing machine that washes away societal sins. It does not. If you really want big citizens and small government then you have to get rid of the enabling central bank and balance the government's budget on a real-time basis. Further, while it is fine to say, "I only want what is best for my children and my grandchildren," it is not fine to then allow for a central bank institution to exist that, in substance and effect, deprives your progeny of their most-important-to-them individual natural rights. This is incoherent, muddleheaded stupidity. It does not occur to The Right that our children would have a future if they were not designated as being, in effect, perpetual tax slaves. If most people were asked a straight up question, "Do you want to be a perpetual tax slave and to have your descendants be, too, or do you want your individual natural rights?" most people would choose the latter – at least they should. For all their talk about the traditional family and the importance thereof, The Right does not work to get rid of three of the greatest threats to family: 1) central banks, 2) bloated government, and 3) excessive taxation. If allowed to continue in

existence an unwieldy bloated government becomes a practically unreformable institution that works against God, against families, and against the formation of capital necessary for growing the economy. If any government got rid of the central banks and out of the money business and allowed for the use of honest money to bring forth honest pricing, it would not take very long for that society's economy to be transformed into a much more productive and efficient provider of goods and services that the citizens actually wanted and were willing to pay for. With a smaller government people could no longer expect the government to dispense "free" money; people would have to get to work and the standard of living of the vast majority of people would increase. And our children would have a future we could feel good about, an honest future for a change.

### **6.7 Unprincipled myopic nationalism leads to exceptionalism by assertion**

Being proud of your country, its history, traditions, and accomplishments is all fine and good. That is one thing. However, if instead of the citizens of a country and the governmental leadership team being morally, intellectually, and productively sound, currently, they conflate

the present lack of values and achievements with their ancestor's past national character, and intellectual and productive achievements, then the people of that nation are unfortunately being delusional in the present. They are giving themselves a free pass to not meet high standards in the present due to, in essence, others' past historical values and achievements. And if you complicate this delusion by attempting to influence and/or bully the citizens of other nations into accepting your culture, your values, your religion, etc., but you no longer follow the same morality, thought processes, and values and choices that made your nation great in the first place, you are acting out a delusion and are in fact a hypocrite, not a world leader. The Right in the USA and the United Kingdom (U.K.) tend to do this – so does The Left.

The Right evidently does not understand that the USA, as we traditionally have known it, has been gone for over 100 years. The same holds true for the once great country of England, now the United Kingdom. The righteousness of the majority of the citizens, traditional family stability, even the traditional family itself, a respect for true science and its application, practical clear thinking including the ability to

think independently and critically, the personal initiative, the national work ethic combined with the long-term thinking allowing for the generation and deployment of capital in better and greater productive processes, are now greatly (not totally) diminished. The USA and the U.K. are still generating scientific and productive achievements, but the quality of the character and the thought processes of the people as a whole have gone backwards. That this coincides with the initiation of a central bank (in the USA), big government sprawling across the land (interventionism), the rise of The Left in multitudinous corrupted institutions, and children being “educated” in the public school system is not a coincidence. But The Right acts like an ostrich with its head in the sand, still expecting that other nations should want to be like us. They do, in terms of wanting to share in the material prosperity. But they do not in terms of the hypocrisy of the national character and the intellectual thought patterns.

The main point of this relatively short section is that The Right is guilty of what amounts to **national exceptionalism by assertion**. And as your author hopes to have made clear by now, anything by assertion is not truth unless it is supported by facts and logic. Wishes, hopes,

dreams, fantasies, myopic beliefs, etc., are not thinking. Your author has no problem with exceptionalism if it is earned fair and square and is based on morality, rational principles, and the application of morality and rationality to honest and peaceful productive efforts designed to enhance life on earth. However, if the put-forth exceptionalism is based mainly on unwarranted assertion, then reality is being ignored to the hazard of those ignoring it.

We cannot disregard God in our government, our daily lives, and in our educational system and practice a Samaritanized mishmash of Christianity (if even that) and then expect other nations to just accept our "moral leadership." We cannot disregard international law when it is in our "interests" to do so and then expect other nations not to do just the same. We cannot attack nations on the other side of the world who are no threat to us and then expect that other nations won't similarly use their own rationalizations for wars they perceive are in their interest. We cannot advocate for tariffs on imports to support certain favored big business industries and then preach free trade to the rest of the world. We cannot allow for intellectual-thought gatekeepers of the big Silicon Valley companies to censor politically-incorrect-by-

assertion thought and then scream bloody murder when other nations engage in their own internal censorship or block these same Silicon Valley companies. We cannot act to start “color” revolutions in other parts of the world, some with democratically elected governments, and then complain about democracy not being “correctly” practiced by those nations who allow for obviously corrupt election practices. We cannot preach individual natural rights and then allow a taxation and regulation system that denies individual natural rights in practice. We cannot advocate for a large military industrial complex (both The Right and The Left do this) that, in essence, warmongers and then sells arms to favored nations and then complain when our enemies do the same. We cannot extensively spy on our own citizens, and the citizens and leaders of other nations, capturing all digital electronic communications, storing them for later use against them, and then expect other nations not to do something similar. We cannot just hack others and then expect not to get hacked back. Unprincipled nationalism can lead to a large military industrial complex which if unchecked can lead to imperialism. We look like moral and intellectual muddleheads and hypocrites because we are.

**We are guilty of exceptionalism by**

**assertion.** And it is The Right that is particularly guilty of this.

If we are exceptional via our values and how we morally live, fine. If we are exceptional via our intelligence and coherent and moral application of scientific principles, engineering, and technology, fine. If we out-produce others fair and square, because we are long-term thinkers who save capital and productively invest it, fine. Otherwise, it is not fine. And if you are living in the past, pointing out past achievements, but not following the actual practices that enabled those moral, intellectual, and productive achievements, then it is not fine.

There is a big danger in not understanding our own history and preaching democracy to the world. The USA was supposed to be Republic, as the founding fathers of the country knew that no democracy in human history had ended well. Here is the overlooked danger. Approximately 60% of the world's people are Asian. They do not have the same religious, intellectual, political backgrounds, or worldview that the people in the U.S.A, the U.K., or even Western Europe have. What happens if the people of Asia, combined with the people of Latin America and Africa politically decide democracy is "the

thing,” it should be taken seriously, and applied on a worldwide basis? And then what?

Ironically and sadly, since your author is writing about The Right, if your tradition gets corrupted and if you forget your own history, you are also lost. The only way out of a cultural mess is to become moral, rational, and honestly productive in the genuinely serving others sense. Then your culture will produce good people and you can be proud, in the right way (the earned way), of moral, rational, scientific, and productive achievements. Otherwise, it leads to **exceptionalism by assertion** and delusional hypocrisy, not earned leadership.

### **6.8 Educational failure, just of a different kind than The Left**

The most important part of education is to come to understand the purpose of human life and to cooperate with God in becoming the highest quality person you can become. This is **important**. Other activities that fill our lives might be necessary, e.g., things you do to provide food and shelter for yourself and your family, but these things are necessary and not as important. Your author has previously written several books covering the purpose of

human life and how to cooperate with God, e.g., *Divine Individualism* and *Life Charts*, so not much more will be written about that until section 7.7, later in this book. For now, the bottom line can be understood below:

The two Jehovahs, i.e., God → use a divine individualism process → to create → eternal, incorruptible, moral, reasonable, and productive → individuals (divine individuals) → who have learned how to get along with others

The religious part of The Right has for the most part rejected God's law as binding upon mankind today, opting instead for an over-emphasis on grace, or grace alone, apart from the law. They do not understand that God's law is actually divine instructions and you cannot do away with these divine instructions when God gave them to help develop future divine individuals with intelligence and character. This is all part of the mishmash of confusion that comes from accepting what amounts to a Samaritanized Christianity. Further still, as previously pointed out, The Right is willing to compromise on violating individual natural rights, too, just in different ways than The Left does. While this may come as a shock to the religious element of The Right, if we combine all

of this it means that The Right cannot provide the moral leadership to our children the way they think they can. And this is a shame. The Right does not actually want to obey God, but they want the appearance of righteousness and to feel like they are the good guys.

Not understanding the time gap between Genesis 1:1 and 1:2 leads to religious confusion because there is some resistance to the idea that the earth is actually much older than 6,000 years, something approaching four billion years old. This puts Samaritanized Christianity in conflict with natural scientists. And so The Right is also not as qualified as they think they are to provide purely secular scientific leadership to our children. This, too, is a shame.

To be fair, The Right at least does not usually diminish the good parts of Western Civilization that The Left foolishly wants to tear down. The Right at least talks about the importance of Christianity, respect for individuals, the scientific method, and free enterprise, etc. However, and somewhat ironically, the religious and even the secular part of The Right do not seem to understand that Western Civilization did not start with the ancient Greeks. It started with the twelve tribes

of Israel. It is ironic because many, not all, of the Anglo population of Northwest Europe, the U.K., the USA, Canada, as well as Australia and New Zealand and a few other parts of the world are likely the “the lost ten tribes” of Israel.

Further, some of the two southern tribes of Benjamin and Judah are also mixed in at this point in time, too. The religious and secular leaders of The Right do not seem to know their own history. The acknowledgement of the below items can all be traced back to the Bible and were supposed to have been important in ancient Israelite culture:

God as Creator (Genesis, Ephesians 3:9) and deliverer (Exodus)

Jesus Christ as Savior (the entire New Testament, particularly Matthew – Acts)

the respect for **life** (Exodus 20:13)

**liberty** (God freeing the ancient Israelites from Egypt, 2 Corinthians 3:17)

and private **property** (Exodus 20:15,17)

honesty (Exodus 20:16)

the sanctity of moral contracts (Leviticus 19:35, Numbers 30:2)

respect for the family unit (Exodus 20:14,17)

Many scholars will emphasize at least four key parts of Western Civilization: 1) Christianity 2) the individual 3) the rule of law and equality before the law and 4) the scientific method. These four things made Western Civilization different from much of the cultural and societal practices of the rest of humanity. The results were incredible, not perfect, but incredible. The first three items can obviously be tied back to the Bible. The fourth item, the scientific method also can be, too.

"And God said, Let Us make man in Our image, after our likeness. And let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the heavens, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over all the creepers creeping on the earth [but not each other is implied]. And God created man in His image; in the image of God He created him. He created them male and female." Genesis 1:26-27, MKJV

The scientific method is a part of following the Biblical command of learning how the world

works so the knowledge can be used to improve human life. Using the scientific method is a big part of learning how to have dominion over the earth. But, per the bracketed comment implied above, we were to have dominion over the earth, not over each other. Like your author mentioned, Western Civilization was incredible, not perfect.

What is ironic and sad to your author is the Anglo portion of the religious part of The Right should understand its own tradition and history, since they emphasize it so much, but for the most part they do not. Ancient Israelite society and culture, as it should have been and partly was, already possessed most of the key elements of what later became Western Civilization, but this is not taught to our children – either at home or in the schools. This is a big intellectual miss by The Right.

Just like The Right allows for certain violations of individual natural rights and also allows for a central bank like the Federal Reserve to dominate society, The Right also allows for propaganda mills, i.e., public schools. Public schools open the door to brainwashing and what amounts to mind poisoning instead of an actual education. And those public schools

have now largely excised God from life. They have also stripped the meaning and purpose from human life so it is no longer possible via public education to understand what is important versus what is merely necessary. The public schools are now attacking Western Civilization, not even knowing why Western Civilization has been so important to humanity. The Right tends to negotiate in an attempt to get compromises so they can somehow hang onto tradition and history. But as this section points out, The Right is not as moral as they think they are because they have rejected the divine instructions. The Right is intellectually confused about the archeological record and many parts of the natural sciences. And The Right does not really understand the actual origins of Western Civilization ... meaning The Right is confused about tradition and history, too.

If The Right wants to believe in and then advocate for Western exceptionalism, The Right better have its story and its exemplar conduct straight ... and it does not. IF The Right were in charge of education it would not be the total disaster The Left has created, but The Right also cannot deliver a proper education to our children, either.

## **6.9 Summary of why The Right also cannot deliver**

This section will be a brief recap of why The Right cannot deliver, either. Dispensational Samaritanized Christianity is confusion, not leadership. This coupled with the rejection of divine law instructions has the religious part of The Right not as morally strong or consistent as they otherwise could be.

Tradition, by itself, is no way to defend anything. You ultimately need to use ethical principles and logic so you might as well use them in the first place. Further, The Right does not really understand that the key concepts of Western Civilization derive from what God was trying to achieve with the twelve tribes of Israel, meaning The Right does not fully understand the history and tradition that it advocates.

The Right is also willing to violate individual natural rights, but for different reasons than The Left. This leaves The Right in a position where after largely rejecting much of God's divine law instructions, they have also, in essence, rejected the secular standard of what is correct, i.e., inviolable, individual natural rights.

The Right is also confused about science, just for different reasons. The Right does not seem to realize there is a time gap between Genesis 1.1 and 1.2, ergo the archeological record can be both accepted and explained, i.e., integrated with what the Bible teaches.

The Right does not really believe in actual free enterprise either, despite the rhetoric. Similarly to how The Right will allow for the violation of individual natural rights for different reasons than The Left, The Right is inconsistent in practicing a free market for different reasons than The Left.

The Right also allows for fraudulent money and banking to continue to exist. This allows the continuing enslavement of the population, their lives, liberties, property, and progeny to legal, financial, and governmental tyranny.

Unprincipled nationalism leads to exceptionalism by assertion and exceptionalism by currently unearned assertion is not real world leadership.

The Right allows for public schools, too. Further, the moral confusion resulting from the

lack of really understanding Anglo tradition and history, the rejection of divine law instructions, and the inconsistent practicing of what The Right does know to be correct ... combined with the intellectual confusion of being in conflict with the natural sciences means The Right also cannot provide effective educational leadership either. Not being as bad as The Left is not very much of an intellectual or a moral hurdle to clear, but this does not mean that you are qualified to lead regarding education.

For all of these reasons and more, The Right is also not going to provide solutions to the very real problems facing humanity. Your author could go on and on, but this is not a book on political theory. Chapter five criticizing The Left and chapter six criticizing The Right were felt necessary because it could now be said that the majority of the citizens now regard the secular government of their nation to almost be some kind of a god. But there is no solution to The Tragedy of Being from either the politics of The Left or of The Right. The truth is that both chapter five and chapter six could be much longer books in their own right. Your author just felt that after taking the first four chapters of this book to explain how The Tragedy of Being came about, it was important to point out

that neither The Left nor The Right is going to solve it. The good news is that the last four chapters of this book will inform the reader of how God the Father and Jesus Christ, the two Jehovahs, will finally solve The Tragedy of Being and save mankind.

## **Chapter Seven**

### **Original Appropriation - God's Ownership Of The Entire Universe**

These last four chapters transition into explaining many of the key elements pertaining to God's Strange Plan. They provide necessary information in order to give the human race solid moral and intellectual ground and they demonstrate that God has a way to solve The Tragedy of Being ... and the two Jehovahs will.

#### **7.1 Original appropriation explained - the entire universe is God's private property**

The Bible discloses that God the Father created the universe, this earth, and every being and thing in it. He did so through the being, known as the Word, who later became

known to us as Jesus Christ. They created the earth to be inhabited by man. Further, they created angelic life, too (Ezekiel 28:14-15). This revelation gives us two witnesses identifying themselves as the creators of all that exist: 1) God the Father and 2) Jesus Christ (in ancient times known as the Word, John 1:1).

“... At the mouth of two witnesses, or at the mouth of three witnesses, shall the matter be made sure.” Deuteronomy 19:15, MKJV

“The LORD has founded the earth by wisdom; by understanding He has founded the heavens.” Proverbs 3:19, MKJV

“For all things were created by Him [Jesus, see verse 13, not quoted], the things in the heavens, and the things on the earth, the visible and the invisible, whether thrones or dominions or principalities or powers, **all things were created through Him** and for Him.” Colossians 1:16, MKJV

“and to bring to light what is the fellowship of the mystery which from eternity has been hidden in God, **who created all things by Jesus Christ;**” Ephesians 3:9, MKJV

"For so says the LORD the Creator of the heavens, He is God, forming the earth and making it; He makes it stand, not creating it empty, **but forming it to be inhabited [by man].** I am the LORD, and there is no other." Isaiah 45:18, MKJV

The Bible discloses that two beings, at the present time, are God. They are the two Jehovahs. They are: 1) God the Father and 2) the Word who became Jesus Christ. Ergo, at this time, God the Father and Jesus Christ are the two Jehovahs, known as God.

"In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was in the beginning with God. **All things came into being through Him, and without Him not even one thing came into being that has come into being.** In Him was life, and the life was the light of men. ... And the Word became flesh, and tabernacled among us. And we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father, full of grace and of truth. " John 1:1-4, 14 MKJV

"A Psalm of David. **The earth is the LORD's,** and the fullness of it; the world, **and those who dwell in it.**" Psalms 24:1, MKJV

"Behold, [via the doctrine of original appropriation] the heaven and the heaven of heavens belong to the LORD your God, the earth also, with all in it." Deuteronomy 10:14, MKJV

"To the Chief Musician. A Psalm of David.  
The heavens declare the glory of God; and the expanse proclaims **His handiwork.**"  
Psalms 19:1, MKJV

Knowing how important logic is to thinking, because all thinking is logical or it is not thinking, and thinking is to choice and action, **Satan hates logic.** He has to. Logic would show that **the concept of original appropriation is the only just and true way to determine original ownership.** Whoever mixes their labor with a previously unowned natural resource is first in time and they now own that resource. In the case of the two Jehovahs they actually created the entire universe and therefore own it and everything in it, including the earth and all of mankind and the angels, too.

"Who has gone **before Me** [first in time] that I should repay? All that is the heavens is Mine." Job 41:11, MKJV

"If I were hungry, I would not tell you, for  
the world is Mine, and the fullness of it."

Psalms 50:12, MKJV

"Behold, all souls [lives] are Mine. As the soul of the father, also the soul of the son, they are Mine. The soul that sins, it shall die."

Ezekiel 18:4, MKJV

Ergo, Satan hates logic because logic would dictate that the two Jehovahs own everything, via the correct and true concept of original appropriation. And so Satan attacks logic and he also attacks the concepts of original appropriation and private property. Satan hates all three because they reveal that he is a created being who is therefore beholden to the two Jehovahs.

Satan → hates → logic

Satan → hates the concept of → original appropriation

Satan → hates the concept of → private property

"You **were** the anointed cherub that covers, and I had put you in the holy height of God

where you were; you have walked up and down  
in the midst of the stones of fire. You were  
perfect in your ways **from the day that you**  
**were created**, until iniquity was found in you."  
Ezekiel 28:14-15, MKJV

Satan would like to pretend that he is somehow equal to the two Jehovahs, perhaps even that he should have been the third member of the God family. But he is not a real god, only a powerful spirit being. He is not equal to the two Jehovahs in any conceivable way. He is a created being, created perfect in his ways, **but who has since become morally corrupted, irrational, and destructive by his own choices.** He is the enemy of both God and man.

Satan → a created being → is beholden to → the two Jehovahs

Satan → morally corrupt + irrational by choice → changed from being perfect in his ways → to an enemy of the two Jehovahs + dangerous to man

To help any reader who is not already familiar with the concept of **original appropriation**, your author will utilize parts of several discussions that are interwoven

throughout his previously written, *Life Charts* book. Original appropriation can be understood at the human level and your author is the one who extended it to the level of the universe, for reasons that will become clear as we journey throughout the balance of this book.

Since man is a social creature and will be interacting with others, objective rules for life are then necessary. Even at the non-religious level there are basic axioms or premises for a flourishing life. Even at the non-religious level there is the basis for a rational and objective ethics. At the human level, each of us owns ourselves. We are responsible for our own lives. No one else owns us, or a part of us. And we do not own anyone else, or a part of them. **Self-ownership is an axiom for all men**, even if it were not based on the gift of God to each of us (which it is). No one could argue otherwise because they would have to have title to themselves in order to be free to make an argument. And could they assert title to themselves so they could be free to make an argument while denying the same freedom and self-ownership to others? No, because A equals A, in this case, all men are men.

A further axiom for an objective ethics for men is the concept of **original appropriation**. Original appropriation means that when a man mixes his labor with previously unowned and unused natural resources, the resulting transformation of property gives that man title to what is now his private property. And he is now free to use or dispose of that private property as he sees fit. This is necessary because man needs an exclusive jurisdiction in which to live and he also needs the liberty to be able to obtain and use resources in order to, at a minimum, sustain his life and hopefully also to flourish on this earth.

Both the axioms of **self-ownership** and **original appropriation**, and the conclusions that follow enable man to know he should not encroach on others' lives, their liberty, or their property. And further, since most contracts involve property for property exchanges of some kind, that he should do all he has agreed to do, which is to say he should honor any contract he enters into. The world would be a completely different place if all men did this. And if all men did this it would even enable men with different religious and other beliefs, men of different races, and citizens of different nations, etc., to

cooperate with each other. In other words, it would cut across religions, races, sexes, governments, tribes, etc., to respect life, liberty, and property and to allow for cooperation even among men who would not be so inclined otherwise.

A universal acknowledgement and respect for → individual natural rights (life, liberty, and property) → would act as a check and balance → against → human legislation → excessive governmental power → religious abuse → tribal abuse → any other kind of abuse

As a man, in terms of property rights, to own one's self is not enough. One must also obtain and use other forms of property in order to stay alive, e.g., one must eat and that requires the obtaining and eating of food. Ergo, who rightfully owns a piece of property matters because that is who is entitled to use it as they see fit.

Many others have opined, e.g., John Locke, that a man obtains the rights to additional property (other than himself) from being the first to mix his productive labor with property in the commons (property that has not yet been properly appropriated for private usage). Your

author concurs. This is the fairest way because the first man to put property into productive use should be the rightful private owner. In this case, **being first in time matters**. The first-in-time man thought of it and took the action to make a not yet used piece of property now useful. Of course, all or nearly all property is potentially useful, but until a man actually mixes his own labor with it, it is unused – in a state of nature, as it were. An easy to understand example is a sculptor who makes a sculpture from some raw materials he found in nature. The sculptor, as producer, clearly owns the sculpture. Who else would own it - a non-producer of the sculpture? The answer clearly is, "of course not." Someone who differed would have to put forth a more just and logical reason for differing. Your author has not yet heard of a logical and just reason for a dissenting counter-argument. The fact that the previously unused property was in the commons is *prima facie* evidence that no one else had the smarts or the initiative to be the first to take the action to bring the property into productive use. Once someone thought of and took the action to make previously unproductive property productive, they became the first and rightful sole owner of this **newly acquired and now private property**. They successfully mixed their brains,

their labor, and their personality with the previously unowned property and now it is theirs by right.

This doctrine of how previously unowned property in the commons becomes private property is known as **the doctrine of original appropriation**.

Original appropriation → first in time → to obtain ownership of private property → logical → just → True

The two Jehovahs → via → original appropriation → own the universe + all that is in it

The English jurist, legal historian, and teacher, Sir William Blackstone, astutely pointed out that without private property rights no one could take their coat off without running the risk that someone else would come along and put it on and then walk away. The same thing held for exiting a tent. Someone else would come along and enter your tent and thereby you would lose your tent. And the same thing held for sowing and caring for agricultural crops. If there were no property rights others would come along at harvest time and eat the crops. In such a society, without recognized property

rights, no one would go to the trouble of constructing a tent or making a coat or growing food. All, or nearly all, would starve, suffer, and die. Per Blackstone, **private property via original appropriation is a principle of natural justice.** The right to leave private property to one's heirs, to Blackstone, prevents the confusion that would occur upon the formerly private property reverting to the commons upon the death of the current owner. When two men own different kinds of private property and the private property becomes, in the eyes of one man, more or less valuable than in the eyes of a second man, contractual trades of property for property can occur. All of these things, per Blackstone, are in accordance with natural law.

Private property → via original appropriation → a principle of natural justice

Interestingly, Deuteronomy 10:14 quoted earlier and again just below, along with many other places in the Bible, including those quoted at the beginning of this section, mention that the entire universe and the earth, including every being and thing in it, belong to God – who created them. We can call this **The Original Appropriation** of original appropriation.

"Behold, [via the doctrine of original appropriation] the heaven and the heaven of heavens belong to the LORD your God, the earth also, with all in it." Deuteronomy 10:14, MKJV

God the Father owns himself. Jesus Christ, as King of kings and Lord of lords, owns himself - but yields to the will of the Father. Since they have the same value system (John 10:30) they are working together on jointly agreed upon goals. It would not be possible for a mere man to approach the throne of God, argue that the two Jehovahs do not own themselves, and not pay a price for such ignorant insolence. **Self-ownership** is a key ethical principle pertaining even to the two Jehovahs.

God the Father → owns himself

Jesus Christ → owns himself and yields to the Father voluntarily (Luke 22:42)

God the Father → created the universe → through Jesus Christ (Ephesians 3:9 and many other places)

The doctrine of **original appropriation** is very important for human and angelic

understanding. When God the Father created the universe, with and through Jesus Christ, the two of them mixed their minds, their personalities, and their labor with whatever the universe is made out of. Your author writes, "whatever the universe is made out of" because man is still learning about dark matter, dark energy, sub-atomic physics, etc. What is clear is that the universe is made out of something and the two Jehovahs did the making. They legitimately and justly own the universe. Satan thought he could ignore original appropriation, charge the throne of God, and reassign ownership of the universe to himself, through force (Isaiah 14:12-14, Revelation 12:3-9). He failed. More than that, **he was wrong**. Satan was wrong intellectually. And Satan was wrong morally. Further, Satan took the wrong action to attempt to steal the universe that did not belong to him in any conceivable, logical, or just way. This is why your author wrote that the doctrine of original appropriation is of value, not just to human beings, but to angels – who evidently did not get it. Now they do. One-third of them had to learn the hard way. The other two-thirds probably understand it now, and all of the angels, good and bad, now understand that the two Jehovahs know they own the universe

and possess superior force to defend it from criminal aggressors.

The two Jehovahs → own themselves AND mixed their minds, personalities, and labor → with what the universe is made out of → to create the universe

The two Jehovahs → were **first in time** → when they created the universe → and now own the universe → via original appropriation

The two Jehovahs → justly own the universe → via the doctrines of 1) self-ownership + 2) original appropriation

The universe → is the private property → of the two Jehovahs

All angels + all men → are guests → in the two Jehovahs' universe

Knowledge of the above, that the two Jehovahs created the universe and now own it, is an important part of the context of the human situation. Another important part of the context of the human situation is that the two Jehovahs are engaged in using a divine individualism process to create unique, moral, reasonable,

productive, and incorruptible divine individuals. This will be further explained later in section 7.7 of this chapter. For now the important point is this:

No one will survive the vetting of the divine individualism process that does not recognize (once pointed out to them in a way they can clearly understand) that **the doctrine of original appropriation** gives the two Jehovahs' eternal ownership of the entire universe and everything in it.

The two Jehovahs have the ethical right to own the universe as their private property and they do. Man made in God's image has the ethical right to private property, too. And man's most important private property ownership right is self-ownership, the forerunner to every other right. Ergo, man owns his own life, his liberty, and any property in the commons he makes his own via original appropriation. Further, property can be traded for others' property via honest contractual exchange. All of the above, once explained and understood, should be no surprise to a moral, rational, and productive person. It will be a big surprise to the immoral, irrational, parasites and criminals.

The key ethical principles are: 1) self-ownership  
+ 2) original appropriation

Self-ownership + original appropriation →  
enable → logical + just + right ownership → of  
private property

Private property → is necessary for life

Self-ownership → is the core aspect → of private  
property

First in time → is a core aspect → of original  
appropriation

A key aspect of original appropriation is the  
idea of "**first in time**" and it is important to  
explain this. There is no logical reason why  
someone who was not physically present when  
someone else first used original appropriation to  
obtain just title to private property should be  
able to claim ownership. The first-comer had  
some combination of: 1) brains 2) initiative 3)  
foresight 4) work ethic 5) physical proximity,  
etc., to take the action before anyone else did of  
making property in the commons useful for their  
purposes by mixing their labor with it. An easy  
example to understand is at the level of the  
universe. Satan is a created latecomer (Ezekiel

28:15). What possible reason could Satan propose whereby he should have some kind of ownership interest in the universe? None. And since Satan had neither logical argument, nor justness of his cause in any assertion contrary to the two Jehovahs owning the universe, this is why he "had to" charge their throne and try and steal the universe by force (Isaiah 14:12-14, Revelation 12:3-9). The universe is the private property of the two Jehovahs. Any attempt to take it from them is an attempt at parasitical theft and it will require the use of force.

At the human level the protection of private property is included in the prohibitions contained in the Ten Commandments. Private property being referenced can be derived from Exodus 20:10 ("your gates"), are specific in verse 15 ("You shall not steal") and verse 17 includes a warning to not even get close to stealing ("you shall not covet your neighbor's house ... nor anything that is your neighbor's"). If a latecomer was physically present but did not have the foresight or brains to see property in the commons to be valuable, or saw it as valuable but lacked the initiative, or was too lazy or preoccupied with something else to take the action to mix their labor with it, then too bad. They have no claim. Time matters to

human beings. There is a too early and a too late to many things pertaining to life. If two different men wanted to use the same item of property as a means to achieve their end, then there will be conflict. First-in-time original appropriation eliminates any confusion over who should be able to use an item of property as a means to an end. If a particular item of property is very important for someone to use as a means, but they are not the owner, then they can offer consideration (other property or services) to the owner in the hopes they can acquire title to or usage rights for that property. This allows for mutually beneficial contractual exchanges to occur. In other words, the use of private property can become the subject of mutual adjustment and compromise via contractual negotiations and it should not be based upon physical conflict or baseless assertion.

The extension of the concept of original appropriation to the level of the universe solves many ethical challenges for all created beings, angels and men. It is a cornerstone of universal ethics, as will be explained more in the next section.

Original appropriation → is a key cornerstone → of universal ethics

## **7.2 Original appropriation establishes divine law ethics throughout the universe**

God the Father and Jesus Christ, working together, created every being in the universe, angelic or human. There is no being in the universe, angelic or human, that can provide any evidence or logical reasoning to the contrary. Further, there is no place that any created being, angelic or human, could travel to where they would somehow be outside of the created universe. All beings, angelic and human, are residing, no matter where they are in the universe, on God's private property. This will never change because it is a historical fact. The two Jehovahs literally, via the doctrine of original appropriation, own everything and everyone. Ergo, divine law ethics promulgated by the two Jehovahs effectively constitutes "universal house rules," applicable to all.

The two Jehovahs' → divine law instructions → are universal house rules

If you have ever been to someone's home where their custom (rule) was that all guests

took off their shoes at the front door before gaining access to the home, you will understand this as a simple example of **house rules**. If you want to be a good guest, in that particular home, you follow the established house rules. When you follow the established house rules you are considered a good and welcome guest, but when you do not follow their rules you are not.

A good guest → follows the house rules

Some Bible law critics have pointed out various challenges pertaining to some of the instructions in both the Old Testament and even in the New Testament, but particularly the Old Testament. In your author's previous *Life Charts* book, an answer to the critics was explained. For the reader's benefit your author will quote the relevant section below.

"The two Jehovahs had some limits and problems in communicating with mankind in general and with the Israelites in particular. And the limitations they faced have led to confusion and criticism regarding people's understanding of the wisdom and also the fairness of divine law. There is no conflict between reason, justice, and divine law, but the two Jehovahs have faced these numerous

challenges in dealing with mankind and in mankind's perception of them. For the reader's ease and benefit your author shall share a summary of those limitations and problems below:

1. Evil comes about because angels and men make bad choices, which bad consequences the chooser is responsible for – not the two Jehovahs.
2. There is a state of war in the universe, and in a state of war communication and actions taken are outside of "normal."
3. Satan is the current "god of this world," (2 Corinthians 4:4), and he does innumerable malicious, hurtful acts toward mankind and then stands back and lets the two Jehovahs take the blame.
4. The two Jehovahs were forced to communicate within the context of a state of war and toward ignorant and uneducated people (the physical Israelites) who used to be slaves. They were not then in a position to be able to teach at the same level they thought at. It was so bad the Israelites even had to be instructed to bury their own dung and not leave it lying around above ground (Deuteronomy 23:13). The two supreme minds of the universe would much rather not

have to communicate at the “bury your dung” level. Rather, they would prefer to be able to just say something along the lines of “Choose life, do not encroach on others or their property, keep your word, and love your neighbor as yourself.” But, they had to consider the context of that situation and they ended up giving a lot of rules. If the two Jehovahs felt they could teach at the level they actually think at and if there was not a state of war in the universe, their communication could have been higher level, more overtly principled, and easier to understand and follow. In short, the two Jehovahs were not then in a position to be able to teach in a way and in a manner that would have been easier for everyone involved. If people are largely anti-conceptual, which is to say, poor thinkers, then they need a lot of detailed rules to memorize and mimic. The more ideal would have been to be able to say something as simple as, “love your neighbor as yourself.” Unfortunately, that is not enough detail for most people.

The limitations the two Jehovahs faced, along with the constant rebellion of the ancient Israelites, give critics of divine law what they

perceive as a field day. However, this criticism is at the critic's own peril. Even if the two Jehovahs were not rational and objective in their formulation and communication of the divine laws, which is not true (see limitations above), the critics still have no place to hide. This is because the doctrine of original appropriation gives the two Jehovahs' ownership and ultimate control, once completely asserted, over the entire universe and everything and everyone in it. So even if the two Jehovahs' divine law pronouncements were their own opinion, which is to say subjective, their divine laws, once made plain to mankind, become objective facts, i.e., rules for all of us to live by.  
**We are all guests in their universe.** If we want to be good guests, we will follow the 'house rules.'

The two Jehovahs → own the universe → they get to make the rules

The two Jehovahs → with all of the moral virtues + all of the intellectual virtues → make the right judgments → based on → the actual context of the situation

Sometimes → the actual context of the situation → limits even the two Jehovahs [angelic beings]

in rebellion and human beings not yet ready to learn to think and behave at a high level of morality and rationality]"

This section does not need to be long to make the central point, which even a child can understand: if we want to be good guests in their universe and be accepted by the two Jehovahs, we will obey the divine law instructions, i.e., the house rules.

### **7.3 Ephesians 2:10 – human beings are God's workmanship**

What is very clear is that the two Jehovahs went to a lot of time, trouble, and work to create the universe and they evidently created the earth to be a special place, to be inhabited by men made in their image and likeness. What are the two Jehovahs working on? Mankind. Some men and women are called to change their lives now and others will be given a chance to do so later, as will be explained in chapter ten of this book. In other words, all hope is not lost for those who have not yet cooperated with the two Jehovahs. The divine instructions they gave, aka, the law of God are to help us understand how to change our lives for the better. These instructions

cannot be disregarded without consequence by either angels or men. For human beings the divine law instructions are to help us arrive at a destination, so to speak.

**"For we are His workmanship,** created in Christ Jesus to good works, which God has before ordained that we should walk in them."

Ephesians 2:10, MKJV

The two Jehovahs know that man is in trouble because all have sinned and fallen short of the glory of God (Romans 3:23) and the penalty of sin is death (Romans 6:23). But since mankind is their workmanship they love us, even though we are horribly flawed creatures. The fact is that the two Jehovahs loved us first and God the Father sent the Word (Jesus Christ, John 1:1-14) on a divine rescue mission (John 3:16-17). But this is the starting point, not the ending point. Just as it can be said that when we arrive at our destination we have reached **the end** of our journey, so the word "end" in the below scripture means to become like Jesus Christ.

**"For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness for everyone who believes."**

Romans 10:4, MKJV

In this verse the word "law" can also be translated as principle and throughout the Bible the word "Torah" (law) means instruction (Deuteronomy 4:44 as one example). Ergo, we are being instructed to be like Christ, who is righteous, or virtuous. The 1851 Murdock New Testament translation has Romans 10:4 more clearly stated:

"For Messiah is the aim of the law, for righteousness, unto every one that believeth in him. For Moses describeth the righteousness, which is by the law [instruction], thus: Whoever shall do these things, shall live by them."  
Romans 10:4-5, Murdock New Testament

The goal = to become righteous (virtuous) like Christ

Law = instruction

Law can mean principles to apply in living life

God's workmanship now → Christians (explained in more detail in chapter eight)

God's ultimate workmanship → all of mankind

The main point of this short section is that God's divine law instructions are meant to assist men and women in the two Jehovahs' goal of helping mankind to change to become like Jesus Christ. This is God's workmanship, to help human beings change for the better. It looks like God is largely failing right now, but the two Jehovahs will not. This will be explained as we go throughout the balance of this book.

#### **7.4 Complex life requires free will, reason, and time**

What God the Father and Jesus Christ are working on is much more difficult than it seems. It could be said that due to human and angelic rebellion the entire process is a challenge, even for God. The truth is, however, the process would be challenging even if angelic and human rebellion were not involved. This is because complex life, defined for your author's purposes here as sentient life, requires some actions and processes that limits even the two Jehovahs themselves. In particular, the sentient complex life that God's workmanship, man, represents required the two Jehovahs to grant man both **free will and the ability to think**. God's workmanship goal regarding man also requires a period of **time**.

The two Jehovahs' goal for man requires: 1) free will + 2) man having the ability to think + 3) time

The ability to think is required and important so that man does not miss the truth!

When most people think of the idea of God they have been almost culturally or religiously programmed to believe that God is omniscient, omnipotent, and sometimes omnipresent. In other words, people who ponder God tend to believe that God knows exactly what he wants to do and can say the word or snap his fingers and it is done. God's wish is his command ... and it is done. To most people the belief in God knowing what he wants to do is further expanded to God knowing everything, past, present, and future. This is the omniscience part of the common belief about God. And most people presume that God can do whatever he wants whenever he wants. This is the omnipotent part of the common belief about God. Both are false, as is omnipresence. Your author has previously written on this topic in several of his previous books, including *Life Charts* and will quote a few relevant paragraphs, below:

"But before your author can share the actual answer to the mind-body problem [discussed in the next section], there is **a further complication** and that complication has confused and rendered incorrect the religious attempts to answer the mind-body problem. Your author calls them "**the three omni's.**" The further complication is the widely held religious view that God (the two Jehovahs) is omniscient, omnipotent, and omnipresent. And so your author has to stop and address these three ideas right here:

One big difference between the natural sciences and the social sciences is that there is no choice as an element of causality in the natural sciences. Electrons do not choose to leave one atom and go to another. Gravity does not decide to function as a force. A planet does not choose which sun to orbit. Men (and angels) choose. So does God. All these choices have consequences. As choices are made, other choices get made and the future unfolds in a linear fashion. **Time is linear.** The future is not predetermined. The future will occur based on choices that are made by those who are able to choose. The two Jehovahs gave free will to angels and men. Evidently one-third of the

angels chose to rebel against them (Revelation 12:4-9). And man, from Adam on down, has also rebelled against them. The ancient Israelites originally chose to cooperate with them, but then rebelled. Because the two Jehovahs gave angels and men a certain amount of freedom and also a certain amount of time, even they, based on the choice they made, cannot force an angel's or a man's mind. This is why it is so important for men, in particular, and also the good angels, to cooperate with the two Jehovahs. Otherwise, we can frustrate their purposes for us, frustrate what they would actually like to accomplish versus what they have had to settle for – so far.

It is widely assumed that God (the two Jehovahs) is **omniscient**. And **omnipotent**. And sometimes it is also assumed that God is **omnipresent**. Your author disagrees; at least pertaining to the sloppy way **the three Omni's** are normally used.

If something is knowable then God knows it – if he chooses to. If something is not knowable then no one knows it, including God. For example, as previously mentioned above, the future is not yet written. The future depends on choices that God, angels, and men make. Since

the future is not yet written, because all the choices that make up the future have not been made, no one knows the future. God does reserve the right to prophecy and to intervene using his free choice to cause an event to occur, but God does not force a man's mind, or an angel's mind. As regards the natural sciences, logic, mathematics, and other fields not involving choice, your author believes God knows all. Quoting from Wikipedia:

'There is a distinction between:

inherent omniscience - the ability to know anything that one chooses to know and can be known.

total omniscience - actually knowing everything that can be known.

Some modern Christian theologians argue that God's omniscience is inherent rather than total, and that God chooses to limit his omniscience in order to preserve the free will and dignity of his creatures.' Your author agrees.

As regards omnipotence, Wikipedia nicely quotes author C.S. Lewis on the matter (from Lewis's *The Problem Of Pain*) [emphasis mine]:

'His Omnipotence means power to do all that is intrinsically possible, not to do the intrinsically impossible. You may attribute miracles to him, but not nonsense. This is no limit to his power. If you choose to say 'God can give a creature free will and at the same time withhold free will from it,' you have not succeeded in saying anything about God: meaningless combinations of words do not suddenly acquire meaning simply because we prefix to them the two other words 'God can.' ... It is no more possible for God than for the weakest of his creatures to carry out both of two mutually exclusive alternatives; not because his power meets an obstacle, but because nonsense remains nonsense even when we talk it about God.'

Your author does not believe that God is omnipotent in terms of overriding a man's free will. Ergo, a man can change, for the good or the bad (Ezekiel 18) and God will let the man choose. God cannot force men or angels to be moral and then turn around and maintain that we are anything much better than people-bots or angel-bots.

Omnipresence does not have much to do with this section of the book, but your author

felt like including a brief discussion of it here, anyway, as it kind of goes with the first two 'Omni's.' Wikipedia defines it as follows:

'Omnipresence or ubiquity is the property of being present everywhere. This characteristic is most commonly used in a religious context, as most doctrines bestow the trait of omnipresence onto a superior, usually a deity commonly referred to as God by monotheists, as with God in Christianity. This idea differs from Pantheism, which identifies the universe and divinity; in divine omnipresence, the divine and universe are separate, but the divine is present everywhere ...'

Your author does not agree with omnipresence as it is sloppily used as God evidently has a spirit body (1 Corinthians 15:35-50, Genesis 1:26, and Revelation 1:14-15). Further, while there is no doubt God can likely go anywhere at the speed of thought, he evidently has a place he resides (Revelation 4:2 and other places). Further, omnipresence gets difficult to explain or understand, e.g., if God is everywhere does that mean he is inside Satan?

The point of this discussion regarding omniscience, omnipotence, and omnipresence is

this: It is important for men and angels to use [their minds to think and] their free will to cooperate with the two Jehovahs, i.e., God.

Otherwise, even one little man can, for a time, literally frustrate the eternal God the same way a child can frustrate a parent. God gave us divine law as instruction in order to help us to learn to become like God so we can ultimately become holy and resurrected to eternal life (1 Corinthians 15) [divine individualism] and to be able to live in a new heaven and new earth (Revelation 21 and other places). Is that such a bad thing?"

Omniscience = false

Omnipotence = false

Omnipresence = false

Even though the two Jehovahs are incredibly powerful beings who can create an entire universe, including all of the laws of nature, and who can create angelic life and the complex life that human beings are, they are not able to fulfill their goals simply by giving commands. They actually need the cooperation of other sentient beings. Otherwise, God could have just created angel-bots or people-bots, but chose not

to. God was not going to be satisfied with people-bots or angel-bots ... and once complex minds able to think were created and free will was also granted, the problems started.

A big part of the problem, regarding "Being" becoming tragic, is that all too many sentient beings, men and angels, have acquired the wrong value system. Then the choices made per the wrong value system have bad consequences that compound onto each other. But for God to succeed in his goals, relative to mankind in particular, men had to be free to choose and also to possess the ability to think. God wants us to freely choose his values and to prove it by making choices consistent with those better values. This allows for men to become moral. God also wants us to use our minds and free will to become rational and balanced, i.e., to become reasonable - of our own volition. God's workmanship has proven a challenge, no doubt anticipated by God. Ultimately, men will need to cooperate with God to achieve God's purpose for them. We will need to learn to use our free will and our minds better, which we will, in time, with God's help. Said another way, or looked at from a slightly different camera angle, there is a price or cost that God has to pay to learn about each of us which is God's price of

information and that included giving us minds, freedom to choose, and time.

Surprising as it may be, the two Jehovahs have to pay a price for information about each unique person.

### **7.5 The solution to the mind-body problem establishes both reason and natural law**

An extensive discussion of one of philosophy's central problems, known as "the mind-body problem," is beyond the scope of this book. Your author wrote his solution in a 78 page, section 4.3, of his previous *Life Charts* book. A simplified posing of the mind-body problem is adequate for your author's purposes in this book. It is: how can we explain human consciousness and how much can we trust our human minds in their attempts to understand reality and to establish knowledge? The mind-body problem has spawned library shelves full of books and endless discussion and debates by philosophers.

The short answer to the mind-body problem will suffice for this section. God, not being omniscient and not being omnipotent, is operating teleologically. This means that the

two Jehovahs are using a means-end structure with purpose to set and achieve goals that are important to them. To achieve those goals they must choose the appropriate means, just as a human being must when they are attempting to achieve a goal. Both Jehovahs are God. God the Father tends to work through Jesus Christ when dealing with humanity. For the balance of this discussion, for ease of writing and reading, your author will simply write God and then use the pronoun "he" or "his" or the like designating whichever Jehovah is at work on human beings, likely Jesus Christ, but sometimes God the Father, or both, depending on Biblical context. Your author believes that in terms of manipulating nature, God likely is omnipotent and can just decree his will and it will be done. In other words, when God is dealing with inanimate objects, energy, or non-sentient animals, God can just do what he wants when he wants. But when God is dealing with sentient complex beings, e.g., men and angels, because God has given both men and angels minds, free will, and time to choose, men and angels can literally frustrate God's purposes ... at least for a time and they have. Ergo, in this case God is not omnipotent and must actually work to achieve his own important-to-him goals when dealing with men and angels. God limited

himself when he granted the ability for others to think and God also limited himself when he gave free will and then allowed for the time and space for other sentient beings to choose. These limitations God placed on himself are just that, limitations. For the balance of this section we will focus on mankind and our interaction or potential interaction with God.

The solution to the mind-body problem expands God's limitations once one considers that for men to be able to think their minds must be structured logically. Once again, all thinking is logical or it is not thinking. Further, when man contemplates the universe and the laws of nature, God incurred an additional limitation. And that limitation was that God was limited to one universe, at least so far as man was concerned. The limitation of one universe, big as it is, does not seem to be very much of a limitation. For our purposes here, to be clear, it is not universe's size that is the limitation. The limitation is that there is only one universe and it must be structured logically or man's mind could not make sense of it. The logical structure of the human mind must correspond to the logical structure of the one universe or no man could successfully apprehend his environment and certainly could not fulfill God's command in

Genesis 1:26-28 to have dominion over the earth (man's current environment).

"And God said, Let Us make man in Our image, after our likeness. And let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the heavens, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over all the creepers creeping on the earth. And God created man in His image; in the image of God He created him. He created them male and female. And God blessed them. And God said to them, Be fruitful, and multiply and fill the earth, and subdue it. And have dominion over the fish of the sea and over the fowl of the heavens, and all animals that move upon the earth."

Genesis 1:26-28, MKJV

Without the one universe being structured logically and without man also having a logical structure to his mind that corresponded to the logical structure of the one universe, men would be hopelessly confused, unable to effectively set goals, to plan, and to take effective actions to achieve their goals. Worse still, it is highly likely that man would perish from off the face of the earth, as too many serious and likely fatal mistakes would be made. All the above is the short, simplified solution to the mind-body

problem. There is, in fact, one universe that is structured logically, by the specific design of the two Jehovahs, AND the spirit in man given by God to man to enable thought (explained earlier in this book) creates the mind of man with a logical structure that corresponds to the logical structure of the one universe. Now man can think, set goals, make plans, work to achieve goals, etc. Man is like a miniature god in working to achieve goals - one of which was supposed to be to have dominion over the earth, but not each other.

God is limited by free will, the human mind, there being only one universe in so far as man is concerned, the one universe having to be structured logically, and the mind of man also had to be structured logically in correspondence to the logical structure of the universe. God further limited himself in giving each man and mankind in general so much time to make their own choices and experience their own consequences before God intervenes to take a much more active role in human affairs.

Reason, thinking logically so as to not miss the truth, is now enabled for man. Whether we choose to use our ability or not is up to each of us. Further, the laws of nature must be

consistent and they are. Natural laws can be discovered using reason and then utilized by man to better our lives.

The laws of nature → are → logical + consistent

Man's mind → can understand → the laws of nature → through proper reasoning

### **7.6 Natural laws, discoverable by reason, enable men to live peacefully with respect to each other**

Because God gave us reasoning minds that can come to understand nature, man is capable of being confident in setting achievable goals, making realistic plans, and then carrying them out. In section 1.3 of this book your author explained how reason could be used to establish the individual natural rights of man. The individual natural rights of man could be regarded as a subset of the laws of nature. Further, man can use reason to learn: the context of situations, the laws of identity, cause and effect, and what is or is not good for various entities, alone or in combination, etc. In other words, the laws of nature can be learned and applied by man because God structured nature to be both logical and consistent.

The laws of nature → are → logical + consistent

God spoke to this, somewhat indirectly, when he criticized those rejecting him for not using their minds and ascertaining the reality of his existence simply by considering nature and how intricate it all was. Ergo, the two Jehovahs clearly come down on the side of man as being capable of recognizing natural law, as evidenced by the scriptural passage below:

"For the wrath of God is revealed from Heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness, because the thing which may be known of God is clearly revealed within them, for God revealed it to them. For the unseen things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being realized by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead, for them to be without excuse. Because, knowing God, they did not glorify Him as God, neither were thankful. But they became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing to be wise [correct philosophers], they became fools [incorrect philosophers]."

Romans 1:18-22, MKJV

It is pretty clear from the above scripture, particularly the phrase “being realized by the things that are made,” which can be taken two ways (both are correct), that man (one of the things that were made), can use his mind and come to understand: 1) there must be a Creator and 2) there are natural laws that govern the universe (man looking at and contemplating the universe, i.e., the things that are made and exist in the universe is the other correct way to take this scriptural passage). Thus, natural laws are available to the mind of men – if we will just do the intellectual work necessary to ascertain them. This would include learning individual natural rights as a subset to those natural laws. One way for man to be guilty before God is to look at the intricacy, complexity, and inter-connectivity of nature and to realize there must be a Creator, but then to ignore that Creator and not follow his divine law instructions. It turns out, via logical extension, that another way that man can be held guilty before God is to violate the individual natural rights of others. Man can do a lot with his mind, if he just will.

Man → using his mind → can reason logically → and come to understand → 1) there must be a

Creator 2) the universe is governed by natural laws that have a consistent and logical structure to them 3) there are objective ethical principles, individual natural rights, as a subset and part of those natural laws

Your author's pushback → if anyone, philosopher, Big State proponent, religionist → argues there are no individual natural rights → your author has three questions: 1) Are you saying that it is all right to kill another man? 2) Are you saying it is all right to enslave another man? 3) Are you saying it is all right to steal another man's property? ... how can a denier of individual natural rights answer any of those three questions, "Yes?" ... if they answer, "Yes," then they identify themselves as an enemy of their fellow man + a Satanic monster

Your author's further pushback → if anyone, philosopher, Big State proponent, religionist → were to argue → you cannot absolutely prove → there are individual natural rights → your author's further two questions: 1) Can you prove there are NOT individual natural rights? and 2) What possible motive would you have for wanting to attempt to "prove" such a thing?

If a nation, tribe, religion, or some other group or individual were against individual natural rights and were courageous and honest enough to clearly overtly identify themselves as being against natural rights, the rest of us would know they were dangerous and outside of respectable law. In other words, speaking in terms of an individual, if someone were to come out and say, "I believe I have the right to aggress against your life, to hurt and/or kill you, to steal your property, to enslave you, and to disregard and not perform under any contracts I make with you," then they would mark themselves as a predator-monster and someone to be held completely outside of law. All other good men could turn on that individual or, as the case may be, turn on that tribe or nation, etc. But evil has to find a way to live with itself and so the ancient and the modern philosophers have lied to themselves and others by not being so open and honest about the values they live by, or would like to live by. Instead, morally corrupt religionists and philosophers have wittingly or unwittingly provided intellectual air cover and enabled the unsocial aggressors to hide behind the idiotic belief that ethics are subjective, reason does not govern in human affairs, and that there is no cause and effect so we will just have to try it (whatever "it" happens

to be at the moment) and then see what happens. Other than being irrational and immoral, a further problem with all of this is that it is fine to experiment in the natural sciences, but NOT in the social sciences. In the social sciences, experimentation involves experimenting on actual human beings who are all made in the image and likeness of God. Experimentation in the social sciences means that some men will be chopped up and used for fuel and that other men will be chopped up and cooked and eaten by an Organic State, writ large. Men's lives will be destroyed by human experimentation at a loss to us all – not just the current victims of the experimentation.

The social sciences → require a different scientific method → for at least two reasons: 1) unlike the natural sciences, human choice is a causative factor and 2) human experimentation → is evil

Original appropriation establishes God's ownership of the entire universe and everything and everyone in it. Original appropriation further establishes divine law (instructions) as being in force and effect throughout the universe and those divine laws are applicable to all beings in the universe. The solution to the

mind-body problem reveals natural laws as being logical and consistent at all times and man can use reason to learn and apply these natural laws. **Natural laws apply everywhere to ALL men at ALL times.** Dictators, religious leaders, tribal leaders, and utopian reformers are all under natural law and they are not exempt from it. Just as original appropriation establishes divine laws as applicable to all beings everywhere at all time, the solution to the mind-body problem establishes the same thing concerning natural laws. The consistency of natural laws discoverable by man using reason establishes those natural laws, including individual natural rights, as applicable to all beings everywhere at all time.

With the above written and for the reader's convenience and for emphasis, your author is going to quote several pages from section 1.3 written earlier in this book. The conclusions will likely make more sense now.

"If reason cannot be trusted → man cannot discover the natural laws that govern the universe

If reason cannot be trusted → man cannot utilize the totality of reasoning necessary → to establish individual natural rights

If reason cannot be trusted → no man should follow a wannabe dictator or a wannabe religious ruler or a save-the-world elite because → their own “reasoning” also cannot be trusted

Without reason there is no thought. The discovery and the use of natural laws is no longer possible. Further, without the totality of reasoning individual natural rights cannot be discovered. And without the necessary protection of individual natural rights governments and religions of all flavors can abuse valuable individuals. Unfortunately, governmental and religious leaders, and the leaders of various save-mankind movements always exempt themselves from natural laws and excuse themselves for violating the individual natural rights of other men. They ‘rationalize’ criticizing reason and what can be derived from it because they want to be able violate the individual natural rights of other men while somehow holding in their head that they are one of the good guys. They want to be able to behave as if they were miraculously not also a member of the human race – as if they were

some kind of elite super-human or the rest of mankind are sub-human. And neither of these beliefs can be established using facts and logic, which is to say they are irrational beliefs. And since those wishing to put into practice irrational beliefs do not want to be exposed, they attack reason itself. In the end, though, per Etienne Gilson, 'The natural law always buries its undertakers.'

A further problem for those not trusting in or not wanting to consistently uphold reason is this: if you are going to attack reason, what you put forth cannot be trusted or believed in either.

If a human being attacks reason → what they put forth as truth also cannot be trusted → it is either: 1) an arbitrary unsupported assertion or 2) made-up metaphysics

Without reason, natural law, and individual natural rights each of us is left exposed to every ignorant utopian fool who is backed with a gang of thugs. And so this is where the human race has devolved to at the present time. But it did not have to be so. The respect for natural rights would have acted and should act as a check on institutional stupidity and evil. It would have and should also act to help prevent the

occurrence of dictators in the world, and from the abuse stemming from the religious equivalent of a secular dictator. If reason stands then most of their immoral and irrational ideas have to be discarded as unethical and illogical. It should go without saying, but needs to be said, that any irrational and/or immoral ideas will also, in the long run turn out to be impractical, too. You cannot build anything good or lasting on an immoral or irrational foundation. It will collapse, over time, if not almost immediately.

It could be said that your author is carrying his case a bit too far, that no one actually abandons reason entirely. But that is not really your author's point, which is that reason is not really trusted to be able to establish secular ethical norms of behavior, e.g., individual natural rights. If reason were so trusted, and individual natural rights were both acknowledged and respected universally, then there would be a behavioral norm that would allow for peace between nations, peace within nations, and would also allow for peace between races, genders, political parties, and different religions. It could and would transform the world. And it should transform the world, but reason is not fully trusted or adhered to.

With reason trusted and adhered to → natural laws discovered and applied → the human race advances

With reason trusted and adhered to → individual natural rights are universally acknowledged

Without reason trusted and adhered to → the human race is exposed to wannabe and actual secular and religious dictators → abusers of men

Without reason trusted and adhered to → the save-the-world elite's 'reasoning' cannot be trusted either"

Human beings have two ways to build out healthy human societies: 1) divine laws (the best and most sustainable way) and 2) use reason to discover natural laws, including individual natural rights (a secular way to peacefully interact with each other). The vast majority of men have rejected both. To that end they have failed God, themselves, and each other.

### **7.7 A divine individualism process allows for human life to have purpose and to be meaningful**

God the Father and Jesus Christ are using what amounts to a divine individualism process in order to ultimately produce divine individuals – unique human beings who are transformed at a future resurrection into incorruptible and eternal spirit beings (1 Corinthians 15:42-44). Your author realizes that this is a lot to take in and so he previously wrote a 300+ page book explaining it in detail. The purpose of this section of this book is to summarize the core information pertaining to divine individualism. For a more complete explanation the reader is encouraged to read your author's previous books, *Divine Individualism* and *Life Charts*.

God the Father and Jesus Christ gave mankind a tremendous honor and privilege by creating us in their image and likeness (Genesis 1:26-28). This is a foreshadowing of the intent of the two Jehovahs. While we were born with the honor of looking like the two Jehovahs, we unfortunately do not have their value system, or their moral or intellectual virtues. Because of Adam and Eve's choice to sin (Genesis 3, particularly verse 6), all human beings are born with a nature that is flawed at worst and incomplete at best. Further, Satan actively works to corrupt mankind and cause us to adopt

his evil, force and fraud based, selfish value system (2 Corinthians 4:4). All men succumb to Satan's influence to some extent and sin (Romans 3:23). In other words, we take on Satan's nature from which we need to be redeemed.

"in which you once walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air [Satan], the spirit that now works in the children of disobedience; among whom we also had our way of life in times past, in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the thoughts, and **were by nature the children of wrath**, even as others." Ephesians 2:2-3, MKJV

"in whom the god of this world [Satan] has blinded the minds of the unbelieving ones, so that the light of the glorious gospel of Christ (who is the image of God) should not dawn on them." 2 Corinthians 4:4, MKJV

To go from being corrupted, by taking on the nature of Satan, to where we as humans are finally changed at a future resurrection into an incorruptible, eternal, spirit being is truly amazing. This means that the human beings who ultimately and finally cooperate with the

two Jehovahs, by willingly participating with them in their divine individualism process, will be changed: 1) from mortal (temporally limited) to immortal (having eternal life), 2) from having a human body that looks like the two Jehovahs to having a spirit body, also looking like the two Jehovahs (though not likely as glorious), 3) from being what amounts to a Satan-infected and corrupted, dishonorable being to then be transformationally raised in honor, 4) from being weak to having power, and 5) from being corrupt to becoming incorruptible – never sinning again, ever, for all eternity.

“So also the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption; it is sown in dishonor, it is raised in glory; it is sown in weakness, it is raised in power; it is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body.” 1 Corinthians 15:42-44, MKJV

A brief, post-resurrection summary:

Mortal → Immortal  
Human body → Spirit body  
Dishonor → Honor  
Weak → Powerful  
Corrupt → Incorruptible

This is a good place to discuss in more detail the word “**incorruptible**” and its impact and effect, because it is an incredible promise the two Jehovahs are making to humanity. In doing so, your author is going to quote a section from his previous *Life Charts* book.

“ ... In 1 Corinthians 15:51-54 there is a word that is very easy to read over and that word is “**incorruptible**.” **Incorruptible** is a very ‘pregnant’ word.

“Behold, I speak a mystery to you; we shall not all fall asleep, but we shall all be changed; in a moment, in a glance of an eye, at the last trumpet. For a trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised **incorruptible**, and we shall all be changed. For **this corruptible must put on incorruption**, and this mortal must put on immortality. But when this corruptible shall put on incorruption, and when this mortal shall put on immortality, then will take place the word that is written, “**Death is swallowed up in victory.**” 1 Corinthians 15:51-54, MKJV

In philosopher-speak the word ‘incorrputible’ has what are known as pre-conditions. You can think of pre-conditions as peeling away layers of

the intellectual onion going backward in order to see the pre-conditions that must exist in order for the condition itself to also exist.

The pre-conditions of *incorrputible* are at least as follows: 1) a person must always know the right from the wrong and then 2) one must always choose the right (the good). But number one also has what amounts to a pre-condition, which is that for number one to be true we must know the context of the situation. This is because one cannot know what is right for a given situation if one does not also understand the context of the situation. Ergo, in order for us to know right from wrong we also have to know the context of the situation. This is all very powerful. Here is why. As far as your author can determine, at the present time there are only two beings in the universe who actually know the context of any and every situation AND have all of the intellectual virtues [wisdom, understanding, knowledge, good judgment, prudence, etc.] in their person so as to always know the right course of action AND have all of the moral virtues [love, joy, peace, kindness, courage, balance, patience, loyalty, faith, etc.] in their person so as to possess the righteous character to always do the right. Those two beings are God the Father and Jesus Christ.

[They have what is known as the Unity of Virtues in their beings.] This number is going to change – hopefully in the not too distant future. Post-resurrection, those human beings who have become spiritual Israelites [true Christians] will be incorruptible, too. This means that each resurrected moral, reasonable, and productive, [MRP] unique, eternal, divine individual will also possess all of the intellectual virtues and all of the moral virtues in their person, too. Further, they will either know the context of the situation or be wise enough to ask the two Jehovahs what the real context of the situation is and so we will always be able to both know the right and also to then do the right every single time throughout eternity, i.e., we will become incorruptible. There can scarcely be a more powerful word in the English language.

Incorruptible → always doing what is right

Incorruptible has pre-conditions, as follows: 1) knowing the context of the situation + 2) ascertaining right from wrong before acting + 3) doing the right (every single time)

Incorruptible implies → divine healing at the resurrection

Incorruptible implies → post-resurrection → healed individuals now having → all of the moral virtues + all of the intellectual virtues → in their person”

What an incredible and powerful promise from the two Jehovahs. They are promising that men and women who cooperate with them and work with them will ultimately be healed at a future resurrection and the results of that healing are we will become like them (obviously lower than them, but like them in kind). In essence, we will be born into God’s family.

“Behold what manner of love the Father has given us, that we should be called **children of God**. Therefore the world does not know us, because it did not know Him. Beloved, now we are children of God, and it has not yet been revealed what we shall be. But we know that when He shall be revealed, **we shall be like Him** [Jesus Christ], for we shall see Him as He is.” 1 John 3:1-2, MKJV

God the Father is the greatest being in the universe and Jesus Christ is the second greatest. Becoming like them does not mean we will be equal to them. We will be subordinate to both of them, as we should be since they created us,

own the universe and everything in it, and are the only two God beings currently in the universe. Jesus freely acknowledged that God the Father was greater than him and always will be. Similarly, Jesus Christ will always be greater than us.

"You have heard how I said to you, I go away and I am coming to you again. If you loved Me, you would rejoice because I said, I go to the Father, for My Father is greater than I."

John 14:28, MKJV

Interestingly, post-resurrection, we will be higher than the angels and will be actually assigned the task to judge them in the future. The good angels, those obedient to God the Father and Jesus Christ are ministering spirits, ministering to those who shall be heirs of salvation.

"But to which of the angels, did He say at any time, "Sit on My right hand until I make Your enemies Your footstool?" Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for those who shall be heirs of salvation?"

Hebrews 1:13-14, MKJV

"Do you not know that we shall judge angels,  
not to speak of [things pertaining to] this life?"  
1 Corinthians 6:3, MKJV

"For He has not put in subjection to the angels the world to come, of which we speak. But one testified in a certain place, saying, 'What is man, that You are mindful of him; or the son of man, that You visit him? You have made him a little lower than the angels. You crowned him with glory and honor and set him over the works of Your hands. You have subjected all things under his feet.' For in order that He put all things under him, He did not leave anything not subjected. But now we do not see all things having been put under him. But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honor, that He by the grace of God should taste death for every son. For it became Him, for whom are all things and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons into glory, to perfect the Captain of their salvation through sufferings. For both He who sanctifies and they who are sanctified are all of One, for which cause He is not ashamed to call them brothers, saying, 'I will declare Your name to My brothers; in the midst of the assembly I will sing praise to You.' And again, 'I will put My

trust in Him.' And again, 'Behold Me and the children whom God has given Me.'"

Hebrews 2:5-13, MKJV

All throughout human history people everywhere have tried to search out the purpose of human life and also to derive substantive meaning. Further, people also want to come to understand a context in which their own life makes sense and to feel like they belong. Understanding that the two Jehovahs are engaged in using a divine individualism process to create future incorruptible divine individuals explains the purpose for human life, it gives meaning to human life, it enables human beings to understand the big picture context of their situation, and also there can be a sense of belonging from knowing that the end result for those cooperating with God is to become a member of God's eternal family. Everyone can have a place setting and a seat at God's divine dinner table; everyone can belong. To become an incorruptible, eternal spirit being and an always-belonging member of God's family is the answer that men have been looking for.

How does the divine individualism process start? Quoting again from, *Life Charts*:

"When each of us starts the process of divine individualism by repenting of our sins, getting baptized, **and receiving the Holy Spirit** (Acts 2:38, Hebrews 6:1-2), our sins are forgiven and we get a fresh start. But we are to grow from there. We are to grow to become like Christ. As a side bar note: perhaps confession of sins and admission of guilt is also to clear the deck emotionally and mentally for each of us (in addition to spiritually) so that we are no longer held back or beset by either guilt or shame.

Repentance → forgiveness = reconciliation

Forgiveness > guilt

Forgiveness > shame

"My brothers, I do not count myself to have taken possession, but one thing I do, forgetting the things behind and reaching forward to the things before," Philippians 3:13, MKJV

Repentance = a fresh start

Forget the past + aim for a better future

"And this until we all come into the unity of the faith and of the knowledge of the Son of

God, to a full-grown man, to the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ;"  
Ephesians 4:13, MKJV

"But **grow in grace and in knowledge** of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. To Him be the glory, both now and to the day of eternity.  
Amen." 2 Peter 3:18, MKJV

The process of becoming like Christ involves growing **in grace** and **knowledge**. Grace encompasses the moral virtues and knowledge encompasses the intellectual virtues.

Grace → represents the moral virtues

Knowledge → represents the intellectual virtues

"Finally, my brothers, whatever things are true, whatever things are honest, whatever things are right, whatever things are pure, whatever things are lovely, whatever things are of good report; if there is any virtue and if there is any praise, think on these things."  
Philippians 4:8, MKJV

Think → about the virtues

It is very easy to read over some very important things mentioned in the Bible because the Bible is a complex and living book written by the two supreme minds in the universe. ‘If there is any virtue ... think on these things,’ is a lifetime of work for all of us. Grace is shorthand for the moral virtues and knowledge is shorthand for the intellectual virtues. In addition to grace, love also could be representative of the moral virtues (1 Corinthians 13:1-13).

Love also represents → the moral virtues

“Let love be your highest goal, but also desire the special abilities the Spirit gives ...”  
I Corinthians 14:1 NLT

As an inset, in case the reader is unaware of whose spirit they receive upon the start of their divine individualism process, please allow your author to clarify that it is BOTH the spirit of the Father and the spirit of the Son, Jesus Christ. The below scriptures from 1 John 4:9-13 and Romans 8:11 show that the spirit of the Father dwells in us:

“In this the love of God [the Father] was revealed in us, because God sent His only

begotten Son [Jesus Christ] into the world that we might live through Him. In this is love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us and sent His Son to be the propitiation concerning our sins. Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another. No one has seen God at any time. If we love one another, **God [the Father] dwells in us**, and His love is perfected in us. By this we know that we dwell in Him, and He in us, **because He has given us of His Spirit.**" 1 John 4:9-13, MKJV

"But if the Spirit of the One [the Father] who raised up Jesus from the dead dwells in you, the One who raised up Christ from the dead shall also make **your mortal bodies** alive by His Spirit [the Father's spirit] who dwells in you."

Romans 8:11, MKJV

There are many places where the Bible details that the spirit of the Son also dwells in us. Below are quoted a few such places in order to prove the point:

"For to them God would make known what are the riches of the glory of this mystery among the nations, **which is Christ in you**, the hope of glory, whom we preach, warning every man and teaching every man in all wisdom, so

that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus." Colossians 1:27-28, MKJV

"I have been crucified with Christ, and I live; yet no longer I, **but Christ lives in me.** And that life I now live in the flesh, I live by faith toward the Son of God, who loved me and gave Himself on my behalf." Galatians 2:20, MKJV

Ergo, as new potentially divine individuals, we have the extra help of some portion of the Holy Spirit, the power and nature, of both the Father and the Son. We receive that extra help in order to help us grow in the virtues (in grace and love – representative of the moral virtues and knowledge – representative of the intellectual virtues). And now, in addition to the spirit in man that enables consciousness and thought (Job 32:8, 1 Corinthians 2:11, and other places), we also have the help of the Holy Spirit of both the Father and the Son.

Special means to our end: Christians receive the help of the Holy Spirit → a big step → divine individualism

The Holy Spirit = the Spirit of the Father + the Spirit of the Son, Jesus Christ

The Holy Spirit = the nature + power of God

Repentance includes → a changed package of values → changed decisions → better results

A changed package of values + The Holy Spirit = a better, more virtuous thought process"

The New Living Translation (NLT) has a great rendering of Genesis 1:26-28, 1 Corinthians 15: 40-50, and also continuing on in verses 51-58 that your author really believes helps to make plain what the two Jehovahs are going for (much of the balance of this section below is explained in more detail in both *Divine Individualism* and also in *Life Charts*):

The two Jehovahs are the creators and owners of the universe (Genesis 1-2 and many other places). Just like a sculptor owns what he creates, the two Jehovahs created everything and they own everything. They are the life-givers, the healers, and the Saviors of mankind. And, as a particular and special part of their creation, they created men in their image and likeness and gave them dominion over the earth (not each other). Men were placed into, in essence, a complex incubator called the earth. The two Jehovahs created man's reality.

"Then God said, "**Let us make people in our image, to be like ourselves.** They will be masters over all life - the fish in the sea, the birds in the sky, and all the livestock, wild animals, and small animals." So God created people in his own image; God patterned them after himself; male and female he created them. God blessed them and told them, "Multiply and fill the earth and subdue it. Be masters over the fish and birds and all the animals.""  
Genesis 1:26-28, NLT"

"There are bodies in the heavens, and there are bodies on earth. The glory of the heavenly bodies is different from the beauty of the earthly bodies. The sun has one kind of glory, while the moon and stars each have another kind. And even the stars differ from each other in their beauty and brightness. It is the same way for the resurrection of the dead. Our earthly bodies, which die and decay, will be different when they are resurrected, for they will never die. Our bodies now disappoint us, but when they are raised, they will be full of glory. They are weak now, but when they are raised, they will be full of power. They are natural human bodies now, but when they are raised, they will be spiritual bodies. For just as there are natural

bodies, so also there are spiritual bodies. The Scriptures tell us, "The first man, Adam, became a living person." But the last Adam - that is, Christ - is a life-giving Spirit. What came first was the natural body, then the spiritual body comes later. Adam, the first man, was made from the dust of the earth, while Christ, the second man, came from heaven. Every human being has an earthly body just like Adam's, but our heavenly bodies will be just like Christ's. Just as we are now like Adam, the man of the earth, so we will someday be like Christ, the man from heaven. What I am saying, dear brothers and sisters, is that flesh and blood cannot inherit the Kingdom of God. These perishable bodies of ours are not able to live forever." 1 Corinthians 15:40-50, NLT

"But let me tell you a wonderful secret God has revealed to us. Not all of us will die, but we will all be transformed. It will happen in a moment, in the blinking of an eye, when the last trumpet is blown. For when the trumpet sounds, the Christians who have died will be raised with transformed bodies. And then we who are living will be transformed so that we will never die. For our perishable earthly bodies must be transformed into heavenly bodies that will never die. When this happens - when our

perishable earthly bodies have been transformed into heavenly bodies that will never die - then at last the Scriptures will come true: "Death is swallowed up in victory. O death, where is your victory? O death, where is your sting?" For sin is the sting that results in death, and the law gives sin its power. How we thank God, who gives us victory over sin and death through Jesus Christ our Lord!

So, my dear brothers and sisters, be strong and steady, always enthusiastic about the Lord's work, for you know that nothing you do for the Lord is ever useless." 1 Corinthians 15:51-58, NLT

"Therefore, holy brothers, **called to be partakers of the heavenly calling** [divine individualism], consider the Apostle and High Priest of our profession, Christ Jesus, who was faithful to Him who appointed Him, ... "  
Hebrews 3:1-2 MKJV

**Divine individualism is the work of God.**  
It says in Ephesians 2:10 "For we are his workmanship . . ." It is the process whereby men are created in God's image and likeness and given the blessing of a mind. Not only do we have the honor of being made to look like

the two Jehovahs (God), we have the further honor of being able to think and to take action on this earth. Through the process of living this life we learn lessons, including hard ones, and we also have some triumphs of achievement. As social creatures, meant for an eternal life, God gave us family and friends to share life with. We have to learn the principles behind getting along with each other, including forgiveness. And in this physical life we are to use the resources of the earth to learn how to manage. And we are to grow in grace and knowledge – grace and knowledge being both literal and also symbolic of the moral and intellectual virtues. We are to learn who and what to value and to obtain the virtues and to bear fruit from using those virtues. Because all men sin, they need a savior. One has been provided. His name is Jesus Christ. It is beyond the scope of this book to discuss how to become a Christian and there are many such books already written. In very simple terms, one can become a Christian by following the process of Acts 2 and Hebrews 6:

"Then Peter said to them, Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ to [receive] remission of [your] sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. For

the promise is to you and to your children, and to all those afar off, as many as the Lord our God shall call.” Acts 2:38, 39, MKJV

“Therefore, having left the discourse of the beginning of Christ, let us go on to full growth, not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God, of the baptisms, of doctrine, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment.” Hebrews 6:1-2, MKJV

After we are forgiven for our sins and receive the Holy Spirit we are new creatures (creations). We no longer only have a human body and a mind; we also have some of the Holy Spirit of God. And now we walk in the newness of life (Romans 6:4). Similar to how an acorn grows to become an oak tree, a man who receives the Holy Spirit is now on their way to growing to become like Jesus Christ, which process is completed at the resurrection, as mentioned above. A divine individual is on their way to ultimately receiving an incorruptible spirit body and eternal life – while retaining their personality, interests, sense of humor, and irreplaceable uniqueness. All this is divine individualism. It is the gift of the two Jehovahs to mankind. It is the gift of an eternal life worth

living because all who complete the process will be beings of good character. They will have the proper values and they will also have the moral and intellectual virtues. And to top it all off the two Jehovahs are going to create a wonderful new heavens and new earth as a great environment for these divine individuals to inhabit, where there will be no more tears or pain (Revelation 21:1-5). At that time, based on what we can know about it, the divine individualism process will have been completed.

The divine part of divine individualism has been made plain by your author, but perhaps a few more pages to hammer home the idea of individuality is necessary in this age of the irrational focus on the collective. Your author has previously written a lengthy section entitled "Each Person Is Unique," which can also be found in his book *Divine Individualism*. A few pages are quoted below.

"The fact that each person's DNA, each person's fingerprints, and each person's retinas are distinguishable shows quite clearly, from a biological perspective, that we are all different. We have different voices, shapes, ages, talents, etc. And we each have our own individual body, i.e., we inhabit a separate physical place from

everyone else. Each of us also has a personality type and a temperament. Some of our human behavior is evidently genetically pre-disposed, which is not to say that rational and intentional choice cannot override this genetic pre-disposition. At any rate, our genetics are different from everyone else, ergo we are unique. There can be no question regarding our **genetic uniqueness**.

Each person also has a unique cultural upbringing. This is true even for different siblings in the same family. The oldest child, the middle children, and the youngest child each have different experiences, even within the same family. Further cultural upbringing variations include language differences, differences in religious training and beliefs, parental beliefs and training differences, formal and informal educational differences, race differences, national and governmental differences, neighborhood differences, travel and experience differences, economic differences, differences resulting from living during different time eras, etc. All of these cultural differences (**cultural differentiators**), listed above, compound onto our genetic differences making each of us even more unique.

As we go through life, human beings have the freedom to make choices. These choices are causative factors, which have consequences, and we are responsible for those consequences. We can think and we can take action. **Human choice** is a causative factor regarding shaping the world we live in, in particular, in shaping our own world (our own life). When presented with a choice, the same human being can choose one way this time and the opposite way at a later point in time. And, when presented with the same basic set of circumstances, different men and women can and do choose differently, despite being presented with the same choosing alternatives. Human choice is a differentiating feature of human life. This is why there needs to be what is known as methodological dualism for the sciences. The natural sciences rely on the experimental method and the social sciences cannot properly use only such a method because to do so would involve human experimentation. Further, the social sciences have to account for human choice as a causative factor, which the natural sciences do not. Human beings are not particles in motion, moving according to natural scientific laws. As a scientist, to not recognize human choice, and its effects, is non-scientific – because human choice is reality and science

should conform to reality. Science should provide men with results that are in accordance with reality. In addition to genetic uniqueness, compounded by cultural differentiators, human choice itself is a further compounding differentiator resulting in even more distinctly unique individuals.

genetic uniqueness X cultural differentiators X human choices over time = individuality

As a person lives out their time on this earth all of the above differences compound over time. Our tastes change over time. As we mature, and this takes time, what we value changes as well. The bottom line result is that for everyone who has ever lived, and for everyone who ever will live, there is quite literally no one like you. There has never been anyone like you in the past. There is no one like you in the present. There will never be anyone like you in the future. You are unique. We all are. No theory can ever argue away reality and **any theory contrary to human uniqueness and individuality is wrong.**"

Divine individualism, properly understood, allows for each of us to be our own unique selves while cooperating with the two Jehovahs

in order to become the best possible version of who only we can become. By the grace of God, the two Jehovahs will complete the process for each of us at the resurrection by transforming us into unique, eternal, special, incorruptible, spirit members of God's family.

Divine individualism → 1) a process and also  
2) a result

Divine individualism → an abundant eternal life

A future incorruptible divine individual will have:

an abundant eternal life +  
their uniqueness as an individual +  
their personality +  
their sense of humor +  
their personal interests

### **7.8 Satan's ownership of the universe, by assertion, fails**

Satan either did not understand original appropriation, or not wish to acknowledge it if he did. If he did not understand the concept, he was not as wise as he thought. On the other hand, for Satan to acknowledge original appropriation he would have to admit that the

two Jehovahs created the entire universe and every being and everything in it. He would have to acknowledge their ownership to all, which the two Jehovahs rightfully and justly assert. Satan would then have had to bow down and worship the two Jehovahs, admit their divine law instructions are binding on him, and then obey them. Obviously he did not want to do any of these things and so he ended up rebelling against the two Jehovahs. His rebellion cancelled out any good he did via prior years of service because he evidently tried to kill them and take over the universe. Sadly, he must have convinced about one-third of the angels to follow him in his rebellion. This is utterly amazing to your author for reasons that will be explained throughout this section. That Satan rebelled, deceived about one-third of the angels into following him, and is now the enemy of God and man was explained earlier in section 4.2 of this book. Some of the relevant scriptures supporting this are Isaiah 14:12-15, Revelation 12:3-4, and Ezekiel 28:11-19, all of which were quoted earlier in section 4.2.

Your author's conjecture, not provable, but believed, is that Satan and the fallen angels might very well have rebelled when the two Jehovahs told them of their plans to create

human beings in their image and likeness, with the ultimate goal of expanding the God family via the ultimate transformation of human beings, at the resurrection, into eternal, divine, incorruptible children of God the Father. This would mean that mere human beings would end up outranking the angels throughout the balance of eternity. This might have been more than Satan and the angels who followed him were willing to bear. And so they rebelled. They evidently hate God the Father and Jesus Christ for their strange plan and they hate human beings for having a chance at something that they did not have.

If we look at Ezekiel 28:12-15 we can see the being that became Satan described as "the perfection of wisdom and beauty." He had important responsibilities as a "mighty angelic guardian." Satan had periodic direct access to God's throne and engaged in interplanetary travel, but then evil was found in him due to his choice to sin against the two Jehovahs. He rejected their divine law instructions and is also in rebellion against logic, i.e., reason, because it establishes **private property**. Further, Satan and his followers hate the legitimate, lawful, and just concept of private property.

""Son of man, weep for the king of Tyre [Satan]. Give him this message from the Sovereign LORD: **You were the perfection of wisdom and beauty.** You were in Eden, the garden of God. Your clothing was adorned with every precious stone--red carnelian, chrysolite, white moonstone, beryl, onyx, jasper, sapphire, turquoise, and emerald--all beautifully crafted for you and set in the finest gold. They were given to you on the day you were created. **I ordained and anointed you as the mighty angelic guardian. You had access to the holy mountain [throne] of God** and walked among the stones of fire [planets]. "You were blameless in all you did from the day you were created **until the day evil was found in you."**

Ezekiel 28:12-15, NLT

Because original appropriation clearly establishes the entire universe and every being and everything in it as the two Jehovahs' private property, Satan, the fallen angels, and his spiritual seed, The Left, hate: God the Father, Jesus Christ, man, the good angels, divine law instructions, private property, and logical reasoning (thinking). As unhappy nihilists they seem to hate even life itself, along with the package of values that pertains to life, e.g., individual natural rights as one example.

Further, they are against or disregard most of the moral and intellectual virtues. The list of beings, principles, and things they hate are all the best that is in the universe (optimistically looking forward to man being perfected by God's Strange Plan and work). Satan and his evil team of fallen angels and deceived humans are nihilists, moral relativists, and evil-rationalizing monsters.

The above being clearly true, it has often puzzled your author as to how a being that was "perfect in wisdom and beauty," with great capabilities and responsibilities, and with direct access to the two Jehovahs could get so morally and intellectually corrupted so as to do all the evil he has done ... and to lead all of the evil systems demonstrating such an anti-God and anti-man bent. Satan clearly knew he was a created being and there are two witnesses to establish this fact: 1) God the Father and 2) the Word, who later became the being we know as Jesus Christ. Satan evidently personally knew both of them.

"... At the mouth of two witnesses, or at the mouth of three witnesses, shall the matter be made sure." Deuteronomy 19:15, MKJV

Since Satan was a created latecomer, not a first-in-time original appropriator, he "had to" resort to superior force to attempt to take control of the universe from the correct owners, the two Jehovahs. The bottom line here is as follows:

Satan's ownership by assertion, requiring superior force to implement, failed.

Satan and the fallen angels were expelled from heaven and cast down to the earth, where Satan appears as the god of this world to this day. Unfortunately, the Bible indicates that Satan as the god of this world deceives the whole world (obviously other than those called to understand God's way now).

"And there was war in Heaven. Michael and his angels warring against the dragon. And the dragon and his angels warred, but did not prevail. Nor was place found for them in Heaven any more. And the great dragon was cast out, the old serpent called Devil, and **Satan, who deceives the whole world.** He was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him." Revelation 12:7-9, MKJV

"in whom the god of this world [Satan] has blinded the minds of the unbelieving ones, so that the light of the glorious gospel of Christ (who is the image of God) should not dawn on them." 2 Corinthians 4:4, MKJV

"in which you once walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air [a reference to Satan], the spirit that now works in the children of disobedience; among whom we also had our way of life in times past, in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the thoughts, and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others." Ephesians 2:2-3, MKJV

The ramifications of Satan's war in the heavens, his leading astray of one-third of the angels, and his forming an opposing team, including humans so corrupted and warped they could be said to be Satan's children, has had drastic negative effects upon all of mankind. Again, your author is mystified as to how such a "wise" being could get so morally and intellectually corrupted. It is possible that his pride in his wisdom, beauty, abilities, responsibilities, and direct access to the throne of God caused him to regard himself as "essential." In a speculation not entirely

provable by your author ... **if** Satan was the current de facto number three being in the universe he might have regarded the creation of man as chaos to the existing order that had to be stopped. Satan might not have liked God revealing that to him that a part of his new job responsibilities would be to serve "inferior" man (Hebrews 1:14). This is because man would eventually be higher than the angels (Hebrews 2:5-10) and judge them (1 Corinthians 6:3). The Bible says that Satan's heart was filled with pride and that Satan corrupted his wisdom for the sake of his splendor. Perhaps his splendor also meant his high position of responsibility in the universe as it then was.

"Your heart was filled with pride because of all your beauty. You corrupted your wisdom for the sake of your splendor. ... "  
Ezekiel 28:17, NLT

At any rate, one of the ways that Satan corrupted his wisdom was to refuse to acknowledge original appropriation. This is relatively easy to understand, once explained. A less easy to understand corruption of Satan's wisdom is that Satan evidently did not understand the extended principle of **comparative advantage**. In the earlier

section 3.2 of this book your author explained that the economic doctrine of comparative advantage could be extended more broadly to the emotional and psychic well being of every man. In other words, as mentioned previously, there is a place for every man in God's family, if they choose to cooperate with the two Jehovahs and change their behavior and attitude.

As a further example and explanation, it should be noted that if one person has a special gift, far and above what another person has, it takes nothing away from the person without the special gift. If Mr. Smith is an incredible singer and Mr. Jones can barely carry a tune, God did not take anything away from Mr. Jones when he gave Mr. Smith the ability to sing so well. Absolutely nothing. If Mr. Jones feels (feeling is not thinking) that something was taken away from him in this regard, it is not so, and he is not thinking correctly – or at all. He is feeling, wishing, hoping, daydreaming, envying, being jealous, etc., but he is not thinking. To be blunt, God adding something to Mr. Smith is not the same thing as taking something away from Mr. Jones and no logical argument of any validity could be made to show this is not the case. In fact, Mr. Jones should be happy for Mr. Smith, and himself, and for the human race

because Mr. Jones and the rest of the human race can enjoy Mr. Smith when he sings. The same thing could be said for innumerable examples of one person being more gifted than another in some area of life, whether that be in terms of intelligence, looks, artistic ability, mechanical ability, athletic ability, cooking skills, etc., etc. The truth is other people's gifts are a benefit to us if we are wise enough not to be consumed with jealousy and envy. Satan was not. Further, God, knowing that sentient beings would sometimes be susceptible to envy, forbade covetousness (Exodus 20:17).

One person's gift from God → takes nothing away from any other person

Another person's gift → is a benefit to everyone else (or at least a potential benefit)

Your author firmly believes that this same principle of comparative advantage could just as easily and should be extended to the angels themselves. The two Jehovahs did not create angels to have no eternal place in their universe. They are too motivated by love to have done that (1 John 4:8, 16). The creation of human beings, though lower than the angels at the start, did not take anything away from

Satan. He was still beautiful, wise, capable, and had responsibilities. Though the two Jehovahs might have changed his responsibilities somewhat, they had every right to do so since they own the universe and are in charge of it. Man ultimately being resurrected and transformed into incorruptible, eternal, spirit beings would simply have meant there are even more high-level beings in the universe, to the benefit of every other being in the universe. Satan did not think this through, or did not accept it if he did. Satan was, in essence, a static wisher (your author cannot write "thinker" here because, yet once again, wishing is not thinking).

The doctrine of comparative advantage → can be extended to → every being in the universe

Satan did not understand that the extended principle of comparative advantage meant there was still a place for him and all of the other angels who remained loyal and obedient to the two Jehovahs. Further, though resurrected transformed man will some day judge the angels, at the point in time that men will fulfill this duty they who judge will all be incorruptible. Ergo, their judgment will be true and fair. It is not men in their current state that will judge the

angels, it is the future incorruptible transformed men who will do so – and it will obviously all be done under the supervision of the two Jehovahs.

There would have been a place in the universe for Satan and the fallen angels had they not chosen rebellion and war against God and man.

Of course there would be a place for a beautiful, wise, capable, and experienced angelic being in the two Jehovahs' universe. Too bad Satan missed this ... too bad, indeed.

Once Satan got expelled from heaven and was on the earth in the Garden of Eden, he deceived Eve and also got Adam to sin (Genesis 3, Revelation 12:9, 2 Corinthians 11:3). It is pretty clear that Satan took a particular interest in Cain. Cain mimicked his spiritual father, Satan, by murdering righteous Abel (John 8:44). Since Satan could not literally kill the two Jehovahs he got his human followers to kill the two Jehovahs in effigy by killing other human beings, particularly righteous ones like Abel and later, even Jesus Christ. There are ancient stories where it is reported that Cain thought he should own the entire earth and have dominion over it because he was the firstborn. If this legend is true this shows that Satan's followers,

in this case, Cain, are also morally and intellectually corrupted. The law of the firstborn in practice was that the firstborn son would receive a double inheritance, per capita, not everything (Deuteronomy 21:15-17). At the time of Cain and Abel the earth was obviously sparsely populated. There were not enough people and a great deal of land, enough for everyone and then some. At any rate, there is no possible legitimate way Cain or his children can claim to own the earth because the two Jehovahs own it. Their divine laws apply to all men, at all times, in all places, including to Cain and his spiritual and physical children. Jealousy, envy, and rationalizations for evil masquerading as "thinking" lead to pain, suffering, and death. The Bible calls Satan's spiritual seedline's practices "**the way of Cain.**" Satan's human followers of whatever ilk practice this **way of Cain.**

"But Michael, the archangel, when contending with the Devil, he argued about the body of Moses, he dared not bring a judgment of blasphemy, but said, Let the Lord rebuke you! But what things they do not know, they speak evil of these. And what things they understand naturally, like the animals without reason, they are corrupted by these. Woe to them! For

they went the way of Cain, and gave themselves up to the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in the gainsaying of Korah." Jude 1:9-11, MKJV

Satan became morally and intellectually corrupted, not understanding and acknowledging what could have been understood and acknowledged, namely **original appropriation** and the extended principle of **comparative advantage**. Further, Cain, following his spiritual father, Satan, also did not understand either of the above two, plus evidently also did not understand **the law of the first-born**. Instead, Cain ended up adopting his spiritual father Satan's force-and-fraud based value system and this has led to what Jude described above as **the way of Cain**.

Satan and his immoral, irrational human followers, with horrible value systems and amoral rationalizations, use various aspects of force and fraud to attempt to achieve their goals. This use of force and fraud is the shorthand characterization of the way of Cain. It is actually the way of Cain's spiritual father, Satan. Further, they tend to use a military command structure and are big on information gathering and utilization, including propaganda.

They also want to dominate the monetary and legal systems of the world, rationalizing they are “the best” of the human race via using an evolutionary “law of the jungle” analogy, i.e., they are the “survival of the fittest.” In other words, they believe that whoever ends up with control of the monetary and legal systems of the world was “naturally selected” and deserves to survive, own everything and everyone, and rule. They are in a state of war against God and man. They think they will defeat God’s plan for man. From a human perspective they will get close to doing so, attaining a lot of governmental and military power in their attempt, but they will fail. Satan and his evil team’s hatred of mankind, particularly of Israelites and true Christians, will lead up to the point that they will attempt to exterminate any who will not serve them (Revelation 13). But God the Father will send Jesus Christ back to the earth as King of kings and Lord of lords (Revelation 19) to stop them and Jesus will. Until then, the two Jehovahs set limits on what Satan and his evil team is allowed to do, particularly to the true followers of God.

“No temptation has taken you but what is common to man; but God is faithful, who will not allow you to be tempted above what you are able, but with the temptation also will make a

way to escape, so that you may be able to bear it." 1 Corinthians 10:13, MKJV

To bring this section to a close, a brief summary might be in order. Satan and the fallen angels did not understand original appropriation, nor did they understand the extended principle of comparative advantage. Further, Cain and those of his ilk, Satan's flag bearers on the earth, also did not likely understand the law of the firstborn. Further, Satan the latecomer's ownership of the universe by assertion failed. For now, what amounts to Satan and his followers' **administration of sin over the earth** and the spread of immoral irrational activism is sadly gaining momentum. But all of this will fail. The two Jehovahs will see to that. In the meantime, this leaves Satan, the fallen angels, and his human followers practicing the way of Cain, e.g., The Left, hating:

The two Jehovahs  
Original appropriation  
Reason  
Private property  
Divine law  
Natural law  
Individual natural rights  
Mankind

Peace  
Virtue  
Right values (correct values)

### **7.9 What can be changed versus what cannot, plus evil's tactical use of "tolerance"**

Before we get to the subject of tolerance, another intellectual error of Satan was his “thinking” that his place in the universe was fixed and immutable. In this case, Satan was a static thinker, not a dynamic thinker. There are some things in the universe that are immutable, but Satan’s position was not one of them. Some examples of what are permanently immutable are as follows: the two Jehovahs’ eternal existence, their ownership of the entire universe, and any permanent divine laws issued by them. Further, in the human era, the one universe being created with a logical structure discoverable and knowable by their future creation, man – in other words, for now, the natural laws that govern the universe are immutable. Once man was created, individual natural rights are immutable, but are widely violated by governments, religions, ideologies, and men. Since the two Jehovahs are innovative, entrepreneurial creators they can

decide to change things for their own purposes ... and they did. For your author's purposes here, the biggest example of this we know about is their creating man in their image and likeness with the goal of expanding the family of God with perfected, resurrected, incorruptible, moral, reasonable, and productive transformed men. This falls under a new issuance of divine law and Satan and the fallen angels should have accepted it, instead of rebelling and trying to change what cannot be changed. But they did not and their human followers, today, also do not accept the two Jehovahs or their divine law instructions. This is a shame because those instructions were for the benefit of all.

#### **What can be changed versus what cannot:**

Satan, the fallen angels, Satan's human followers comprising, in effect, the spiritual seedline of Satan, dictators, and utopian reformers evidently do not realize that no one in the universe is going to be allowed to change: 1) the two Jehovahs' eternal existence 2) the two Jehovahs' eternal ownership of the entire universe and every being and everything in it 3) divine laws as issued, or 4) natural laws and individual natural rights. Unless repentant,

ultimately such a one must have their life ended by the two Jehovahs.

Satan and his followers' lack of acceptance of things, which cannot be changed, leads your author to briefly comment on belief systems. The below will suffice before your author transitions to cover the subject of tolerance, as a tactical strategy evil uses.

A simple, though partial, belief system, if honest, e.g., respecting individual natural rights, enables someone to function as morally as they can. The practitioner of such a simple belief system is striving for a better world, not the power to change things that cannot ever be changed. Ideologies, on the other hand, are complex belief systems containing many errors, which are almost impossible to correct. Any attempt to do so on the part of a concerned party gets that party hostility in exchange for their, likely futile, efforts. The errant ideology is "motivated" to ignore anything in its path, like contra-facts and logic and ethics, so it can gain in adherents, influence, and power. Under the influence of the god of this world, their god Satan, Satan's spiritual seedline, using The Left, is wildly immoral / amoral, anti-intellectual, actually against logic and reason, and on a

power-hungry quest to “right” the historical wrongs of Being. The greatest one of all, in their warped minds, is that God owns the universe and always will. Satan, their master does not understand or care about facts, logic, peace, justice, or anything that would stand in his way as he attempts to defeat God and man. To that end Satan and his followers have developed numerous religious, philosophical, political, and other ideologies, none of which conform to either divine law or natural law/individual natural rights. This is because they all use some aspect of Satan’s core force-and-fraud values to achieve their goals. Satan seems to be literally hell-bent on nihilistic destruction, including trying to “burn down” God’s universe and in particular the earth - all because the “wisest” created being did not understand original appropriation, comparative advantage, or the principles of peace and justice, etc. He will fail and he will be destroyed (Revelation 20, Isaiah 27:1). So will any unrepentant followers of his.

This brings us to a brief explanation of Satan and his followers, e.g., The Left’s use of **tolerance**. They use tolerance tactically, not as a moral principle. People in general and specifically people of The Right are confused

about why The Left is currently intolerant. The answer is about as easy to understand as justice, once explained.

The explanation depends on the answers provided by asking at least two central questions. First, are the majority of the people in a society attempting to live righteous, reasonable (balanced and rational), and productive lives? If so, there is **moral, intellectual, and social pressure** against perverse, foolish, and parasitical behaviors. Second, are the institutions of that society, e.g., governmental, educational, religious, monetary, legal, news media, etc., not currently under the significant influence or control of The Left? If not, this presents a long-term problem for The Left, not a short-term one. Ergo, in order to ultimately change the institutions to be more under their influence or control so they can implement the societal changes they advocate, The Left will require patience, careful planning, and many small steps. The many small steps they have to execute will need to be performed while carrying the banner of **the false flag of tolerance**. This will enable them to continue to exist and patiently work to slowly corrupt that society's instruments, turning them into ideological institutions under their influence or

control. In short, if the people of The Left do not have political power, with no great near-term prospect of achieving it, what does an immoral and irrational, e.g., believer in big government, or Socialism, or communism, or atheism do? **They plead for tolerance in order to buy time.** They do so because they wish to engage in their immoral/amoral behaviors the majority of society regard as perverse. They do so because the Socialist, communist, or other big government ideologies they advocate for are widely rejected. In short, The Left, being immoral and irrational and parasitic, does not wish to be accurately identified and eliminated from society. So their argument is for tolerance **so they can survive** relatively unmolested. They take the time they get from this ploy, which should be rejected by society but was not, and then plot to slowly gain influence and then control over that society's institutions. Once The Left does gain control over that society's institutions, particularly over government power, tolerance goes out the window and The Left attempts to use the power they now have to demonize and then obliterate anyone standing in their way. In particular, The Left hates those who have the moral character, intelligence, and productive capacity to fight

back against their immoral, irrational, parasitical, i.e., **evil delusions of grandeur**.

The Left uses → **tolerance** → as a tactic → NOT → in support of a moral principle

The Left uses → **the false flag of tolerance** → to buy time → so they → will not be identified + eliminated from society

If The Left does not yet have → influence or control over a society's institutions → The Left pleads → for tolerance → so they can patiently work to → gain access to and then corrupt societal institutions from within

If the majority of a people in a society are righteous → evil has to hide + beg for tolerance

If The Left does have → governmental power over a society's institutions → The Left → discards tolerance + seeks to destroy → the moral, the rational, and the productive (or at least to dominate them)

The two Jehovahs gave some principles for the ancient Israelites to use regarding how to deal with the Canaanite followers of Satan in the first few books of the Bible. First, eliminate

them from the land. Second, do not intermarry with them. Third, do not even do business with them.

“But if you do not drive out the [evil] inhabitants of the land from before you, then it shall come about that those whom you let remain of them will become as pricks in your eyes and as thorns in your sides, and they shall trouble you in the land in which you live.”

Numbers 33:55, NASB

“And I [Abraham] will make you swear by the LORD, the God of Heaven and the God of the earth, that you shall not take a wife to my son of the daughters of the Canaanites, among whom I dwell.” Genesis 24:3, MKJV

“Be very careful never to make treaties [contracts] with the people in the land where you are going. If you do, you soon will be following their evil ways.” Exodus 34:12, NLT

If the followers of Satan are allowed to live in the land where they are not a majority they will begin by pleading for tolerance. Then they will use the time granted to them to work to gain traction via economic and banking influence. After that, they will plot and actively

work to take over the various institutions, culminating in their achieving control over governmental power. If they are successful, then they will use said power against the more moral, reasonable, and productive members of that society. In short, the tolerance they begged for in order to continue to exist among the good people of the land will be thrown out the window and they will use the power they now have over others to advance their immoral and irrational ends.

Evil will not stop until it is identified and killed = True

In any compromise between good and evil, evil wins. This is because evil gained at least part of what it valued in the compromise, it bought time, and evil can say it was at least partly accepted, i.e., evil is advanced toward its goal.

### **7.10 A further discussion concerning justice**

People want to blame God for The Tragedy of Being, but they do not understand the context of the situation, which is this ... there is a war being fought against God and man. This

destructive war effort is being led by the evil, Satan. His fallen angel followers are helping him. Further, Satan is also being helped by a group of perverse human beings comprising what amounts to a spiritual satanic seedline. Satan's human servants are in dominionist mode; they are actively trying to take over the world for their god, Satan. This will lead up to the disaster for mankind detailed in Revelation 13.

The great Austrian economist, Ludwig von Mises, a World War One veteran, observed a very prescient and simple truth, which is this:

In a war, nothing is just!

However, it should be noted that God the Father and Jesus Christ would be at peace if Satan and the fallen angels had not rebelled against them, charged the very throne of God, and then aggressively acted to corrupt human beings, too (Ezekiel 28, Genesis 3). The cause of this war is Satan and those who follow him. That is why many things appear unjust, when it did not have to be so. If Satan and the fallen angels would have accepted God the Father and Jesus Christ owning the universe via the logically unassailable doctrine of original appropriation,

and also thereby accepted the divine law instructions, they would still have all of their abilities and beauty and responsibilities they were originally created and endowed with. That the universe is at war right now explains a lot of things concerning The Tragedy of Being. It is not God's fault. It is Satan's fault and his immoral, irrational, i.e., evil followers. This brings your author to an ironic and sad, but true, conclusion.

The Left is not going to fix Being because  
The Left are major contributors to The Tragedy  
of Being. When Satan and The Left attack God, and his special creation, man, they are instruments of further injustice – immoral, irrational, but not social, justice warriors. The immoral and the irrational Left, that take actions based upon Satan's force-and-fraud value system, constantly agitate conflict between nations, races, genders, religions, economic classes, etc. The Left are warmongers. Agitation and baiting others you disagree with leads to conflict, which if unchecked will lead to war. And war leads to a loss of individual natural rights and also a widespread loss of justice. Notice what these satanised, passionate, but morally and intellectually wrong agitators miss:

**"Blessed are the peacemakers! For they shall be called the sons of God."** Matthew 5:9, MKJV

Blessed are the peacemakers, because war is catastrophically destructive to human beings and their ability to have good lives. The peacemakers will be called the sons of God, but those who follow Satan and agitate for war cause a widespread loss of justice because, in a war, nothing is just. **Ironically, the Social Justice Warriors are instruments of injustice.**

The Social Justice Warriors → tools in Satan's hand → are instruments of injustice

Please be reminded of your author's table, from earlier in this book, showing individual natural rights versus the death, slavery, and property destruction caused by war (section 2.1). Because it is so important of a concept your author shares it again, along with a fairly long quotation and another quotation from his previously written, *Life Charts* book:

War leads to:		Social Harmony leads to:
Death		Life
Slavery		Liberty
Property destruction		Property
		aka the Natural Rights

“Peace, it turns out, is imperative for an abundant life. The importance of social harmony is revealed in the genius of the Creator God. **First**, the Creator God told us, throughout the Bible, to live in peace and social harmony, e.g., to love your neighbor as yourself. Even the way that the Creator God phrased it below speaks to social harmony. Notice it only took him five key words to get the job done.

“Thou shalt not avenge, nor bear any grudge against the children of thy people, but thou shalt **love thy neighbour as thyself**: I am the LORD.” Leviticus 19:18, KJV

**Second**, he put the natural rights of man into the laws of nature in such a way that men could discover the laws of social harmony by simply

using our God-given reasoning ability. Man, after all, is the rational being. No man wants to have his life taken from him, or to be enslaved (or partially enslaved), or to have some of his property stolen or destroyed. It turns out that “loving your neighbor as yourself” is the same as respecting other men as men, and therefore respecting their God-given and individual natural rights of life, liberty, and property. And when all men actually respect others’ natural rights, there will finally be social harmony, peace, and prosperity (abundant life).

Loving your neighbor as yourself = respecting all men as men = respecting other men’s individual natural rights of Life, Liberty, & Property

We are to have dominion > the earth

We are **NOT** to have dominion > each other

A = A

Man = Man

one man > a different man (also a man) = False

How can anyone rationally and non-hypocritically advocate life for themselves, but not for others? How can anyone advocate liberty for themselves, but not for others? How can anyone advocate property for themselves, but not for others? They cannot. Further, **no one has the right to actually violate a right.** If they do so they have chosen to start the next war. One of the interesting, but unfortunate, things pertaining to war is that war always leads to the exact opposite of the individual natural rights of man, per the table above. **We were to have dominion over the earth, not each other** (Genesis 1:26-28). When someone's individual natural rights have been violated by ... the initiation of force or fraud - Satan's values – then damage has been done to a potentially divine individual made in God's image. And then there is a need for justice so that a quest for revenge does not lead to an escalation that ultimately leads to, at a minimum, interpersonal conflict, or local societal conflict, or even to an all-out war.

In simple terms, the social science sequence leading to peace, which is necessary for both life and flourishing life, is as follows:

Justice → Social Harmony → Peace → Life

Justice is an instrumental necessary means to social harmony and is also constitutive (a constituent inseparable part) of what social harmony means. The same thing holds for social harmony and peace. Social harmony is an instrumental means to peace and is also constitutive of what peace means. The same thing holds for peace and life. Peace is an instrumental means to life and flourishing life and is constitutive of what a flourishing life means [you are at peace]. At the physical level justice can include an element of restitution for wrongs committed. And social harmony includes repentance by the offender and forgiveness by the offended. At any rate, any attempt to establish Life by following a lying, thieving, murderous, warring path is doomed to failure. It is literally using the incorrect means - hence, once again, emphasizing and highlighting the importance of values. If a dictator, religious leader, local individual criminal, or anyone else advocates the right to violate a right they are illogical and immoral. They will also end up becoming a victim of their own lack of values. Even a powerful dictator is not safe as they are surrounded by unethical others. And any others who also believe that there are no objective ethical principles to live by will simply bide their

time until they feel they are strong enough to overthrow the thug of the moment and then strike that thug when they feel the opportunity is right. The main point is this: **might makes right destroys all it comes into contact with.** It is worse than any Stage Four cancer as it also kills the mind, heart, and soul. This is true, even concerning the goon who is strongest for the moment, and it is eventually true even for Satan himself. No one, goon or otherwise, wants might makes right used on themselves.

Anyone → dictator, religious leader, political leader, or anyone else who → advocates or rationalizes → the right to violate a right → is immoral + irrational + an enemy of the two Jehovahs

They do not → love their fellow man as themselves

"How terrible it will be for you who lie awake at night, thinking up evil plans. You rise at dawn and hurry to carry out any of the wicked schemes you have power to accomplish. When you want a certain piece of land, you find a way to seize it. When you want someone's house, you take it by fraud and violence. No one's

family or inheritance is safe with you around!"

Micah 2:1, 2, NLT

For a bridge (or a building or any other constructed object) to stand it must be constructed according to correct scientific and engineering principles and with the right building materials. In other words, a good bridge and a good building must be constructed according to truth. If not, they will collapse when they encounter stresses, or will wear out prematurely. How much more so for an entire society? A society must be based on what is good (moral) and true. **Evil is inherently unstable** and will ultimately internally collapse, or be externally destroyed. Any society whose citizens are trying "to live" by following the Satanic values of force and fraud will burn itself out and collapse onto itself, or be destroyed by its enemies. It turns out that truth (the intellectual virtues) and morals (the moral virtues) matter. And it turns out that the only society that can last and the only life worth living has to be based on the two Jehovahs' Unity of Values [the subject of the following section 7.11 of this book] – not on Satan's values of force and fraud.

The two Jehovahs are moral. Satan is evil.

The two Jehovahs are rational and reasonable. Satan is the father of lies and is outside of truth.

The two Jehovahs are productive. They created and own the universe and are willing to share it with men who cooperate with them to become like the two Jehovahs. Satan is a parasite that has to attempt to steal by fraud or to take by force what the two Jehovahs have produced.

The two Jehovahs → Moral + Rational  
(reasonable) + Productive

Satan → Immoral + Irrational (unreasonable) + Parasitical

The two Jehovahs' → Unity of Values → produce  
→ abundant eternal life

Satan's → force, fraud, and other values →  
produce → pain, suffering, confusion, and death

The two Jehovahs → can give → eternal life

Satan → cannot give → eternal life

Who do you want to follow?

Who will you give your precious time, your energy, and your obedience to?

What would be good for you both now and in the long run?

Evil has to lead to → pain → suffering → death

Since evil cannot or will not create, it must cleverly steal or force others to allow it the use of what they have produced. Evil needs fuel to continue on. That fuel can come from the energy of fallen angels, or from men who are deceived or afraid. **Evil hates the concept of original appropriation.** And it cannot create stability. Evil must try and take property and energy from others in order to fuel itself.

Evil = inherently unstable

Evil → must use fraud or force → to gain energy + property from others

A moral, intelligent, productive person can produce (earn) and then enjoy what they produce. Or, via contract, they can engage in a property for property trade, or a service for

service trade, or a property for service trade with others. In that way they can lawfully obtain property and/or services from others with which to enrich their own life. It is literally production and trade versus parasitically stealing by force or fraud.

Production + trade = moral and emulative of the two Jehovahs

Force + fraud = evil and emulative of Satan

(Production + trade) > (force + fraud)

"And remember, no one who wants to do wrong should ever say, "God is tempting me." God is never tempted to do wrong, and he never tempts anyone else either. Temptation comes from the lure of our own evil desires. **These evil desires lead to evil actions, and evil actions lead to death.**" James 1:13-15, NLT

The two Jehovahs do not tempt man.

Man's own evil desires (from Satan's value system) → evil action → death

Can you achieve abundant eternal life by following Satan and his values? No. God says

life. Satan says death. God the Father loves human beings. Satan hates human beings. Jesus Christ wants to save human beings. Satan wants to kill human beings. God says happiness. Satan says misery. God says the moral virtues. Satan says there are no objective ethics, or you can create your own values to the exclusion and disregard of others' individual natural rights and to the disregard of others' hopes and dreams. God says love. Satan says hate. God says hope. Satan says despondence. God says peace. Satan says war. God says forgiveness. Satan says revenge. God says light. Satan says darkness. God says truth. Satan says lies and fraud, or there are no absolutes. God says produce and enjoy. Satan says steal and parasitically consume. God says health. Satan says pain and suffering. God says family and friends. Satan says slaves and disposable people. God says creativity. Satan says a static world, a static universe. God says variety. Satan says monotony and boredom. God says liberty (2 Corinthians 3:17). Satan says slavery and people-control (Revelation 13). God says private property. Satan says collective ownership – with the collective pseudo-owned by Satan himself (Satan's booty). God says free will. Satan says chaos and sets up people-control systems so men must do "their duty"

and obey his and his followers' orders. God says win-win deals. Satan says that in every deal there is a winner and a loser (this naïve and incorrect view makes stable productive trade to the betterment of all almost impossible). God says take heed to the future (low time preference) (a long time horizon). Satan says now is what matters (a high time horizon) (almost no regard for the certain-to-come future). God wants eternal happiness. Satan offers misery and death. And on it goes.

**When you give your time and energy to Satan you are giving your obedience and loyalty to a warlord.** Satan is the ultimate warlord. Warlords make war and are always preparing for war, not peace. Their idea of peace is ... everyone who disagrees with them is either dead or enslaved to them. What happens when you follow a warlord? Again, what does a warlord do and what are the consequences? **A warlord makes war.** When he is not making war he is making preparations for the next war."

" ... Summarized below is an Executive Summary of the contrast between the two Jehovahs and Satan:

The two Jehovahs are **morally right, rational, productive**, and their ways produce **peace and prosperity**, i.e., **their ways work to produce an abundant eternal life.**

Satan is **morally wrong, irrational, and parasitical**. His ways produce **a lack of justice, a lack of social harmony, war, pain, suffering, and death**. Satan's ways and systems cannot work, no matter who operates them, because they are in rebellion against reason and reality and because they are based on force and fraud. **They are outside of truth.** It is not a question of having a better leader or a smarter dictator. Satan's ways cannot work no matter who is in charge and no matter how much power the goon of the moment is exercising."

At the human level, one of the central purposes of societal laws is to establish justice. For your author's purposes here, this involves protecting the God-given and reason-established individual natural rights of life, liberty, and property and the right derived from property, which is to contractually trade with productive others. Quoting again from *Life Charts*:

" ... Richard Maybury is the author of *Whatever Happened To Justice?* He summarized the core principles of societal law well, in only 16 words, in what he called [emphasis mine]:

**'The Two Laws.**

Do all you have agreed to do.

Do not encroach on other persons or their property.'

The purpose of societal law encompasses → protecting man's individual natural rights → in order to → secure social harmony, social cooperation, and peace.

Justice entails → respecting others' → natural rights

Natural rights → a means to → societal harmony

Satan the warlord → attacks → natural rights → causes a lack of justice → breaks societal harmony → absence of peace → leads to → war

If men and societies abided by the above two laws there would be a universal respect for

man's natural rights and there would be societal harmony, cooperation, and peace. The greatly increased production of houses, food, clothing, and all of the other necessities and good things of life would be unprecedented and more men could live and live well on the earth. Even children and bad men can understand the need to respect each other's natural rights, but some men do not want to understand.

**"Evil people don't understand justice,**  
but those who follow the LORD understand completely." Proverbs 28:5, NLT

The two Jehovahs predated Maybury and did him one better by getting the core principles down to only five words, '**love your neighbor as yourself**', (Leviticus 19:18, Matthew 22:39) - but evidently this is not enough information for some people. Expanding, 'love your neighbor as yourself,' to Maybury's two laws, 16 words, is enough information for a rational, honest, socially aware person to understand. There really is no excuse for not being a good person."

Values matter. The virtues also matter. Justice matters. Your author will close this section with the following:

It is just and good that God the Father and Jesus Christ own the universe and it is for everyone's benefit that they are in charge of it.

**7.11 God's values and what mankind could have had if they had actually obeyed God, instead of following Satan and immoral, irrational human "leaders"**

Unlike Satan, who hates human beings and wants to corrupt, enslave, and ultimately kill them, God the Father and Jesus Christ love mankind. This is because they value us and Satan does not.

"For God [the Father] did **not** send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but so that the world might be saved through Him."  
John 3:17, MKJV

"For God so loved the world [the concrete individual men and women living in this world] that He gave His only-begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish **but have everlasting life.**" John 3:16, MKJV

The two Jehovahs, in order to achieve their goal for mankind, limited themselves by granting man free will, by granting man time, by

structuring the universe in a logical fashion, and by giving man a spirit added to the human brain that enables a logically-functioning human mind. The two Jehovahs limited themselves! They did this out of love for man. They further put their names, intellects, and character on the line (took a risk) by giving ALL men and ALL women the honor of making us in their image and likeness. The two Jehovahs are limited by how other beings, men and angels, spend their freedom and spend their time and by whether men and women will take advantage of the ability they have to be rational (according to reason – reasonable). In short, will we think and be moral, or not? Will we be productive or not? It is up to each of us!

Again, quoting from your author's previous *Life Charts* book:

"... Values come first for a reason because they set off a social science chain reaction leading to consequences that effect everyone and everything. A natural scientist, skilled in chemistry, knows that under certain conditions, combining element B with element C (perhaps with a known catalyst) will generate, over a defined period of time, a chemical reaction of X. Other chemists can duplicate the X reaction.

The results of most chemical reactions are already known. No knowledgeable chemist is surprised by the results. In this regard the natural sciences are ahead of the social sciences - but they don't have to be.

If people were taught and knew the social science chain reaction sequence: values → choices → consequences, and if they cared about their own lives and the lives of others, they would think about the values they hold. The values they actually hold are the starting point for the quality of life for all of us. The two Jehovahs are point-blank in telling mankind what value is the most important of all:

"I call Heaven and earth to record today against you. I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing. Therefore, **choose life, so that both you and your seed may live,**" Deuteronomy 30:19, MKJV

Ergo, ... Life > death

Man = a contingent being

A contingent being ≠ eternal life inside of them

**Life is the primary value** because only the living can value – life becomes a standard of value, as it were. If you are dead and remain dead, your values, whatever they were, no longer matter because you no longer exist. In other words, life is also the primary value because man is a contingent being – the two Jehovahs do not have to grant eternal life to anyone. Life becomes the primary value and sets the context for the choice of everything else; including one's other values. One's other values are the principles and standards one lives by, and also what one considers important to attempt to attain, or to maintain once one has it. Ergo, choosing life also then involves, by necessity, also choosing an entire set of other things necessary for life itself – **a package of other values**, as it were.

- Choosing life = life + the package of values that pertain to life

All men are men.

Man = Man

Physically speaking, choosing life also means acknowledging **liberty as a value** because in order to choose life you had to be free to

choose. Because all men are men, everyone else also has to be free to choose - so other people's liberty, too, must be acknowledged and respected. Spiritually speaking, liberty is also necessary because the two Jehovahs do not want people-bots who have been programmed to always make the correct choice. A pre-programmed choice is not morality. If we were pre-programmed to choose, one way or another, then no one could take the credit for morality, or the blame for immorality. Spiritually speaking, we are free and free to choose, but we cannot use that liberty to do evil:

"And the Lord is that Spirit; and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty."  
2 Corinthians 3:17, MKJV

"For, brothers, you were called to liberty. Only do not use the liberty for an opening to the flesh [to do wrong], but by love serve one another." Galatians 5:13, MKJV

... Each man needs to sustain his own life and therefore needs the liberty to both think and to take action to sustain their life. It does no man any good to only think about having something to eat. He also has to take the action of finding or producing something to eat or

producing something that others value in trade so he can trade for something to eat. In short, each man also needs to obtain and use property in order to stay alive. And, at a minimum, each man owns himself – he has a property right in himself. This is at the physical (human) level. The two Jehovahs are the original appropriators (Creators), owner-operators of the universe and therefore own everything and everyone.

Life is the ultimate value. Liberty and property are necessary follow-on values for human life. But, is just barely staying alive in an unfulfilling life enough, or desirable? The reasonable answer is, “Of course not.” Life as a standard of value sets the bar far higher than just surviving – it entails surviving and flourishing over time.

“The thief does not come except to steal and to kill and to destroy. I [Jesus Christ] have come so that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.”

John 10:10, MKJV

Abundant life > a bare or unfulfilled existence

What are some of the attributes of an abundant life? It should be noted that in

attempting an answer below, your author is going for a listing of general attributes or characteristics of an **abundant life**. In other words, your author does not want an architect arguing with an orthopedic surgeon about which profession is more vocationally satisfying. That discussion and answer is a particular and personal one, not a general answer for mankind.

**A general listing of the characteristics pertaining to an abundant life** is one that a reasonable member of mankind would want and accept for themselves and others. Of course, the below list implies a personal relationship with God the Father and Jesus Christ, the two Jehovahs, and the receipt of their Holy Spirit ... :

**Life** itself (obviously)

### **Happiness**

Being one of the good guys – being **a moral person**

Being **a rational person** – intelligent and reasonable

**Peace** – one's environment and one's inner emotional state

**Health**

**Family**

**Friends**

**Being productive** (hopefully at something one is good at and enjoys doing)

**Variety and Creativity** – not boredom

**Time**

**Liberty** – freedom to choose (within the two Jehovahs' objective ethics, including the respect for others' individual natural rights)

**Property** – resources

Perhaps the above list could be added to, or refined. Any reasonable editing your author will not quibble with. The important thing is **there are certain general items necessary for, or pertaining to, an abundant life**. Any such general items are important because an abundant life is important. No one really wants a bare, meager, unfulfilled existence. And no one in his or her right mind wants the extreme

of a painful, suffering, or tortured existence instead of an abundant life.

If there are any hard-nosed philosophers or religionists reading this, and there are many – who like to argue almost for the sake of arguing - which item or items in the above list would you take out? And why would you take them out? Please explain to mankind why you would take one or more of them out. Your author is pushing back here against those who wish to tear down more than to build up. Where is the wisdom in that?

Of the general characteristics of an abundant life listed above, which, if any, could safely be removed? Your author would argue ... none of them. Life is definitionally necessary for an abundant life. Happiness is certainly part of an abundant life. How can life be considered as abundant if it is unhappy? An abundant life would be a good life and how can one be considered to have a good life if one is not a good person, i.e., immoral? An abundant life would be intelligently lived, with reason guiding one's choices moving forward, so how could a lack of rationality or reasonableness enable a good life? It could not. If one were not at peace internally, in an unsettled state, life would

not be good. And if war, not peace, was the unfortunate condition of one's environment, one would be experiencing the death and hurt of family and friends; the destruction of necessary-for-life property and resources; the emotional angst of not knowing when the next catastrophic and destructive event would occur; the lack of sleep; worry; etc. There is no social theory of violence and an abundant life includes

**interacting with each other peacefully.**

Continuing, any lack of health would mean suffering and the inability to do the things one wanted to do in life. The lack of family and friends would mean loneliness on a permanent basis. The positive, warm, and joy-giving community of emotion would be lacking. There would be no one to share activities and achievements with. If one could not be productive at doing something one enjoyed then one would be constrained to do things that were either: 1) frustratingly unproductive and therefore time-wasting or 2) un-enjoyable even if successful. If there were a lack of variety, it would lead to monotony and boredom that are characteristics of a non-abundant existence, not an abundant life. Liberty to choose gives one dignity and self-esteem and enables one to be a moral being. Property and resources are necessary for life itself, and certainly much more

so for an abundant life. And the lack of time means our life, of whatever quality, is running out. More on time immediately follows because it deserves its own discussion. In light of all of the preceding, your author rests his case. And again, any reasonable and rational editing of the above, for good, is perfectly fine with your author.

Considering all of the above general characteristics of an abundant and good life, and noting that not even one of the elements could be removed without, perhaps, changing said abundant life into a non-abundant one; your author would like to make the following point:

There is a correct **Unity Of Values** that pertain to an abundant life. When your author lists the below Life Chart formula it should be understood that the words "**the correct**" precede Unity of Values. Our values should fit together, with each value being responsive to each other value.

Life + Unity of Values = An Abundant Life

... An abundant life sounds quite good. But, there is a big problem with the general characteristic "time" in the unity of values above. What good would it do a man or woman

if they actually could somehow achieve an abundant life during their human existence? And very few have. For the sake of discussion, let us say that a man achieves an abundant physical life and that he lives to 75 years of age. He really enjoys his life, but then he dies. What then? What would his life really have meant? He lived. He lived well (abundantly). And then he died. The end. Not exactly a happy story when you consider the "the end" part, is it? The problem is, man is a contingent being. He does not have eternal life within himself. In fact, the two Jehovahs made man mortal on purpose.

"And as it is appointed to men once to die,  
but after this the judgment,"  
Hebrews 9:27, MKJV

Because man is a contingent being, life cannot be regarded as implicit, or simply as a given. It is only a given for, say, 70 or 80 years – a full physical life by average standards. And here we seem to have a very big problem. If this physical life is all there is then even the best of lives could be considered, "much ado about nothing." Your author is not minimizing the importance of each person's life to himself or herself, nor is your author minimizing the importance of the lives of previous great men

and women [and the not great, too]. Your author will concede the importance of life to everyone else, which is why, to your author's point, he can ask, "And then what?"

Fortunately, we can now start to explain the first parts of the goal of the two Jehovahs, which is to give the following to those members of the human race who acknowledge and cooperate with them:

Life + Abundant + Eternal =

**an abundant eternal life**

The goal of the two Jehovahs is to give an abundant eternal life to man. This goal will be elaborated further below to also include:

the perfecting of each of us as individuals,  
a great environment to live in, and  
the respect for each of us as individuals.

God the Father (the Father) has life in himself. And Jesus Christ, the Son, has life in himself, too.

**"For as the Father has life in Himself, so He has given to the Son to have life within Himself, and has given Him authority to execute judgment also, because He is the Son of man. Do not marvel at this, for the hour is coming in which all who are in the graves shall hear His voice, and shall come forth, those who have done good to the resurrection of life, and those who have practiced evil to the resurrection of condemnation."** John 5:26-29, MKJV

The source of life = The Father and Jesus Christ

Regarding the perfecting of us as individuals, there has been widespread confusion among people, religions, tribes, and governments as to what God's work really is.

**"For we are His workmanship [human beings as individuals], created in Christ Jesus to good works, which God has before ordained that we should walk in them."** Ephesians 2:10, MKJV

The work of God → the human race

The process God is using → divine individualism

... From your author's point of view it would behoove all of us to recognize that the two

Jehovahs are hoping that men will choose to use their minds, freedom, and time to do the following: 1) choose life over death, 2) choose an abundant eternal life over a short, suffering existence, 3) logically come to understand that if one wants an abundant eternal life they must accept the unity of values, the package of values that pertain to life, 4) this includes yielding to Jesus Christ and accepting him as Savior as he is the only name under heaven whereby men can be saved, 5) reject Satan the warlord's death-generating anti-values, 6) start to obtain and use as many of the moral and intellectual virtues as one can in the time one has left in life, and 7) live one's life in a way that one can answer for how we have spent our freedom and our time - how we have thought and chosen and taken action. Further, 8) we cannot be afraid to die as we are all going to physically die some day, in any case. In short, and in summation, we will be cooperating with the two Jehovahs in their divine individualism process."

In short, God values his universe and the earth as a special creation. God values mankind, his workmanship, and God values all of the values listed above. The two Jehovahs no doubt value other important things, too, e.g., the moral and intellectual virtues, which are

implicit in the divine individualism process in helping us to become like God the Father and Jesus Christ, because they have all of the moral and intellectual virtues in their beings, but for your author's purposes in this section, the above will do.

What is really sad and shocking to your author, at least to some extent, is what the two Jehovahs tried to give to mankind, but mankind basically rejected it. Most of mankind has lived not knowing and understanding that God the Father and Jesus Christ were actually trying to give each person, in addition to life itself, many other important blessings.

Every man and woman gets life, a mind, free will, time, the honor of being made in the image and likeness of God, sunshine, rain, air to breath, the earth and all that is on it with which to produce food, shelter, transportation, etc.

What the human race has really missed out on is that God further intended for the various nations of the earth to have their own designated homelands and for each family in a nation to have their own designated **free land** that would be in their family forever. Larger families would have received more land and

smaller families would have received less land (Numbers 33:54). The free land was basically proportional. This was previously revealed and explained in this book's section 4.4, so your author will not once again quote the scriptures or make the arguments used to show this.

When The Left or anyone else talks about social justice they ignore God like the two Jehovahs do not exist. And yet, God gave (or wanted to give) the following to each man and woman:

### **Life**

Free will – we can think for ourselves and we have **liberty** with which to take action

A mind (including emotions)

Family land (**property**) (free land in perpetuity)

Divine instructions to know right from wrong

Natural laws discoverable by reason so we can understand our environment and make plans and undertake effective actions

Individual natural rights so one's life, liberty, and property would be protected and the human race would have also a secular standard of what is right (one would also feel secure if others respected individual natural rights)

Family members and the potential to make friends

Time – this obviously varies between humans, but some time with which to gain experiences and to learn how to be moral, intelligent, and productive, to obtain social skills, etc.

The ability to be creative / innovative, to produce goods and services, and then the ability to trade with others, including the ability to work together if necessary or otherwise desirable

When men sinned and rebelled against God, the Father sent the Word, who became Jesus Christ, and thereby gave mankind a Savior (instead of condemning mankind to death right then)

The earth as a special habitation for man (Isaiah 45:18)

Meaning and purpose

And many other things

After all of the above, God is falsely accused of being unjust – by what standard? This accusation itself, stripped down to its moral and intellectual nakedness, becomes: **God is unjust by assertion.**

If men acknowledged the two Jehovahs, obeyed their divine law instructions, respected other men's individual natural rights, including national and family land boundary lines, and did not waste their time being jealous and envious of others who achieved or had more, what a different and more just world it would be. Justice in that world would be along the lines of what your author explained earlier in this book:

For **justice** → to be justice → when dealing with individual natural rights OR when administering and applying the laws to the citizenry → it must be → **EQUAL** (everyone has equal individual natural rights and everyone must be treated the same before the laws of the land)

For **justice** → to be justice → when dealing with productive achievement → it must be → **PROPORTIONAL**

There will always be some men and women who find innovative and better ways to provide goods and services to their fellow man (who work smarter, harder, or take risks that pay off). If they serve their fellow man in an outstanding way, they will likely become wealthy, at least for a time. But they and their heirs will need to continue to serve their fellow man by correctly deploying their accumulated capital in further acts of ongoing service. If not, their capital will dissipate as it is lost and/or consumed. The Left and the other envious do not understand justice or the role of service to others in the generation of wealth. **Capital not serving diminishes over time.** And they do not understand that capital generated and productively employed increases production. To say you are against capitalism is the same thing as saying you want men to dig with their hands and forage in the woods. It is saying you want men to try and produce without tools. It is literally envy plus ignorance plus passion in the form of **an anti-capitalism assertion.**

The Left tends to attack not only capitalism, but also private property itself. This too, is foolishness, as was explained in chapter five. For your author's purposes here, God wanted private property for the reasons philosopher Dr.

Tibor Machan discovered and characterized: because this would give each man their own "moral space."

Private property → moral space

Private property → intellectual space

Private property → enables greater production

Private property → alleviates some of life's anxieties

If you have decided upon achieving a goal and lack the means that someone else possesses, e.g., a particular item of personal property like a specialized tool, the specialized tool, not being yours, is off limits for you to use in achieving your goal. However, you can perhaps borrow the tool or rent it, or produce something else of value and then buy the specialized tool you need to further your own goals. But you cannot just use someone else's property for your own ends without getting either their specific permission or contracting with them to rent or buy the property in question. To do otherwise is to violate the individual natural rights of the person in question, breaching societal peace. Under

divine law, this is also forbidden (Exodus 20:15, 17). The limits that the two Jehovahs place upon us in their divine law instructions were to help keep the peace and to allow for society as a whole to function securely and to advance.

Your author believes that what most people really want out of life is:

- To be healthy
- To not die
- To have a sense of meaning and purpose
- To belong and know you belong
- To be one of the good guys (to be moral)
- To be intelligent
- To have or develop talents and to use them
- To be creative
- To be at peace
- To be productive
- To have friends/family who are healthy/whole
- To be secure

All of these things derive from God the Father and Jesus Christ, their creation, and their divine and natural laws, including natural rights. To say you want these things and then to deny, ignore, or to actively rebel against the source of them is some form of ignorance, gross mental error, or outright evil.

If the human race would not have ignored or fought against the two Jehovahs, let's be reminded of what even a "poor" person would have had under God's rule: 1) life 2) a mind 3) free will, i.e., liberty 4) free family land in perpetuity, within designated national land 5) divine law instructions 6) natural laws discoverable by using reason 7) individual natural rights 8) family and the ability to make friends 9) time 10) the earth, with all of its actual and potential resources and last, but not least, 11) a Savior, Jesus Christ ... 12) etc.

The liberty we possess enables us to cooperate with the two Jehovahs, or not. We can work with others to produce more than we can produce ourselves. We can also get together with, worship with, and play with others. However, if we choose to use our liberty to band together into undesirable and destructive groups and tribes, then the members of the human race will suffer greatly – and so we have. We should not use our liberty to band together into 1) gangs 2) tribes 3) mafias 4) armies or 5) governments if any of these collectives are operating under the Satanic core values of force and fraud. The results of force and fraud are: enemies made, attacks and

counter-attacks, and endless wars (or preparations for wars) - with the resulting loss of life, liberty, and property, and all of the accompanying pain, suffering, and heartache for the losses suffered. Nor can we use our liberty to follow pseudo-leaders with bad theories (the wrong directions) and expect to achieve a good result. If any wannabe leader advocates a particular action based on a bad theory they are a pseudo-leader, not a real leader. Easy examples of this are Hitler, Lenin, Stalin, and Pol Pot. But there is no end of bad "isms" to criticize because there are many roads that lead to death. And anyone who is following any "ism" or pseudo-leader where the core values being utilized are either force or fraud (or both) will ultimately find out they are being led toward death. **Principle matters.** Many times you can hear someone sigh and say, "Can't we all just agree?" But the only way for real and constructive agreement to occur is TO AGREE ON PRINCIPLE. There is a standard of what is right. This is why it is a tragedy that natural law has been "thrown out" by most of the human race, and similarly that divine law has been ignored.

Individual natural rights, derivable from the laws of nature, could have acted as a veto-mechanism over what amounts to collective and religious evil and stupidity.

If we were to use the word, “Mankind,” and on purpose make the conceptual realism error of attributing thought and action to a collective, we could metaphorically observe the following:

Mankind, for the most part, has traded our divine individualism birthright for tribal and collective, evil and stupidity.

Mankind has followed a murderer, Satan, to find life.

Mankind has followed a liar, Satan, to find truth.

Mankind has followed tribal, philosophical, and religious warlords (of all kinds) in an attempt to have an abundant life.

As your author is finishing up the writing of this book (January 2022), it is clear that something some people are calling “Mass Formation” is negatively affecting a large part of the human race. Sometimes Mass Formation has the pejorative “Psychosis” added to it and so

the concept is discussed as "Mass Formation Psychosis." Your author is not a mental health specialist, but it is very clear that Mass Formation is potentially devastating to the human race. It could be said that the German people, leading up to and during World War 2, were a "victim" of it. Evidently when a large part of the population has what is known as "free-floating anxiety," i.e., anxiety that is sort of like a general angst versus anxiety that is tied to a specific event, e.g., losing one's job, then the crowd comprising that population can become susceptible to a leader coming along and using demagogue tactics, e.g., a Hitler. The crowd, in essence, intellectually swallows the demagogue's propaganda and then blindly follows the demagogue (Mass Formation) in an attempt to rid itself of the free-floating anxiety. The crowd basically ends up going temporarily insane and then doing crazy things – things the individuals under the influence of the demagogue would never do if they did not have free-floating anxiety they are desperate to get rid of. Competent mental health experts with knowledge of Mass Formation can discuss this more completely and entire books can be and have been written on the subject. Your author's purpose here is to point out that the two Jehovahs, if followed, would have effectively

headed Mass Formation “off at the pass,” so to speak. This is because by giving each human being life, including giving each of them ultimate meaning and purpose, plus providing the connection to perpetually owned family land, and all of the other benefits outlined in this section (and in other places of this book) there likely would not be the free-floating anxiety available in huge swaths of the human population available for a demagogic pseudo-leader to exploit and channel in Satan-inspired evil directions. However, broadly writing, man has not chosen to cooperate with God and to receive the many blessings man could have had. One of those blessings would have been to avoid the psychologically harmful and potentially destructive Mass Formation Psychosis where the crowd literally goes insane (Revelation 13).

### **7.12 Not all cultures are equal**

The main points of this chapter were that the two Jehovahs, God, own the universe via the doctrine of original appropriation and this is not only logically unassailable, but also an eternal fact for all created contingent beings, i.e., all angels and all human beings. This enables all angels and mankind to understand that in order to be good guests in God’s universe they must

come to learn and comply with divine law instructions issued by God for their benefit. Further, the solution to the mind-body problem shows that God, of necessity, created the one universe known to man with a logical structure ... and blessed man with a mind also containing a logical structure that enables mankind to be able to understand the universe in which we live. This means that natural laws are discoverable by reason and these natural laws can be relied upon to be consistent. Further, it means that reason can also discover individual natural rights and those individual natural rights can function as a secular standard of ethics for man.

One of the main points of this section is that both divine laws and individual natural rights provide **an external reference point in terms of ethics** knowable by men. In other words, there is a standard of the right (of what is correct) knowable by man in two different ways: 1) via divine law instructions and 2) via learning and then respecting the individual natural rights of other men (your author is using "men" and "man" here to include the entire human race, including, of course, women). The next chapter details Israel's role in God's Strange Plan. And that brings us to the other main point of this

section, which is this: not all cultures on earth are equal. This flies in the face of the multi-cultural teachings of the modern era where it is not politically correct to judge other cultures. Basically this modern teaching can be summarized using the phrase, "**cultural acceptance / correctness by assertion.**"

Cultural acceptance / correctness by assertion is intellectual drivel and laughable because cultures have beliefs and practices that are in conflict with each other. Something cannot be true and false at the same time, as it would have to be if different cultural beliefs, that happened to be polar opposites, were intellectually and ethically pitted against each other. What is the solution to this dilemma? Sometimes to get the right answer you have to discard something you were taught that, upon closer examination, is just not true. And sometimes when you follow the truth to wherever it leads you find yourself in a place where you are not so politically correct. This is the case here. The thing that must be discarded, which most people in the modern era have been taught, is that all cultures are good and should be accepted. The truth is every culture on earth is flawed and the reason for this is because no culture on earth conforms to, i.e.,

practices both the keeping of the divine laws and the respect for others' individual natural rights. In other words, there is an external standard of the right, of what is correct, and no culture on earth completely meets it. It is no excuse for a "culture" to say, "This is the way we have always done it" and then they are off the hook for what amounts to reprehensible behavior. Israel, we shall find out, was supposed to be the culture that led **the way** for other nations and cultures to follow. Israel failed.

Some of the good aspects of ancient Israelite culture later made their way into ancient Greece and from there into Western Civilization. Of course, other cultures have also discovered elements and aspects of ethical principles, scientific and engineering knowledge, and some of the other key things a culture, nation, or even a larger civilization should encompass to advance the human race forward. But all cultures, nations, and civilizations have fallen short of: 1) complying with divine laws and 2) consistently respecting individual natural rights. Every single one of them is guilty. Israel was supposed to be such a culture, but they failed God, themselves, and the other nations. In fact, the ancient Israelites failed so badly that they

were even expelled from their divinely granted homeland.

Years later the ancient Greeks relearned, discovered on their own, or however one wants to characterize their achievement, certain key elements pertaining to advancing the human race. And this ultimately led the way to what is known as Western Civilization. It is true that Western Civilization, like all other civilizations before and after it, and like all other nations and cultures, before and after it, had and has many failings. But here is what Western Civilization, particularly in England (prior to about World War One) and the United States of America (prior to about 1913) got right:

There is an external reference point of right and wrong (outside of human opinions, outside of human assertions) and this allowed for men to be moral, to become "one of the good guys" by changing their behavior to conform to the external reference point.

The Bible and the God of the Bible were acknowledged and this included the widespread adoption of Christianity among the general populace, ergo divine law becomes one such external reference point of right and wrong.

Respect for the individual and the value of an individual was widely understood.

More broadly speaking there was a respect for individual natural rights, at least to a larger extent than at most other times and places in human history. This respect provided yet another external reference point of right and wrong to which men could conform their behavior.

For centuries scientists believed and operated under the presumption that a Creator God issued and decreed natural laws that governed the universe. These natural laws were thought to be discoverable by reason.

This allowed for the scientific method to be adopted and utilized and this allowed for the truth to unfold over time via a communal process. (The use of two-value logic, where every declarative sentence is either true or false was an important part of this.)

Individuals believed their lives had a purpose and therefore meaning; this physical life was not all there is.

Individuals thought they must live their human lives in such a way that they could answer for them at the future divine judgment.

Couples believed in the importance of family formation and stability so children could be born and raised to maturity in as good of an environment as was practically possible at the time.

Men and women learned to extend their time horizon (they thought longer term, even concerning their physical lives). They produced, saved, and then invested in a future they hoped and believed would be better. (Capital was generated and productively invested in a better future.)

The saved and invested capital was productively invested in combination with agricultural, industrial, scientific, engineering, technological, medical, and digital breakthroughs. This greatly increased production and this combination of factors led to longer and healthier human lives. It also enabled more men to live on the earth.

Stated another way, the breakthroughs in the various fields of human study, the respect for individual natural rights, and the lengthening of

people's time horizons led to the optimistic desire for longer and better lives and this spurred on even more innovations.

There was a non-static view of life. This enabled the willingness to learn how to cope with change.

It is true that Western Civilization is not perfect. No civilization is because all civilizations, nations, and cultures are comprised of flawed individual human beings (Romans 3:23). The critics of Western Civilization are not perfect themselves, should their own lives be held up to the external standard of following the divine law instructions and also held to the secular external standard of respecting other people's individual natural rights. Further, those same critics do not apply the same standard of criticism to other cultures, nations, and civilizations because to do so would reveal the obvious; there is no perfect culture, nation, or civilization on this earth because all of them are composed of individuals who are flawed human beings. With these things said, in either a culture-by-culture or civilization-by-civilization comparison, Western Civilization (especially in terms of the early USA (before 1913) and early England (before World War One) and its children

nations, e.g., Canada, Australia, New Zealand, etc.) is probably the head of the class in terms of overall human well-being and development – at least by historical human standards. Oriental despotism, the destructive tribalism extant over much of the world, and other cultures fair very poorly when compared to Western Civilization. The critics of Western Civilization want to get away with comparing Western Civilization against the non-achievable-for-human-beings standard of perfection while not using the same standard of perfection against all other civilizations, nations, and cultures. It is basically a form of hypocritical nihilism to single out any one civilization and then tear it down when it does not conform to perfection.

This effectively leads us back yet again to your author's two questions, with some clarifying follow-up questions also being necessary in this instance:

- 1) Just what is “the standard of the right” that you, the critic of Western Civilization, are espousing? And ...
- 2) How did you arrive at it?

And the below four follow-up questions:

- 3) Are you, the critic, espousing the use of divine law instructions and thereby acknowledging the supremacy of the Creator God?
- 4) Or, are you acknowledging the secular standard of the right of the respect for individual natural rights?

It would be uncomfortable for most critics of Western Civilization to admit, "Yes," as the answer to questions number three or four because then your author would ask, "Do you live by divine law and respect the individual natural rights of others?" It would be further uncomfortable for them to answer "No" as well, particularly to question four, as they would publicly mark themselves as the enemy of the entire human race.
- 5) Are you using the same standard of criticism you are using against Western Civilization to also judge other cultures, nations, and civilizations? In other words, are you ethically and intellectually consistent?
- 6) How do you **know** whatever standard of the right you are espousing is correct?

The critical intellectual nihilists have no clothes. They do not have a coherent standard of the right they could espouse other than some made-up ethics by assertion.

In reviewing human history, those nations, cultures, and civilizations that came closest to following divine laws and respecting individual natural rights have done the best in terms of producing healthier, more whole human beings, including producing material prosperity. In other words, **not all cultures are equal**, not even close. Those with an objective external standard of right and wrong, including attempting to live by said standard, do better than others generally speaking. Further, those cultures that respect individuals, have stronger and more stable family structures, whose individual members tend to think more prudentially and longer term, who produce and save and invest in innovations do better, once again, generally speaking. On the other hand, an example of a terrible culture was the ancient Canaanites. They were such a horrific, evil culture that God commanded the ancient Israelites to drive them off of the land or to kill them. The Israelites were also instructed not to intermarry with them or to contract with them.

"Do not speak in your heart [the Israelites], after the LORD your God has cast them out [the Canaanite nations] from before you, saying: For my righteousness, the LORD has brought me in to possess this land. But for the wickedness of these nations [the Canaanite nations], the LORD your God drives them out from before you."

Deuteronomy 9:4, MKJV

Unfortunately, after 100 or so years of government schooling, a loss of societal awareness of the most important factors contributing to the success of Western Civilization, and the unrelenting moral, intellectual, political, and other attacks, largely spearheaded by The Left, using their evil and irrational secular humanist agenda, even the USA and England and its children nations are in big trouble both morally and rationally. In short, Western Civilization is devolving because it is deviating further and further from practicing divine laws and from respecting individual natural rights. In terms of ethics, rationality, and empathy for others, Western Civilization is no longer producing the same quality of human beings, which the Bible foresaw saw long ago:

"You should also know this, Timothy, that in the last days there will be very difficult times. For people will love only themselves and their money. They will be boastful and proud, scoffing at God, disobedient to their parents, and ungrateful. They will consider nothing sacred. They will be unloving and unforgiving; they will slander others and have no self-control; they will be cruel **and have no interest in what is good.** They will betray their friends, be reckless, be puffed up with pride, and love pleasure rather than God." 2 Timothy 3:1-4, NLT

In your author's observation, it's almost as if men are determined to do what they want, hoping or believing there is no God to ultimately judge them. They behave as if this life is all there is, and evade any thoughts that might bring them back into a more wholesome, rational, and balanced life. It is as if many men are determined to not know the truth, i.e., they are practicing evasion and willful ignorance.

"For they changed the truth of God into a lie, and they worshiped and served the created thing more than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen." Romans 1:25, MKJV

Not all cultures are equal, not even close. The cultures that do the best to conform their moral behavior to the external standard of following God's divine laws and following the secular standard of the respect for individual natural rights do better over time. God the Father and Jesus Christ used both standards, particularly the divine law standard, to judge Israel, their chosen nation many thousands of years ago. Israel's role in God's Strange Plan is the subject of the next chapter.

## **Chapter Eight**

### **Israel As Part Of God's Strange Plan**

God the Father and Jesus Christ have decided that Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob (later renamed by God as "Israel," Genesis 32:28), and Jacob's 12 male heirs and their descendants, known as **the twelve tribes of Israel** or **the Israelites**, would have a central place, in human terms, in their plan for mankind. The entire Bible makes this plain, if one is willing to read carefully and think. The purpose of this chapter is to provide you, dear reader, with enough Biblical information to understand how important the twelve tribes of

Israel are to the plan of God and to the people of the earth. The central part of God's Strange Plan in substantive reality is Jesus Christ, but at the human level and in human terms the Israelites are a central part of God's Strange Plan.

As a housekeeping point, the current nation known as the State of Israel is not the same thing as the twelve tribes of Israel. This is true though it has a similar sounding name and also occupies some of the same land the twelve tribes of Israel inherited and inhabited in the past. Unless your author specifically references the State of Israel, all references in this chapter to **Israel** are to the twelve tribes of Israel, known hereafter, unless delineated otherwise, as the Israelites or simply Israel (Israel from the point of view of the two Jehovahs, i.e., Biblical Israel).

### **8.1 Biblical Israel Has Twelve tribes, not just one**

The fact that Biblical Israel has twelve tribes is known to some people, but not to all. The main reason this short section is necessary is to clear up some confusion among many people in the modern era who think that the Jews are

God's chosen people. This is incorrect as stated. Some other people are confused and believe that the modern State of Israel (the nation) is the Israel referred to in the Bible. This causes them to look to Biblical prophecies being fulfilled through the State of Israel. This, too, is incorrect. Ergo, the purpose of this short section is to do a brief overview on just who the Biblical Israelites are, including their family lineage.

God called Abram to have a special relationship with him, testing him to see if Abram would both believe and obey God. After testing him in terms of being willing to leave his native country and then later testing him relative to the sacrifice of his son, Isaac (and other tests), God renamed him Abraham.

"And the LORD said to Abram, Go out of your country, and from your kindred, and from your father's house into a land that I will show you. And **I will make you a great nation**. And I will bless you and make your name great. And you shall be a blessing. And I will bless those that bless you and curse the one who curses you. And **in you shall all families of the earth be blessed.**" Genesis 12:1-3, MKJV

Abram obeyed God and left his home and journeyed to the land then known as Canaan. God promised to make Abram's lineage, as later designated by God, into a great nation and that all the families of the entire earth will be blessed due to what God was going to do through Abram and his future family. Further notice that God is saying that he will bless those who bless Abram and his designated descendants and curse those who curse them. This blessing and cursing regarding Abram and his God-designated seed is widely misunderstood and misinterpreted to mean the Jews. This is incorrect. It is Abram and his God-designated seed that this promise applies to. God promised Abram a child and a seedline and God delivered. In fact, God promised Abram more descendants than he could count.

"After these things the word of the LORD came to Abram in a vision, saying, Fear not, Abram, I am your shield and your exceeding great reward. And Abram said, Lord God, what will You give me, since I am going childless, and the steward of my house is this Eliezer of Damascus? And Abram said, Behold, You have given no seed to me. And behold, one born in my house is my heir. And behold, the word of the LORD came to him saying, This one shall not

be your heir. But he that shall come forth out of your own bowels shall be your heir. And He brought him outside and said, Look now toward the heavens and count the stars, if you are able to count them. And He said to him, So shall your seed be. And **he believed** in the LORD. And He [God] counted it to him [Abram] for righteousness. And He said to him, I am the LORD that brought you out of Ur of the Chaldees, to give you this land to inherit it." Genesis 15:1-7, MKJV

God made a formal covenant to give Abram and his God-designated descendants a certain geographic territory.

"In the same day the LORD made a covenant with Abram, saying, I have given this land to your seed, from the river of Egypt to the great river, the river Euphrates, the Kenites, and the Kenizzites, and the Kadmonites, and the Hittites, and the Perizzites, and the giants, and the Amorites, and the Canaanites, and the Gergashites, and the Jebusites." Genesis 15:18-21, MKJV

In Genesis 16 Abram and his wife Sarai tried to take matters into their own hands because Sarai was barren in their marriage to date. This

resulted in Abram having a son, Ishmael, through Hagar, a slave woman in Abram and Sarai's household.

In Genesis 17 God appeared to Abram again and gave Abram additional promises. The covenant was sealed with circumcision being required of all the males in Abram's household. God also promised Abraham and Sarah (renamed from Abram and Sarai) a son who was to be called Isaac. Further, this covenant also included Abraham's seedline to all future generations and God re-promised to give Abraham and his descendants the entire land of Canaan. This was a perpetual covenant between God and Abraham and Abraham's God-designated seedline.

"And when Abram was ninety-nine years old, the LORD appeared to Abram and said to him, I am the Almighty God! Walk before Me and be perfect. And I will make My covenant between Me and you, and will multiply you exceedingly. And Abram fell on his face. And God talked with him, saying, As for Me, behold! My covenant is with you, and you shall be a father of many nations. Neither shall your name any more be called Abram, but your name shall be Abraham. For I have made you a father of many nations.

And I will make you exceedingly fruitful, greatly so, and I will make nations of you, and kings shall come out of you. And I will establish My covenant between Me and you and your seed after you in their generations for an everlasting covenant, to be a God to you and to your seed after you. And I will give the land to you in which you are a stranger, and to your seed after you, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession. And **I will be their God.** And God said to Abraham, And you shall keep My covenant, you and your seed after you in their generations." Genesis 17:1-9, MKJV

Because Abraham already had a son, Ishmael, God had to clarify which seedline would be involved in the future, Ishmael or Isaac. God picked Isaac, not Ishmael, and this is made very clear below.

"And God said, Sarah your wife shall bear you a son indeed. And you shall call his name Isaac. And I will establish My covenant with him for an everlasting covenant, and with his seed after him. And as for Ishmael, I have heard you. Behold, I have blessed him, and will make him fruitful, and will multiply him exceedingly. He shall father twelve princes, and I will make him a great nation. But I will establish My covenant

with Isaac, whom Sarah shall bear to you at this set time in the next year." Genesis 17:19-21,  
MKJV

Abraham did become circumcised and Isaac was born as promised.

Later, God tested Abraham by commanding him to sacrifice Isaac. This is found in Genesis 22. This resulted in Abraham passing yet another test and in him receiving additional promises from God.

"And the Angel of the LORD called to Abraham out of the heavens the second time, and said, I have sworn by Myself, says the LORD; because you have done this thing, and have not withheld your son, your only one; that in blessing I will bless you, and in multiplying I will multiply your seed like the stars of the heavens, and as the sand which is upon the seashore. And your Seed shall possess the gate of His enemies." Genesis 22:15-17, MKJV

Later in Genesis 24 it was very important, from both God's and Abraham's point of view that Isaac not take a Canaanite wife. Abraham's seedline through Isaac was not to be spiritually or physically corrupted in that way (Genesis

24:1-4). Abraham and God took precautionary steps so that Isaac would not mix the God-designated seed of Abraham with the corrupt Canaanites. This ultimately resulted in Isaac marrying Rebekah. Later, Isaac prayed for his barren wife, Rebekah, and she conceived and bore twin sons.

"And these were the generations of Isaac, Abraham's son. Abraham fathered Isaac. And Isaac was forty years old when he took Rebekah to wife, the daughter of Bethuel the Syrian of Padan-aram, the sister of Laban the Syrian. And Isaac prayed to the LORD for his wife, because she was barren. And the LORD heard him, and Rebekah his wife conceived. And the sons struggled together within her. And she said, If it is so, why am I this way? And she went to inquire of the LORD. And the LORD said to her, Two nations are in your womb, and two kinds of people shall be separated from your bowels. And the one people shall be stronger than the other people, the older shall serve the younger. And when her days to be delivered were fulfilled, behold, twins were in her womb! And the first came out red, all over like a hairy garment. And they called his name Esau. And after that his brother came out, and his hand took hold on Esau's heel. And his name was called Jacob. And

Isaac was sixty years old when she bore them.”  
Genesis 25:19-26, MKJV

It is well known that Esau sold his birthright to Jacob (Genesis 25:27-34) and that later Rebekah and Jacob tricked Jacob’s father, Isaac, into blessing him, too (Genesis 27:28-35, quoted a few paragraphs below). God was involved in the entire process concerning Isaac’s life. Some examples are God blessing Isaac’s crop 100-fold during a famine (Genesis 26:12) and God personally appeared to Isaac and reaffirmed the covenant he struck with Abraham.

“And the LORD appeared to him [Isaac] the same night, and said, I am the God of Abraham your father. Do not fear, for I am with you, and will bless you and multiply your seed for My servant Abraham’s sake. And he [Isaac] built an altar there, and called upon the name of the LORD, and pitched his tent there. And Isaac’s servants dug a well there.” Genesis 26:24-25, MKJV

“And may God give you [Jacob] of the dew of heaven, and the fatness of the earth, and plenty of grain and wine. Let people serve you, and let nations bow down to you. Be lord over your

brothers, and let your mother's sons bow down to you. **Cursed be everyone that curses you, and blessed be he that blesses you.** And it happened, as soon as **Isaac had made an end of blessing Jacob**, and Jacob was scarcely gone from the presence of Isaac his father, that Esau his brother came in from his hunting. And he also had made tasty meat and brought to his father. And he said to his father, Let my father arise and eat of his son's game so that your soul may bless me. And his father Isaac said to him, Who are you? And he said, I am your son, your first-born, Esau. And Isaac trembled with a great trembling, and said, Who then was the one who has hunted deer and brought to me, and I have eaten of all before you came, and have blessed him? Yea, he shall be blessed! And when Esau heard the voice of his father, he cried with a great and exceeding bitter cry, and said to his father, Bless me, me also, O my father! And he said, Your brother came with deceit, and has taken away your blessing." Genesis 27:28-35, MKJV

Please notice that anyone who blesses Jacob, and by extension his seedline, will be blessed and anyone who curses Jacob and his seedline will be cursed. Esau now hated Jacob and wanted to kill him.

Esau disobeyed God and his parents by marrying Hittite women who were a grief to Isaac and Rebekah (Genesis 26:34-35). The Hittites were listed in Genesis 15:18-21 as part of a grouping of evil nations that the Bible sometimes refers to in general as Canaanites, e.g., Exodus 13:11. In Genesis 28 Isaac blessed Jacob again and commanded him not to marry a Canaanite woman, in essence like his brother Esau did.

"And Isaac called Jacob, and blessed him, and commanded him. And he said to him, You shall not take a wife of the daughters of Canaan. Arise, go to Padan-aram, to the house of Bethuel your mother's father. And take a wife from there of the daughters of Laban your mother's brother. And may God almighty bless you, and make you fruitful, and multiply you, so that you may be a multitude of peoples. **And may He give you the blessing of Abraham, to you and to your seed with you**, so that you may inherit the land in which you are a stranger, which God gave to Abraham."

Genesis 28:1-4, MKJV

On his way to the old country to find a wife, God met Jacob in a dream.

"And he [Jacob] came on a certain place, and stayed there all night, because the sun had set. And he took of the stones of that place, and placed them at his head. And he lay down in that place to sleep. And he dreamed. And behold! A ladder was set up on the earth, and the top of it reached to Heaven! And behold! The angels of God were ascending and descending on it! And behold! The LORD stood above it, and said, I am Jehovah, the God of Abraham your father, and the God of Isaac! The land on which you lie I will give to you and to your seed. And your seed shall be like the dust of the earth, and you shall spread abroad to the west, and to the east, and to the north, and to the south. **And in you and in your seed shall all the families of the earth be blessed.** And, behold, I am with you, and will keep you in every place where you go, and will bring you again into this land. **For I will not leave you until I have done that which I have spoken of to you.** And Jacob awakened from his sleep. And he said, Surely the LORD is in this place, and I did not know." Genesis 28:11-16, MKJV

Ergo, the God-designated seedline went from Abraham to Isaac and now to Jacob, not Esau.

Jacob did as his father commanded and continued on to his mother's household in the old country. There he met Laban, his uncle (Genesis 29:10). Jacob ended up marrying Leah and Rachel, his cousins, fathering children through them. He also fathered children through taking two slave women, Bilhah from Rachel and Zilpah from Leah. He had children from all four women. This is found in Genesis 29 and 30. Leah had Reuben, Simeon, Levi, Judah, Issachar, and Zebulun, six sons in total. Later Leah also bore a daughter, Dinah. Rachel had Joseph and Benjamin, two sons in total. Bilhah had Dan and Naphtali, two sons in total. Zilpah had Gad and Asher, two sons in total. This meant that Jacob fathered 12 sons and one daughter that are named in the Bible. Later, God appeared to Jacob again and told him to return to the land of Canaan (Genesis 31:13).

On the way back to the land of Canaan, God again met Jacob and this is when the famous all-night wrestling match occurred. Jacob acquitted himself well and would not let God go until God blessed him. At the end of the wrestling match **God changed Jacob's name to Israel** and God personally blessed him.

"And Jacob was left alone. And a Man [God] wrestled there with him until the breaking of the day. And when He [God] saw that He did not prevail against him [Jacob], He touched the hollow of his thigh. And the hollow of Jacob's thigh was out of joint as he wrestled with Him. And He said, Let Me go, for the day breaks. And he said, I will not let You go except You bless me. And He said to him, What is your name? And he said, Jacob. And He said, **Your name shall no longer be called Jacob, but Israel; for like a prince you have power with God and with men, and have prevailed.** And Jacob asked and said, I pray You, reveal Your name. And He said, Why do you ask after My name? And **He blessed him there.** And Jacob called the name of the place Peniel; for I have seen God face to face, and my life is preserved."  
Genesis 32:24-30, MKJV

After God sustained Jacob through his encounter with Esau (Genesis 33), God again appeared to Jacob and re-affirmed that his name was to be Israel from then on.

"And God appeared to Jacob again when he came out of Padan-aram and blessed him. And God said to him, Your name is Jacob. Your name shall not be called Jacob any more, but Israel

shall be your name. And He called his name Israel. And God said to him, I am God Almighty. Be fruitful and multiply. A nation and a company of nations shall be from you, and kings shall come out of your loins. And the land which I gave to Abraham and Isaac, I will give to you, and to your seed after you I will give the land. And God went up from him in the place where He talked with him." Genesis 35:9-13, MKJV

The New Testament also discusses Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob providing further evidence that God is working through this designated seedline.

"I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?" God is not the God of the dead, but of the living."  
Matthew 22:32, MKJV

"There will be weeping and gnashing of teeth when you will see Abraham and Isaac and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and yourselves [workers of iniquity] being thrust out." Luke 13:28, MKJV

"And He gave him the covenant of circumcision. And so Abraham fathered Isaac and circumcised him the eighth day. And Isaac

fathered Jacob, and Jacob the twelve patriarchs." Acts 7:8, MKJV

"nor because they are the seed of Abraham are they all children. But, "In Isaac shall your Seed be called."" Romans 9:7, MKJV

"But brothers, we, like Isaac, are children of promise." Galatians 4:28, MKJV

"By faith Abraham, being tested, offered up Isaac. And he who had received the promises offered up his only-begotten son, of whom it was said that in Isaac your Seed shall be called," Hebrews 11:17-18, MKJV

Abraham is called the father of the faithful in Romans 4:16. In James 2:23 Abraham is called the friend of God. In Romans 4:3 it states that Abraham believed God and it was counted to him for righteousness.

The God-designated covenant promises seedline of Abraham is as follows:

God → Abraham → Isaac → Jacob

Jacob (renamed Israel) → has 12 sons

Each son of Israel (Jacob) = one tribe of Israel

Israel's (Jacob's) 12 sons reproduce → the Israelites

Israelites → the descendants from each of the sons of Israel (Jacob) form the twelve tribes of Israel → in totality known as → the Israelites

Israelite → does NOT mean → only the Jews (Judah is one of the twelve tribes of Israel, but only one tribe) (Israelites means all twelve tribes of Israel, including those descended from Judah)

The Israelites are the descendants from Jacob through his twelve sons. The blessing and cursing promise originally made to Abraham in Genesis 12:1-3, was extended by God to Jacob in the blessing performed via Isaac to Jacob in Genesis 27:29. This was further affirmed by God appearing in person to Jacob and directly blessing him in Genesis 35:9.

In substance and effect, those who bless the Israelites will be blessed and those who curse the Israelites will be cursed.

This is the correct understanding of the blessing and cursing promise originally made to Abraham and then ultimately extended to the Israelites, his God-designated seedline.

The covenant and seedline of Abraham does **not** go as follows (both charts below are incorrect):

God → Abraham → Ishmael

God → Abraham → Isaac → Esau

Later on, the Israelites found themselves enslaved in Egypt for many years. Then, through a series of miracles by God, they were delivered from this slavery, wandered through the wilderness for 40 years, and finally brought into the land of Canaan, fulfilling part of God's promises to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. This well-known story is detailed in Exodus and other parts of the Bible so your author cannot really add anything to what is so widely known.

Throughout the Bible God shows us that the righteous "fathers" are Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. Further, God regards himself as the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. This is no small designation on the part of God.

"saying, "I am the God of your fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob." But Moses trembled and dared not look." Acts 7:32, MKJV

In other places in the Bible, usually when God was angry at the Israelites for disobeying him, God sometimes referred to the troublemakers wandering in the wilderness or those who promised to obey God at Mount Sinai but then did not, as "the fathers."

"when your fathers tempted Me, proved Me, and saw My works forty years."  
Hebrews 3:9, MKJV

Whether the Bible is referring to the good fathers or the bad fathers depends on the context of what is being described. The good fathers are clearly Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob (Israel). The bad fathers are the Israelites who promised to obey God at Mount Sinai, but then did not. Thanks to the faith and obedience of the good fathers, God regards the Israelites as his people, which the rest of this chapter will make plain.

"For the LORD's portion is His people. Jacob is the lot of His inheritance." Deuteronomy 32:9, MKJV

### **8.2 Israel as "The Called" and "The Redeemed"**

God the Father and Jesus Christ are confident in their abilities to perform what they have promised. After all, they created the entire universe, including complex life of all kinds, and they sustain what they have created. Further, God the Father resurrected Jesus Christ, who was dead for about three days and three nights (Matthew 12:40, 28:1-7).

"But now Christ has risen from the dead, and has become the firstfruit of those who slept."  
1 Corinthians 15:20, MKJV

This was effectively a proof of concept for all men to have the confidence that they, too, can one day be resurrected to an incorruptible eternal life. The three scriptures quoted below reflect the confidence the two Jehovahs have in their ability to kill and make alive, to wound and to heal, and they also reflect that they regard Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob to be as good as resurrected already. They declare the end from

the beginning and can deliver on what they have purposed. This is because they have the love, wisdom, power, and ability to make it happen.

"But regarding the resurrection of the dead, have you not read that which was spoken to you by God, saying, "I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?" **God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.**"  
Matthew 22:31-32, MKJV

"See now that I, I am He, and there is no god with me. **I kill, and I make alive; I wound and I heal;** and there is no deliverer of My hand." Deuteronomy 32:39, MKJV

"Remember former things from forever; for I am God, and no other is God, even none like Me, declaring the end from the beginning, and from the past things which were not done, saying, **My purpose shall stand, and I will do all My pleasure;**" Isaiah 46:9-10, MKJV

Please notice that God identifies himself as the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. Further, these three good fathers of Israel are the examples he chose to use concerning the resurrection of the dead. This is something to be expounded upon, which is the purpose of the

last part of this book, beginning with this chapter.

There is a scripture, also found in Matthew 22, that needs some explaining and your author will do so throughout the balance of this book. In your author's estimation it is a bit easier to do so in explanatory pieces and then to put the pieces back together when explaining God's overall strange plan.

"For many are **called**, but few **chosen**."  
Matthew 22:14, MKJV

Obviously for someone to be chosen they would have to be called first and there might be a timing lag between someone being called and their also accepting the call with a changed life and thereby becoming chosen, too. But this does not stop God from declaring the end from the beginning in terms of one or more of the categories your author will use in his explanation below (and also in the next section). There are three categories as to just who it is that comprises "**the called**" and "**the chosen**."

Category One as a percentage of mankind is relatively small. It is composed of the few human beings who have faithfully followed God

during their lives and these faithful men and women have clearly been called and chosen. Some of these men and women are dead waiting the resurrection, some are alive today, and there will likely be more called and chosen prior to the first resurrection (1 Corinthians 15). This is the category that is usually and normally thought of by most religious people. Again, the total number of people comprising this category is a relatively small percentage of mankind and it is composed of some Israelites and also some people from other non-Israelite nations. This will be discussed more throughout this chapter and throughout the balance of this book.

Category Two is the purpose of this section and the next. No doubt to the surprise of most people reading this, the called and chosen, to God the Father and Jesus Christ, are the Israelites. Please, dear reader, allow the scriptures to speak for themselves as many will follow in this section and the next. There are some timing and other differences your author will attempt to explain throughout the balance of this book. For now, Category Two of the called and chosen is comprised of the Israelites. Since the God of the Bible identifies as the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, i.e., the God of the Israelites, perhaps it will all make sense once

you read through this chapter and the two to follow.

Category Three of the called and chosen is comprised of the rest of the human race. Some non-Israelites have already been called and chosen, which places them into Category One, but this is a very small, minuscule number, comparatively speaking. The nuances of Category Three in relation to Category One and Category Two will be explained throughout the balance of this book.

These are the broad categories of the called and chosen. There are some important exceptions in some of the categories and, again, there are timing and other differences to be explained. But your author thought it best to offer this big picture overview in the hopes that you, dear reader, will give the balance of this book a fair hearing. The summary so far is as follows, pertaining to "**the called**" and "**the chosen**":

Category One → the historic and current faithful followers of God the Father and Jesus Christ (this would obviously include any others who are called and chosen prior to the first resurrection)

Category One → composed of both → some of the physical Israelites + some non-Israelites are also included

Category One → a very small percentage → of all the people who have every lived

Category Two → Israel → who will ultimately accept God's plan

Category Three → non-Israelites who ultimately accept God's plan

With all of the above written, please notice that God calls Israel "my called."

"Listen to me, O Jacob and Israel, **My called**; I am He; I am the first, I also am the last." Isaiah 48:12, MKJV

God is also hinting, in the above scripture, that he has the power to make this true, which he will do. He does so by referring to himself as the first and also the last. God will have the last word on this one, i.e., Israel as "My called."

Israel is called by the name of God and God says the other nations will be afraid to bother Israel, obviously if Israel faithfully serves God.

"And all the peoples of the earth shall see  
that **you are called** by the name of the LORD,  
and they shall be afraid of you."  
Deuteronomy 28:10, MKJV

Some people think there was no redemption for fallen man prior to the coming of Jesus Christ to the earth, to become man's perfect Savior. Again, God can declare the end from the beginning and God will many times just presume he will be good for what he promises and talk about things he has not done yet in the past tense, because they are as good as done in his eyes. Please note the below scriptures regarding, **calling, redemption**, and God being the God of Israel. Obviously, for someone to be redeemed and saved they must be called and chosen in God's eyes.

"But now so says the LORD who created you, O Jacob, and He who formed you, O Israel; Fear not, for I have redeemed you; I have called you by your name; you are Mine."  
Isaiah 43:1, MKJV

"I am holding you by your right hand--I, the LORD your God. And I say to you, 'Do not be afraid. I am here to help you. Despised though

you are, O Israel, don't be afraid, for I will help you. **I am the LORD, your Redeemer. I am the Holy One of Israel.**"

Isaiah 41:13-14, NLT

"For your Maker is your husband; the LORD of hosts is His name; and **your Redeemer** is the Holy One of Israel; the God of the whole earth shall He be called. For **the LORD has called you** as a woman forsaken and grieved in spirit, and a wife of youth, when you were rejected, says your God." Isaiah 54:5-6, MKJV

God called Abraham, alone, clearly clarified later in the Bible as the line through Isaac (Romans 9:7-10) and Jacob (Romans 9:11-13), i.e., the Israelites. Abraham is the father of the faithful (Romans 4:16).

"Look to **Abraham your father**, and to Sarah who bore you; for **I called him alone**, and blessed him, and increased him."

Isaiah 51:2, MKJV

"For truly He did not take the nature of angels, but He [Christ] took hold of **the seed of Abraham** [the Israelites]."

Hebrews 2:16, MKJV

**"of whom it was said that **in Isaac your Seed shall be called**,"** Hebrews 11:18, MKJV

**"Go out of Babylon; flee from the Chaldeans.  
Tell it with a voice of singing, let this be heard,  
let it go out to the end of the earth; say, **The  
LORD has redeemed His servant Jacob.**"**  
Isaiah 48:20, MKJV

There are so many scriptures in the Bible where God says he has redeemed Israel that it is shocking to your author that anyone could doubt that the redemption of Israel, in God's eyes, has already happened. Here is a partial listing of the scriptures saying, in essence, that Israel has been redeemed by God: Exodus 15:13, Deuteronomy 7:8, 9:26, 13:5, 15:15, 21:8, 24:18, 2 Samuel 7:23, 1 Chronicles 17:21, Nehemiah 1:10, Psalm 74:2 quoted below showing Israel as the redeemed congregation of God, Psalm 77:15, 106:10, 107:2, 136:24, Isaiah 29:22, 44:22, 44:23, 51:11, 52:9, 62:12, 63:7-9 showing God is the Savior and redeemer of Israel, quoted below, Jeremiah 31:11, Hosea 7:13, Micah 6:4, and Zechariah 10:8. Further, a word search for "Redeemer" showed at least the following scriptures, all pertaining to God being the Redeemer of Israel, or of a righteous man as the

case may be: re Job, Job 19:25, re David, Psalm 19:14, re Israel, Psalm 78:35, Isaiah 41:14, 44:6, 44:24, 47:4, 48:17, 49:7, 49:26 quoted below showing God is Savior and Redeemer of Israel, 54:5, 54:8, 59:20, 60:16, and Jeremiah 50:33-34.

“Remember **Your congregation** [Israel], which You have purchased of old, the rod of Your inheritance **which You have redeemed**; this mount Zion in which You have dwelt.”  
Psalms 74:2, MKJV

“And I will feed those who oppress you with their own flesh; and they shall be drunk with their own blood, as with sweet wine; and all flesh shall know that **I the LORD am your Savior** and **your Redeemer, the mighty One of Jacob.**” Isaiah 49:26, MKJV

“I will mention the loving-kindnesses of the LORD, the praises of the LORD, according to all that the LORD has benefited for us, and the great good to the house of Israel by which He benefited them according to His mercies, and according to the multitude of His loving-kindnesses. For He said, Surely **they are My people**, sons that will not lie; so **He was their Savior**. In all their affliction He was afflicted,

and the Angel of His presence saved them; in His love and in His pity **He redeemed them**; and He bore them, and carried them all the days of old." Isaiah 63:7-9, MKJV

God promises to save Israel in many places throughout the Bible. Here are two places:

"But Israel shall be saved in the LORD with an everlasting salvation. You shall not be ashamed nor blush to the forevers of eternity." Isaiah 45:17, MKJV

"And so **all Israel shall be saved**; as it is written, "There shall come out of Zion the Deliverer, and He will turn away ungodliness from Jacob." Romans 11:26, MKJV

There is no question that God the Father, through the being who became Jesus Christ, called Abraham and his seedline, i.e., the Israelites. Further, there is no question that God is the Savior and Redeemer of Israel. Of course, Jesus Christ will ultimately be the God, Savior, and Redeemer of the other nations, too, and this will be covered throughout the balance of this book. Unfortunately, it is a historical fact that very few Israelites actually cooperated with God. However, this will not stop God from

making his calling, his ultimate calling pertaining to Israel, good. Again, for someone to be the called, redeemed, and saved in God's eyes they must also be chosen and so next we need to come to understand that Israel is also the chosen, which is the subject of the following section.

God → called Abraham + his seedline, Israel (Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, and the twelve tribes of Israel)

God = the Savior + the Redeemer → of Israel

### **8.3 Israel as “The Chosen”**

For the purposes of this section your author will also use the same categories as in section 8.2. Speaking of the Israelites, please note the numerous scriptures pertaining to God choosing the Israelites. Many of these scriptures refer to Israel being God's special people forever. The Bible speaks for itself below:

“For you [the Israelites] are a holy people to the LORD your God. **The LORD your God has chosen you** to be a special people to Himself above all people that are upon the face of the earth.” Deuteronomy 7:6, MKJV

"For you are a holy people to the LORD your God, and **the LORD has chosen you** to be a peculiar people to Himself, above all the nations that are on the earth." Deuteronomy 14:2, MKJV

"O seed of Israel His servant, sons of Jacob, **His chosen ones.**" 1 Chronicles 16:13, MKJV

"And **You have chosen Your people Israel for Yourself, for a people forever.** And You, LORD, became their God." 1 Chronicles 17:22, MKJV

"For You have confirmed to Yourself Your people Israel to be a people to You forever. And You, LORD, have become their God." 2 Samuel 7:24, MKJV

"seed of His servant Abraham, sons of **Jacob His chosen.**" Psalms 105:6, MKJV

"And He brought forth His people with joy, and **His chosen** with gladness," Psalms 105:43, MKJV

Many other scriptures show that Israel was brought forth out of Egypt to become God's

chosen special nation, his inheritance, and his special treasure. The below are a few:

“For they are **Your people, and Your inheritance**, which You brought out of Egypt, from the middle of the furnace of iron,”  
1 Kings 8:51, MKJV

“Blessed is the nation [Israel] whose God is the LORD; **the people He has chosen for His inheritance.**” Psalms 33:12, MKJV

“that I may see the good of **Your chosen**, that I may rejoice in the gladness of **Your nation**, to glory with **Your inheritance.**”  
Psalms 106:5, MKJV

“You will show your faithfulness and constant love **to your people, the descendants of Abraham and of Jacob**, as you promised our ancestors long ago.” Micah 7:20 GNB

Back to even more scriptures regarding Israel being God’s chosen:

“**For the LORD has chosen Jacob to Himself**, and Israel for His peculiar treasure.”  
Psalms 135:4, MKJV

“But you, Israel, are My servant, Jacob  
whom I have chosen, the seed of Abraham, My friend;” Isaiah 41:8, MKJV

“whom I have taken from the ends of the earth, **and called you** from its sides. And I said to you, You are My servant; **I have chosen you, and not cast you away.**”

Isaiah 41:9, MKJV

“So says the LORD who made you, and formed you from the womb, who will help you; Fear not, O Jacob My servant, and you, Jeshurun [a name for Israel], whom I have chosen.” Isaiah 44:2, MKJV

“Behold, I have refined you, but not with silver; I have chosen you in the furnace of affliction.” Isaiah 48:10, MKJV

“The God of this people Israel **chose our fathers** [the good fathers, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob] and exalted the people in their residency in the land of Egypt, and He brought them [the Israelites] out of it with a high arm. And about the time of forty years He tenderly bore them in the wilderness. And when He had destroyed seven nations in the land of Canaan, he gave

their land to them as an inheritance.” Acts 13:17-19, MKJV.

It is beyond dispute that Israel is the called and the chosen. Again, this corresponds to your author’s Category Two, explained in section 8.2. To end this section please note the below scripture that has Israel as both the called and the chosen in the same verse.

“For Jacob My servant’s sake, and **Israel My chosen**, I have even **called you** by your name; I have named you, though you have not known me [yet].” Isaiah 45:4

#### **8.4 Israel as “The Firstfruits”**

The early part of this section mirrors what your author taught in section 8.2. The two Jehovahs can declare the end from the beginning and can deliver on what they purpose. This is because they have the love, wisdom, and ability to make it happen. They can kill, make alive, wound, heal, resurrect and they are the only two Gods in the universe. Their purpose will stand.

“Remember former things from forever; for I am God, and no other is God, even none like

**Me, declaring the end from the beginning,**  
and from the past things which were not done,  
**saying, My purpose shall stand, and I will do  
all My pleasure;**" Isaiah 46:9-10, MKJV

The concept of "the firstfruits" is also nuanced and, once again, your author will use three categories to help make the idea of the firstfruits plain.

Category One is composed of one person/being, i.e., Jesus Christ. He is the literal fulfillment of the wave sheaf offering mentioned in Leviticus 23:9-14. He is THE FIRSTFRUIT. The wave sheaf offering was performed on the first day of the week during the days of unleavened bread. Your author will quote verses 9-11 below:

"And the LORD spoke to Moses, saying,  
Speak to the sons of Israel and say to them,  
When you have come into the land which I give to you, and shall reap the harvest of it, then you shall bring a sheaf of the firstfruits of your harvest to the priest. And he shall wave the sheaf before the LORD to be received for you.  
On the next day after the sabbath the priest shall wave it." Leviticus 23:9-11, MKJV

At or near the end of each of the four gospels there is an account of Jesus being resurrected from the dead. John's account includes Mary Magdalene seeing the resurrected Jesus and Jesus declaring he was going to ascend to his Father in heaven, thus becoming the wave sheaf offering that was accepted for all mankind.

"And when she had said this, she turned backward and saw Jesus standing, but she did not know that it was Jesus. Jesus said to her, Woman, why do you weep? Whom do you seek? Supposing Him to be the gardener, she said to Him, Sir, if you have carried Him away from here, tell me where you have laid Him and I will take Him away. Jesus said to her, Mary! She turned herself and said to Him, Rabboni! (which is to say, Master!) Jesus said to her, Do not touch Me, for I have not yet ascended to My Father. But go to My brothers and say to them, I ascend to My Father and Your Father, and to My God and your God. Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples that she had seen the Lord and that He had spoken these things to her."  
John 20:14-18, MKJV

"But now Christ has risen from the dead, and has become **the firstfruit** of those who slept."  
1 Corinthians 15:20, MKJV

Category One of the firstfruits, Jesus Christ, is easily and widely understood and so your author will write no more about it here.

Category Two of the firstfruits is analogous to Category One of the called and chosen. It is relatively small as a percentage of mankind. It is composed of the few human beings who have faithfully followed God during their lives and these faithful men and women have clearly been called and chosen and they also compose a category and type of firstfruits for the two Jehovahs. Some of these men and women are dead, waiting the resurrection, some are alive today, and there will likely be more prior to the first resurrection (1 Corinthians 15). Similar to Category One of the called and chosen, this is the category of firstfruits that is usually and normally thought of by most religious people. Again, the total number of people comprising this category is a relatively small percentage of mankind and it is composed of some Israelites and also some people from non-Israelite nations. This will be discussed more throughout this chapter and also the balance of this book. To continue, the Category Two firstfruits have received the Holy Spirit from God and this

makes them different from other men and women at this time.

"For the earnest expectation of the creation waits for the manifestation of the sons of God. For the creation was not willingly subjected to vanity, but because of Him who subjected it on hope that the creation itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. And we know that the whole creation groans and travails in pain together until now. And not only so, but ourselves also, **who have the firstfruit of the Spirit**, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, awaiting adoption, the redemption of our body." Romans 8:19-23, MKJV

"Of His own will He brought us forth with the Word of truth, **for us to be a certain firstfruit of His creatures.**" James 1:18, MKJV

"These are those who were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These are those who follow the Lamb wherever He goes. These were redeemed from among men, **as a firstfruit to God and to the Lamb.**"  
Revelation 14:4, MKJV

The Category Two firstfruits are further depicted symbolically in that they represent those, other than Jesus Christ, who have received the Holy Spirit in this age (obviously including those who have died in the faith in the past). The Leviticus 23 holy day of the Feast of Weeks depicted the future (now past) original day of Pentecost (Acts 2), when the Holy Spirit was received by the apostles of Jesus Christ and those others present whom God wished to give it to. The firstfruits mentioned in the scripture below refer to your author's Category Two of the firstfruits. The fact that the bread was baked with yeast was unusual for offerings to God and shows that the two Jehovahs chose a symbol of expanding yeast because they want to ultimately give their Holy Spirit to as many other human beings who will cooperate with them in their divine individualism process.

"And you shall count to you from the next day after the sabbath, from the day that you brought the sheaf of the wave offering; seven sabbaths shall be complete. To the next day after the seventh sabbath you shall number fifty days. And you shall offer a new food offering to the LORD. You shall bring out of your homes two wave loaves of two-tenth parts. They shall be of

fine flour. They shall be baked with yeast,  
**firstfruits to the LORD.”**

Leviticus 23:15-17, MKJV

Explaining Category Three is the purpose of this section. Once again, no doubt to the surprise of most people reading this, this category of the firstfruits, to God the Father and Jesus Christ, are the Israelites. Once again, dear reader, please allow for the Bible to speak for itself. There are some timing and other differences your author will attempt to explain throughout the balance of this book. For now, Category Three of the firstfruits is composed of the Israelites. The big idea or general rule pertaining to the firstfruits comprising Category Three is this: of those human beings alive at the time, **Israel goes first, then the nations.**

“Israel was holiness to the LORD, and the firstfruits of His increase. All that devour him shall offend; evil shall come on them, says the LORD.” Jeremiah 2:3, MKJV

“And you [Moses] shall say to Pharaoh, Thus says the Lord: Israel is My son, My first-born.” Exodus 4:22, MKJV

Ironically, your author is not so sure the ancient Israelites actually understood that when they were bringing the firstfruits of their annual crops as an offering to God, those firstfruits of their crops actually represented themselves. God specifically says that all the house of Israel will serve him and it is implied that God would receive and accept them - as the firstfruits of the balance of mankind (per the Ezekiel 20:40 scripture quoted just below and the Jeremiah 2:3 quoted just above):

“For in My holy mountain, in the mountain height of Israel, says the Lord Jehovah, there all the house of Israel, all of those in the land, shall serve Me. There will I receive them, and there will I ask for your offerings and the firstfruits of your offerings, with all your holy things.”  
Ezekiel 20:40, MKJV

To help understand Israel as the firstfruits it also helps to understand: 1) the idea of the Israelites as a congregation who were supposed to be a body of witnesses for God and 2) the idea of Israel as God's servant.

"You are **My witnesses**, says the LORD, and **My servant whom I have chosen**; that you may know and believe Me, and understand that I am He. Before Me no God was formed, nor shall there be after Me." Isaiah 43:10, MKJV

""But **you are my witnesses, O Israel!**" says the LORD. "And you are my servant. You have been chosen to know me, believe in me, and understand that I alone am God. There is no other God; there never has been and never will be. **I am the LORD, and there is no other Savior.**" Isaiah 43:10-11, NLT

"Yet now hear, O Jacob My servant, and Israel whom I have chosen;" Isaiah 44:1, MKJV

The phrase "the congregation of Israel" is found three times in one chapter of the Bible. It is found in Exodus 12, verses 3, 6, and 19. The Hebrew word, "edah," per *Strong's Exhaustive Concordance Of The Bible* (Strong's) is Strong's word #5712 and it is usually translated as "**congregation.**" It is used dozens and dozens of times in the Bible. The root word it comes from is Strong's word #5707, "ed" and this word is translated as "**witness.**" Putting this all together it means that God regards the congregation of Israel as a body of witnesses.

In other words, God regards the congregation of Israel as, in substance and effect, the congregation of God. Even the phraseology of "the congregation" is interesting, but that is the subject of the next section.

God regards → the congregation of Israel as → the congregation of God

"Speak to all **the congregation of Israel**, saying, In the tenth of this month they shall take to them each man a lamb for a father's house, a lamb for a house." Exodus 12:3, MKJV

"And you shall keep it up until the fourteenth day of the same month. And the whole assembly of **the congregation of Israel** shall kill it in the evening." Exodus 12:6, MKJV

"Seven days there shall be no leaven found in your houses. For whoever eats that which is leavened, even that soul shall be cut off from **the congregation of Israel**, among the aliens and among the natives of the land."  
Exodus 12:19, MKJV

""But now, listen to me, Jacob **my servant**, Israel **my chosen one**." ... "Do not tremble; do not be afraid. Have I not proclaimed from ages

past what my purposes are for you? You are **my witnesses**--is there any other God? No! There is no other Rock--not one!"" Isaiah 44:1,8, NLT

God's people are Israel. When King David sat before God, the conversation was recorded for our benefit:

"And what one nation in the earth is like Your people, like Israel, whom God went to redeem for a people to Himself, and to make Him a name, and to do for You great things and terrible, for Your land, before Your people, whom You redeemed to You from Egypt, from the nations and their gods? For You have confirmed to Yourself Your people Israel to be a people to You forever. And You, LORD, have become their God." 2 Samuel 7:23-24, MKJV

The Israelites were to honor and obey God and to live differently than the other nations did. In so doing the other nations were supposed to see how different and better God's ways were. In short, Israel was supposed to serve God and to be God's congregation of witnesses. They failed, with big ramifications for mankind and themselves. This will be discussed throughout the balance of this book.

“Behold, I [Moses] have taught you statutes and judgments, even as the LORD my God commanded me, so that you should do so in the land where you go to possess it. And you shall keep and do them, for this is your wisdom and your understanding **in the sight of the nations**, which shall hear all these statutes and say, Surely this great nation is a wise and understanding people. For who is a great nation whose God is coming near to them, as Jehovah our God is, in all our calling on him? And who is a great nation whose statutes and judgments are so righteous as all this law which I set before you today?” Deuteronomy 4:5-8, MKJV

“And the LORD has taken you today to be His peculiar people, as He has promised you, and to keep all His commandments, and **to make you high above all nations which he has made**, in praise and in name and in honor, and that you may be a holy people to the LORD your God, even as He has spoken.”  
Deuteronomy 26:18-19, MKJV

The upper class in England is known to have lived, or at least were supposed to have lived believing and acting upon the phrase “with privileges come responsibilities.” Israel, with privileges, has not yet fulfilled its responsibilities

to either God or mankind. They will, however. And this is why God regards them as the Category Three firstfruits.

### **8.5 Israel as the “Congregation of God” and the future Bride of Christ**

In the prior section it was made plain that Israel is the congregation of God. Israel, the Category Three firstfruits, was supposed to be God’s servants and a light to the other nations. The word congregation is illuminative and the dictionary definition might prove helpful right here. Per *Merriam-Webster’s Collegiate Dictionary, Eleventh Edition*, the word **“congregation”** is defined as follows [bracketed comments and emphasis mine]:

“1a: an assembly of persons: gathering; esp [especially]: an assembly of persons for worship and religious instruction b: **a religious community:** as 1) an organized body of believers in a particular locality ... ”

Congregation, in the normally understood sense of the word, is just what the Israelites were supposed to be. They were to be a religious community, being instructed in how to live, including how to properly worship God, and they

were to be organized the way God instructed. In short, the called, chosen, and firstfruit Israelites, God's servants and witnesses to the other nations, were the congregation of God. The phrase, "the congregation of Israel," used numerous times in scripture, confirms this (Exodus 12:3,6,19,47; Leviticus 16:17; Numbers 16:9; 32:4; Deuteronomy 31:30; Joshua 8:35; 22:18,20; 1 Kings 8:5,14,22,55; 12:3; 1 Chronicles 13:2; 2 Chronicles 5:6; 6:3,12,13; 24:6). It means just what a normal person would think and just what the dictionary definition above depicts, a religious community and organized body of believers. Your author will try and avoid just using the English word "church" in this section because it can be easily misunderstood, preferring the word "congregation" instead. To many people the word "church" conveys either the idea of a church building, or of a particular denomination of a religion, or even of a fellowship of particular believers who meet in a locally well-known building. For the reader's ease, your author will sometimes include (church) as a parenthetical notation to help the reader's understanding.

Many might protest that ancient Israel failed God, themselves, and their fellow man. True. But this is evidently irrelevant to God the Father

and Jesus Christ (ultimately irrelevant). Many others will protest that "the church" is supposed to be composed of converted Christians who have received the Holy Spirit of God and are led by it (Romans 8:14). True. The church is supposed to be made up of true believers who worship God the Father and Jesus Christ and obey and serve them, but this is confusing the Category One called and chosen and the Category Two firstfruits with the Israelites, who are the Category Two called and chosen and the Category Three firstfruits. Evidently, the two Jehovahs, who have a purpose they are going to execute, are not too concerned about all this. They can see the end from the beginning and are determined to succeed and to use Israel to do so. And they will, as the balance of this book will point out. For now, your author acknowledges that only a very small percentage of the called and chosen, firstfruit physical Israelites were converted and followed God faithfully. God knows this and yet he still calls the Israelites, the called, the chosen, the firstfruits, the congregation, my witnesses, and my servants, etc. God is determined to work through Israel and he will. He even calls non-Israelite converts to Christianity, members of "the Commonwealth of Israel."

"Therefore remember that you, the nations [non-Israelite converts to what is known as Christianity], in time past were in the flesh, who are called Uncircumcision by that which is called the Circumcision in the flesh made by hands; and that at that time you were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world. But now in Christ Jesus you who were once afar off are made near by the blood of Christ." Ephesians 2:11-13, MKJV

Those non-Israelites who repent of their sins, accept Jesus Christ as savior, and receive the Holy Spirit are now members of the Commonwealth of Israel. Obviously someone who is not racially a physical Israelite does not change their race when they become a follower of the true God. What happens instead is they become, in essence, **spiritual Israelites** via their new membership in the Commonwealth of Israel. God also calls this Commonwealth of Israel, "the Israel of God."

"For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision has any strength, nor uncircumcision, but a new creation. And as many as walk according to this

rule, peace and mercy be upon them and upon  
**the Israel of God.**" Galatians 6:15-16, MKJV

For more information, there is an extensive series of Bible teachings pertaining to Israel being the congregation (church) of God on the website, [www.teachingthelaw.org](http://www.teachingthelaw.org). All of the lessons are free. There are 91 lessons (each about 45 minutes in length) using scriptures throughout the Bible revealing Israel to be the congregation (church) of God. It is beyond the scope of this section of the book to detail every single scripture and inference included in this online teaching series.

Since the time of the exodus of the Israelites from Egypt, God has always had a congregation. Some members of that congregation were converted (had the Holy Spirit of God), but, unfortunately, most were not.

"An Instruction of Asaph. O God, have You cast us off forever? Will Your anger smoke against the sheep of Your pasture? Remember Your congregation, which You have purchased of old, the rod of Your inheritance which You have redeemed; this mount Zion in which You have dwelt." Psalms 74:1-2, MKJV

**"This One [Jesus Christ] God has exalted to be a Ruler and Savior to His right hand in order to give repentance and remission of sins to Israel."** Acts 5:31, MKJV

Of course God wants to give repentance and remission of sins to Israel because Israel is the congregation (church) of God.

There are many places where the Bible says or we can logically infer that a certain few of the ancient Israelites had the Holy Spirit. David's prayer of repentance in Psalm 51 is one of them.

**"Cast me not away from Your presence, and take not Your Holy Spirit from me."**  
Psalms 51:11, MKJV

**"For David himself said by the Holy Spirit:**  
"The LORD said to my Lord, Sit at My right hand until I place Your enemies as Your footstool."'  
Mark 12:36, MKJV

Obviously, David had the Holy Spirit, as is further confirmed in Acts 2:25-35, where David is clearly sealed by God and awaiting the resurrection of the dead, i.e., the first resurrection spoken of in 1 Corinthians 15. Further, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob were

depicted in Matthew 22:32 as being as good as resurrected already. This, plus Abraham being the father of the faithful (Romans 4:16) shows he clearly had the Holy Spirit. There is no way that the father of the faithful could have that role unless he had the Holy Spirit. Ergo, the righteous fathers had the Holy Spirit and the prophets also clearly had the Holy Spirit of God.

"About which salvation the prophets sought out and searched out, prophesying concerning the grace for you; searching for what, or what manner of time, the Spirit of Christ made clear within them, testifying beforehand of the sufferings of Christ, and the glories that should follow. To them it was revealed that not to themselves, but to us, they ministered the things which are now reported to you by those who have preached the gospel to you in the Holy Spirit sent from Heaven; which things the angels desire to look into." 1 Peter 1:10-12, MKJV

"For **prophecy** was not borne at any time by the will of man, but holy men of God spoke being borne along by the Holy Spirit."

2 Peter 1:21, MKJV

Further still, Moses obviously had the Holy Spirit.

"Then he remembered the days of old,  
Moses, and his people, saying, Where is he that  
brought them up out of the sea with the  
shepherd of his flock? where is he that put his  
holy Spirit within him?" Isaiah 63:11, KJV

It is a fair comment to point out that the ancient Israelites were mostly carnal, not spiritual, and they failed God and man ... so far. Their failure is the subject of the next section so no more will be written here. Your author's main points concerning the scriptures above are that some Israelites of old had the Holy Spirit ... and others could have had it had they not rebelled against God, the leadership at the time, and the divine law instructions. A further important point is that God is not all that worried about Israel not being converted yet. Yet is the operative word, because God has the power, love, wisdom, and ability to eventually convert Israel.

"And so **all Israel shall be saved**; as it is written, "There shall come out of Zion the Deliverer, and He will turn away ungodliness from Jacob." Romans 11:26, MKJV

"Therefore so says the LORD, who redeemed Abraham, concerning the house of Jacob [the Israelites]: Jacob shall not now be ashamed, nor shall his face now become pale. But when he sees his children, the work of My hands, in his midst, they shall sanctify My name, and sanctify the Holy one of Jacob, and shall fear the God of Israel. Those who erred in spirit shall come to understanding, and those who murmured shall learn doctrine." Isaiah 29:22-24, MKJV

God is going to convert the Israelites and make them useful as his congregation (church), his body of witnesses, his firstfruits, his called and chosen. God is not going to fail Israel AND Israel is no longer going to fail God, or their fellow man.

Some confusion among Christians could be eliminated if they actually understood who the God of the Old Testament was. It is important for the reader to be aware that **the being who became Jesus Christ was the God of the Old Testament.** To prove this is beyond the scope of this section, as there are numerous scriptural proofs of this fact, but a few scriptures showing that Jesus Christ was the God of the Old Testament are as follows:

“Moreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea; And did all eat the same spiritual meat; And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ.” 1 Corinthians 10:1-4, KJV

“Because I will publish the name of the LORD: ascribe ye greatness unto our God. He is the Rock, his work is perfect: for all his ways are judgment: a God of truth and without iniquity, just and right is he.” Deuteronomy 32:3-4, KJV

“Of the Rock that begat thee thou art unmindful, and hast forgotten God that formed thee.” Deuteronomy 32:18, KJV [God the Father created all things through Jesus Christ, Ephesians 3:9]

“Truly You are a God who hides Yourself, O God of Israel, **the Savior.**” Isaiah 45:15, MKJV

“**O LORD,** though our iniquities testify against us, act for Your name’s sake; for our backslidings are many; we have sinned against You. O **the Hope of Israel, its Savior** in time

of trouble, why should You be as a stranger in the land, and as a traveler turning in to lodge?"  
Jeremiah 14:7-8, MKJV

""But **you are my witnesses, O Israel!**" says the LORD. "And you are my servant. You have been chosen to know me, believe in me, and understand that I alone am God. There is no other God; there never has been and never will be. **I am the LORD, and there is no other Savior.**" Isaiah 43:10-11, NLT

"And David spoke to the LORD the words of this song in the day the LORD had delivered him out of the hand of all his enemies, and out of the hand of Saul. And he said, The LORD is my Rock, and my Fortress, and my Deliverer. The God who is my Rock, in Him will I trust. He is my Shield, and the Horn of my salvation, my High Tower, and my Refuge, **my Savior.** You save me from violence."

2 Samuel 22:1-3, MKJV

Understanding whom the God of the Old Testament was and also understanding that Israel is the congregation of God are important facts to get right as one attempts to understand the Bible. Your author concedes it can be a bit confusing for those who are used to thinking

about a church being comprised solely of converted, led by the Holy Spirit, members. Once again, God declares the end from the beginning pertaining to "all Israel being saved," and so the two Jehovahs evidently are just not that worried about the fact that the vast majority of physical Israelites who have ever lived did not serve them properly and were not converted. One day, they will be.

From God's point of view → Israel → is the congregation (church) of God.

As a point of additional clarification and emphasis, the word usually translated in the New Testament as either church or churches is the Greek word, "ekklesia," also sometimes spelled "ecclesia." The New Testament also has it translated as assembly in three places and congregation in two places. It is Strong's word #1577 and Strong's has it defined as: "an assembly, a (religious) congregation." This fits with the Biblical understanding of physical Israel being the congregation of God, expanded in the New Testament, in particular, to include non-Israelites who become added to the Commonwealth of Israel (spiritually added in). The non-Israelites who are spiritually added into the congregation of Israel are now part of the

Israel of God. *Merriam Webster's Collegiate Dictionary Eleventh Edition* has "ecclesi" and "ecclesio" – combined form, "ecclesia," as being from the Greek "ekklesia" meaning ... "assembly of citizens, church." This definition also fits your author's narrative. In short, Israel is the congregation of God and God's body of witnesses. When non-Israelites are converted, they are now regarded by God the Father and Jesus Christ as citizens of Israel, in this case, the spiritual Commonwealth of Israel, the Israel of God. Hopefully this short interlude on "church" helps readers to understand that God is using Israel to accomplish his purposes and this is not changing in the New Testament period, or thereafter, as the rest of this book will make plain.

The last point of this section is to hopefully eliminate widespread confusion as to who is going to marry Jesus Christ. The Bible references God marrying various peoples and geographic entities and most people these days just assume that Christ is going to marry "the church." That assumption is correct. Their presumption they know the identity of the church is not – hence this section. Perhaps it would be helpful to list out the various candidates for "the bride of Christ." In big

picture terms, it would seem there are three possible candidates:

Candidate Number One – Israel:

"For Zion's sake I will not be silent, and for Jerusalem's sake I will not rest, until its righteousness goes out as brightness, and her salvation as a burning lamp. And the nations will see your righteousness, and all kings your glory; and you will be called by a new name, which the mouth of the LORD will name. You also will be a crown of glory in the hand of the LORD, and a royal diadem in the hand of your God. You will no more be called Forsaken; nor will your land any more be called Desolate; but you will be called **My Delight**, is in her, **and your land, Married**; for the LORD delights in you, and **your land will be married**. For as a young man marries a virgin, so will your sons marry you; and **as the bridegroom rejoices over the bride, so will your God rejoice over you.**" Isaiah 62:1-5, MKJV

There is a lot going on in the above scriptural passage. First, Zion, Jerusalem, "your land will be married," "the Lord delights in you," and "as the bridegroom rejoices over the bride, so your God rejoice over you" are all obvious

references to God marrying Israel. Second, Israel is prophesied to become righteous. This is an example of God declaring the end from the beginning and having the confidence to carry out his purpose for Israel. Third, the nations will see Israel's righteousness. Israel finally does its job as a servant of God and a witness to the nations. And, in addition to being called, "My Delight," God is going to give Israel a new name. If the above passage was not clear enough, then the below two scriptures are point-blank:

"**For your Maker is your husband**; the LORD of hosts is His name; and **your Redeemer** is the Holy One of Israel; the God of the whole earth shall He be called. For **the LORD has called you** as a woman forsaken and grieved in spirit, and a wife of youth, when you were rejected, says your God."

Isaiah 54:5-6, MKJV

Jesus Christ as the God of the Old Testament is the Maker and the husband of Israel and Israel's Redeemer (Savior). The Lord of hosts is his name. Another point-blank scripture follows:

"Turn, O backsliding sons [Israel, verse 12], says the LORD; for **I am married to you**; and I

will take you one from a city, and two from a family, and I will bring you to Zion."

Jeremiah 3:14, MKJV

"And it shall be at that day, says the LORD, **you shall call Me, My Husband** [Israel, Hosea 1:11 not quoted], and shall no more call Me, My Baal. For I will take away the names of the Baals out of her mouth, and they will no more be remembered by their name. And in that day I will cut a covenant for them, with the beasts of the field, and with the birds of the heavens, and with the creeping things of the ground. And I will break the bow and the sword and the battle out of the earth, and will make them to lie down safely. And **I will betroth you to Me forever.** Yea, **I will betroth you to Me in righteousness,** and in judgment, and in loving-kindness, and in mercies. I will even betroth you to Me in faithfulness. And you shall know the LORD." Hosea 2:16-20, MKJV

Jesus Christ, the God of Israel is going to convert and marry Israel. Not only is all Israel going to be saved, they are all ultimately going to be married to Jesus Christ ... forever.

Candidate Number Two – the church (presumed by most to be "the New Testament" church:

"For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy. For I have espoused you [the Corinthians as part of the "New Testament church"] to one Man, to present you as a pure virgin to Christ." 2 Corinthians 11:2, MKJV

"Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church and gave Himself for it, that He might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the Word, that He might present it to Himself as the glorious church, without spot or wrinkle or any such things, but that it should be holy and without blemish. So men ought to love their wives as their own bodies. He who loves his wife loves himself. For no man ever yet hated his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, even as the Lord loves the church. For we are members of His body, of His flesh, and of His bones. "For this cause a man shall leave his father and mother and shall be joined to his wife, and the two of them shall be one flesh." This is a great mystery, but **I speak concerning Christ and the church.**" Ephesians 5:25-32, MKJV

"So, my brothers, you also have become dead to the law by the body of Christ so that **you should be married to Another, even to**

**Him raised from the dead**, that we should bring forth fruit to God.” Romans 7:4, MKJV

Of course, all of the scriptural references pertaining to Candidate Number Two hinge on the correct interpretation of just who the church is.

### Candidate Number Three - New Jerusalem

“And one of the seven angels who had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues came to me and talked with me, saying, Come here, **I will show you the bride, the Lamb’s wife.** And he carried me away in the Spirit to a great and high mountain and showed me that great city, **the holy Jerusalem**, descending out of Heaven from God, having the glory of God. And its light was like a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal. And it had a great and high wall, with twelve gates. And at the gates were twelve angels, and names inscribed, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the sons of Israel:”

Revelation 21:9-12, MKJV

The Lamb is clearly a reference to Jesus Christ. The holy Jerusalem is the capital of a finally converted Israel. Each one of the twelve gates

into the city is named for one of the tribes of Israel.

The only possible Biblical and logical reconciliation of the three candidates is that **Jesus Christ will marry Israel, who he regards as his church (congregation)**. What is regarded as the New Testament church is composed of some who are converted physical Israelites and it is further composed of some people who are converted of the non-Israelite nations and are thus grafted into Israel (Romans 11:17-18). Those converts of the non-Israelite nations, the effectively-called-and-chosen-now non-Israelites, who are grafted into Israel, are now regarded by God the Father and Jesus Christ as spiritual Israelites, members of the Commonwealth of Israel (Ephesians 2:12). Christ cannot marry a city, ergo New Jerusalem is simply emblematic of Israel being that it is the future capital of a now-converted Israel, i.e., spiritual Israel. **Jesus Christ will marry his church and his church is Israel**. At this time it is true that only a few of the Israelites are converted, but God promises to convert the rest of the Israelites later and then they will be part of the marriage of the Lamb, too. This is explained in more detail in chapters nine and ten. This is an analogous marriage from the

human point of view and all analogies break down if you stretch them too far. Jesus Christ will marry the Category One called and chosen, which is the same as the Category Two firstfruits, shortly after his second coming (Revelation 19). And as other Israelites are converted in the future, they, too, will join the marriage covenant and marriage then, at that time, in a process that will continue until all of the Israelites are married to Jesus Christ.

Some people might object that God divorced Israel, but that was only for a time. It was not a permanent divorce. Again, God looks to the future and speaks in the present as if he had already performed the work necessary to accomplish his purposes. God is going to bring all of the twelve tribes of Israel back to the land of Israel, the land that was promised to Abraham (Genesis 15:18-21), and God is going to tear up the bill of divorce (Isaiah 50:1), and marry Israel forever.

"So says the LORD, Where is your mother's bill of divorce, whom I have put away? Or to which of My creditors have I sold you? Behold, you were sold for your iniquities, and your mother is put away for your sins."

Isaiah 50:1, MKJV

God was angry at Israel for sinning and worshipping other gods and threw both the Northern ten tribes and the Southern two tribes out of his house (off of the land). God said that when the Israelites return to him, and they will, he would be merciful to them and not keep his anger forever. Notice in the scriptural passages below that God, through all this, still regards himself as being married to Israel, his congregation of witnesses.

"They say, If a man puts away his wife, and she goes from him and will be for another man, will he return to her again? Would not that land be greatly defiled? But you play the harlot with many lovers; yet come back to Me, says the LORD." Jeremiah 3:1, MKJV

"And I saw, when for all the causes for which backsliding Israel committed adultery, I sent her away and gave a bill of divorce to her, yet her treacherous sister Judah did not fear, but she went and whored, she also. And it happened, from the folly of her whoredom, she defiled the land and fornicated with stones and stocks. And yet for all this her treacherous sister Judah has not turned to Me with her whole heart, but with falsehood, says the LORD. And the LORD said to

me, The backsliding Israel has justified herself more than treacherous Judah. Go and cry these words toward the north, and say, Return, O backsliding Israel, says the LORD; and I will not cause My anger to fall on you; for I am merciful, says the LORD, and I will not keep anger forever. Only acknowledge your iniquity, that you have sinned against the LORD your God and have scattered your ways to the strangers under every green tree, and you have not obeyed My voice, says the LORD. Turn, O backsliding sons, says the LORD; **for I am married to you;** and I will take you one from a city, and two from a family, and I will bring you to Zion. And I will give you shepherds according to My heart, who shall feed you with knowledge and understanding. And it will be when you have multiplied and increased in the land, in those days, says the LORD, they shall say no more, The ark of the covenant of the LORD! Nor shall it come to mind; nor shall they remember it; nor shall they visit it; nor shall it be made any more. At that time they shall call Jerusalem the throne of the LORD; and all nations shall be gathered to it, to the name of the LORD, to Jerusalem. Nor shall they walk any more after the stubbornness of their evil heart. In those days the house of Judah [the Southern two tribes] shall walk with the house of Israel [the Northern ten tribes],

and they shall come together out of the land of the north to the land that I have given for an inheritance to your fathers. But I said, How shall I put you among the sons, and give you a pleasant land, a beautiful inheritance among the hosts of nations? And I said, You shall call Me, My Father, and shall not turn away from Me. Surely as a wife treacherously departs from her husband, so you have dealt treacherously with me, O house of Israel, says the LORD."

Jeremiah 3:8-20, MKJV

Even though Israel was unfaithful to God, God will never be unfaithful to Israel and God will bring Israel back to the land, convert them (Jeremiah 31, Hebrews 10), and reaffirm his marriage to them. Israel is the true church, the congregation of God, his body of witnesses, and the bride of the Lamb.

#### **8.6 Israel as "a holy nation" and "a kingdom of priests" fails God and man**

The Israelites, all twelve tribes, had a special calling from the two Jehovahs and to this very day they have failed God and man in regards to this special calling. It will not always be so, as chapter nine will make plain. Their calling was to be a holy nation and a kingdom of priests.

They were placed at the center of the earth, in between the three continents of Asia, Africa, and Europe. They were to follow the divine law instructions, i.e., to learn and to practice them. They were also to learn to use reason, in order to learn and then apply natural laws, exercising productive dominion over their portion of the earth. They were to respect individual natural rights. They were supposed to be an example to the nations. If they had done this consistently, God would have greatly blessed them and continued dwelling among them. When other nations inquired as to how Israel had achieved such a great society, Israel was to have instructed them to follow Israel's example in following God. This did not happen.

"And I will dwell among the sons of Israel, and will be their God." Exodus 29:45, MKJV

"And you shall be to Me a kingdom of priests and a holy nation. These are the words which you shall speak to the sons of Israel."

Exodus 19:6, MKJV

"And our kings, our rulers, our priests, and our fathers, have not kept Your law, nor listened to Your commandments and Your words with

which You testified against them.” Nehemiah 9:34, MKJV

“As the thief is ashamed when he is found, so is the house of Israel ashamed; they, their kings, their rulers, and their priests, and their prophets;” Jeremiah 2:26, MKJV

The Israelites did not bear true witness to **the way** of God. They bore false witness (Exodus 20:16).

The same basic terminology is used in the New Testament pertaining to those firstfruits that are called and chosen now (Category One of the called and chosen and Category Two of the firstfruits). It mimics the language of Exodus 19:6 where Israel is told to be a kingdom of priests and a holy nation.

“But you are a chosen generation, **a royal priesthood, a holy nation** [the Commonwealth of Israel], a people for possession, so that you might speak of the praises of Him who has called you out of darkness into His marvelous light;” 1 Peter 2:9, MKJV

“even from Jesus Christ the faithful Witness, the First-born from the dead and the Ruler of

the kings of the earth. To Him who loved us and washed us from our sins in His own blood, and made us **kings** and **priests** to God and His Father, to Him be glory and dominion forever and ever. Amen.” Revelation 1:5-6, MKJV

Israel → was to be → 1) a holy nation 2) a kingdom of priests

The firstfruits who are doing the work of God now → are to be → 1) a holy nation now and will be → 2) kings and priests (with Jesus)

The parallels of God’s instructions and promises to Israel and to those spiritual Israelites (Christians) called and chosen now, are further evidence that Israel is God’s congregation (church). But right now only the Category Two firstfruits are actually doing their job. However, since God considers the firstfruits of Category Two to actually be part of the congregation of Israel, i.e., the Commonwealth of Spiritual Israel, this should be no surprise.

The two Jehovahs declare the end from the beginning. Their purposes will be achieved and they are not going to allow Israel to fail them for much longer. God’s original purpose for Israel will stand:

"For you are **a holy people** to the LORD your God. The LORD your God has chosen you to be a special people to Himself above all people that are upon the face of the earth."  
Deuteronomy 7:6, MKJV

Unfortunately, the Israelites never served God consistently. They ended up worshipping other gods, taking into their own culture pagan and vile practices that alienated the true God. It is a well known historical fact that the Northern Ten Tribes of Israel were expelled from the Promised Land about 721-718 B.C. The Southern Two Tribes of Israel were thrown off the land about 586 B.C. Things have never been the same in land of Israel since. Israel being expelled from the Promised Land is widely known and your author cannot add anything of value to the historical record, ergo he will write nothing more here. The Israelites wanted to enjoy the material prosperity that being in a special place on earth would allow. They wanted God's blessings without remembering to have the correct values pertaining to abundant life, without obtaining and using the virtues, without making the proper sacrifices, without doing the hard and thoughtful work necessary to build out sustainable and successful lives, and

without exhibiting the humility and thankfulness before God that they should have. What is really important right here is that instead of generating and enjoying the most moral, intelligent, and productive culture in the history of the human race, and instead of developing the leading civilization on earth, they failed. The below scripture sums up how far the Israelites fell. They wanted the good times without understanding what it takes to make those good times sustainable; they disregarded the work of God.

"Woe to those who rise up early in the morning to go after strong drink; tarrying in the twilight while wine inflames them! And the lyre, and the harp, the timbrel, and pipe, and wine, are at their feasts; but **they do not regard the work of the LORD**. Yea, they do not see the work of His hands. **For this My people go into exile without knowledge**, and their honorable men into famine, and his multitude is dried up with thirst." Isaiah 5:11-13, MKJV

Israel did not regard the work of the LORD (God). They rebelled and lost the divine favor. They ended up going into exile without knowledge. They don't remember who they are or what it would take to really please God.

Israel was supposed to be a holy nation; an example and light to the other nations and they don't even know who they are today. In short, a big problem with all of this is the following:

### **With Israel blind the nations are blind, too!**

"He shows His word to Jacob, His statutes and His judgments to Israel. He has not done so with any nation; and they have not known His judgments. Praise the LORD!"

Psalms 147:19-20, MKJV

When God threw Israel off of the land, and gave them into the hands of nations even worse than Israel itself, he effectively blinded them and made them deaf.

""Oh, how deaf and blind you are toward me! Why won't you listen? Why do you refuse to see? Who in all the world is as blind as my own people, my servant? Who is as deaf as my messengers? Who is as blind as my chosen people, the servant of the LORD? You see and understand what is right but refuse to act on it. You hear, but you don't really listen." The LORD has magnified his law and made it truly glorious. Through it he had planned to show the world that he is righteous. But what a sight his people

are, for they have been robbed, enslaved, imprisoned, and trapped. They are fair game for all and have no one to protect them. Will not even one of you apply these lessons from the past and see the ruin that awaits you? Who allowed Israel to be robbed and hurt? Was it not the LORD? It was the LORD whom we sinned against, for the people would not go where he sent them, nor would they obey his law."

Isaiah 42:18-24, NLT

Instead of a holy nation located at the center of the earth, filled with moral, intelligent, and productive servants of God, the rebellious Israelites got themselves thrown off of the land and scattered among the nations.

"But now you have tossed us aside in dishonor. You no longer lead our armies to battle. You make us retreat from our enemies and allow them to plunder our land. You have treated us like sheep waiting to be slaughtered; you have scattered us among the nations. You sold us--your precious people--for a pittance. You valued us at nothing at all. You have caused all our neighbors to mock us. We are an object of scorn and derision to the nations around us."

Psalms 44:9-13, NLT

The two Jehovahs have their plan to use the Israelites on delayed action, in essence, on hold. Israel could not keep up with God. They are currently scattered among the nations, blind and deaf themselves, and certainly not a light to the nations. Instead, the nations around the Israelites scorned and derided them.

As mentioned earlier in section 7.2, the two Jehovahs faced some communication problems in dealing with Israel and the nations, too. But it is even more than that. God has effectively shut up almost all in unbelief, for now, so that the two Jehovahs, through their strange plan, will ultimately save the greatest possible number of human beings.

"For God has shut up all in unbelief, so that He might show mercy to all."  
Romans 11:32, MKJV

"For I do not want you to be ignorant of this mystery, brothers, lest you should be wise within yourselves; that blindness in part has happened to Israel, until the fullness of the nations has comes in." Romans 11:25, MKJV

This is an incredible scripture and it helps to explain the current era. Of course, some people

are called and chosen now. The main point here is that God has, for the most part, blinded his own Category Three firstfruits, Israel, thus blinding the vast majority of mankind. Your author previously wrote about this in his *Life Charts* book and will quote from it below:

"The two Jehovahs (God) → shut up [virtually] all → in unbelief SO THAT → they might ultimately show mercy to all [virtually all]

And so there we have the answer as to why so many people seem to not care very much about God right now. God has largely blinded the vast majority of mankind, now, calling only a relatively small percentage to serve as a kind of firstfruits for all of humanity. God, in particular, blinded the vast majority of the physical Israelites. This, in effect, blinded most of humanity because God works through Israel first. And if the majority of the people he works through first are blinded now, then the balance of the human race is even more so. They do not have a historical relationship with God. The physical Israelites were supposed to be a light to them, but failed. **However, God did all of this in order to show mercy TO ALL.** "To all" includes those called to a special election of grace now (whether physical Israelite or not)

AND the physical Israelites not yet called AND those non-physical Israelites not yet called (the rest of humanity).

The two Jehovahs (God) → want to show → mercy to all

All = 1) those called [and chosen Category Two firstfruits, Category One called and chosen] to a special election of grace now + 2) the physical Israelites not yet called to the special election of grace + 3) the non-Israelite peoples of the other nations of the world, not yet called to the special election of grace

... There is war between Satan and God, and between Satan and mankind. In a war, communications are not normal. They cannot be or the enemy will know your plans and adjust their plans accordingly. Ergo, some of the Biblical communications are in plain text and so that part of the divine communication is readable and understandable. And some of the communications are lightly coded and understandable to some, but not others. And some of the Biblical communication is heavily coded. The heavily coded part of the Biblical communication is intended to be understood, at this time, by only a few - those called and

chosen now to a special election of grace. It is even possible that some of the divine communication is not to be completely understood by any human being, for now. If so, the meaning of any such divine communication would have to be revealed by the two Jehovahs later. And so even though the Bible promises the Holy Spirit will lead us into all truth (John 16:13), it does not say when. As your author went to great lengths to point out, all of us, including your author, are ignorant – just of different things. And all of us, whether called and chosen or not, will die not knowing some aspects of the Bible. This is why there are doctrinal disagreements, divisions within churches, etc., at the present time. It is likely we will know the rest of the story after we have been resurrected to eternal life, but not until then. At any rate, for now, the Bible clearly teaches that God has blinded the minds of most so that the two Jehovahs can ultimately show mercy to almost all. Your author says "almost all" because there are always going to be some who are recalcitrant, some who refuse to submit to the two Jehovahs and participate with them in their divine individualism process. There are at least two scriptures to help show that the two Jehovahs did not intend for men to understand exactly what they were doing because the

unwitting actions of some men were necessary to help the two Jehovahs carry out their plans.

"But, we speak wisdom among those who are perfect; yet not the wisdom of this world, nor of the rulers of this world, that come to nothing. But we speak **the wisdom of God in a mystery, which God has hidden**, predetermining it before the world for our glory; which none of the rulers of this world knew (for if they had known, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory)." 1 Corinthians 2:6-8, MKJV

God predetermined to hide his plan from whoever was ruling the world at the time of Christ's necessary sacrifice so they would unwittingly participate in helping to create a bridge from death to life for us, God's characters.

"But they [the nations] **do not know the plans of the LORD**, nor do they understand His counsel. For He has gathered them like the sheaf to the floor." Micah 4:12, MKJV

The Micah 4:12 scripture plainly says that the nations, non-physical Israelites, do not know the plans of the LORD and numerous places in the Bible, e.g., Romans 11 and Mark 4, show that

God blinded the majority of the Israelites, too. In other words, per Romans 11:32, "God has shut up all in unbelief, so that he might show mercy to all." The word "all" in both places in the above sentence should be understood to mean "almost all." God has called some to a special election of grace now, ergo "almost all" pertaining to the first "all" of the Romans 11:32 sentence. And there are always going to be some people who, basically, want to die, and so they will reject God even after their minds are opened to the truth for the first time. Hence, "almost all" also pertains to the last word in the sentence.

The Bible was written so that it would not be completely understood at this time. Sorry, that's the way it is. No one can tell your author that the two supreme minds in the universe could not have written what amounts to a cookbook with recipes on how to become a future incorruptible divine individual. They are too smart to have attempted writing the Bible to be understood and then failing in the attempt. Any who would disagree with your author can feel free to explain the widespread and heated disagreements pertaining to the Bible and its interpretation. No one argues about the meaning of a recipe in a cookbook. The

meaning of a recipe is plain to anyone who can read. One just has to do what the recipe says to get the desired result. The Bible is not this way. The two Jehovahs did not want the Bible to be completely understood, now, because they were shutting up almost all in unbelief, now, because they want to eventually have mercy to the almost all who will cooperate with them once their minds are opened in the future.

The two Jehovahs → did not write the Bible → like a cookbook containing recipes

The two Jehovahs → wanted to hide → at least some of their plans → from mankind

The Bible is partly written: 1) in plain text, 2) some is lightly coded, and 3) some is more heavily coded"

Further, Jesus Christ spoke in parables, mainly for the reason given below:

"And when He [Jesus Christ] was alone, they who were about Him, with the Twelve, asked Him concerning the parable. And He said to them, To you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God. But to those outside, all these things are given in parables so that seeing

they may see, and not perceive; and hearing they may hear, and not understand; lest at any time they should be converted, and their sins should be forgiven them."

Mark 4:10-12, MKJV"

Counter-intuitively, God is simply not working with the vast majority of the human race right now. This will change starting with the return of Jesus Christ to the earth (Revelation 19).

Israel was supposed to be a holy nation and a kingdom of priests, helping to lead the nations to God by both example and explanation. For now the Category Three firstfruits, the Israelites, have failed, but God will not.

### **8.7 A few end-time prophecies concerning Israel**

Israel's failure has had many negative consequences for themselves, their progeny, and for the people of the earth. The purpose of this section is to simply highlight a few of the effects of the Israelite failure, using the Bible to show God anticipated it all.

Instead of being a holy nation and a kingdom of priests, God prophesied that one day Israel

would look back on its failure and state the below. God is basically mocking Israel in the following scripture, stating that Israel thought it was pregnant and going to provide fruit to God, i.e., to give birth. Instead there was no baby, only the passing of gas. The second scripture below mentions that Israel was as useless as any other nation.

"We conceived; we have been in pain, we gave birth to wind [instead of giving birth, Israel passed gas]. **We have not brought about any salvation in the earth**; nor have the people of the world fallen [the Good News Bible has this last phrase: "we have accomplished nothing"]."

Isaiah 26:18, MKJV

"Israel has become like any other nation and is as useless as a broken pot." Hosea 8:8 TEV

In point of fact, instead of being priests for God, helping to be a light of the right way of life to the nations, Israel itself became corrupted and, even worse, then corrupted other nations. The job of a priest can be summarized in the Ezekiel 44:23-24 scripture quoted below. What Israel actually did is reflected in the Isaiah 1:2-4, 5:20-21, and Jeremiah 4:22 scriptures quoted afterward.

"And they [the priests] shall teach My people [and by extension the other nations] to discern between the holy and common, and between the unclean and the clean [in other words, to teach the difference between the right way and the wrong way]. And in a dispute they shall stand in judgment; and they shall judge it according to My judgments. And they shall keep My laws and My statutes in all My assemblies, and they shall keep My sabbaths holy." Ezekiel 44:23-24, MKJV

"Hear, O heavens, and give ear, O earth; for the LORD has spoken, I have nursed and brought up sons, and they have rebelled against Me. The ox knows his owner, and the ass his master's crib; but Israel does not know; My people do not understand. Woe, sinful nation, a people heavy with iniquity, a seed of evildoers, sons who make others rotten! They have forsaken the LORD; they have provoked the Holy One of Israel to anger; they have gone away backward." Isaiah 1:2-4, MKJV

"Woe to those who call evil good and good evil; who put darkness for light and light for darkness; who put bitter for sweet and sweet for bitter! Woe to those wise in their own eyes, and bright in their own sight!" Isaiah 5:20-21, MKJV

"For My people are foolish; they have not known Me; they are stupid sons, and they have no understanding. They are wise to do evil, but to do good they have no knowledge."  
Jeremiah 4:22, MKJV

The scattered Israelites are sustained through time and eventually blessed by God, but they forget whom they are and are more interested in material success than in acknowledging the true God and obeying him with gratitude. The Israelites even take on corrupt religious practices causing God to reject them for their sins and rebellion against him.

"The LORD has rejected the people of Israel because they have made alliances with foreigners from the East who practice magic and divination, just like the Philistines. Israel has vast treasures of silver and gold and many horses and chariots. The land is filled with idols. The people bow down and worship these things they have made. So now everyone will be humbled and brought low. The LORD cannot simply ignore their sins!" Isaiah 2:6-9, NLT

Israel gets to the point where it is openly and brazenly sinning, without shame. The Israelite men end up allowing women and children and also corrupt governmental and religious “leaders” to rule over them.

“The very look on their faces gives them away and displays their guilt. They sin openly like the people of Sodom. They are not one bit ashamed. How terrible it will be for them! They have brought about their own destruction. But all will be well for those who are godly. Tell them, “You will receive a wonderful reward!” But say to the wicked, “Your destruction is sure. You, too, will get what you deserve. Your well-earned punishment is on the way.” Children oppress my people, and women rule over them. O my people, can't you see what fools your rulers are? They are leading you down a pretty garden path to destruction.” Isaiah 3:9-12, NLT

**“The leaders and the princes** will be the first to feel the LORD's judgment. “You have ruined Israel, which is my vineyard. You have taken advantage of the poor, filling your barns with grain extorted from helpless people. How dare you grind my people into the dust like that!” demands the Lord, the LORD Almighty.” Isaiah 3:14-15, NLT

The Israelites were prophesied to live under corrupt laws instead of the good divine laws they could have experienced if they had only served the true God.

"Destruction is certain for the unjust judges, for those who issue unfair laws. They deprive the poor, the widows, and the orphans of justice. Yes, they rob widows and fatherless children!" Isaiah 10:1-2, NLT

Unfortunately, sometimes the legal system expands, including multitudinous bureaucratic decrees, because people with human nature are fighting with each other instead of recognizing and respecting others' individual natural rights and practicing respectful social etiquette.

"And the people shall be crushed, every man by another, and every man by his neighbor; the boy shall act proudly against the old man, and the low against the honorable."  
Isaiah 3:5, MKJV

Because the Israelites were thrown off the land and did not acknowledge God and follow his divine law instructions, they actually ended up

going into exile and being scattered with many not even realizing why it was all happening.

" ... but they do not regard the work of the LORD. Yea, they do not see the work of His hands. For this My people go into exile without knowledge ..." Isaiah 5:12-13, MKJV

"And he said, "Yes, go. But tell my people this: 'You will hear my words, but you will not understand. You will see what I do, but you will not perceive its meaning.' Harden the hearts of these people. Close their ears, and shut their eyes. That way, they will not see with their eyes, hear with their ears, understand with their hearts, and turn to me for healing." Then I said, "Lord, how long must I do this?" And he replied, "Until their cities are destroyed, with no one left in them. Until their houses are deserted and the whole country is an utter wasteland. Do not stop until the LORD has sent everyone away to distant lands and the entire land of Israel lies deserted." Isaiah 6:9-12, NLT

Instead of serving the true God, Israel will be scattered across the earth and end up serving false gods.

"And the LORD shall scatter you among all people, from the one end of the earth even to the other, and you shall serve other gods there, which neither you nor your fathers have known, wood and stone." Deuteronomy 28:64, MKJV

It will get very bad for the Israelites where they are scattered and at least some of them will wake up to the truth, realize aspects of what is happening, know that God foretold it all, and they will loathe themselves:

"And those of you who escape [finally wake up to the truth] shall remember Me among the nations where they shall be exiled, because I was broken by their whoring heart which has departed from Me, and with their whoring eyes which go after their idols. And **they shall despise themselves** for the evils which they have committed in all their abominations. And they shall know that I am the LORD, and that I have not said in vain to do this evil to them."

Ezekiel 6:9-10, MKJV

God condemns those Israelites who seek the truth from astrologers and mediums.

"I [Isaiah the prophet] and the children the LORD has given me have names that reveal the

plans the LORD Almighty has for his people. So why are you trying to find out the future by consulting mediums and psychics? Do not listen to their whisperings and mutterings. Can the living find out the future from the dead? Why not ask your God? "Check their predictions against my testimony," says the LORD. "If their predictions are different from mine, it is because there is no light or truth in them."

Isaiah 8:18-20, NLT

The below passage of scripture shows that the leaders are corrupt and leading the people to destruction and the people themselves are hypocrites, pretending to be much better than they are in fact.

"For the leaders of the people have led them down the path of destruction. That is why the Lord has no joy in the young men and no mercy on even the widows and orphans. For they are all hypocrites, speaking wickedness with lies. But even then the LORD's anger will not be satisfied. His fist is still poised to strike."

Isaiah 9:16-17, NLT

In the modern era many people are worried about one conspiracy after another. God has

some advice for any of the modern Israelites who are so concerned:

"For so the LORD spoke to me with a strong hand, and warned me against walking in the way of this people, saying, Do not say, A conspiracy! to everything of which this people says, A conspiracy! And do not fear their fear, nor be afraid. Sanctify the LORD of hosts Himself, and let Him be your fear, and let Him be your dread. And He shall be a sanctuary for you, but for a stone of stumbling, and for a rock of falling to both the houses of Israel, for a trap and for a snare to the people of Jerusalem."

Isaiah 8:11-14, MKJV

Some other nations hate and mock the Israelites, no doubt Israel's historic and present enemies. Be that as it may, God will eventually step in to save his people. Then he will force them to finally do their job in becoming a holy nation, a kingdom of priests, and functioning as the firstfruits regarding the other nations alive at that time. As part of the process of God stepping in and delivering his people, God has some sobering news to those nations that are currently hosting scattered Israelites:

“So do not be afraid, Jacob, my servant; do not be dismayed, Israel, says the LORD. For I will bring you home again from distant lands, and your children will return from their exile. Israel will return and will have peace and quiet in their own land, and no one will make them afraid. For I am with you and will save you, says the LORD. **I will completely destroy the nations where I have scattered you**, but I will not destroy you. But I must discipline you; I cannot let you go unpunished.”  
Jeremiah 30:10-11, NLT

“I know Ephraim, and **Israel is not hidden from me**. For now, O Ephraim, you have fornicated; Israel is defiled.” Hosea 5:3, MKJV

To end this section with some hope, please note that God only forsook his people, Israel, for a time. He will eventually make it right for Israel, including defeating Israel’s mocking and hateful enemies. Again, more will be explained regarding God’s restoration of Israel in the balance of this book.

“Why do you [Israel] protest your punishment--this wound that has no cure? I have had to punish you because your sins are many and your guilt is great. “But in that

coming day, all who destroy you will be destroyed, and all your enemies will be sent into exile. Those who plunder you will be plundered, and those who attack you will be attacked. I will give you back your health and heal your wounds, says the LORD. "Now you are called an outcast--'Jerusalem for whom nobody cares.' But the LORD says this: When I bring you home again from your captivity and restore your fortunes, Jerusalem will be rebuilt on her ruins. The palace will be reconstructed as it was before. There will be joy and songs of thanksgiving, and I will multiply my people and make of them a great and honored nation."  
Jeremiah 30:15-19, NLT

### **8.8 What Israelite culture could have been, but was not**

There is no point in your author rehashing what was written earlier in sections 7.11, pertaining to all the important things men could have had from God if they had just cooperated with him and 7.12, pertaining to what Western Civilization in its better form achieved and was. Israelite Civilization should have had all of this and no doubt, even more, including direct divine guidance and further blessings. Unfortunately, it was not to be, at least not for very long. The

reader is redirected to consider the main points of those two sections or to keep them in mind when reading this relatively short section.

If the Israelites would have cooperated with God, been thankful for his providence in providing the items outlined in section 7.11, and learned to adopt the generative particulars that Western Civilization adopted, as outlined in section 7.12, the Israelite Civilization that could have been generated right in the middle of the earth would have wowed other nations, cultures, and civilizations. This was the whole idea of God using the Israelites and giving them such well-located land. What would it have meant to the people of the world if something even better than the USA and England, at their very best, sprung up in the center of the earth over 3,000 years ago? To be clear, material productive achievement follows morality and rationality and is no substitute for either. But Israel failed God and man. They also failed themselves and their children.

Almost all parents will lament, "I only want what is best for my children." If that were really true then parents would adopt the observance of the divine law instructions and would insist on a society that actually respected individual natural

rights. They would also insist on no special favors to those who want to co-opt the human race for their pseudo-god, Satan. In other words, there would be no central banks interfering with the marketplace generating sound money, no takeover of the legal and political and educational systems to use as weapons against their fellow man, etc. The parents, who "only want what is best for their children," have effectively delivered those children into the hands of evil, Satan-influenced monsters, and those monsters are morally and intellectually poisoning the children, as well as adults, too. The results are showing up before us now as your author writes this book. Instead of the immoral, irrational, theft-advocating, pseudo-leadership of The Left and tax slavery, families could have owned themselves, their family land, had sound money and real marketplace prices to allow for more accurate budgeting, planning, and investing, their children could have learned how to be moral and to think, and their children would have had an excellent chance at a good future.

Instead of Western Civilization, time delayed for many hundreds of years, and in a weakened form, the human race could have had an Israelite Civilization right in the center of the

world, as a positive influence in human affairs. Such an Israelite Civilization would have been almost impossible to ignore. Alas ...

At the end of this section your author wants to include something he has never written about before, or heard anyone else ever teach or see them write about before. It as to do with an important point concerning the sacrifices the ancient Israelites were commanded to give to God through the priests and the Levites (Leviticus 1-7, 23, and many other places in the Bible).

The meaning, or the conjectures concerning the meaning, of various sacrifices is fairly well known and your author cannot add anything of value concerning this, other than one central point your author will defer to chapter ten and the point your author will offer below. It is well known that sacrifices are a reminder that each of us has sinned, that sin has a cost, an innocent animal is killed, that animal sacrifices do not actually atone for sin, but the blood of Jesus Christ does (Hebrews 10:1-4,10). Further, there is no question that having at least the males of a family go to Jerusalem three times in a year to offer sacrifices, to give offerings, and to hear the teachings of God no

question helps to provide a culture (Exodus 34:23, Leviticus 23). That culture would revolve around God's Holy Days. Of course, it might be possible for entire families to attend, too. Even so, if not, the males were supposed to go back home and teach their wives and children what they learned so everyone could be on the same page. Since nature abhors a vacuum, it is entirely possible the two Jehovahs ultimately decided to use the annual Holy Days outlined in Leviticus 23, and also the sacrifices (Leviticus 1-7, 23, and other places), as foundations for a positive, human-developing Israelite culture ... including all the other elements written about in sections 7.11, 7.12, and above.

The point your author wants to add to the discussion concerning sacrifices is this: in terms of human development, it is very important for people to learn how to think prudentially. For your author's purposes prudence means practical or applied wisdom and this would encompass good judgment. Prudence is necessary in terms of projecting a wise course of action into the future. In other words, prudence allows for the long-term consideration of just what it is that it is wise to value and also how to go about achieving one's goals. Prudence is indispensable in terms of: setting

wise/appropriate goals, making achievable plans, and in making the necessary efforts it takes to achieve those goals, i.e., to build out a successful life. Prudence also helps us to learn from our mistakes and to overcome obstacles and challenges. We have to learn to think long-term and to pay a price to achieve our goals. Prudential thinking is indispensable to human beings.

The sacrificial system of the Bible entailed various elements that should have led to greater prudential thinking on the part of the citizens practicing it. It should be more widely taught that if you do not make the proper sacrifice today, it will cost you even more to make things right later. **Not making the proper sacrifice at the right time is very costly to human beings.** A simple example would be if someone sacrificed time and money to obtain a college degree, but then later on decided that the degree did not help them to actually achieve whatever their real life goal was (when they made the decision to obtain the college degree as a means to the actual life goal). The sacrifice of four to five years of time and many tens of thousands of dollars might not be a total loss, but it also might not have been the proper sacrifice. The ancient Israelites would have had

to learn to plan ahead to travel to Jerusalem, save up an animal(s) for the sacrifice, be clean and in a good attitude when presenting the animal for sacrifice, etc. The person offering the sacrifice would have had to think longer-term (at least months in advance) and also the priests and Levites would interact with the man and his family. They would no doubt have inquired as to the cause of the sacrifice, as well as further inquired as to how the man was doing in his life. They probably would have provided some additional guidance and suggestions for the man in question to use when he left Jerusalem and returned to his day-to-day life. And the man would know in a few months, or the next year he would need to show up once again with the proper sacrifice. All of this, your author surmises, would have helped to teach prudential thinking. Actions have consequences. Not valuing correctly, either in terms of abandoning moral principle, or in terms of wasting time, effort, and money on achieving the wrong goals all have their negative effects. Thinking prudentially helps to head off many of these negative effects of life, at least the said effects under our own direct control coming from our own bad values or valuations.

Extending the idea of sacrifices helping men to learn how to think more prudentially, all the way out into the afterlife, men would be taught they have a chance at an abundant, incorruptible, eternal life. It would therefore be prudent to cooperate with the two Jehovahs in their divine individualism process and that would mean learning about the divine law instructions and following them. This would mean learning what is good versus evil, holy versus profane, clean versus unclean, correct versus not correct, virtuous versus vicious, etc. Further, men would be encouraged to adopt the unity of the package of values that pertain to life, to acquire and practice using as many of the virtues as possible, and to learn how to be responsibly productive. Prudential thinking enables man to think longer-term, to have hope for a better future, but to do more than just hope, to also set achievable goals and plans, and to take actions with confidence toward achieving those goals and thus building out a better future. More importantly, thinking prudentially would help a man extend his thinking out into eternity and to then repent of his sins and failings and to then actively cooperate with the two Jehovahs in their divine individualism process. If any people, nation, culture, or civilization should

have been able to learn this, it was the Israelites, but it was not to be ... yet.

### **8.9 Dispensational, Samaritanized and confused Christianity is no substitute for what God will eventually do through Israel**

Since your author wrote pretty extensively about Samaritanized Christianity, earlier in section 6.1, a brief recap is all that is necessary here.

Samaritanized Christianity is confused for at least all of the below reasons:

- \* It does not know there are currently two gods in the family of God, God the Father and Jesus Christ. The doctrine that God is a Trinity is widely used as a Christian litmus test, which litmus test is ironically and sadly false.
- \* It is a mish-mash of truth, combined with serious errors, having folded into it many pagan doctrines that have nothing to do with what God was and is doing through Israel. This is analogous to the original physical formation of the Samaritan people in a region of the land of Israel just north of Jerusalem. There is some truth, but much error.

- \* Much of Samaritanized Christianity is confused about grace to the point of excluding the law of God from current consideration.
- \* It is dispensational, believing God put down Israel and picked up the New Testament church.
- \* Many Samaritanized Christian teachers, not all, are under the influence of Calvinist determinism, which is false because the two Jehovahs gave free will to man, and men are allowed to exercise it. This knowledge obviates the incorrect idea that God has a perfect, specific plan for one's life
- \* Some Samaritanized Christian teachers, not all, believe in some form of dominionism, which is false. Jesus Christ will have dominion when he returns to the earth as King of kings and Lord of lords (Revelation 19).
- \* Most of Samaritanized Christianity does not realize that Jesus Christ was the being that was the God of the Old Testament.
- \* Many Samaritanized Christian churches use a military style of organization, which was forbidden in Matthew 20.

\* God hates pagan-based holidays being observed (Amos 5:21, Hosea 7:13, 9:1), instead of his annual holy days (Leviticus 23).

"I hate, I despise your [Samaritanized] feast days, and I will not delight in your solemn assemblies." Amos 5:21, MKJV

"People of Israel, stop celebrating your festivals like pagans. You have turned away from your God and have been unfaithful to him. All over the land you have sold yourselves like prostitutes to the god Baal and have loved the grain you thought he paid you with!"  
Hosea 9:1 TEV

"... They have left me and rebelled against me. ... I wanted to save them, but their worship of me was false." Hosea 7:13 TEV (Good News Bible)

\* Etc.

Not only is it a shame that Israelite Civilization failed, causing the world to have to wait hundreds of years for a lesser Western Civilization, but this also caused another time delay until the world experienced a grossly

inferior, dispensational, Samaritanized Christianity.

The main point of this short section is that dispensational, Samaritanized Christianity is a confused mess and is not a substitute for what God was going to do through Israel and what he ultimately will do through Israel. Those practicing Samaritanized Christianity are not eternally lost; they still have hope - to be explained in much more detail later in this book.

### **8.10 Jesus Christ came to his people Israel**

Jesus Christ came to his people, Israel. Of course, his human sojourn was purposed to be a sinless life, a suffering and perfect sacrifice, and was capped off with him being the literal fulfillment of the wave sheaf offering, i.e., THE FIRSTFRUIT – the first born resurrected from the dead. But he came to Israel, as the scriptures in this section will make plain.

John the Baptist was a Biblically unique person. He was filled with the Holy Spirit from his birth, he turned many of the sons of Israel to their God, he went before Jesus in the spirit and power of Elijah, and he made ready a people (Israel) for the Lord (Jesus Christ).

"But the angel said to him, Do not fear, Zacharias. For your prayer is heard, and your wife Elizabeth shall bear you a son, and you shall call his name John. And you shall have joy and gladness, and many shall rejoice at his birth. For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall neither drink wine nor strong drink. And he shall be filled with the Holy Spirit, even from his mother's womb. And he shall turn many of the sons of Israel to the Lord their God. And he shall go before Him in the spirit and power of Elijah, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just, to make ready a people prepared for the Lord." Luke 1:13-17, MKJV

Elizabeth, the mother of John the Baptist was filled with the Holy Spirit (Luke 1:41-56) and prophesied about Mary, the mother of Jesus, and also of Jesus:

"He [God] has helped **His servant Israel**, in remembrance of His mercy, as He spoke to our fathers, to Abraham and to his seed forever." Luke 1:54-55, MKJV

Later, Zacharias, John the Baptist's father prophesied:

"And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Spirit, and prophesied, saying, Blessed is the Lord, the God of Israel, for He has visited and redeemed His people" Luke 1:67-68, MKJV

Zacharias also had a long prophecy concerning his son, John the Baptist, a part of which is quoted below:

"And you, child, will be called the prophet of the Highest, for you shall go before the face of the Lord to prepare His ways, to give knowledge of salvation to His people by the remission of their sins, through the tender mercy of our God; by which the Dayspring from on high has visited us, to give light to those who sit in darkness and in the shadow of death, to guide our feet into **the way** of peace. And the child grew and became strong in spirit and was in the deserts **until the day of his showing to Israel.**"  
Luke 1:76-80, MKJV

After the birth of Jesus, another prophet commented as follows:

"And behold, there was a man in Jerusalem whose name was Simeon. And this man was just and devout, waiting for **the Consolation of**

**Israel.** And the Holy Spirit was on him." ... "a light for revelation to the nations, and **the glory of Your people Israel.**" Luke 2:25, 32, MKJV

The emphasis is always on Israel, but the people in other nations will one day, too, have knowledge of **the way** of God and be included, en masse, in God's great plans for the human race. The same basic idea is contained in the gospel of John.

"The next day John [the Baptist] sees Jesus coming to him and says, Behold the Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world! This is He of whom I said, After me comes a Man who has been before me, for He preceded me. And I did not know Him, **but that He be revealed to Israel**, therefore I have come baptizing with water." John 1:29-31, MKJV

The gospel of Matthew also included much the same idea with an account of the angel of the Lord appearing to Joseph:

"And as he [Joseph, Mary's husband, the mother of Jesus] thought upon these things, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared to him in a dream, saying, Joseph, son of David, do not fear to take to you Mary as your wife. For that in

her is fathered of the Holy Spirit. And she shall bear a son, and you shall call His name JESUS: for He shall save His people [Israel] from their sins." Matthew 1:20-21, MKJV

After Jesus' resurrection from the dead, he showed himself and stayed with the eleven remaining apostles for 40 days (Acts 1:1-3). The apostles asked Jesus the below question:

"Then, indeed, these coming together, they asked Him, saying, Lord, do You at this time restore **the kingdom to Israel?**"  
Acts 1:6, MKJV

When Peter has been filled with the Holy Spirit on the day of Pentecost (Acts 2), he preached a sermon, containing the below:

"Therefore **let all the house of Israel know** assuredly that God made this same Jesus, whom you crucified, both Lord and Christ." Acts 2:36, MKJV

Later Peter and the apostles had to answer a matter before the High Priest and the Sanhedrin and Peter said the below:

"This One God has exalted to be a Ruler and Savior to His right hand in order to give repentance and remission of sins to Israel."

Acts 5:31, MKJV

Even in the chapter where the Gentile Cornelius was called, Peter's explanation still included an emphasis on Israel and there was even shock among the Israelites that some people among the nations received the Holy Spirit. Non-Israelite converts to Christianity become spiritual Israelites and are grafted into Israel. This will be explained more in section 8.12.

**"You know the word which God sent to the sons of Israel,** preaching the gospel of peace by Jesus Christ (He is Lord of all!);"

Acts 10:36, MKJV

"And those of the circumcision, who believed (as many as came with Peter), were astonished because the gift of the Holy Spirit was poured out on the nations also." Acts 10:45, MKJV

When the Apostle Paul was addressing a synagogue meeting, his message was very similar.

"The God of this people Israel chose our fathers and exalted the people in their residency in the land of Egypt, and He brought them out of it with a high arm." ... "Of this man's seed [speaking of King David] **God has raised to Israel**, according to His promise, a Savior, Jesus; John having before proclaimed the baptism of repentance to all the people of Israel, before His coming." ... "For this cause, then, I called for you, to see and to speak with you. For I have this chain around me for the hope of Israel." Acts 13:17, 23-24; 28:20, MKJV

The promise of the new covenant is specific to Israel, but includes the peoples of other nations, too. But Israel, the firstfruits of the mass of peoples not yet called and chosen, will come before the nations, as the general rule.

""**For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel** after those days, says the Lord: I will put My laws into their mind and write them in their hearts, and I will be their God, and they shall be My people." Hebrews 8:10, MKJV

This promise of a new covenant in Hebrews refers back to the original promise given by God to Israel:

"Behold, the days come, says the LORD, that I will cut a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah, not according to the covenant that I cut with their [bad] fathers in the day I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt; which covenant of Mine they broke, although **I was a husband to them**, says the LORD; but this shall be the covenant that I will cut with the house of Israel: After those days, says the LORD, I will put My law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people."

Jeremiah 31:31-33, MKJV

God has not given up on Israel, nor will he. God basically says the laws of nature will change before he will give up on Israel:

"So says the LORD, who gives the sun for a light by day and the laws of the moon and of the stars for a light by night, who divides the sea when its waves roar; the LORD of hosts is His name; if those ordinances depart from Me, says the LORD, the seed of Israel also shall cease from being a nation before Me forever."

Jeremiah 31:35-36, MKJV

When Jesus was giving his disciples a mission, he sent them to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

"Jesus sent out these twelve, commanding them, saying, Do not go into the way of the nations, and do not enter into any city of the Samaritans. But rather **go to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.**" Matthew 10:5-6, MKJV

At the time of the end, Jesus' disciples will still be focused on doing what Jesus told them to do in Matthew 10:

"But when they persecute you in this city, flee into another; for truly I say to you, In no way shall you have finished the cities of Israel until the Son of Man comes."

Matthew 10:23, MKJV

When Jesus and his disciples had retreated for a time into the region near Tyre and Sidon he explained the following to a woman of Canaan:

"And going out from there, Jesus withdrew to the parts of Tyre and Sidon. And behold, a woman of Canaan coming out of these borders cried to Him, saying, Have mercy on me, O

Lord, Son of David! My daughter is grievously vexed with a demon. But He did not answer her a word. And His disciples came and begged Him, saying, Send her away, for she cries after us. But He answered and said, **I am not sent except to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.**" Matthew 15:21-24, MKJV

It is not that the people of other nations are not included in the plan of God. They are. But in terms of the masses of humanity, both of Israel and of the other nations, God has to work with Israel first because he promised that Israel was to be the firstfruits. In the meantime, there are a relatively few people called and chosen now, including some from both Israel and the nations, and that is the topic of the next section.

### **8.11 Comparatively few people are effectively called and chosen now**

God blinded Israel, his actual called and chosen congregation of witnesses (his ultimate church) (Category Two of your author's called and chosen), and threw them off of the land they were to inherit and inhabit. Later, Jesus Christ came to save his people Israel and ultimately the entire human race. The first and most important step was Jesus Christ's

successful sinless life, a suffering sacrificial death, and his resurrection as The Firstfruit, (1 Corinthians 15:20). After that transpired, the next big event could be said to be his ascension back to the Father, after 40 days of appearing to his disciples (Acts 1:1-11), and the giving of the Holy Spirit to his disciples and other believers on the day of Pentecost (Acts 2). And so it is only natural for people to believe that something new had transpired, which it did. The giving of the Holy Spirit at Pentecost is widely understood to be the founding of "The New Testament Church." This is partly true and partly false.

The true part is fairly commonly understood, that those who have been called now by God the Father, repented of their sins, confessed Jesus Christ as Savior, been baptized, and have had hands laid on them to receive the Holy Spirit are now a new creation in Christ Jesus. Those so called and chosen, now, are to be led by the Holy Spirit and to live new lives. They can proceed forward to the promised first resurrection uncondemned (Romans 8:1). The below scriptures bear this out:

"No one can come to Me unless the Father who has sent Me draw him, and I will raise him up at the last day. It is written in the prophets,

'And they shall all be taught of God.' Therefore everyone who hears and learns from the Father comes to Me." John 6:44-45, MKJV

"Then Peter said to them, Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ to remission of sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. For the promise is to you and to your children, and to all those afar off, as many as the Lord our God [the Father] shall call." Acts 2:38-39, MKJV

"What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin so that grace may abound? Let it not be! How shall we who died to sin live any longer in it? Do you not know that as many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into His death? Therefore we were buried with Him by baptism into death, so that as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father; even so we also should walk in newness of life. For if we have been joined together in the likeness of His death, we shall also be in the likeness of His resurrection;"  
Romans 6:1-5, MKJV

"What this means is that those who become Christians become new persons. They are not the same anymore, for the old life is gone. A

new life has begun! All this newness of life is from God, who brought us back to himself through what Christ did. And God has given us the task of reconciling people to him. For God was in Christ, reconciling the world to himself, no longer counting people's sins against them. This is the wonderful message he has given us to tell others." 2 Corinthians 5:17-19, NLT

"There is therefore now no condemnation to those who are in Christ Jesus, who walk not according to the flesh but according to the Spirit." Romans 8:1, MKJV

"For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God. For you have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear, but you have received the Spirit of adoption by which we cry, Abba, Father!"  
Romans 8:14-15, MKJV

We are to live virtuously as the children of God.

"according as His divine power has given to us all things that pertain to life and godliness, through the knowledge of Him who has called us to glory and virtue," 2 Peter 1:3, MKJV

"Behold what manner of love the Father has given us, that we should be called children of God. Therefore the world does not know us, because it did not know Him." I John 3:1

Those who undertake changing their values and old lives to work with God the Father and Jesus Christ, now, are usually called Christians – the members of the New Testament church, commonly understood. Based on Ephesians 2:12 and Galatians 6:16, your author would suggest better phraseology for the term Christian could be "**spiritual Israelite.**" This is because it would help practitioners understand there is a body of teaching contained in what is called the Old Testament that is foundational to the body of teaching taking place in what is called the New Testament and further, that they have been grafted in to Israel (Romans 11:19 not quoted here, but discussed at length in the next section).

"Therefore remember that you, the nations, in time past were in the flesh, who are called Uncircumcision by that which is called the Circumcision in the flesh made by hands; and that at that time you were without Christ, being aliens from **the commonwealth of Israel**, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having

no hope, and without God in the world.”  
Ephesians 2:11-12, MKJV

“And as many as walk according to this rule,  
peace and mercy be upon them and upon **the  
Israel of God.**” Galatians 6:16, MKJV

There is an explanation concerning those of the nations (non-Israelite nations), contained in Romans 9-11, but your author’s next section goes into that in more detail so no more will be written here. And your author will give a brief explanation of circumcision in section 9.4 so no more will be written of that here, either.

There are numerous other scriptures that could be cited to describe how to become and live as a Christian, but they are also widely known and those cited above make it plain enough. So the true part of the giving of the Holy Spirit at Pentecost being understood to be the founding of “The New Testament Church” is important to everyone concerned: God the Father, Jesus Christ, and those called and chosen now (your author’s Category One called and chosen).

One false part of the giving of the Holy Spirit at Pentecost founding “The New Testament

Church" is that the church, broadly understood, is Israel, not ONLY the New Testament church. The New Testament church is only a small part of Israel, the congregation of God. In essence, it is spiritual Israel grafted in to physical Israel before the vast majority of the physical Israelites are ultimately called and chosen and converted. It probably makes the most sense to state that those individuals comprising the New Testament church are ... **the EFFECTIVELY called and chosen now.** They are a very small percentage of the human race in comparison to all those who have ever lived throughout history. The reason your author highlights EFFECTIVELY is because Israel is the called and chosen, before the nations, in the sense of being Category Two of your author's called and chosen explanation. Much later still, the people of the nations who are not spiritual Israelites (Category One of your author's called and chosen) will also be given a calling and choice by the two Jehovahs. They comprise Category Three of your author's called and chosen explanation. Another reason the founding of the church at Pentecost is false is because God gave his Holy Spirit to some people in ancient Israel much earlier in time, and to others even before that, e.g., Abraham. With all this written, the day of Pentecost was a

miraculous and momentous event in history and is not to be diminished by your author's clarifications and commentary.

A huge surprise to those believing in the traditional view of the New Testament church is what the Bible prophesies concerning the size and characteristics of the effectively called and chosen now. The below scriptures reveal a relatively small flock of true followers of Jesus Christ. Those followers have several important described characteristics: 1) they have the faith of Jesus Christ and bear his testimony 2) they keep the commandments of God (unlike what most Samaritanized Christians teach) and 3) they do not love their lives to the death (if absolutely necessary).

"But rather seek the kingdom of God, and all these things shall be added to you. Do not fear, **little flock**, for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom." Luke 12:31-32, MKJV

"Here is the patience of the saints. Here are the ones who keep the commandments of God and **the faith of Jesus**. And I heard a voice from Heaven saying to me, Write, Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord from now on. Yes,

says the Spirit, they shall rest from their labors,  
and their works follow them.”

Revelation 14:12-13, MKJV

“And they overcame him [Satan] because of  
the blood of the Lamb, and because of the word  
of their testimony. And they did not love their  
soul to the death.” Revelation 12:11, MKJV

“And the dragon was enraged over the  
woman, and went to make war with the rest of  
her seed, who keep the commandments of God  
and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.”

Revelation 12:17, MKJV

The requirement to live differently than this  
world, including not loving our lives to the  
death, if necessary, is what Jesus Christ likened  
to a straight (small) gate and narrow way that  
few would find, whereas many will go through a  
broader gate that leads to destruction:

“Therefore all things whatsoever ye would  
that men should do to you, do ye even so to  
them: for this is the law and the prophets.

**Enter ye in at the strait gate:** for wide is the  
gate, and broad is the way [Satan and Cain’s  
way], that leadeth to destruction, and many  
there be which go in thereat: Because strait is

the gate, and **narrow is the way**, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it."  
Matthew 7:12-14, KJV

"And one said to Him, Lord, are the ones being saved [now] few? And He said to them, Strive to enter in at the narrow gate. For I say to you, many will seek to enter in and shall not be able. And once the Master of the house has risen up and has shut the door, and you begin to stand outside and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us, and He shall answer and say to you, I do not know you; from where are you; then you shall begin to say, We ate and drank in Your presence, and You have taught in our streets. But He shall say, I tell you, I do not know you; from where you are. **Depart from Me, all workers of unrighteousness!**"

Luke 13:23-27, MKJV

Living differently from the world includes keeping the commandments of God, which most Samaritanized Christians do not believe they need to do and so they don't. But Christ categorizes and dismisses those who do not as "workers of unrighteousness." For the reader's peace of mind it is likely that those so dismissed will be part of the called and chosen later, but this will be explained in section 10.6.

Your author does not know how small a little flock is, but the below Revelation scripture is pretty sobering if it is only 144,000. To be fair, the below scripture might only be a part of the total count at the time of the end, or of those comprising Category One of the called and chosen throughout human history.

"And I heard the number of those who were sealed, one hundred and forty-four thousands, having been sealed out of every tribe of the sons of Israel." Revelation 7:4, MKJV

Whatever the actual number is, they will comprise an important part of the Category Two firstfruits. They are of those with the Lamb and described as the called and the elect and the faithful chosen ones:

"These [the ten evil kings in league with the Revelation 13 beast] will make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb will overcome them. For He is Lord of lords and King of kings. And those with Him are **the called and elect and faithful [chosen] ones.**" Revelation 17:14

Though the spiritual Israelite walk is not easy, Christ promises we will not be tried

beyond what we are able to bear and that God is faithful and he will sustain us.

"No temptation has taken you but what is common to man; but God is faithful, who will not allow you to be tempted above what you are able, but with the temptation also will make a way to escape, so that you may be able to bear it." 1 Corinthians 10:13, MKJV

"Jude, a servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James, to the ones called in God the Father, having been set apart, and having been kept by Jesus Christ:" Jude 1:1, MKJV

Also, God promises to work things out in the long run - to make all things work together for good. This, we will see, applies to those effectively called and chosen now, i.e., the spiritual Israelites. It also will be shown to apply to Israel, too. This will be shown as we progress throughout the balance of this book.

"And we know that all things work together for good to those who love God, to those who are called according to His purpose."  
Romans 8:28

For now, spiritual Israelites are to be the light to the world, and salt to the world, and to offer the world a ministry of reconciliation, even though we are persecuted for having the testimony of Jesus Christ and keeping his commandments.

"Blessed are you when men shall revile you and persecute you, and shall say all kinds of evil against you falsely, for My sake. Rejoice and be exceedingly glad, for your reward in Heaven is great. For so they persecuted the prophets who were before you. **You are the salt of the earth**, but if the salt loses its savor, with what shall it be salted? It is no longer good for anything, but to be thrown out and to be trodden underfoot by men. **You are the light of the world**. A city that is set on a hill cannot be hidden. Nor do men light a lamp and put it under the grain-measure, but on a lampstand. And it gives light to all who are in the house. Let your light so shine before men that they may see your good works and glorify your Father who is in Heaven. **Do not think that I have come to destroy the Law or the Prophets.** I have not come to destroy but to fulfill. For truly I say to you, Till the heaven and the earth pass away, not one jot or one tittle shall in any way pass from the law until all is fulfilled. Therefore

whoever shall break one of these commandments, the least, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of Heaven. But whoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of Heaven.” Matthew 5:11-19, MKJV

Many times, in the New Testament, the effectively called and chosen spiritual Israelites are called “the elect.” Here are a couple of examples.

“Who shall lay anything to the charge of God’s elect? It is God who justifies.”  
Romans 8:33, MKJV

“Therefore, as **the elect of God**, holy and beloved, put on tender feelings of mercy, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, long-suffering,” Colossians 3:12, MKJV

Call these precious children of God what you will: spiritual Israel, the effectively called and chosen now, your author’s Category One of the called and chosen, your author’s Category Two of the firstfruits, or the elect, they evidently are comparatively few in number, but have the testimony of Jesus Christ, practice keeping the commandments of God, and are willing to lay

down their lives if necessary. They are loved and sustained by Jesus (John 15:9-10, Jude 1:1).

### **8.12 Romans 9-11 provides an “Israelite failure and Gentile Christian” exception handling explanation**

The two biggest objections to Israel being regarded as: 1) the called and chosen 2) the firstfruits 3) the congregation of God 4) a holy nation and a kingdom of priests, etc., are as follows:

- A. Most of the historic and current physical Israelites are clearly not behaving as those who have repented of their sins, who are now being led by the Holy Spirit, and are living out converted changed lives ... and
- B. God the Father and Jesus Christ have clearly given their Holy Spirit to some non-physical Israelites

As previously pointed out, God declares the end from the beginning because he has the power to kill and make alive, to cripple and then heal, to blind and then open people's eyes, etc. The two Jehovahs know what is within their

power to accomplish, know what is going to be accomplished ... and then sometimes act and speak as if it is already a done deal. The reader should always bear this in mind. In short, both "A" and "B," above, are a part of God's Strange Plan. That some individuals of the nations (Gentiles) are called and chosen now cannot be disputed – but this simply means that God is admitting them to a holy nation now, which is to say the Commonwealth of spiritual Israel. In essence, they won the spiritual lottery.

In Romans, chapters 9-11, with some supporting other scriptures, there is an explanation of the blinding and failure of most of the Israelites and the new addition of "Gentile Christians." Your author previously explained this in his *Life Charts* book and will quote extensively from that explanation below. A few of the ideas in the below quotes have already been covered earlier in this book, but in order to not break the flow of the explanation your author thought it best to just quote the entire passages providing the explanation. Two lengthy quoted sections follow.

" ... There is nothing wrong with the descriptor, "**Christian**." The Bible uses the term favorably below:

"But if one suffers as a Christian, let him not be ashamed, but let him glorify God because of this." 1 Peter 4:16, MKJV

Perhaps phraseology that would be clearer would be the use of the two-word phrase "**spiritual Israelite**," instead of Christian. Again, there is nothing wrong with Christian, but the use of the two-word phrase "spiritual Israelite" would gut the incorrect idea of dispensationalism, which negatively plagues modern Christianity.

A suggestion: Christian = spiritual Israelite

Abraham is "the father of the faithful." The below verses, mainly from the New Testament in order to make a point, hearken back to their Old Testament counterparts. They show the mind of God pertaining to the good fathers, e.g., the promise of a Savior was made to Abraham, Isaac, and Israel (through Israel's son, Judah).

"The God of Abraham and of Isaac and of Jacob, the God of our fathers, has glorified His son Jesus, whom you delivered up, denying Him in the presence of Pilate, when he had decided to let Him go." Acts 3:13, MKJV

"You are the sons of the prophets and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, saying to Abraham, "And in your Seed shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed.""

Acts 3:25, MKJV

"nor because they are the seed of Abraham are they all children. But, "In Isaac [not Ishmael] shall your Seed be called.""

Romans 9:7, MKJV

"The scepter shall not depart from Judah [Israel's son], nor a Lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh [Christ] come. And the obedience of the peoples to him."

Genesis 49:10, MKJV

Abraham → Isaac → Israel (Jacob) → Jacob's twelve sons → the physical Israelites

Abraham → Isaac → Israel → Judah → Shiloh (Savior)

The below scripture shows the Israelite-lineage part of the plan of God:

"And He gave him [Abraham] the covenant of circumcision. And so Abraham fathered Isaac

and circumcised him the eighth day. And Isaac fathered Jacob, and Jacob the twelve patriarchs." Acts 7:8, MKJV

And please notice how God introduced himself to Moses:

"saying, "I am the God of your fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob." But Moses trembled and dared not look." Acts 7:32, MKJV

The Bible refers to Abraham as the father of the faithful (Christians) (spiritual Israelites).

"Therefore it is of faith so that it might be according to grace; for the promise to be made sure to all the seed, not only to that which is of the Law, but to that also which is of the faith of **Abraham, who is the father of us all**"  
Romans 4:16, MKJV

Abraham → regarded as the father → of the spiritual Israelites

This is important as Abraham believed God and obeyed God, and both are important:

"For what does the Scripture say? "Abraham believed God, and it was counted to him for righteousness." Romans 4:3, MKJV

"Was not Abraham our father justified by works when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar? Do you see how faith worked with his works, and by the works faith was made complete? And the Scripture was fulfilled which says, "Abraham believed God, and it was imputed to him for righteousness, and he was called the friend of God." You see then how a man is justified by works, and not by faith only." James 2:21-24, MKJV

The James 2 scripture, above, **destroys the false idea of spiritual predestination** as Abraham not only needed to believe, but he also obeyed God. He did both - became the father of the faithful and also the friend of God.

Just like there are "the good fathers" [Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob/Israel] and "the bad fathers" [the bad fathers are those who were at Mount Sinai and promised to do what God said, including teach God's ways to their children, but did not and then died in the wilderness] there are spiritual Israelites and physical Israelites. **This distinction is important.**

"For I myself [Paul] was wishing to be accursed from Christ for my brothers, my kinsmen according to the flesh, who are Israelites [the physical Israelites]; to whom belong the adoption, and the glory, and the covenants, and the giving of the Law [instruction], and the [tabernacle/temple] service of God, and the promises; whose are the fathers, and of whom is the Christ according to flesh [one of the promises to the good fathers was Shiloh (Christ) would be physically descended from them], He being God over all, blessed forever. Amen. Not however that the word of God has failed, **for not all those of Israel are Israel**; nor because they are the seed of Abraham are they all children. But, "In Isaac shall your Seed be called." That is, **not the children of the flesh are children of God**; but the children of the promise are counted for a seed." Romans 9:3-8, MKJV

The above scripture explains a lot. The point your author wants to make in the above scripture is NOT just clarifying that Ishmael is not part of the Abraham-to-Christ lineage, and that the correct way to understand the Abraham-to-Christ lineage is that it goes through Isaac, which it does. **The main point**

**is this:** the children of the flesh, any flesh, are not ultimately considered the children of God AND being a descendent of Jacob, a physical Israelite, will not save you. This is important because some seemingly intelligent men, who happened to be descended from Abraham, were confused on just this point. They thought they did not have to repent and change and go through the divine individualism process. They were wrong.

"Therefore bring forth fruits worthy of repentance, and do not begin to say within yourselves, We have Abraham for our father. For I say to you that God is able to raise up children to Abraham from these stones."

Luke 3:8, MKJV

It is not whether you are a physical Israelite that matters, because not all physical Israelites are real spiritual Israelites – in God's eyes. God is looking for those who will follow Abraham's example of both believing and obeying. **God is looking for spiritual Israelites.** And the good news for the human race is that becoming a spiritual Israelite is open to all men and all women.

The two Jehovahs → desire → spiritual Israelites

"What shall we say then? That the nations [non-physical Israelites], who did not follow after righteousness have taken on righteousness, but a righteousness of faith."  
Romans 9:30, MKJV

"Brothers, truly my heart's desire and prayer to God for Israel is for it to be saved. For I bear record to them that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge [bad theory, bad results]. For they, being ignorant of God's righteousness and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves to the righteousness of God [the divine individualism process in order to become a spiritual Israelite]. For Christ is the end [result, goal] of the law [divine law instruction] for righteousness for everyone who believes [cooperates with the two Jehovahs in their divine individualism process]."  
Romans 10:1-4, MKJV

"Because if you confess the Lord Jesus, and believe in your heart that God has raised Him from the dead, you shall [ultimately] be saved. For with the heart one believes unto righteousness, and with the mouth one confesses unto salvation. For the Scripture says,

"Everyone believing on Him shall not be put to shame." For there is no difference both of Jew [representing physical Israelites] and of Greek [representing all nations, i.e., non-physical Israelites], for **the same Lord over all is rich to all who call on Him**. For everyone, "whoever shall call on the name of the Lord will be saved." Romans 10:9-13, MKJV

There is no need for Arabs to fight Jews, or for other non-Israelite nations to fight any other Israelites. **Any man and any woman can become a spiritual Israelite AND that is what matters.** In fact, properly understood, it is the only thing that matters. This is because in a true dichotomy, not a false one, either you are going to become a spiritual Israelite (Christian) who successfully goes through the divine individualism process, OR you will ultimately end up being put to eternal death [as will be explained further in section 10.5]. And being a physical Israelite will NOT save you. It is merely an accident of birth. Religiously inspired jealousy is evidence of a non-mature mind and it is not necessary in any way. The two Jehovahs believe in peace, not religious war, and not jealousy leading to religious war.

Any man and any woman → can become → a spiritual Israelite

Becoming a spiritual Israelite → is what matters

And this gets us back to the false doctrine of dispensationalism. The Bible point-blank refutes it.

"I [Paul] say then, Did not God put away His people [Israel and pick up the church]? **Let it not be said!** For I also am an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin."  
Romans 11:1, MKJV"

This gets us back to the "God put down a failed Israel and picked up the New Testament church" conundrum mentioned in the introduction to this section. A further conundrum, to many, is that God blinded Israel and only calls a select few now and Christ spoke in parables, too. It all seems so counterintuitive to wanting to "save as many people as possible now." Your author's *Life Charts* covers this and here is the second lengthy quote from it.

"And there is a counter-intuitive further problem, which is: ... the two Jehovahs blinded the minds of many people, and Jesus Christ

spoke in parables so that people would NOT understand his teachings. Why would the two Jehovahs blind the minds and dull the thoughts of people? Before your author gets himself set upon, please consider the following scriptures pertaining to Israel and the people hearing Jesus Christ while he was on this earth:

“No one can come to Me unless the Father who has sent Me draw him, and I will raise him up at the last day.” John 6:44, MKJV

Unless God the Father called someone to Jesus, they could not understand his message – at that time.

“And the disciples said to Him [Jesus], Why do You speak to them in parables? He answered and said to them, Because it is given to you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of Heaven,

**but it is not given to them.”**

Matthew 13:10-11, MKJV

At times, Jesus spoke in parables so that the crowd, in general, would not understand his message – at that time.

“And He [Jesus] said to them [his disciples], To you it is given to know the mystery of the

kingdom of God. But to those outside, all these things are given in parables so that seeing they may see, and not perceive; and hearing they may hear, and not understand; lest at any time they should be converted, and their sins should be forgiven them." Mark 4:11-12, MKJV

The Mark scripture explains, point-blank, that the Father and Christ's plan was NOT to call and convert all men at that time. This is very counter-intuitive, but true. Further evidence of this is in a passage of John which quotes Isaiah 44:18:

"But though He [Jesus] had done so many miracles before them, yet they did not believe on Him, so that the saying of Isaiah the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spoke, "Lord, who has believed our report? And to whom has the arm of the Lord been revealed?" Therefore they could not believe, because Isaiah said again, "He [God] has blinded their eyes and hardened their heart, so that they should not see with their eyes nor understand with their heart, and be converted, and I should heal them."'"

John 12:37-40, MKJV

"What shall we say then? Is there not unrighteousness with God? Let it not be! For He

said to Moses, "I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion." So then it is not of the one willing, nor of the one running, but of God, the One showing mercy."

Romans 9:14-16, MKJV

God the Father will call those whom he wills, when he wills (John 6:44). ... For the most part, the general rule is that God deals with Israel first and then the nations (non-Israelites) later.

"No one can come to Me [Christ] unless the Father who has sent Me draw him, and I will raise him up at the last day [the first resurrection, of the firstfruits]." John 6:44, MKJV

... The two Jehovahs are still working with physical Israelites, but only a portion of Israel at this time.

"What then? Israel [as a whole] has not obtained that which it seeks, but **the election obtained it [the elect of Israel are those relatively few called and chosen now]**, and the rest were hardened [for now] even as it is written, "God gave to them a spirit of slumber, eyes not seeing, and ears not hearing" until this day. And David said, "Let their table become for

a snare and a trap and a stumbling block and a recompense to them. Let their eyes be darkened so that they may not see, and their back always bowing." I say then, Did they not stumble that they fall? Let it not be! But by their slipping away came salvation to the nations [non-Israelites], to provoke them to jealousy."

Romans 11:7-11, MKJV

God himself hardened the heart and closed the eyes of most of the physical Israelites, choosing only to work with a portion of them now, "the election" in the Romans 11 scripture quoted above. And God is also using the calling and election of a small percent of the non-Israelite nations now. The reason given was to provoke to jealousy the physical Israelites (which obviously has not worked).

Does this mean that God put down Israel and picked up the church? Already explained, that answer is an emphatic, "No."

"I say then, Did not God put away His people? **Let it not be said! [No! There is just a time delay in order that hard lessons are learned.]** For I also am an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin. God did not thrust out His people whom He foreknew. Or

do you not know what the Scripture said in Elijah, how he pleaded with God against Israel, saying, "Lord, they killed Your prophets and dug down Your altars, and I am left alone, and they seek my life." But what does the Divine answer say to him? "I have reserved to Myself seven thousand men who have not bowed the knee to Baal." Even so then, also **in this present time a remnant according to the election of grace has come into being [a few of the physical Israelites are called now and the rest will be called later].**"

Romans 11:1-5, MKJV

God himself admits responsibility for the blinding of the vast majority of the Israelites – for now. But God can solve the problem for all of those not called and part of an election of grace, at the present time. ... God can heal. God can resurrect the dead. God can heal the dead, e.g., Lazarus (John 11), bringing them back to a second physical existence.

"For I speak to you, the nations [non-physical Israelites]; since I am the apostle of the nations, I glorify my ministry; if by any means I may provoke those who are my flesh [the physical Israelites] to jealousy, and might save some of them [Why not all of them? Please

keep reading]. For if their casting away is the reconciling of the world [the opening for some of the non-physical Israelites, i.e., the nations to be called to a special election of grace now], what is the reception except life from the dead? For if the firstfruit is holy [those called now to be spiritual Israelites], the lump is also holy [the balance of non-called-now physical Israelites]; and if the root is holy, also the branches. And if some of the branches were broken off [those physical Israelites not called and chosen now], and you, being a wild olive tree [those called and chosen of the non-physical Israelites now], were grafted in among them [the Israelites], and became a sharer of the root and the fatness of the olive tree with them, do not boast against the branches [the physical Israelites not yet called]. But if you boast, it is not you that bears the root, but the root bears you [God works through Israel which has the law (instructions, directions), the covenants, etc., Romans 9:4)]. You will say then, The branches were broken off so that I might be grafted in [effectively called and chosen now to a special election of grace]. Well, because of unbelief they were broken off, and you stand by faith. Do not be high-minded, but fear. For if God did not spare the natural branches, fear lest He also may not spare you either! Behold then the kindness, and the

severity of God; on those having fallen, severity; but on you, kindness, if you continue in the kindness [finish the divine individualism process]. Otherwise you also will be cut off. And those also, if they do not continue in unbelief, will be grafted in. **For God is able to graft them in again [which he will, the physical Israelites not called now].**"

Romans 11:13-23, MKJV

"For if you were cut out of the natural wild olive tree, and were grafted contrary to nature [nature meaning God works through physical Israel and you are not physical Israelites] into a good olive tree; how much more **these being according to nature [physical Israelites] will be grafted into their own olive-tree [to become spiritual Israelites on their way to becoming incorruptible divine individuals]**? For **I do not want you to be ignorant of this mystery**, brothers, lest you should be wise within yourselves; that **blindness in part [blindness to some of the physical Israelites] has happened to Israel [admitted to be caused by God], until the fullness of the nations has comes in.** And so all Israel shall be saved; as it is written, "There shall come out of Zion the Deliverer [in the future per Revelation 19], and He will [then]

turn away ungodliness from Jacob [Jeremiah 31:33-34]. For this is My covenant with them, **when** [not now] I have taken away their sins." Indeed as regards the gospel, they are enemies for your sakes [not accepting Christ as Savior now]. But as regards the election, they are beloved [God still loves the physical Israelites even though they have failed him] for the fathers' sakes [Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob]. For the free gifts and calling of God are without repentance. [The New Living Translation has this sentence as: "For God's gifts and his call can never be withdrawn."] For as you also then disbelieved God, but now have been shown mercy through their disbelief, even so these also **have not believed now**, so that through your mercy they may also obtain mercy. **For God has shut up all in unbelief, so that He might show mercy to all.**" Romans 11:24-32, MKJV

The two Jehovahs (God) → shut up [virtually] all → in unbelief SO THAT → they might ultimately show mercy to all [virtually all]

And so there we have the answer as to why so many people seem to not care very much about God, now. God has largely blinded the vast majority of mankind, now, calling only a relatively small percentage to serve as a kind of

firstfruits [Category Two] for all of humanity. God, in particular, blinded the vast majority of the physical Israelites [Category Three of the firstfruits]. This, in effect, blinded most of humanity because God works through Israel first. And if the majority of the people he works through first are blinded now, then the balance of the human race is even more so. They do not have a historical relationship with God. The physical Israelites were supposed to be a light to them, but failed. **However, God did all of this in order to show mercy TO ALL.** "To all" includes those called to a special election of grace now (whether physical Israelite or not) AND the physical Israelites not yet called AND those non-physical Israelites not yet called (the rest of humanity).

The two Jehovahs (God) → want to show → mercy to all

All = 1) those called to a special election of grace now + 2) the physical Israelites not yet called to the special election of grace + 3) the non-Israelite peoples of the other nations of the world, not yet called to the special election of grace

As your author pointed out ... there is war between Satan and God, and between Satan and mankind. In a war, communications are not normal. They cannot be or the enemy will know your plans and adjust their plans accordingly. Ergo, some of the Biblical communications are in plain text and so that part of the divine communication is readable and understandable. And some of the communications are lightly coded and understandable to some, but not others. And some of the Biblical communication is heavily coded. The heavily coded part of the Biblical communication is intended to be understood, at this time, by only a few - those called and chosen now to a special election of grace. It is even possible that some of the divine communication is not to be completely understood by any human being, for now. If so, the meaning of any such divine communication would have to be revealed by the two Jehovahs later. And so even though the Bible promises the Holy Spirit will lead us into all truth (John 16:13), it does not say when. ... All of us, including your author, are ignorant – just of different things. And all of us, whether effectively called and chosen or not, will die not knowing some aspects of the Bible. This is why there are doctrinal disagreements, divisions within church denominations, etc., at the

present time. It is likely we will know the rest of the story after we have been resurrected to eternal life, but not until then. At any rate, for now, the Bible clearly teaches that God has blinded the minds of most so that the two Jehovahs can ultimately show mercy to almost all. Your author says "almost all" because there are always going to be some who are recalcitrant, some who refuse to submit to the two Jehovahs and participate with them in their divine individualism process. There are at least two scriptures to help show that the two Jehovahs did not intend for men to understand exactly what they were doing because the unwitting actions of some men were necessary to help the two Jehovahs carry out their plans.

"But, we speak wisdom among those who are perfect; yet not the wisdom of this world, nor of the rulers of this world, that come to nothing. But we speak **the wisdom of God in a mystery, which God has hidden**, predetermining it before the world for our glory; which none of the rulers of this world knew (for if they had known, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory)." 1 Corinthians 2:6-8, MKJV

God predetermined to hide his plan from whoever was ruling the world at the time of

Christ's necessary sacrifice so they would unwittingly participate in helping to create a bridge from death to life for us, God's characters.

"But they [the nations] **do not know the plans of the LORD**, nor do they understand His counsel. For He has gathered them like the sheaf to the floor." Micah 4:12, MKJV

The Micah 4:12 scripture plainly says that the nations, non-physical Israelites, do not know the plans of the LORD and numerous places in the Bible, e.g., Romans 11 and Mark 4, show that God blinded the majority of the Israelites, too. In other words, per Romans 11:32, "God has shut up all in unbelief, so that he might show mercy to all." The word "all" in both places in the above sentence should be understood to mean "almost all." God has called some to a special election of grace now, ergo "almost all" pertaining to the first "all" of the Romans 11:32 sentence. And there are always going to be some people who, basically, want to die, and so they will reject God even after their minds are opened to the truth for the first time. Hence, "almost all" also pertains to the last word in the sentence.

The Bible was written so that it would not be completely understood at this time. Sorry, that's the way it is. No one can tell your author that the two supreme minds in the universe could not have written what amounts to a cookbook with recipes on how to become a future incorruptible divine individual. They are too smart to have attempted writing the Bible to be understood and then failing in the attempt. Any who would disagree with your author can feel free to explain the widespread and heated disagreements pertaining to the Bible and its interpretation. No one argues about the meaning of a recipe in a cookbook. The meaning of a recipe is plain to anyone who can read. One just has to do what the recipe says to get the desired result. The Bible is not this way. The two Jehovahs did not want the Bible to be completely understood, now, because they were shutting up almost all in unbelief, now, because they want to eventually have mercy to the almost all who will cooperate with them once their minds are opened in the future.

The two Jehovahs → did not write the Bible → like a cookbook containing recipes

The two Jehovahs → wanted to hide → at least some of their plans → from mankind

The Bible is partly written: 1) in plain text, 2) some is lightly coded, and 3) some is more heavily coded

Back to the physical Israelites, it is unknowable what would have happened had they not been such a nation of rebels. They continually frustrated Moses, the other prophets sent by God, e.g., Elijah, and the two Jehovahs. Therefore, **in order to save them later**, by **not having to condemn them now**, God blinded them. This sort of fits in with Ayn Rand, the atheist's, brilliant observation (in so many words): If men are not willing to think, then one must leave them to the consequences of their decisions. In other words, God let the physical Israelites and all mankind have it their way - the immoral, irrational, warring, lying, lusting, backstabbing way in order to allow men to live out their lives and suffer hard consequences for their immoral and irrational choices. But, as of right now, this still leaves Satan ahead in the "big game."

The two Jehovahs (God) → in order to save the bulk of mankind LATER → blinded them NOW → so as to not have to condemn them NOW → for

their numerous immoral + irrational choices  
(sins)

Let the reader remember that God works primarily through Israel first (uses Israel as a light to the world) and then works through the nations. Ultimately, the two Jehovahs want so save mankind, not condemn mankind.

"For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but so that the world might be saved through Him." John 3:17, MKJV

If God is not going to have to engage in widespread condemnation of mankind, then what is God going to do to save the day? It is obvious, from the above scriptures, that the two Jehovahs have purposely blinded the minds of most men so they would not understand the real plan of God at the time they were alive on the earth. How can God hold these blinded men fully responsible? And, even worse, from the mainstream Christian point of view, consign all of these immoral and irrational sinful men and women to eternal torture in a never-ending hellfire? It all seems like quite a conundrum."

This conundrum will be explained partly in chapter nine and more fully in chapter ten. The

two Jehovahs have an answer and the ability to save the day, for those willing to cooperate with them in their divine individualism process.

There is one more point your author wants to make in this rather lengthy section. With all the above lengthy explanation in mind, the below scripture can be read in a new light, which is to say it can be expanded in meaning to not only include those effectively called and chosen now, the Category Two firstfruits, but also to include Israel, the congregation of God, the Category Three firstfruits.

“And I also say to you that you are Peter, and on this rock I will build **My church**, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.”  
Matthew 16:18, MKJV

The word translated as “church” is ekklesia, Strong’s #1577, meaning assembly, or a religious congregation, which in God’s eyes, is Israel.

### **8.13 Deuteronomy 28:46 is a sign to Israel forever – the blessings and the cursings**

A scripture that is widely used by preachers and Bible teachers is Deuteronomy 30:19-20.

"I [Moses, in essence speaking for God] call Heaven and earth to record today against you. I have set before you **life and death**, blessing and cursing. Therefore, **choose life**, so that both you and your seed may live [well, i.e., abundantly], so that you may love the LORD your God, and that you may obey His voice, and that you may cling to Him. For He is your life and the length of your days, so that you may dwell in the land which the LORD swore to your fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give them." Deuteronomy 30:19-20, MKJV

The reason it is so often used in Bible teaching is to emphasize the importance of choosing life over death. Properly understood, actually choosing life means to also choose God's package of values that pertain to life. This would include following the divine law instructions, including learning and applying God's natural laws to have responsible dominion over the earth, and it would also include respecting others' individual natural rights. This is all a part of choosing life, but the implications of actually choosing life are not usually included in the preaching and the teaching. The part of the verse immediately following "life and death" is "blessing and cursing." There are blessings

that come from actually choosing life and curses that follow from not actually choosing life. The blessings come in part from adjusting our values so that the choices we make are in conformity with the divine law instructions and then we experience good consequences from our good choices based on our new and improved better values. Further, God amplifies those blessings with what amount to additional divine blessings from the two Jehovahs. Unfortunately, Israel failed God, man, themselves, and their progeny. The Israelites did not really choose life and God's package of values that pertain to life. No doubt they wanted the blessings and not the cursings, but they did not value or choose correctly, and ultimately God had to throw them off of the land he promised to the good fathers.

Choosing life = also choosing God's package of values → that pertain to life

Actually choosing life = adjusting our values

Adjusting our values → to God's good values → better choices → better consequences

God adds his blessings → to our better choices  
→ even better consequences

This section is written to teach and emphasize several key points regarding blessing and cursing. The first three points are per the above: 1) choosing life implies also choosing God's package of values that pertain to life, 2) each man and each woman must adjust their values accordingly, and 3) blessings come from the adjustment of our values resulting in better personal choices, combined with divine blessings from the two Jehovahs as a reward for sincerely trying to be like them and to please them.

The fourth point is to remind the reader that those who bless Abraham's God-designated seedline, the Israelites, shall be blessed and those who curse the twelve tribes of Israel shall be cursed (not just Judah, all twelve tribes).

God still owes Abraham a great nation – great includes a moral, rational, and productive people with good social skills toward others, i.e., not just material and scientific greatness, but greatness of character and mind.

"And the LORD said to Abram, Go out of your country, and from your kindred, and from your father's house into a land that I will show you. And **I will make you a great nation**. And I will bless you and make your name great. And you shall be a blessing. And I will bless those that

bless you and curse the one who curses you.

And in you shall all families of the earth be blessed." Genesis 12:1-3, MKJV

"How goodly are your tents, O Jacob, your tabernacles, **O Israel!** ... He crouched. He lay down as a lion, and as a great lion. Who shall stir him up? Blessed is he who blesses you, and curses he who curses you."

Numbers 24:5,9, MKJV

The fifth point is that Leviticus 26, Deuteronomy 28, and other places detail what would happen to the Israelites if they obeyed God (blessings), but if they disobeyed God, then a series of cursings, including even expulsion from the Promised Land. This point is widely known and you, dear reader, can read both famous blessing and cursing chapters for yourselves. Later in this section your author will highlight and call out several items – mainly from Deuteronomy 28.

The sixth point is that the curses, in particular, would be for a sign to the Israelites and their progeny (seed) forever. So while most of the physical Israelites alive today don't even know their ancestral heritage, of who they are and from whence they came, God does.

"And all these curses shall come on you, and shall pursue you and overtake you, until you are destroyed [not completely as will be pointed out further below] because you did not listen to the voice of the LORD your God, to keep His commandments and His statutes which He commanded you. And they [the curses] shall be on you for a sign and for a wonder, and on your seed forever." Deuteronomy 28:45-46, MKJV

Regarding not destroying them completely, that is not going to happen because Leviticus 26:44-46 and many other prophecies modify what God is saying in Deuteronomy 28:45-46. God will not completely destroy the rebellious Israelites because of his promises to the good fathers and because God is going to force Israel to finally succeed.

"And yet for all that, when they are in the land of their enemies, I will not cast them away, neither will I hate them, to destroy them utterly and to break My covenant with them. For I am the LORD their God. But for their sakes, I will remember the covenant of their ancestors, whom I brought forth out of the land of Egypt in the sight of the heathen, so that I might be their God. I am the LORD. These are the statutes and

judgments and laws, which the Lord made between Him and the sons of Israel in Mount Sinai by the hand of Moses."

Leviticus 26:44-46, MKJV

The curses → a sign to the Israelites → forever

The ugly fact that the Israelites almost continually frustrated and angered God is not determinatively relevant in the long-term because God will work future miracles to accomplish his purposes through Israel, not just for Israel, but also for the other peoples of the earth. One such miracle scripture is below and chapter nine will cover this in more detail, so no more will be written of this here.

"And I will give you a new heart, and I will put a new spirit within you. And I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you a heart of flesh." Ezekiel 36:26, MKJV

Next, for the reader's benefit, your author wishes to point out that Genesis 49 is a chapter where Jacob, the patriarch of Israel, blessed his twelve sons and prophesied what would happen to each of them in the latter days. Joseph was the son who received the birthright blessings so his progeny received more than the other 11

sons, but the other 11 sons received many blessings themselves. God fulfilled his promises to bless Abraham's descendants, the Israelites, but the modern day Israelites do not even seem to know who they are and are still failing God and the human race. Israel, from God's point of view, as outlined in Isaiah 26:18, has "**not brought about any salvation in the earth.**" The Israelites were thrown off the land because they did not acknowledge God and follow his divine law instructions. They actually ended up going into exile and being scattered with many of them not even realizing why it was all happening.

" ... but they do not regard the work of the LORD. Yea, they do not see the work of His hands. For this My people go into exile without knowledge ... " Isaiah 5:12-13, MKJV

Also for the reader's benefit, your author wishes to call to your attention a moderately lengthy passage in Deuteronomy 27:11-26 reciting a list of curses pronounced from Mt. Ebal that would occur if specific misdeeds were done. The specific misdeeds mirror the ten-commandment portion of the divine law instructions, or principles derived from other divine law instructions.

The last main part of this section is to list out some specific curses mentioned in Deuteronomy 28 so you, dear reader, can be aware of them and see if any of them are recognizable to you. Your author offers apologies in advance, as they are not easy to read.

"And it shall be, if you will not listen to the voice of the LORD your God, to observe and to do all His commandments and His statutes which I command you today, all these curses shall come on you and overtake you. You shall be cursed in the city, and cursed in the field."

Deuteronomy 28:15-16, MKJV

"The LORD shall strike you with lung disease and with a fever, and with an inflammation [no doubt other diseases also apply, but Covid 19 is a respiratory disease that has all of these as symptoms], and with an extreme burning, and with the sword, and with blasting, and with mildew. And they shall pursue you until you perish." Deuteronomy 28:22, MKJV

"The LORD will afflict you with madness [craziness and also mental illnesses], blindness [spiritual and mental, not just the inability to see] and **confusion of mind** [not knowing what

to do because there is no longer a standard of the right]." Deuteronomy 28:28, NIV

"You will watch as your sons and daughters are taken away as [tax] slaves. Your heart will break as you long for them, but nothing you do will help. A foreign nation you have never heard about will eat the crops you worked so hard to grow. You will suffer under constant oppression and harsh treatment. You will go mad because of all the tragedy around you."

Deuteronomy 28:32-34, NLT

**"You shall father sons and daughters, but you shall not enjoy them,** for they shall go into captivity [both tax slavery and your children will be educated in things you don't believe in, generational conflict of values will be in our homes, our children will make choices that are anathema to us, etc]."

Deuteronomy 28:41, MKJV

"The foreigners living among you will become stronger and stronger, while you become weaker and weaker [the worst will get on top]. They will lend money to you, not you to them. They will be the head, and you will be the tail!" Deuteronomy 28:43-44, NLT

"The LORD shall bring a nation against you from far, from the end of the earth, as the eagle flies; a nation whose tongue you shall not understand, a nation fierce of face who shall not regard the person of the old, nor show favor to the young. And he shall eat the fruit of your cattle and the fruit of your land, until you are destroyed. He shall not leave you grain, wine, or oil, the increase of your livestock, or flocks of your sheep, until he has destroyed you. And he shall besiege you in all your gates **until your high and fortified walls in which you trusted come down, throughout all the land** [for example, the Constitution of the USA, the legal system, the educational system, the military, etc., are all foundational and provide, in essence, high and fortified walls that can come down]. And he shall besiege you in all your gates throughout all your land which the LORD your God has given you."

Deuteronomy 28:49-52, MKJV

"then the LORD will make your plagues remarkable, and the plagues of your seed great and **persistent plagues** [like Covid 19]; with evil and long-lasting sicknesses."

Deuteronomy 28:59, MKJV

"The LORD will scatter you among all the nations, from one end of the earth to the other, and there you will serve gods made of wood and stone, gods that neither you nor your ancestors have ever worshiped before. You will find no peace anywhere, no place to call your own [an Israelite could have had free family land from God]; the LORD will overwhelm you with anxiety, hopelessness [no purpose to human life], and despair [including depression]. Your life will always be in danger. Day and night you will be filled with terror, and you will live in constant fear of death."

Deuteronomy 28:64-66  
TEV (GNB)

The two Jehovahs warned Israel, through Moses, to choose life and to keep the divine law instructions, i.e., to cling to God. They further warned Israel that the curses would be sure to follow if they did not, including follow them and their future children to the end of the earth. The curses would be as a sign forever to both Israel and ultimately the nations.

#### **8.14 God does not change regarding Israel, but Israel will change regarding God**

Israel is the called, the chosen, the redeemed, the congregation of God, a body of

witnesses for God, a future holy nation, and a future kingdom of priests for God. Broadly speaking, of the peoples alive on the earth at a point in time, Israel is also the firstfruits of those peoples alive at that time. Your author fully realizes the above Biblical facts will come as a shock to even most "Bible-believing Christians." There are several main reasons the above Bible-based facts will have come as a shock. First, it is obvious that the Israelites have failed God, man, themselves, and even their own progeny ... so far. Second, since God blinded Israel and Israel was to be the firstfruit body of witnesses, the people of the world, for the most part, are just as oblivious to all this as the substantially clueless Israelites in the modern era are. Lastly, people have been incorrectly taught a false, dispensational view of religion, namely that God put down Israel and picked up the church ... for "good reason." Once again, your author must use the Bible to intellectually and religiously slay this falsehood, which God himself covers in just one very well-worded scripture:

"For I am the LORD, **I change not** [God's eternal values pertaining to life and God's plan for his use of Israel are not going to change].  
Because of this you sons of Jacob are not

destroyed [even though perhaps you deserve to be because you have failed me, yourselves, and your fellow man]. From the days of your fathers, you have turned aside from My statutes, and have not kept them. Return to Me, and I will return to you, says the LORD of hosts. ...  
Malachi 3:6-7, MKJV

The “return to me, and I will return to you” is semantics, by God, because there are numerous other scriptures prophesying that God is going to bring a surviving small number of the Israelites back to the Promised Land, after a worldwide series of cataclysms effectively decimate the earth. A summary of those cataclysms will be covered in the next chapter in section 9.1, so no more will be written about them here. Some of those prophecies concerning a portion of the Israelites being returned to the Promised Land are the subject of the next chapter, section 9.4, so they also will not be covered here. Whether that small portion of Israel is a tenth, a remnant, or just a stump will not matter because God is going to bless the Israelites after he brings them back to the Promised Land. God will cause them to become a great nation, high above the other nations, and lead them to finally do his will. They will become the holy nation that is God’s

congregation of witnesses to the other peoples of the earth.

"And he said, "Yes, go. But tell my people this: 'You will hear my words, but you will not understand. You will see what I do, but you will not perceive its meaning.' Harden the hearts of these people. Close their ears, and shut their eyes. That way, they will not see with their eyes, hear with their ears, understand with their hearts, and turn to me for healing." Then I said, "Lord, how long must I do this?" And he replied, "Until their cities are destroyed, with no one left in them. Until their houses are deserted and the whole country is an utter wasteland. Do not stop until the LORD has sent everyone away to distant lands and the entire land of Israel lies deserted. Even if only a tenth--a remnant--survive, it will be invaded again and burned. Israel will remain a stump, like a tree that is cut down, but the stump will be a holy seed that will grow again."" Isaiah 6:9-13, NLT

"And I will cut a covenant of peace with them [Israel]. It shall be an everlasting covenant with them. And I will place them [back into the Promised Land], and multiply them, and will set My sanctuary in their midst forever. And My tabernacle shall be with them. Yea, I will be

their God, and they shall be My people. And **the nations shall know that I the LORD sanctify Israel**, when My sanctuary shall be in their midst forever." Ezekiel 37:26-28, MKJV

In addition to the intellectual surprise of realizing Israel's God-ordained and central role in human history, an honest one might protest, "But wouldn't that effectively waste countless human lives?" The short answer to this honest protest is ... correct, and not a surprise to the two Jehovahs.

"Sing, O heavens; and be joyful, O earth; and break out into singing, O mountains; for the Lord has comforted His people, and will have mercy on His afflicted. But Zion said, The LORD has forsaken me, and my LORD has forgotten me. Can a woman forget her sucking child, that she should not have compassion on the son of her womb? Yes, they may forget, yet I will not forget you. Behold, I have carved you on the palms of My hands; your walls are forever before Me. Your sons shall make haste; **those destroying you and ruining you** shall go out from you." Isaiah 49:13-17, MKJV

God understands that his necessary blinding of Israel and the lengthy time delay, from the

human point of view, is going to cause, in essence, ruined and largely wasted lives. The above scripture is speaking of Israel, but the same thing could be said for the people of other nations whose lives have also been, in effect, ruined and wasted. There is an answer for this, but it will not be explained until chapter ten. For right now, as an intellectual placeholder, God does have a real and effective solution to this seemingly unsolvable problem of ruined and wasted lives.

Instead of a converted Israel teaching divine law instructions and providing intellectual leadership in the use of reason to ascertain natural laws, including insisting on a respect for individual natural rights, and instead of providing a healthy cultural example to the other nations, we have the latter day Israelites scattered across the world and clueless as to their central role in human history. The remnant of Western Civilization, which includes Samaritanized Christianity muddled up with poisonous Secular Humanism, is a confusing mixture of good and evil. Scientific and material productivity and achievement belie and mask the lack of ethics and intellectual honesty. The scientific and material productive achievement is about to fall into the hands of the "worst, as

they will get on top.” The ethically amoral, combined with advanced weaponry and people-control technology, will bring a disaster upon the earth (Revelation 13). Israel’s corruption and failure have opened the door to all this. Part of the good news going forward is that Jesus Christ is going to return to the earth as King of kings and Lord of lords and then force Israel to do their job of being a light to the nations, but that is the subject of the next chapter.

## **Chapter Nine**

### **The Millennium As Part of God’s Strange Plan**

Christians around the world are awaiting the return of Jesus Christ. For reasons detailed in the earlier parts of this book, human problems are getting worse and seem unsolvable without direct divine intervention. A big part of the good news (gospel) for mankind is the much prophesied and soon coming Kingdom of God.

“And after John was delivered up, Jesus came into Galilee, proclaiming the gospel [good news] of the kingdom of God,” Mark 1:14, MKJV

The phrase “kingdom of heaven,” usually used in Matthew, or the phrase “Kingdom of God” is literally used dozens of times in the New Testament. In direct substantive sense it begins with the return of Jesus Christ to the earth as the King of kings and the Lord of lords. The first coming of Jesus Christ was a humble and sacrificial effort, but the return of Jesus Christ to actually rule is a very different story. The Bible prophesies that Jesus Christ will rule on the earth for a time period of 1,000 years (Revelation 19-20), during which time Satan will be bound and unable to deceive the peoples of the earth. This time period is commonly referred to as “the Millennium.” Millennium means a time period of 1,000 years. In this chapter your author selectively presents some of the major highlights of the soon coming big changes that Jesus Christ’s return will entail.

### **9.1 God’s Great Reset - Jesus Christ returns**

There is a lot of contrived talk these days about a coming “Great Reset.” God-rejecting men, who believe they are experts and have all of the right answers, want to force what they believe is a new political and economic system into existence, where self-styled elites will

manage the world's political and economic systems, irrespective if that is what the people of the world want. The truth is the actual men and women behind this idea, under the influence of the god of this world, Satan, want to take over the earth and give it to their pseudo-god, Satan. They are Satan's spiritual seedline, the children of Cain (Jude 1:11). Ultimately, they will not succeed. They will fail because the two Jehovahs' Great Reset is to send Jesus Christ back to this earth to actively rule as King of kings and Lord of lords. God's Great Reset will be just that ... a great reset that overthrows the governments, systems, religions, foolish cultures, and the isms of men. In point of fact, Jesus Christ will not just rule during the Millennium time period, but forever and ever after that.

"And the seventh angel sounded. And there were great voices in Heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this world have become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of His Christ. And He will reign forever and ever."  
Revelation 11:15, MKJV

God's Great Reset → the return of Jesus Christ

Upon returning → Jesus Christ → will overthrow the governments + religions + systems of this world → and actively rule upon the earth

Before God the Father sends Jesus Christ back to rule, the peoples of this world are prophesied to experience false prophets and religious leaders, wars, famines, disease epidemics, many other tragic events called sorrows, cataclysms, tribulations, drastic negative earth changes, signs in the heavens, and a world-ruling antichrist system of evil designed to enslave mankind and deliver them to Satan. Things will get so bad that if God the Father did not send Jesus Christ back to actively rule, no man would be left alive. Below are some scriptures bearing this out:

"And as He sat on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came to Him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? And what shall be the sign of Your coming, and of the end of the world? And Jesus answered and said to them, Take heed that no man deceive you. For many will come in My name, saying, I am Christ, and will deceive many. And you will hear of **wars** and rumors of wars. See that you are not troubled, for all these things must occur; but the end is not yet. For nation will rise against

nation, and kingdom against kingdom. And there will be **famines** and **pestilences** [disease epidemics] and earthquakes in different places. All these are **the beginning of sorrows**. Then they will deliver you up to be afflicted and will kill you [spiritual Israelites and physical Israelites, too]. And you will be hated of all nations for My name's sake. And then many will be offended, and will betray one another, and will hate one another. And many false prophets will rise and deceive many. And because **iniquity shall abound**, the love of many will become cold. But he who endures to the end, the same shall be kept safe. And this gospel of the kingdom shall be proclaimed in all the world as a witness to all nations. And then the end shall come." Matthew 24:3-14, MKJV

"And when He had opened the sixth seal, I looked, and behold, there was **a great earthquake**. And the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became like blood. And the stars of heaven fell to the earth, even as a fig tree casts her untimely figs when she is shaken by a mighty wind. And the heaven departed like a scroll when it is rolled together. And every mountain and island were moved out of their places. And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich, and the chief

captains, and the mighty men, and every bondman, and every freeman, hid themselves in the dens and in the rocks of the mountains. And they said to the mountains and rocks, Fall on us and hide us from the face of Him sitting on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb;”  
Revelation 6:12-16, MKJV

The last part of the Revelation 6:12-16 quote above is about the kings of the earth, the rich men, the mighty men, the military rulers, i.e., the elite, who have been playing god among men. They finally realize divine judgments are occurring and they will look for places to hide. They always wanted to look important, smart, powerful, and wealthy and like they knew what was best for everyone else, but when they come up against the real God, they looked for a place to hide. But who can hide from God? It would have been better for them to heed the warning that God gave to them a long time ago in Psalm 2:

“Why do the nations rage? Why do the people waste their time with futile plans? [like a Great Reset] The kings of the earth prepare for battle; the rulers plot together against the LORD and against his anointed one [they foolishly think that if they can kill the spiritual Israelites

and the physical Israelites, the earth will be theirs at last]. "Let us break their [the two Jehovahs'] chains," they cry, "and free ourselves from this slavery." [Actually God gives freedom within the necessary moral constraints of keeping the divine law instructions and respecting others' individual natural rights, but the bad guys interpret this gift of freedom as slavery.] But the one who rules in heaven laughs. The Lord scoffs at them. Then in anger he rebukes them, terrifying them with his fierce fury. For the LORD declares, "**I have placed my chosen king on the throne in Jerusalem, my holy city.**" The king proclaims the LORD's decree: "The LORD said to me, 'You are my son. Today I have become your Father. Only ask, and I will give you the nations as your inheritance, the ends of the earth as your possession. You will break them with an iron rod and smash them like clay pots.'" Now then, you kings, act wisely! Be warned, you rulers of the earth! Serve the LORD with reverent fear, and rejoice with trembling. Submit to God's royal son, or he will become angry, and you will be destroyed in the midst of your pursuits--for his anger can flare up in an instant. But what joy for all who find protection in him!" Psalms 2:1-12, NLT

From ancient times, a Satanic-led conspiracy of evil has attempted to thwart the two Jehovahs and their plans for man. Many other nations, under Satan's influence, have helped him in his rebellious efforts. The people of those nations are evidently full of bitterness, envy, anger, and resentment against God for creating Adam and then later choosing Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, and the Israelites to be his Category Three firstfruits he is going to work through to lead the nations. Following Satan's lead, they literally hate the two Jehovahs and the spiritual Israelites. Further, they also hate God's called and chosen, Israel, the physical Israelites, the congregation of witnesses, the bride of Jesus Christ, the future holy nation, and the nation in the future that will be high above all other nations. To date, the Israelites do not deserve the calling, but they will finally fulfill it. In the meantime, at least a partial list of the enemies of Israel, ergo the enemies of God, is found in Psalm 83. The very wording of their collective hatred against Israel (the twelve tribes) is in actuality collective hatred against God himself. These nations have an ancient treaty they reached by unanimous decision to actively oppose the Israelites. This is because the two Jehovahs called and chose Israel and they are

going to use to the Israelites to achieve their goals for mankind.

"<<A psalm of Asaph. A song.>> O God, don't sit idly by, silent and inactive! Don't you hear the tumult of your enemies? Don't you see what your arrogant enemies are doing? They devise crafty schemes against your people, laying plans against your precious ones.

"Come," they say, "**let us wipe out Israel as a nation**. We will destroy the very memory of its existence." This was their **unanimous decision**. **They signed a treaty as allies against you**-- these **Edomites** and **Ishmaelites, Moabites and Hagrites, Gebalites, Ammonites, and Amalekites**, and people from **Philistia and Tyre**. **Assyria** has joined them, too, **and is allied with the descendants of Lot**. Interlude"

Psalms 83:1-8, NLT

"for they said, "Let us seize for our own use these pasturelands of God!" [The land promised to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, Israel's land in the center of the earth.] O my God, blow them away like whirling dust, like chaff before the wind! As a fire roars through a forest and as a flame sets mountains ablaze, chase them with your fierce storms; terrify them with your

tempests. Utterly disgrace them until they submit to your name, O LORD. Let them be ashamed and terrified forever. Make them failures in everything they do, until they learn that you alone are called the LORD, that you alone are the Most High, supreme over all the earth.” Psalms 83:12-18, NLT

In addition to the Psalm 83 evil nations listed above, the spiritual seedline of Satan, those sons of Cain practicing the way of Cain, and the descendants of the Canaanites Israel was supposed to have destroyed but did not, are no doubt involved, too. Further, the evil Amalekites, listed below as the greatest of the nations, are also clearly involved. Since the Amalekites are described as the greatest of nations, it is possible they are functioning as the behind the scenes leaders of this coalition against the Israelites. Unfortunately, this would only serve Israel right for not destroying the evil Amalekites a long time ago like God commanded them to do (1 Samuel 15). Saul, Israel’s king at the time let some of the Amalekites live and this is going to come back around and hurt Israel at the time of the end, as will not eliminating 100% of the Canaanites like God commanded.

"This is the prophecy Balaam delivered: "This is the message of Balaam son of Beor, the prophecy of the man whose eyes see clearly, who hears the words of God, who has knowledge from the Most High, who sees a vision from the Almighty, who falls down with eyes wide open: I see him, but not in the present time. I perceive him, but far in the distant future. A star will rise from Jacob; a scepter will emerge from Israel [Jesus Christ]. It will crush the foreheads of Moab's people, cracking the skulls of the people of Sheth. Edom will be taken over, and Seir, its enemy, will be conquered, while Israel continues on in triumph. A ruler will rise in Jacob who will destroy the survivors of Ir [the city].” Then Balaam looked over at the people of Amalek and delivered this prophecy: "Amalek was the greatest of nations, but its destiny is destruction!" Then he looked over at **the Kenites** and prophesied: "You are strongly situated; your nest is set in the rocks. But the Kenites will be destroyed when Assyria takes you captive." Balaam concluded his prophecies by saying: "**Alas, who can survive when God does this?**" Numbers 24:15-23, NLT

**"Woe to them!** For they went the way of Cain, and gave themselves up to the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in the

gainsaying of Korah. These are sunken rocks in your love feasts, feasting together with you; feeding themselves without fear; waterless clouds being carried about by winds; fruitless autumn trees, having died twice, having been plucked up by the roots; wild waves of the sea foaming up their shames; wandering stars for whom blackness of darkness has been kept forever." Jude 1:11-13, MKJV

The dictator and world leader Biblically referred to in Revelation 13 as "the beast," is widely regarded and referred to as, THE Antichrist. Another beast, Biblically referred to as the "false prophet," is also an Antichrist. Together, their "mark of the beast" technological system described in Revelation 13 is evidently the fulfillment and implementation of the centuries old conspiracy of nations against the two Jehovahs and the Israelites.

" ... And all the earth marveled after the beast. And they worshiped the dragon who gave authority to the beast. And they worshiped the beast, saying, Who is like the beast? Who is able to make war with it? And a mouth speaking great things was given to it, and blasphemies. And authority was given to it to continue forty-two months. And **it opened its mouth in**

**blasphemy toward God**, to blaspheme His name and His tabernacle, and those dwelling in Heaven. And it was given to it to war with the saints and to overcome them. And authority was given to it over every tribe and tongues and nation. And all dwelling on the earth will worship it, those whose names have not been written in the Book of Life of the Lamb slain, from the foundation of the world."

Revelation 13:3-8, MKJV

"And I saw another beast coming up out of the earth. And it had two horns like a lamb, and he spoke like a dragon [the false prophet]. And it exercises all the authority of the first beast [the Antichrist] before him, and causes the earth and those dwelling in it to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. And it does great wonders, so that it makes fire come down from the heaven onto the earth in the sight of men. And it deceives those dwelling on the earth, because of the miracles which were given to it to do before the beast, saying to those dwelling on the earth that they should make an image to the beast who had the wound by a sword and lived. And there was given to it to give a spirit to the image of the beast, so that the image of the beast might both speak, and might cause as many as would not worship the

image of the beast to be killed. And it causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark on their right hand, or in their foreheads, even that not any might buy or sell except those having the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of its name. Here is wisdom. Let him having reason count the number of the beast, for it is the number of a man. And its number is six hundred and sixty-six." Revelation 13:11-18, MKJV

Their evil reign over most of the people of the earth will be a reign of deception, but it will be plagued with wars, and the resulting famines and diseases that are the usual consequences of wars. This is not to say that diseases and food shortages could not precipitate wars, they just usually follow from them. Further, their reign will be plagued by a series of divine judgments from the two Jehovahs. Revelation, chapters 8 and 9, describes six trumpet plagues and judgments from God, of varying negative effects on the earth and the peoples thereof. Revelation 8 describes at least one asteroid hitting the earth and doing great damage. And there are other signs in the skies. Further still, Revelation 15-16 describes the further destruction of the earth by God's additional seventh trumpet judgment, consisting of the last

seven vials. The combined effects of the Antichrist's evil leadership and irrational policies, plus God's judgments, are such that the earth is left in a shambles and billions of people will be killed. Revelation 6:8 perhaps describes about one person in four being killed or oppressed and then later in Revelation 9:15 the Bible further describes one person in three also being killed. Some parts of Revelation are allegorical and subject to varying interpretation. What is not subject to much interpretation is this: the ancient rebellion of the enemies hating God and Israel, culminating in the events described in Revelation, leave the earth in a shambles with billions of people dead. In such a scenario, even the survivors are likely to be traumatized casualties, too. Jesus foretold how bad it would get in Matthew 24:21-22.

"for then shall be great tribulation, such as has not been since the beginning of the world to this time; no, nor ever shall be. And unless those days should be shortened, no flesh would be saved. But for the elect's sake, those days shall be shortened." Matthew 24:21-22, MKJV

Thankfully, those days will be shortened. They will be shortened because **God's Great**

**Reset** is the return of Jesus Christ, this time as King of the earth.

"And the seventh angel sounded. And there were great voices in Heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this world have become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of His Christ. And He will reign forever and ever."  
Revelation 11:15, MKJV

"Then I saw heaven opened, and a white horse was standing there. And the one sitting on the horse was named Faithful and True. For he judges fairly and then goes to war [All the seemingly horrific seal, trumpet, and vial plagues are just]. His eyes were bright like flames of fire, and on his head were many crowns. A name was written on him, and only he knew what it meant. He was clothed with a robe dipped in blood, and his title was **the Word of God** [Jesus is the Word of God, John 1:1-18]. The armies of heaven, dressed in pure white linen, followed him on white horses. From his mouth came a sharp sword, and with it he struck down the nations. He ruled them with an iron rod, and he trod the winepress of the fierce wrath of almighty God. On his robe and thigh was written this title: King of kings and Lord of lords. Then I saw an angel standing in the sun,

shouting to the vultures flying high in the sky: "Come! Gather together for the great banquet God has prepared. Come and eat the flesh of kings, captains, and strong warriors; of horses and their riders; and of all humanity, both free and slave, small and great." Then I saw the [the Antichrist, Revelation 13] beast gathering the kings of the earth and their armies in order to fight against the one sitting on the horse and his army. And the beast was captured, and with him the false prophet [also an Antichrist] who did mighty miracles on behalf of the beast--miracles that deceived all who had accepted the mark of the beast and who worshiped his statue. **Both the beast and his false prophet were thrown alive into the lake of fire** that burns with sulfur. **Their entire army was killed** by the sharp sword that came out of the mouth of the one riding the white horse. And all the vultures of the sky gorged themselves on the dead bodies." Revelation 19:11-21, NLT

God's Great Reset will get rid of the beast and the false prophet, the other world leaders, and their armies. God the Father will send Jesus Christ, just in time. The 1,000-year time period known as the Millennium will then begin. The world will never be the same, this time, thanks be to the two Jehovahs, in a good sense.

## **9.2 Satan and the bad angels are seized and thrown into bad-angel jail**

Earlier in this book your author pointed out the surprising fact that Satan charged the throne of God in a failed and costly attempt to put himself in charge of the universe. Evidently, about one-third of the entire population of heretofore-sinless angels followed Satan in this rebellion. Satan thought he could take over God's universe and run it better than the two Jehovahs. He was thrown down to the earth, deceived Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden, and is effectively the current god of this world. Further, Satan is actively deceiving most of the people on the earth into following him instead of the two Jehovahs. Since this was earlier explained, your author will simply quote a few of the earlier scriptural references to refresh the reader's memory.

"How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, [the being now known as Satan] son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars [angels] of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the

congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; **I will be like the most High.** Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit.”  
Isaiah 14:12-15, KJV

“And he [Christ] said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven.”  
Luke 10:18, KJV

The below verse identifies that old serpent (in the Garden of Eden, Genesis 3) as none other than Satan, the devil.

“And **the great dragon** was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.” Revelation 12:9, KJV

“And another sign was seen in the heavens. And behold a great red dragon [Satan], having seven heads and ten horns and seven crowns on his heads! And his tail drew the third part of the stars [angels] of heaven, and cast them onto the earth. ... ” Revelation 12:3-4, MKJV

Once on the earth Satan and his evil-angel team, along with his spiritual seedline, his

hardcore human followers, have actively worked to deceive and mislead the people of the earth, unfortunately, to great effect, thus far.

“in whom **the god of this world** [Satan] has blinded the minds of the unbelieving ones, so that the light of the glorious gospel of Christ (who is the image of God) should not dawn on them.” 2 Corinthians 4:4, MKJV

“And He has made you [spiritual Israelites] alive, who were once dead in trespasses and sins, in which you once walked according to the course of this world, **according to the prince of the power of the air** [Satan], the [evil] spirit that now works in the children of disobedience [particularly in the spiritual seedline of Satan];” Ephesians 2:1-2, MKJV

Interestingly, some of the bad angels evidently further angered the two Jehovahs and were then thrown into what could be called a bad-angel jail of some kind. They are no longer free to help Satan at this time. The Greek word translated as “hell” below is the word *tartaroo*, Strong’s word #5020. This word is probably better translated as “a place of restraint.” As will be explained in the next chapter, there is no ever-burning hellfire, but there evidently is a

bad-angel jail. This bad-angel jail is substantively where at least some of the bad angels are currently being detained.

"For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell [tartaroo], and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment;" 2 Peter 2:4, KJV

Right after Jesus Christ returns, as depicted in Revelation 19, Revelation 20 has an interesting storyline, which is the subject matter and main point of this short section.

"And I saw an angel come down from Heaven, having the key of **the abyss** and a great chain in his hand. And **he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand years.** And he cast him into the abyss and shut him up and set a seal on him, that he should deceive the nations no more until the thousand years should be fulfilled. And after that he must be loosed a little time." Revelation 20:1-3, MKJV

What is clear, from the scriptural passage above, is that the two Jehovahs send a very powerful angel, and Satan is then overpowered

by this God-sent angel and thrown into bad-angel jail, this time called "the abyss." Satan is not allowed to affect human history during this 1,000 year time period. He, and no doubt all of the other corrupt bad angels, and no doubt all of the demons, are all going to be locked up in this bad-angel place of restraint and deprived of any contact with human beings for 1,000 years. The god of this world and all of his crony bad angels and any other evil spirits are all going to be in bad-angel jail. This will be a huge step forward toward world peace. Their absence will allow for the healing of the earth and the people on it to go forward largely unhindered, except for some human malcontents who will be easily dealt with by Jesus Christ and his true servants.

The Revelation 20 scriptures show who is really in charge and has the power, the superior force in this case, to rule. Satan the warlord, the gangster, the bully, and the con man is going to serve time. By logical extension, so are all of the bad angels and any other evil spirits who have followed Satan in their collective rebellion against God and man. Psychopathic evil, being amoral, does not care about right and wrong. Psychopathic evil, being irrational, is not open to peaceful reasoned debate. Psychopathic

evil, being parasitical, wants to take whatever it has the power or deceptive ability to take, regardless of who the rightful owner really is or who gets hurt. In short, psychopathic evil will keep coming until it is forcefully restrained and/or killed. For now, it is forceful restraint. The two Jehovahs, through their powerful angel, will jail Satan and his evil spirit followers and now have the spiritual "bad guys" right where they belong.

### **9.3 The end of religious, metaphysical, and philosophic confusion**

When Jesus Christ is on his throne in Jerusalem and actively commencing his rule over the kingdoms and peoples of the earth, this fact will very quickly be known on a worldwide basis. Many people are going to be embarrassed and ashamed for what they have previously believed, what they have previously taught their children and others, and how they have conducted their lives on this earth. In short, all religious and metaphysical confusion is going to come to an end – with many humiliated people left to acknowledge they were wrong.

"And then at last, the sign of the coming of the Son of Man will appear in the heavens, and

there will be deep mourning among all the nations of the earth. And they will see the Son of Man arrive on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory." Matthew 24:30, NLT

The surviving, shattered, hurting human beings are going to know something big has transpired. And they will understand it is Jesus Christ's "second coming," this time to rule. Things are going to be different ... one way or another, i.e., the easy way or the hard way. What is so sad is that instead of being happy about the return of Jesus Christ, the peoples of the nations of the earth will be in "deep mourning." The Bible does not specify the cause of this deep mourning, but writing in broad terms it is likely one of two things: 1) those who hate that they have to give up this world's "way of life" and submit to Jesus Christ or 2) those who realize they have been lied to and were wrong, i.e., they have devoted their entire life to believing and living a falsehood of one form or another.

One of the first things that will be different is for all human beings to understand that there are only two Gods in the universe, God the Father and Jesus Christ. There are no other gods. All prior religious teaching, apart from

what the Bible teaches, is going to be shown to be false. This means the end of all of the various world religions, the secular philosophies of history, e.g., Marxism, and also the end of astrology, witchcraft, ancestor worship, Eastern mysticism, and any other metaphysical system of belief, e.g., the laughable universal energy blob. They quite simply have been refuted by the now clearly provable existence of Jesus Christ.

Many religious and metaphysical beliefs have been created by either a lone man or a group of men wanting to devise an easier way to rule over other men, e.g., the tribal leader or king is descended from the gods. These created religious and metaphysical belief systems will be shown to be false and their adherents will have to give them up.

Other religious beliefs were no doubt created by human contact from Satan and the fallen angels. These, too, will be shown to be false. And Satan, the fallen angels, and the demons will be in bad-angel jail – no longer available to support the contentions of the false religion. Their support in the past included clever and deceitful arguments, sometimes supported with lying signs and wonders. There will be no more

lying signs and wonders, the penultimate example of which is the Revelation 13 scripture quoted directly below:

"Then I saw another beast come up out of the earth [the false prophet]. He had two horns like those of a lamb, and he spoke with the voice of a dragon. He exercised all the authority of the first beast. And he required all the earth and those who belong to this world to worship the first beast, whose death-wound had been healed. He did astounding miracles, such as making fire flash down to earth from heaven while everyone was watching. And with all the miracles he was allowed to perform on behalf of the first beast, he deceived all the people who belong to this world. He ordered the people of the world to make a great statue of the first beast, who was fatally wounded and then came back to life. He was permitted to give life to this statue so that it could speak. Then the statue commanded that anyone refusing to worship it must die." Revelation 13:11-15, NLT

"A man named Simon had been a sorcerer there for many years, claiming to be someone great. The Samaritan people, from the least to the greatest, often spoke of him as "the Great

One--the Power of God." He was very influential because of the magic he performed."

Acts 8:9-11, NLT

Without Satan and the fallen angels to cause their evil deceptive magic to work, along with Jesus Christ actually being on the earth, the other religious and metaphysical belief systems will finally fall. People will have to admit they were wrong and gave their lives to something that was false. This will be hard for people to accept. Some will be angry, all will be hurt, but hopefully they will reflect that at least now they know the inarguable truth. The below scripture is a condemnation of the people of Israel for doing what they should not have done, but it applies to the peoples of other nations just as much, because they also did the same things.

"But Jeshurun [a name for Israel] grew fat and kicked. You grew fat, thick, and satisfied. Then he forsook God who made him, and lightly esteemed the Rock of his salvation. They provoked Him to jealousy with **strange gods**; with abominations they provoked Him to anger. **They sacrificed to devils, not to God**; to gods whom they knew not, to new ones newly come up, whom your fathers did not fear. You forgot

the Rock who brought you forth, and ceased to care for God who formed you.”  
Deuteronomy 32:15-18, MKJV

“For the family idols speak iniquity, and the diviners have seen a lie and have told false dreams. They comfort in vain; therefore they wandered like a flock; they were troubled because there was no shepherd.”  
Zechariah 10:2, MKJV

Deuteronomy 32:8 is an interesting scripture that shows the nations could have chosen to just follow the God of the Bible, post flood (at the time of Noah), and each received an allocation of land (national land with God-set boundaries). If the people of the world would have cooperated with God’s leaders, Noah and Shem, they could have learned God’s way a long time ago and lived in peace on their own land. Instead, post-flood, they followed Nimrod in a rebellion against God (Genesis 11). As a result they were confounded by God confusing their language and then scattered over the earth.

“When the Most High gave the nations their inheritance, when he divided all mankind, he set up boundaries for the peoples according to the number of the sons of Israel.”

Deuteronomy 32:8, NIV

The main point here is that most people, including unfortunately, Israel, made it a point of rebelling and running away from the God of the Bible. Then they handed down silly religious and metaphysical beliefs to their own children, poisoning them. About 6,000 years of human history since Adam and Eve unfortunately leads up to the point where God the Father has to send Jesus Christ back to the earth to keep us from killing ourselves ... and also to finally eliminate religious, metaphysical, and any other kinds of confusion, which will be accomplished.

This is an authorial speculation and so you, dear reader, can take it or leave it, but don't be surprised if what has been known as Christianity ends up being called, "**The Way Of The Lord.**" This is consistent throughout the Bible in both the Old and New Testaments with numerous scriptures using this phraseology. The below are some examples.

"And Abraham shall surely become a great and mighty nation, and all the persons of the earth shall be blessed in him? For I know him, that he will command his sons and his house after him, and they shall keep **the way of the**

**LORD**, to do justice and judgment, that the LORD may bring upon Abraham that which He has spoken of him.” Genesis 18:18-19, MKJV

“They have turned aside quickly out of **the way** which I commanded them. They have made them a molten calf, and have worshiped it, and have sacrificed to it, and said, These are your gods, O Israel, who have brought you up out of the land of Egypt.” Exodus 32:8, MKJV

“And the LORD said to me, Arise! Get down quickly from here, for your people whom you have brought forth out of Egypt have corrupted. They have quickly turned aside out of **the way** which I commanded them. They have made them a molten image.”

Deuteronomy 9:12, MKJV

“For this is he who was spoken of by the prophet Isaiah, saying, “The voice of one crying in the wilderness: Prepare **the way of the Lord**, make His path straight.””

Matthew 3:3, MKJV

“Because narrow is the gate and constricted is **the way which leads to life**, and there are few who find it.” Matthew 7:14, MKJV

“Jesus said to him, **I am the Way**, the Truth, and the Life; no one comes to the Father but by Me.” John 14:6, MKJV

“and asked letters from him to Damascus to the synagogues; so that if he found any of **the Way**, whether they were men or women, he might bring them bound to Jerusalem.”

Acts 9:2, MKJV

“This man [Apollos] was instructed in **the way of the Lord**. And being fervent in the spirit, he spoke and taught the things of the Lord diligently, knowing only the baptism of John.” Acts 18:25, MKJV

If any peoples of the world refuse to acknowledge Jesus Christ as their King and also refuse to participate in “the way of the Lord,” then Zechariah 14 has an interesting prophetic warning directed to them.

“And it shall be, everyone who is left of all the nations which came up against Jerusalem shall go up from year to year to worship the King, the LORD of hosts, and to keep the Feast of Tabernacles. And it shall be, whoever will not come up from all the families of the earth to

Jerusalem to worship the King, Jehovah of hosts, even on them shall be no rain.”  
Zechariah 14:16-17, MKJV

In addition to the very welcome end to all religious and metaphysical confusion, and the end of Satanic-led deception, Jesus Christ will likely teach the people of the world that there is only one universe, it was created with a logical structure to it throughout, the human mind has a logical structure that corresponds to the logical structure of the universe, and that natural laws as given by the two Jehovahs are consistent in their operation. Going down this intellectual road will ultimately end philosophical confusion as well. After this is made clear then man, under the leadership of Jesus Christ, can use Christ’s teachings when he desires to be explicit, or the scientific method when Christ chooses to have us work things out for ourselves. Either way, mankind will be able to use their minds with confidence. In short, Jesus Christ will not only put an end to religious and metaphysical confusion and nonsense, he will also put an end to philosophic confusion and nonsense. Then the decks will finally be cleared for mankind to at last cooperate with the two Jehovahs in their divine individualism process for man.

## **9.4 Israel is brought back to the Promised Land and converted**

The land that was promised to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob and their descendants, the Israelites, is per the below:

"And He said to him, I am the LORD that brought you out of Ur of the Chaldees, to give you this land to inherit it." ... "In the same day the LORD made a covenant with Abram, saying, I have given this land to your seed, from the river of Egypt to the great river, the river Euphrates, the Kenites, and the Kenizzites, and the Kadmonites, and the Hittites, and the Perizzites, and the giants, and the Amorites, and the Canaanites, and the Girgashites, and the Jebusites." Genesis 15:7, 18-21, MKJV

A more detailed explanation is provided in Numbers 34:1-15. Obviously, Jesus Christ will clarify all of the boundaries when he comes. Your author's main point here is there is land that has been unconditionally promised to Abraham and his specified seedline descendants and the two Jehovahs are good for their word. They will deliver shortly after the return of Jesus Christ. Other peoples will be relocated to their

own nation's land, which is not in the land promised to Abraham (Jeremiah 12:14-17).

Jesus Christ will cause the surviving physical Israelites, all twelve tribes, to be relocated back to the Promised Land. This will be right after they survive the time of Jacob's trouble, known as the great tribulation.

"For the time is coming when I will restore the fortunes of my people of Israel and Judah. I will bring them home to this land that I gave to their ancestors, and they will possess it and live here again. I, the LORD, have spoken!'"  
Jeremiah 30:3, NLT

"Alas! For that day is great, so that none is like it; it is even the time of Jacob's trouble; but he [the Israelites] shall be saved out of it. For it shall be in that day, says the LORD of hosts, I will break his yoke from your neck and will burst your bonds. And strangers shall no longer enslave him, but they shall serve the LORD their God, and David their king [who will now be alive because he will be in the first resurrection of the dead], whom I will raise up to them. And you, O My servant Jacob, do not fear, says the LORD. Do not be terrified, O Israel. For lo, I will save you from afar, and your seed from the land of

their captivity. And Jacob shall return [to the Promised Land], and shall be in rest, and be quiet, and none shall make him afraid. For I am with you, says the LORD, to save you. Though I make a full end of all nations where I have scattered you, yet I will not make a full end of you; but I will correct you in measure, and will not leave you entirely unpunished."

Jeremiah 30:7-11, MKJV

"Afterward the sons of Israel shall return [to the Promised Land] and seek the LORD their God and David their king. And they shall fear the LORD and His goodness in the ends of the days." Hosea 3:5, MKJV

""I will strengthen Judah [the Southern two tribes] and save Israel [the Northern ten tribes]; I will reestablish them because I love them. **It will be as though I had never rejected them**, for I am the LORD their God, who will hear their cries. The people of Israel will become like mighty warriors, and their hearts will be happy as if by wine. Their children, too, will see it all and be glad; their hearts will rejoice in the LORD. When I whistle to them, they will come running, for I have redeemed them. From the few that are left, their population will grow again to its former size. Though I have scattered them

like seeds among the nations, still they will remember me in distant lands. With their children, they will survive and come home again to Israel. I will bring them back from Egypt and Assyria and resettle them in Gilead and Lebanon. There won't be enough room for them all! They will pass safely through the sea of distress, for the waves of the sea will be held back. And the waters of the Nile will become dry. The pride of Assyria will be crushed, and the rule of Egypt will end. I will make my people strong in my power, and they will go wherever they wish by my authority. I, the LORD, have spoken!"" Zechariah 10:6-12, NLT

"But you do not fear, O My servant Jacob, and be not afraid, O Israel. For, behold, I will save you from afar off, and your seed from the land of their captivity. And Jacob shall return and be in rest and at ease, and none shall make him afraid." Jeremiah 46:27, MKJV

"For I am the LORD, your God, the Holy One of Israel, your Savior. I gave Egypt, Ethiopia, and Seba as a ransom for your freedom. Others died that you might live. I traded their lives for yours because you are precious to me. You are honored, and I love you. "Do not be afraid, for I am with you. I will gather you and your children

from east and west and from north and south. I will bring my sons and daughters back to Israel from the distant corners of the earth.”

Isaiah 43:3-6, NLT

The two Jehovahs know where the surviving physical Israelites will be and they will bring them back to the Promised Land. There are numerous additional scriptures your author could quote, but the point is made. Interestingly, not all of those physical Israelites being brought back to the land will be admitted into it. Jesus Christ is going to meet them and sort them out. Evidently, some who are in a bad attitude or who have some other undesirable traits will not be admitted into the land – at least not initially. Perhaps they need to repent of their sins and then they, too, can gain admittance. Further, Jesus Christ is not going to allow Israel to be like the other nations any longer. Things are now changing quickly. If anyone, including Israel or the nations, thinks that God is going to allow Israel to be like the nations any longer, instead of actively serving the real God, they are wrong:

“And what comes up on your spirit shall not happen at all, that you say, **We will be like the nations**, like the families of the countries, to

serve wood and stone [fake non-gods]. As I live, says the Lord Jehovah, surely with a mighty hand, and with a stretched out arm, and with fury poured out, **I will reign over you**. And I will bring you out from the people, and I will gather you out of the lands in which you are scattered among them, with a mighty hand and with a stretched out arm and with fury poured out. And I will bring you into the wilderness of the people, and there I will enter into judgment with you face to face. Just as I entered into judgment with your fathers in the wilderness of the land of Egypt, so I will enter into judgment with you, says the Lord Jehovah. And I will cause you to pass under the rod, and I will bring you into the bond of the covenant. **And I will purge out from among you the rebels and those who sin against Me.** I will bring them out from the land where they reside, and they shall not enter into the land of Israel. And you shall know that I am the LORD."

Ezekiel 20:32-38, MKJV

"For on my holy mountain, says the Sovereign LORD, the people of Israel will someday worship me, and I will accept them. There I will require that you bring me all your offerings and choice gifts and sacrifices. **When I bring you home from exile**, you will be as

pleasing to me as an offering of perfumed incense. And **I will display my holiness in you** as all the nations watch. Then when I have brought you home to the land I promised your ancestors, you will know that I am the LORD. You will look back at all your sins and hate yourselves because of the evil you have done. You will know that I am the LORD, O people of Israel, when I have honored my name by treating you mercifully in spite of your wickedness, says the Sovereign LORD.””  
Ezekiel 20:40-44, NLT

God wants Israel to be his congregation, his body of witnesses and they will be. God cares what the nations think and he wants them to observe Israel doing right so they can also learn how to do right. Jesus Christ will be married to Israel and she will finally do her job.

“I will restore the fortunes of Judah and Israel and rebuild their cities. I will cleanse away their sins against me, and I will forgive all their sins of rebellion. Then this city will bring me joy, glory, and honor before all the nations of the earth! The people of the world will see the good I do for my people and will tremble with awe!””  
Jeremiah 33:7-9, NLT

Israel will be returned to the Promised Land, forgiven, converted, healed, and given honor before all the nations of the earth.

"For Zion's sake I will not be silent, and **for Jerusalem's sake I will not rest, until its righteousness goes out as brightness**, and her salvation as a burning lamp. **And the nations will see your righteousness**, and all kings your glory; and you will be called by a new name, which the mouth of the LORD will name. You also will be a crown of glory in the hand of the LORD, and a royal diadem in the hand of your God. You will no more be called Forsaken; nor will your land any more be called Desolate; but you will be called My Delight, is in her, and your land, Married; for the LORD delights in you, and your land will be married. For as a young man marries a virgin, so will your sons marry you; and as the bridegroom rejoices over the bride, so will your God rejoice over you."

Isaiah 62:1-5, MKJV

In order for the other nations to see Israel's righteousness as brightness, the Israelites have to finally be converted. This will happen. There are numerous prophetic scriptures depicting this is exactly what will happen, including the famous New Covenant promises. As a type of

physical circumcision, God promises he will take the hard heart of stone out of the Israelites and give them a heart of flesh after he brings them back to the land.

"Therefore say, So says the Lord Jehovah: I will even gather you from the people and assemble you out of the lands, in those where you were scattered, and **I will give you the land of Israel**. And they shall come there, and they shall take away all its hateful things and all its abominations from it. And I will give them one heart, and **I will put a new spirit within you**. And I will remove the stony heart out of their flesh, and will give them a heart of flesh, so that they may walk in My statutes and keep My ordinances, and do them. And they shall be My people, and I will be their God."

Ezekiel 11:17-20, MKJV

"And **I will give you a new heart**, and **I will put a new spirit within you**. And **I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you a heart of flesh**." Ezekiel 36:26, MKJV

"And the LORD your **God will circumcise your heart and the heart of your seed**, to love the LORD your God with all your heart and

with all your soul, so that you may live.”  
Deuteronomy 30:6, MKJV

As father Abraham was circumcised and followed the way of the Lord (Genesis 17), so now his Israelite children will have their hard stony heart circumcised and they, too, will now love God and follow the way of the Lord.

In addition to giving the Israelites a “circumcised” heart of flesh, God will convert the Israelites by giving them a new spirit and writing his laws into their hearts and minds. In short, the Israelites will follow the Acts 2:38 process of repenting of their sins, acknowledging Jesus Christ as Savior, being baptized in water and being forgiven for their sins, and having hands laid on them for the receipt of the Holy Spirit. They will then have the Holy Spirit of God the Father in them (Romans 8:11, 1 John 4:9-13) and the Holy Spirit of the son, Jesus Christ, will also be in them (Galatians 2:20, Romans 8:9-10).

“Then Peter said to them, Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ to remission of sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.” Acts 2:38, MKJV

"And the apostles in Jerusalem hearing that Samaria had received the Word of God, they sent Peter and John to them; who when they had come down, prayed for them that they might receive the Holy Spirit. For as yet He had not fallen on any of them, they were baptized only in the name of the Lord Jesus. Then they laid their hands on them, and they received the Holy Spirit." Acts 8:14-17, MKJV

The "New Covenant" is with Israel first, i.e., the house of Judah and the house of Israel, and then, as the below key scripture shows, the nations. Israel will perform its role to be the firstfruits before the nations, but Israel being converted first, as a general rule, does not mean the nations will not be able to participate. They will, just after Israel.

"Behold, the days come, says the LORD, that I will sow the house of Israel and the house of Judah with the seed of man and with the seed of animal [greatly increase the human and clean animal populations]. And it shall be, as I have watched over them to pluck up, and to break down, and to throw down, and to destroy, and to afflict; so I will watch over them to build, and to plant, says the LORD. In those days they shall not say any more, The fathers have eaten

sour grapes, and the teeth of the sons are dull. But every man shall die in his iniquity. Every man who eats the sour grapes, his teeth will be dull. Behold, the days come, says the LORD, **that I will cut a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah**, not according to the covenant that I cut with their [disobedient] fathers in the day I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt; which covenant of Mine they broke, although I was a husband to them, says the LORD; but this shall be the covenant that I will cut with the house of Israel: After those days, says the LORD, I will put My law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people. And they shall no more teach each man his neighbor and each man his brother, saying, Know the LORD; for they shall all know me, from the least of them to the greatest of them, says the LORD. For I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sins no more. So says the LORD, who gives the sun for a light by day and the laws of the moon and of the stars for a light by night, who divides the sea when its waves roar; the LORD of hosts is His name; if those ordinances depart from Me, says the LORD, the seed of Israel also shall cease from being a

nation before Me forever." Jeremiah 31:27-36,  
MKJV

In addition to all of the quoted scriptures in this section, there are numerous others which all show the following: 1) physical unconverted Israelites exist at the end of the age, 2) God knows who they are and where they are, 3) God will bring them back to their land, and 4) convert them. The conversion of the physical Israelites will be the firstfruits of converting the world and God will bless these physical and now converted Israelites with great increase.

The Israelites were hard on God and God was, in a sense, hard on Israel because Israel deserved it. Things will be different from now on, as the below scripture depicts:

"Behold, I will gather them out of all the lands where I have driven them in My anger, and in My fury, and in great wrath. And I will bring them again to this place, and I will cause them to dwell safely. And they shall be My people, and I will be their God. And I will give them one heart and **one way**, that they may fear Me forever, for their good and for the good of their sons after them. And I will cut an everlasting covenant with them that I will not

turn away from them, to do them good. But I will put My fear in their hearts, that they shall not depart from Me. Yea, I will rejoice over them to do them good, and I will truly plant them in this land with all My heart and all My whole soul. For so says the LORD: As I have brought all this great evil on this people, so I will bring on them all the good that I have promised them."

Jeremiah 32:37-42, MKJV

God will be sanctified in Israel in the sight of the nations and Israel will be **the chief of the nations.** In particular, the nations around Israel are going to have to respect what God is doing through and for Israel.

"So says the Lord Jehovah: When I have gathered the house of Israel from the peoples among whom they are scattered, and have been sanctified in them in the sight of the nations, then they shall dwell in their land that I have given to My servant Jacob. And they shall dwell safely in it, and shall build houses and plant vineyards. Yea, they shall dwell safely when I have executed judgments on all those who despise them all around them; and they shall know that I am the LORD their God."

Ezekiel 28:25-26, MKJV

One of the first acts of Jesus Christ as King will be to bring the majority of the surviving shell-shocked physical Israelites back to the Promised Land, a great miracle in itself, and then to do an even greater miracle – especially by traditionally rebellious Israelite standards. He will convert them, which could be considered a miracle of miracles. After that the now converted Israelites, back in the Promised Land once again, will finally do their job and serve the two Jehovahs.

### **9.5 Israel finally does their job as mankind's example and leader**

The time of the Israelites being in rebellion against God and his divine law instructions is now past. The surviving Israelites begin to serve the two Jehovahs. They will realize they have, heretofore, failed God, themselves, their children, and the entire human race. The Israelites will start out humbly, loathing themselves for their collective stupidity and rebellion, knowing their failure has seemingly wasted countless human lives, including their own and their children's. The Israelites were supposed to have been a holy nation and a kingdom of priests. They were to have provided intellectual and productive leadership as well.

Further, they were to have shown forth an example of social and political harmony, too. They were to have been a light to the nations, but failed. However, no one can change the past, not even the two Jehovahs. All that is left to do now is to change and go forward with better values, making better choices, and then reaping the sustained good consequences. And that is what is going to happen. The better values are the acceptance that life is the primary value, an abundant life is better than a mediocre or tortured existence, peace is necessary between God and man, between nations, races, genders, neighbors, etc. In short, the Israelites will adopt God's unity of the package of values that pertain to life and learn to actively live by them. Then everything changes. Jesus Christ will heal people and the earth, starting with the Promised Land and the Israelites. Due to the importance of divine healing this topic is just mentioned here, but taught in more detail in the next section.

Jesus will teach from Jerusalem and drive out all of the bad people from the Promised Land. The immoral, irrational, unreasonable social malcontents, and people who want to live as parasites, enjoying the fruit of other people's productive efforts, will not be allowed in Israel.

Each family will be given land and taught to use their minds and free will to learn how to become moral, rational, reasonable, productive, and how to get along with other people, especially the members of their own family. Again, there will be no more religious, metaphysical, or philosophical confusion once Jesus Christ is on the earth and starts teaching.

"And it shall be, in the last days the mountain of the LORD's house shall be established in the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills; **and all nations shall flow into it**. And many people shall go and say, Come, and let us go to the mountain of the LORD, to the house of the God of Jacob.

**And He will teach us of His ways, and we will walk in His paths.** For out of Zion shall go out the Law, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem. **And He shall judge among the nations**, and shall rebuke many people; and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning-hooks. Nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more." Isaiah 2:2-4, MKJV

But they shall sit each one under his vine and under his fig tree [family land, private property]; and there shall be no trembling; for

the mouth of the LORD of hosts has spoken,”  
Micah 4:4, MKJV

“In that coming day,” says the LORD, “you will call me ‘my husband’ instead of ‘my master.’ O Israel, I will cause you to forget your images of Baal; even their names will no longer be spoken. At that time I will make a covenant with all the wild animals and the birds and the animals that scurry along the ground so that they will not harm you. I will remove all weapons of war from the land, all swords and bows, so you can live unafraid in peace and safety. **I will make you my wife forever**, showing you righteousness and justice, unfailing love and compassion.” Hosea 2:16-19, NLT

“Your sons [Zion, i.e., Israel, verse 14] shall make haste; those destroying you and ruining you shall go out from you.” Isaiah 49:17, MKJV

“And they will build houses and live in them; and they will plant vineyards and eat their fruit. They will not build, and another live in them; they will not plant, and another eat. For like the days of a tree are the days of My people, and My elect will long enjoy the work of their hands. They will not labor in vain, nor bring forth for terror. For they are the seed of the

beloved of the LORD, and their offspring with them." Isaiah 65:21-23, MKJV

God makes it a point that Israel is the nation he has had and will always have a special relationship with.

"He [God] made known his ways unto Moses, his acts unto the children of Israel."

Psalms 103:7, KJV

"He has revealed his words to Jacob, his principles and laws to Israel. He has not done this with any other nation; they do not know his laws. Praise the LORD!" Psalms 147:19-20, NLT

"**You only have I known of all the families of the earth;** therefore I will punish you for all your iniquities. Can two walk together unless they are agreed?" Amos 3:2-3, MKJV

The Israelites, now brought back to the Promised Land and converted, will finally walk with God. They will not just agree to walk with God they will actually do so. Your author previously wrote a lengthy section in his *Life Charts* book showing what could have happened in the past if Israel had walked with God. The relevant passage includes some Israelite and

human history and is quoted below because major portions of the quoted passage depict what will likely happen in the Millennium. Israel will finally do its job and be a light to the nations; they will finally be the congregation of witnesses that God always wanted. Your author has previously quoted several of the scriptures earlier in this book, but thought it wise to just leave the duplicate quoted scriptures intact so as not to break the flow of what is quoted. Please bear with your author on this.

"I am the LORD, and there is no other Savior. First I predicted your deliverance; I declared what I would do, and then I did it--I saved you. No foreign god has ever done this before. **You are witnesses that I am the only God," says the LORD.'** Isaiah 43:11-12, NLT

The physical Israelites were supposed to be → God's witnesses

God rescued the ancient Israelites from Egypt (Exodus) in order to be his witnesses upon the earth. They failed him and they also failed mankind. ....

The hallmark "beginning" of God's relationship with an entire people was his *Torah*

*Story* deliverance of the ancient Israelites from their Egyptian slavery, via Moses (Exodus). It was also God's delivering of the Torah at Mount Sinai. Of course, some men knew about God's divine laws prior to Mt. Sinai, e.g., Abraham. And those laws were structured in that there were statutes even back then, prior to Moses.

"... because Abraham obeyed My voice and kept My charge, My commandments, My statutes, and My laws." Genesis 26:5, MKJV

The divine laws → existed → before Mt. Sinai

Because Abraham believed God (Romans 4:16) and obeyed God (James 2:21), he thereby became the father of all who believe in Christ.

Many times the word "law" (Strong's word 08451 torah) could actually be better translated as "**instruction**," or "**direction**." The idea of instruction, or of giving directions, is to help man learn how to become like the two Jehovahs. And your author has previously pointed out that **the Bible should be considered as endoxa** – the vetted knowledge of the wise, in this case the wise being the wisest of the wise - the two Jehovahs. There is an interesting scripture in

Job 36:22 that speaks of God as being the greatest teacher of all.

"Remember how great is God's power; **he is the greatest teacher of all.**" Job 36:22 TEV  
(Good News Bible)

And so it always puzzles your author why people would reject instruction or directions from "the greatest teacher of all" – but they do, to their own hurt. The word "torah" will also be shown, later in this chapter, to be an adjective describing a story involving God and man.

Unfortunately, for the most part, the Israelite descendants of Abraham did not do what Abraham did. God wanted Israel to be a special nation and a light to the world. They refused to obey God and did what they wanted. This resulted in the northern ten tribes ultimately being carried away captive by the Assyrians, and Judah and Benjamin being carried away much later by the Babylonians (Ezekiel 23 and Psalm 78). There are numerous prophecies that show God eventually bringing all of Israel, not just Judah, back to their own land and forcing them to do the job they were originally given, but failed at. Ezekiel 39 is one

such passage of scripture, as is the more famous Jeremiah 31.

"And the nations [non-physical Israelites] shall know that the house of Israel was exiled for their iniquity. Because they sinned against Me, therefore I [God] hid My face from them and gave them into the hand of their enemies. So they all fell by the sword. According to their uncleanness and according to their sins I have done to them, and have hidden My face from them [God pulled back and let the Israelites suffer and go into captivity]. Therefore so says the Lord Jehovah: And I will return the captivity of Jacob [return means to bring the Israelites back to their land], and will have mercy on the whole house of Israel [not just one tribe, the Jews], and will be jealous for My holy name [they will get with the divine individualism, light-to-the world program]; after they have borne their shame and all their sins by which they have sinned against Me, when they dwell securely in their land and no one terrifies; when I have brought them again from the peoples, and gathered them out of their enemies' lands, and am sanctified in them in the sight of many nations; then they shall know that I am the LORD their God who exiled them among the nations. But I have gathered them to their own

land, and have not left any of them there. Nor will I hide My face from them any more, for **I have poured out My Spirit on the house of Israel**, says the Lord Jehovah."

Ezekiel 39:23-29, MKJV

"For you [the physical Israelites] are a holy people to the LORD your God. The LORD your **God has chosen you to be a special people** to Himself above all people that are upon the face of the earth." Deuteronomy 7:6, MKJV

God will restore the physical descendants of Israel to their land, work with them first, and then work with the rest of the nations. The entire Bible is full of scriptures showing this important fact. Believing in dispensationalism makes it very hard to know what the Bible is talking about. God is going to reign over Israel after Jesus Christ returns to the earth. The below scripture speaks to that determination.

""You say, 'We [the Israelites] want to be like the nations all around us, who serve idols of wood and stone.' But what you have in mind will never happen. **As surely as I live**, says the Sovereign LORD, **I will rule you with an iron fist in great anger and with awesome power.** With might and fury I will bring you out

from the lands where you are scattered. I will bring you into the wilderness of the nations, and there I will judge you face to face."

Ezekiel 20:32-35, NLT

... "For on my holy mountain, says the Sovereign LORD, the people of Israel will someday worship me, and I will accept them. There I will require that you bring me all your offerings and choice gifts and sacrifices. When I bring you home from exile, you will be as pleasing to me as an offering of perfumed incense. And **I will display my holiness in you as all the nations watch.** Then when I have brought you home to the land I promised your ancestors, you will know that I am the LORD. You will look back at all your sins and hate yourselves because of the evil you have done. You will know that I am the LORD, O people of Israel, when I have honored my name by treating you mercifully in spite of your wickedness, says the Sovereign LORD.""  
Ezekiel 20:40-44, NLT

The general rule for God dealing with man is:

The two Jehovahs → Israel first → then the nations

This is important to remember. Just because there is a time lag between when the physical Israelites were first given a job to do and when they actually do the job thousands of years later does not matter too much to the two Jehovahs – who are eternal beings. They will stick with working with physical Israelites until they learn to become spiritual Israelites, circumcised in heart, too, not just physically circumcised.

A thousands-of-years time lag → does not overly trouble → determined eternal beings, the two Jehovahs

The thousands-of-years time lag → has greatly injured → mankind (explained further below)

After Moses died, God used Joshua to largely conquer the Promised Land. After Joshua died there was a fairly lengthy period of the Judges. The normal pattern was along the lines of while the current judge lived the Israelites would largely obey God. When the judge died, the Israelites would forget about and disobey God and soon thereafter find themselves in captivity or tribute to a neighboring people. After a while they would cry out for deliverance and God would send a new judge to rescue the Israelites. It is interesting that a judge would provide

leadership according to known laws of the land.  
There was no king and no large government structure - just a judge, known laws, and God.  
No doubt, if the Israelites had understood how well they had it, and had cooperated with God and the judges, they would have developed common law long before the English. And it would have no doubt been a much higher level and wiser form of common law. But the people kept clamoring for a king. This prompted Gideon, one of the more famous judges, to decline.

"And Gideon said to them, I will not rule over you, neither shall my son rule over you. The LORD shall rule over you." Judges 8:23, MKJV

The ancient Israelites could have developed → common law → long before the English → but failed

Eventually the Israelites rejected Samuel, another judge, for a king. God told Samuel that the Israelites had not rejected him, but God himself. And God warned that a human king would bring so many problems with him that the Israelites would rue the day.

When the ancient physical Israelites → asked for a king → they rejected God → and settled for → an inferior and merely human ruler

**This crushes the idea of a king ruling by divine right.** The very idea of a king, instead of God, ruling is not: 1) the original intent of God + 2) a gigantic societal retrogression

God originally gave divine laws to Israel, in a codified form, through Moses at Mount Sinai. And when the people came into the land they were to be judged by these known rules by a judge, or judges. If the people followed the rules it would go well with them and there would not be much work for the judge to do. If the people did not do well then there would be too much work for the judge(s) to do and it would not go well with them. The blessings and cursings associated with keeping or not keeping divine laws are elaborated in Leviticus 26 and Deuteronomy 28. One of the more point-blank curses is found in Leviticus 26:18: "... **those who hate you shall rule over you.**" All of the curses are terrible and it would have been much better for Israel to keep the divine laws and to not ask for a king.

The Israelites each got a portion of land to own, other than the Levites and priests. But the Levites received a tenth of the increase from the land and the priests received a tenth of what the Levites received (Numbers 18). And the Levites did receive some cities and a limited amount of land around those cities (Numbers 35). In essence, the people received free land in exchange for giving a tenth of the increase to the Levites. And the people paid a small annual Tabernacle tax or Temple tax as the case may be (Exodus 30:13). God knows that taxes cost men their lives and he kept the burden small, and contingent on increase. Each Israelite further received a little bit more land than he normally would have because the Levites did not receive an allotment of land, other than their cities. And the Levites and priests provided Tabernacle services, counseling services, educational services, etc., as part of their receiving the tithe. The nation did not have a huge welfare system and corresponding costly bureaucracy to administer it. The family land likely functioned as the societal economic shock absorber. If an individual experienced hard times he could always return home to the family land and be taken care of. (As a side bar point, learning to plant in the spring and harvest in the fall teaches men to think longer term, more

prudentially. This is healthy for each man, their family, and society, too.) The nation did not have a standing army to be paid for, as the citizens were, in essence, the army. **The government was small and the rules were known.** Every seven years, in addition to ongoing training, the people were to have the law read to them at the fall feast. The citizenry knew what the rules were.

"And Moses commanded them, saying: At the end of seven years, at the set time of the year of release, in the Feast of Tabernacles, when all Israel has come to appear before the LORD your God in the place which He shall choose, you shall read this law before all Israel in their hearing." Deuteronomy 31:10-11, MKJV

Further, the ancient Israelites had the benefit of obtaining direct answers from God through the High Priest's use of the Urim and Thummim (Exodus 28:30).

With all of these things going for them, the Israelites failed. They were set up in the ancient trading crossroads between Asia, Africa, and Europe and were to be a nation on a hill, a light to the world, as it were. Their failure has hurt all mankind. If the people of the world could

have seen the sustained success of Israel and learned what it meant to be ruled by honest and intelligent judges, using known laws, in a small government blessed with divine favor – who is to say what would have happened? But Israel failed and got thrown off of the land.

The ancient Israelites → who already had what men in other nations can only dream of → in their quest to reject God's laws + to adopt the practices of non-Israelite nations → alienated God → and got thrown off of the land

The two Jehovahs tried → Israel failed → mankind has suffered

If the ancient physical Israelites would have consistently obeyed God, then they could have been a major beneficial factor for mankind. They did not. They were to be a body of witnesses located at the center of the world. With the benefit of a small government, and personal freedom constrained only by divine and natural laws, the ancient Israelites could have developed into something like an England or an early America 3,000 or more years ago. And they would have been located right in the middle of the earth, between Europe, Asia, and Africa.

The ancient Israelites would have discovered many of the laws of nature because they would have learned that they needed to use their minds in order to successfully have dominion over the earth. They likely would have discovered and developed what is called **two-value logic**. Two-value logic is philosopher-speak for: every declarative proposition is either true or it is false. A proposition is philosopher-speak for a sentence. This may not sound like much of a discovery, but it turns out to be very powerful in discovering and utilizing the laws of nature. Because logic is truth-ascertaining and truth-preserving it allows for moderate realism - used here to mean that the truth is built up over time via reasoning in what amounts to a communal effort to comprehend an empirically knowable reality. It is also very powerful in developing judgment and in learning and applying divine laws. Please let the reader be aware of or remember that a lot of the world, in addition to being tribal, believes in pantheism. Most of the peoples of Asia, and also Africa, which is a huge percentage of the world's population, have pantheistic beliefs. Per Wikipedia [emphasis mine]:

"Pantheism is the belief that all of reality is identical with divinity, or that everything

composes an all-encompassing, immanent god.  
Pantheists thus do not believe in a distinct personal or anthropomorphic god.”

In other words, believers in pantheism hold there is not a distinct, personal god - which belief is false. Further, they believe that all of reality is actually part of an all-encompassing and immanent god. This is also false.

Two-value logic is not just of use pertaining to discovering the laws of nature and applying them. Two-value logic, it turns out, would also be of use, in substance, in understanding and applying divine law. For example, the job of the priest was to teach the difference between: 1) the holy and the profane (Leviticus 22:2), 2) the clean and the unclean (Leviticus 10:10), and 3) between acceptable behavior and sin (Exodus 20, Deuteronomy 5, and throughout the Bible). Further, almost incomprehensibly to a Western mind (such as your author’s), 4) the difference between God and man. The pantheistic-influenced mind might regard a butterfly landing on the branch of a tree, a bird trying to eat the butterfly, and a man watching it all as substantially non-distinct – all are aspects of the divine, but this is false.

Two-value logic → useful for → discovering + utilizing the truths of nature

Two-value logic → also useful for → ethical truths + their applications

This is logical → the two Jehovahs → embedded logical truths AND ethical truths → into nature

"Even for a distinction between the holy and unholy, and between the unclean and clean"  
Leviticus 10:10, MKJV

If the ancient Israelites, at the center of the world, would have: A) retained a small government with known laws, judges, and no king [obviously it will be even better in the Millennium when Jesus Christ is actively ruling as King]; B) became skilled in learning and applying divine law; C) became skilled in learning and applying natural law; and D) self-limited their behavior by, e.g., not violating each other's individual natural rights and honoring contracts, then they might have developed the scientific and economic breakthroughs contained in the agricultural revolution, the industrial revolution, etc., thousands of years ago. Their society could have been so advanced in the use of two-value and other logical principles they

would have been able to explain to the citizens of the world ethics from both a divine law and a natural law point of view. They could have discovered scientific breakthroughs long before modern man AND been moral and rational throughout. It should be noted that the spiritual and non-material elements of a culture are what give it its distinctive character. After all, it is relatively easy for other cultures to copy material achievement, at least to some extent. The ancient Israelite civilization that could have occurred, but did not, would have been like a beacon of light in the middle of the earth for the citizens of all of the other nations to see and behold.

Many citizens of the other nations would have wanted to learn from AND emulate the successful Israelites. And the Israelites were commanded to welcome in strangers (citizens of other nations) who wanted to join with them so long as the stranger agreed to come under divine law.

“One law and one way shall be for you and for the stranger that lives with you.” Numbers 15:16, MKJV

"And when a stranger shall stay with you, and desires to keep the Passover to the LORD, let all his males be circumcised, and then let him come near and keep it. And he shall be as one that is born in the land. And no uncircumcised person shall eat of it." Exodus 12:48, MKJV

"The stranger that dwells with you shall be to you as one born among you, and you shall love him as yourself. For you were strangers in the land of Egypt. I am the LORD your God."

Leviticus 19:34, MKJV

If the ancient Israelites had done their job, their civilization would have made huge advances morally, intellectually, and materially (moral + rational + productive). **Their culture would have been the greatest positive value transmission device in the history of mankind.** They would have been the leading nation on earth in every way that matters. And they would have attracted some of the best and the brightest from around the world to live among them. However, your author is quite certain that would-be immigrants would not have been allowed to come to Israel for the results they could experience if they were not willing to accept **the idea** of being moral, reasonable, and productive human beings

(Ezekiel 20:38). **Societal positive results come from societal positive causes.** Those causes are moral, reasonable, and productive people embracing the two Jehovahs as the life-givers. They are also embracing the correct unity of values that pertain to life and being willing to pay the moral and intellectual and productive costs associated with obtaining and using the moral and intellectual virtues and learning how to productively serve each other. Ancient Israel, cooperating with the two Jehovahs thousands of years ago, would have been a light and a witness for God. And **Israel would have been a safe haven on the earth for the best of mankind.** But they failed. And mankind has suffered greatly for their failure. Physical Israel's failure has cost mankind thousands of years and billions of wasted lives. Bad fathers generate bad consequences to those counting on them.

Ancient Israel → could have been → God's cultural witness → to the nations → of how to be moral + rational + productive

Ancient Israel → could have been → a safe haven → for the world's best and brightest

Bad leadership + bad followers → bad societal consequences

Good leadership + good followers → good societal consequences

The people who will not fail the two Jehovahs (or mankind) are the spiritual Israelites. And now the below scripture should hopefully make more sense:

"But you are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, **a holy nation**, a people for possession, so that you might speak of the praises of Him who has called you out of darkness into His marvelous light;"

1 Peter 2:9, MKJV

The spiritual Israelites have been called out of darkness into God's marvelous light and they will know how to help the rest of humanity learn to do what they did.

There is a need for → humanity → to accept Christ → participate in the divine individualism process → and become → spiritual Israelites

**Becoming a spiritual Israelite is open to all.**  
Your birth nation, sex, race, etc., do not matter.

All → can become → a spiritual Israelite

Spiritual Israelite > physical Israelite

There is no reason → to be jealous of → physical Israelites → who largely failed both God and man”

In the Millennium the now-converted Israelites will finally accomplish what they might have been able to achieve thousands of years prior, but did not. They will actively be cooperating with the two Jehovahs and willingly be led by Jesus Christ. Helped along by divine guidance and blessing, they will be the centerpiece nation on the earth – high above the other nations (Deuteronomy 26:19, 28:1). Further, as mentioned above, Israelite culture will be the value transmitter of God's values to the other nations, who will see what Israel accomplished, notice the results, and want to participate, too. The Bible even says that the nations who refuse to be Israel's allies will be destroyed.

“For the nations that refuse to be your allies will be destroyed.” Isaiah 60:12, NLT

The Israelites will finally do their job and the resurrected Jacob will no longer be embarrassed when he considers his children:

"Therefore so says the LORD, who redeemed Abraham, concerning the house of Jacob: Jacob shall not now be ashamed, nor shall his face now become pale. But when he sees his children, the work of My hands, in his midst, they [the Israelites] shall sanctify My name, and sanctify the Holy one of Jacob, and shall fear the God of Israel. Those who erred in spirit shall come to understanding, and those who murmured shall learn doctrine."

Isaiah 29:22-24, MKJV

The New Living Translation has it as follows:

"That is why the LORD, who redeemed Abraham, says to the people of Israel, "My people will no longer pale with fear or be ashamed. For when they see their many children and material blessings, they will recognize the holiness of the Holy One of Israel. They will stand in awe of the God of Israel. Those in error will then believe the truth, and those who constantly complain will accept instruction."

Isaiah 29:22-24, NLT

## **9.6 People and the earth are healed**

God originally told Adam to have dominion over the earth and to be fruitful and multiply (Genesis 1:26-28). This applies by extension to Adam's descendants, mankind. However, it was not too much later that Adam and Eve sinned in the Garden of Eden and were expelled from it (Genesis 3). As a consequence of their sins, nature was cursed, human beings were infected with a sinful nature, childbearing was cursed, and now men would have to work much harder to be productive enough to stay alive. As a consequence, man has not done a good job of having dominion over the earth and the results of all of this are before us. Further, Satan is the god of this world (2 Corinthians 4:4) and he has a spiritually evil seedline who also are a curse to this earth (Genesis 3:15, Isaiah 24:6, Daniel 9:11, Jude 1:11).

"As the bird by wandering, as the swallow by flying, so **the curse without cause shall not come.**" Proverbs 26:2, MKJV

After he returns, Jesus Christ, now present on the earth, will instruct Israel and mankind. As his teaching of Israel and mankind progresses, religious, metaphysical, scientific,

and philosophic confusion will be eliminated. The surviving, wounded, physical Israelites are going to be brought back to the Promised Land, no doubt healed, and then converted. And the Israelites will then actively work in cooperation with Jesus Christ in doing their part to make things right. Once all this happens, there is no more reason for curses in the Promised Land. Satan, the fallen angels, and the demons are in bad-angel jail and unable to influence mankind for 1,000 years. But men are still infected with Satan's evil nature, the earth is a shambles after all of the divine judgments and human wars, and the human beings surviving from the human and Biblical devastation are badly damaged. They are damaged spiritually, mentally, emotionally, and physically. They have lost family and friends and almost all of their possessions. As previously mentioned, if God the Father did not send Jesus Christ back to the earth in time, no human being would have been left alive – quite possibly Satan the Warlord's envious goal (Matthew 24:22). In short, people and the earth need to be healed.

"But when Jesus heard that [a complaint from the Pharisees], he said unto them, They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick." Matthew 9:12, KJV

Fortunately, Jesus Christ is, in essence, a Master Physician and healing is one of the things he does well and wants to do. An important part of the gospel message enumerated in the New Testament, particularly Matthew – Acts, is: go to the healer. In other words, go to Jesus Christ and ask him for mercy, forgiveness, and healing. The New Testament details numerous examples of Jesus Christ healing, too many to quote without making this book even longer still. Below are a few examples.

"Jesus traveled throughout Galilee teaching in the synagogues, preaching everywhere the Good News about the Kingdom [his upcoming reign as King of kings]. And he healed people who had every kind of sickness and disease. News about him spread far beyond the borders of Galilee so that the sick were soon coming to be healed from as far away as Syria. And whatever their illness and pain, or if they were possessed by demons, or were epileptics, or were paralyzed--**he healed them all.**"  
Matthew 4:23-24, NLT

"When he [Christ] was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him. And, behold, there came a leper and worshipped him,

saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. And Jesus put forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will; be thou clean. And immediately his leprosy was cleansed."

Matthew 8:1-3, KJV

"When the even was come, they brought unto him [Christ] many that were possessed with devils: and he cast out the spirits with his word, and healed all that were sick: That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet [from Isaiah 53:4], saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses."

Matthew 8:16-17, KJV

Depending on which Bible translation one uses to read about all of the miraculous healings Jesus Christ performed, many times the phrase "he healed them all," was used. Jesus Christ can heal broken down, disabled, abused, and foolish human beings and that is what he is going to do in the Millennium. Your author is not going to quote either passage here, but the Bible makes it a point that Jesus even healed a man blind from birth (John 9:1-11) and also a man who was crippled from birth (Acts 3:1-10). Jesus Christ used Peter and John to do the latter healing, but it was by and through the resurrected Jesus Christ's power and Holy Spirit.

More will be explained about the significance of healing someone blind from birth and crippled from birth in chapter ten, section 10.2.

Your author has written a previous book entitled, *Go To The Healer*. The lengthy quotation following is from a section in that book entitled, "The Healer Will Come Again And Heal People, Animals, And The Earth."

"God reserves the right to decide on the best time to heal. [The Millennium will be a time to heal.] Ecclesiastes 3:1-3 reveals:

"To every thing there is a season, and a time to every purpose under the heaven: A time to be born, and a time to die; a time to plant, and a time to pluck up that which is planted; A time to kill, and a time to heal; a time to break down, and a time to build up;" Ecclesiastes 3:1-3, KJV

Ephraim and Judah, as examples of the leading tribes of Israel, (Joseph and Judah), are pictured as returning to serve God. And then they are healed from the earlier punishment that God put upon them (and Israel) for disobedience. This depicts a national healing.

"Come, and let us return unto the LORD [Ephraim and Judah, identified as such in Hosea 5]: for he hath torn, and he will heal us; he hath smitten, and he will bind us up. **After two days** will he revive us [after about 2,000 years]: **in the third day** [the Millennium] he will raise us up, and we shall live in his sight."

Hosea 6:1-2, KJV

The below passage, from Isaiah 35, describes spiritual healing and the miraculous healing of various physical ailments and also the healing of the earth's deserts.

"Say to them that are of a fearful heart, Be strong, fear not: behold, your God will come with vengeance, even God with a recompence; he will come and save you [spiritual healing]. Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped. Then shall the lame man leap as an hart, and the tongue of the dumb sing [physical healing]: for in the wilderness shall waters break out, and streams in the desert. And the parched ground shall become a pool, and the thirsty land springs of water [the healing of nature]: ... "

Isaiah 35:4-7, KJV

In another place in Isaiah it mentions that animals will be changed, children will be safe, and ignorance of God and his values will also be eliminated. These are all healings, as it were.

"The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them. And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together: and the lion shall eat straw like the ox. And the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice' den. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain: for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea."

Isaiah 11:6-9, KJV

A famous scripture from Jeremiah reveals that the human heart is not as it should be.

"The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it?"  
Jeremiah 17:9, KJV

Desperately wicked can also mean incurably ill, or terminally ill. Without a healing of our heart, we will spiritually die, as we are all sin positive.

Fortunately, this matter is addressed in Ezekiel 36, and other places. Ezekiel 36 also makes an additional, rather startling, promise:

"A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh. And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do them. And ye shall dwell in the land that I gave to your fathers; and ye shall be my people, and I will be your God. I will also save you from all your uncleannesses: and I will call for the corn, and will increase it, and lay no famine upon you. And I will multiply the fruit of the tree, and the increase of the field, that ye shall receive no more reproach of famine among the heathen. Then shall ye remember your own evil ways, and your doings that were not good, and shall loathe yourselves in your own sight for your iniquities and for your abominations. Not for your sakes do I this, saith the Lord GOD, be it known unto you: be ashamed and confounded for your own ways, O house of Israel. Thus saith the Lord GOD; In the day that I shall have cleansed you from all your iniquities I will also cause you to dwell in the cities, and the wastes shall be builded. And the desolate land shall be

tilled, whereas it lay desolate in the sight of all that passed by. And they shall say, **This land that was desolate is become like the garden of Eden**; and the waste and desolate and ruined cities are become fenced, and are inhabited.” Ezekiel 36:26-35, KJV

The Healer is promising to spiritually heal the terminally ill human heart; get rid of famine; rebuild brand new cities from ruins; and, if this were not enough, to make a desolate land like the Garden of Eden. Wow! That is a lot of healing.

Ezekiel 34:25 contains a promise, from the Healer, to cause evil beasts to cease out of the land and that it will be completely safe to sleep outside. I think this means the Healer will get rid of not only creatures like poisonous snakes, but hopefully also mosquitoes, chiggers, ticks, and the like (insert your most hated evil beast here) [It also likely means that no human beings who act like amoral, immoral, irrational, unsocial beasts will be allowed to remain in the Promised Land].

“And I will make with them a covenant of peace, and will cause the evil beasts to cease

out of the land: and they shall dwell safely in  
the wilderness, and sleep in the woods."

Ezekiel 34:25, KJV

Getting back to the Healer fixing the hunger problem, there is a further interesting scripture in Ezekiel 34:29:

"And I will raise up for them a plant of  
renown, and they shall be no more consumed  
with hunger in the land, neither bear the shame  
of the heathen any more." Ezekiel 34:29, KJV

I always picture this plant of renown as edible kudzu, or something like that. Kudzu is a plant that grows extremely fast to the point of becoming a pest to some. At any rate, whatever this plant of renown will be, my take is that a poor person could, if they had to, eat this plant of renown and sleep in the woods and they would be fine. That would take a lot of pressure off of someone who was struggling financially to make ends meet."

God healing Israel and the Promised Land is a first step to also healing the people of other nations and their lands. Remember, God works through Israel-the-firstfruits first and then the nations. The nations will be included too, as

section 9.8 will point out in more detail. For now, please note that Jesus Christ healed the Roman centurion's servant (Matthew 8:5-13) and a woman from Canaan (Matthew 15:22-28).

In Acts 10:38 the Apostle Peter was rehearsing some things about Jesus Christ and he gave a great summary of his works on earth with just one scripture.

"And no doubt you know that God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and with power. Then Jesus went around doing good and healing all who were oppressed by the Devil, for God was with him." Acts 10:38, NLT

During the Millennial reign of Jesus Christ, one of the two Jehovahs himself will be on the earth actively working to heal people, heal the earth, including changing the nature of animals to make them safer for man. Jesus Christ will systematically work to: 1) remove the cause of the curses, 2) then likely cancel the curses themselves, and 3) then also heal their lingering effects (damaged people, damaged nature). The land is even foretold to become like a Garden of Eden. Jesus Christ is going to undo the works of Satan the devil. He will not only heal people in the physical sense of the word, he

will also spiritually convert them, too, which is an even greater miracle. If all this sounds like a lot of work, don't worry. God the Father and Jesus Christ are smart, hard, and determined workers.

"But Jesus replied, "**My Father never stops working, so why should I?"**" John 5:17, NLT

"He who practices sin is of the Devil, for the Devil sins from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was revealed, that He might **undo the works of the Devil.**"

1 John 3:8, MKJV

Go to "The Healer," for now, is good advice. In reality, he is going to come to us. What man cannot do, he can and he will. Mankind is going to be healed, converted, and taught how to really live. The earth is going to be healed with the curses removed. Healthy and whole humans, starting with the Israelites and then spreading to the other nations, are going to worship the two Jehovahs and actively cooperate with them. The Promised Land and eventually the earth will become more like the Garden of Eden, peopled with spiritually, mentally, and emotionally healthy, i.e., healed people.

## **9.7 God's holy days provide a cultural framework for teaching God's general plan to mankind**

It could be said that the Millennium part of God's Strange Plan is where mankind gets "towed out of the mud" by God and things really get moving in a positive direction. The two Jehovahs are writing a great "Torah Story" and the holy days are a core part of that story. They symbolically depict key events in God's general plan for mankind. Israel will learn to keep and celebrate the holy days of God and then the nations will, too.

"As a **holy flock** [the converted Israelites], as the flock of Jerusalem in her appointed feasts, so shall the waste cities be filled with flocks of men. And they shall know that I am the LORD." Ezekiel 36:38, MKJV

The main purpose of this section is to explain two important parts of God's Strange Plan. The first part of this section reveals God's Torah Story and the second part of this section is to explain how God's festivals, commonly known as God's holy days, as detailed in Leviticus 23, provide an outline regarding God's general plan

for dealing with mankind. Of course, the rest of the Bible has other aspects of that plan, but the latter portion of this section will call out how God's holy days will assist, not just Israel, but mankind with learning God's general plan for mankind. Your author will quote a lengthy section from his previous *Life Charts* book just below.

" ... There is something going on with God, Israel, and mankind that could be called "**The Torah Story**" (italicized below). Your author explained this *Torah Story* at the end of his previous book, *Honor*, and will utilize some of that material below.

God honored human beings, via our physical appearance; and also by giving us minds that can create, and reason; and we have rehearsed how important it is that we are to cooperate with God, purifying ourselves so that we can ultimately be resurrected to eternal life incorruptible. It is now time to take a look at another big picture idea. And this big picture idea is that God is a Master Novelist writing something that could be called, *The Torah Story*. However, unlike a human novelist, he is writing *The Torah Story* in real life and in real time and he has been so doing for eons.

God → a Master Novelist → writing → *The Torah Story* → in real life and in real time

The fact that God was writing *The Torah Story* first came to my attention, in the late 1970s, via a Bible scholar and linguist by the name of Dr. Charles V. Dorothy - who I had the privilege of studying under and also becoming friends with. Later, he (and others) also used the Latin phrase "magnalia Dei." When translated from Latin into English this phrase essentially means "the mighty works of God," or "the mighty acts of God." It can also mean "the great things of God" and also, "the wonders of God." Google Translate's free online Latin to English translator translates "magnalia Dei" into "**wonderful works of God.**" In other words, "magnalia Dei" is, in essence, the Latin phrase that corresponds to the idea of *The Torah Story*. As Dr. Dorothy taught me, *The Torah Story* is the story of the great things that God has done and is doing for his people.

*The Torah Story* → magnalia Dei → the story of the wonderful works God has done AND is doing for → his people

Acts 2:11 uses the very phrase “wonderful works of God” and this is from the actual fulfillment of the day of Pentecost. To get the full impact of Acts 2:11 we also need to read verses 1-12 as well:

“And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place. And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them. And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost [Spirit], and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.

And there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven. Now when this was noised abroad, the multitude came together, and were confounded, because that every man heard them speak in his own language. And they were all amazed and marvelled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these which speak Galilaeans? And how hear we every man in our own tongue, wherein we were born? Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Judaea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia,

Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of Libya about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Jews and proselytes, Cretes and Arabians, we do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderful works of God [magnalia Dei]. And they were all amazed, and were in doubt, saying one to another, What meaneth this?"  
Acts 2:1-12, KJV

God wanted all those gathered to hear "the wonderful works of God," the magnalia Dei, *The Torah Story*, so he worked at least three very big miracles on that special fulfillment of Pentecost. First, he gave his Holy Spirit. That would be amazing enough, but then he worked two further miracles. The next miracle was having each person hear and understand in his native language. And the third miracle is what each man heard. He heard of "the wonderful works of God," i.e., the magnalia Dei, aka *The Torah Story*.

*The Torah Story* is many times referred to and recited as to how God intervened to establish the nation of Israel by destroying Egypt and taking the Israelites out through the Red Sea. There are many important reminders in scripture concerning "the mighty acts of God" – to remember *The Torah Story*. Numerous

times God says he did something great with "his mighty hand" and "his outstretched arm."

*The Torah Story* → God used → his mighty hand and outstretched arm → to deliver the ancient Israelites from Egypt → a wonderful work of God

*The Torah Story* → ongoing

It needs to be pointed out that God's mighty acts are not just about national deliverance for Israel. **His wonders and his mighty acts are also deeply personal**, such as: a miracle birth; a personal healing; the personal forgiveness of sins and the receiving of the Holy Spirit; finding a loving mate, etc. God's *The Torah Story* is meant to touch our lives on many levels. And if we let it, it does. And every time God exhibits one of his wonders for us, it is an ongoing addition to his writing of *The Torah Story*. The fact that *The Torah Story* is also sometimes personal for us makes this great story all the more meaningful.

Personal additions to → *The Torah Story* → God does ... something for you

God's *Torah Story* is meant to touch our lives on many levels = True

Moses spoke of *The Torah Story* to the children of Israel, as follows:

"Therefore thou shalt love the LORD thy God, and keep his charge, and his statutes, and his judgments, and his commandments, alway. And know ye this day: for I speak not with your children which have not known, and which have not seen the chastisement of the LORD your God, his greatness, his mighty hand, and his stretched out arm, And his miracles, and his acts, which he did in the midst of Egypt unto Pharaoh the king of Egypt, and unto all his land; And what he did unto the army of Egypt, unto their horses, and to their chariots; how he made the water of the Red sea to overflow them as they pursued after you, and how the LORD hath destroyed them unto this day; And what he did unto you in the wilderness, until ye came into this place; And what he did unto Dathan and Abiram, the sons of Eliab, the son of Reuben: how the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed them up, and their households, and their tents, and all the substance that was in their possession, in the midst of all Israel: **But your eyes have seen all the great acts of the LORD which he did.**" Deuteronomy 11:1-7, KJV

The remembrance of *The Torah Story* was so important that **its recital was commanded**, in essence, upon the occurrence of certain events, e.g., the below offering of the firstfruits. We read about this in Deuteronomy 26:1-11:

"And it shall be, when thou art come in unto the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee for an inheritance, and possessest it, and dwellest therein; That thou shalt take of the first of all the fruit of the earth, which thou shalt bring of thy land that the LORD thy God giveth thee, and shalt put it in a basket, and shalt go unto the place which the LORD thy God shall choose to place his name there. And thou shalt go unto the priest that shall be in those days, and say unto him, I profess this day unto the LORD thy God, that I am come unto the country which the LORD sware unto our fathers for to give us. And the priest shall take the basket out of thine hand, and set it down before the altar of the LORD thy God. **And thou shalt speak and say before the LORD thy God,** A Syrian [a wandering Aramean in some translations] ready to perish was my father, and he went down into Egypt, and sojourned there with a few, and became there a nation, great, mighty, and populous: And the Egyptians evil entreated us,

and afflicted us, and laid upon us hard bondage: And when we cried unto the LORD God of our fathers, the LORD heard our voice, and looked on our affliction, and our labour, and our oppression: And the LORD brought us forth out of Egypt with a mighty hand, and with an outstretched arm, and with great terribleness, and with signs, and with wonders [the Israelite national Torah Story]: And he hath brought us into this place, and hath given us this land, even a land that floweth with milk and honey. And now, behold, I have brought the firstfruits of the land, which thou, O LORD, hast given me. And thou shalt set it before the LORD thy God, and worship before the LORD thy God: And thou shalt rejoice in every good thing which the LORD thy God hath given unto thee [your personal Torah Story], and unto thine house, thou, and the Levite, and the stranger that is among you.” Deuteronomy 26:1-11, KJV

A global search of the King James Bible turned up 17 listings of the phrase “mighty hand” and you could also search for “outstretched arm”, “wonders”, etc., to get more listings, which are interspersed throughout the Bible. For example, Psalm 106 is about *The Torah Story* [not quoted].

*The Torah Story* is also mentioned in Psalm 145, verses 3-12, in particular:

"Great is the LORD, and greatly to be praised; and his greatness is unsearchable.  
**One generation shall praise thy works to another, and shall declare thy mighty acts.**  
I will speak of the glorious honour of thy majesty, and **of thy wondrous works.** And men shall speak of the might of thy terrible acts: and I will declare thy greatness. They shall abundantly utter the memory of thy great goodness, and shall sing of thy righteousness. The LORD is gracious, and full of compassion; slow to anger, and of great mercy. The LORD is good to all: and his tender mercies are over all his works.

**All thy works shall praise thee, O LORD;** and thy saints shall bless thee. They shall speak of the glory of thy kingdom, and talk of thy power; **To make known to the sons of men his mighty acts, and the glorious majesty of his kingdom."** ...

"He will fulfil the desire of them that fear him: he also will hear their cry, and will save them." Psalms 145:3-12, 19, KJV

Psalm 145 has some very interesting messages in it. First, *The Torah Story* is referenced quite explicitly throughout. Second, verse 4 says that the teaching about God, from one generation to another, is specifically to include *The Torah Story*. Third, when teaching non-believers about God, verses 11 and 12 instruct that *The Torah Story* and God's coming kingdom are to be part of what is taught.

*The Torah Story* → should be → taught to children AND non-believers

*The Torah Story* → part of cultural value transmission → to children AND the nations

To further make my point about *The Torah Story* being used to explain to our children why we serve God and follow his instructions please see Deuteronomy 6:20-25, which says:

"And when thy son asketh thee in time to come, saying, What mean the testimonies, and the statutes, and the judgments, which the LORD our God hath commanded you? **Then thou shalt say unto thy son,** We were Pharaoh's bondmen in Egypt; and the LORD brought us out of Egypt with a mighty hand: And the LORD shewed signs and wonders, great

and sore, upon Egypt, upon Pharaoh, and upon all his household, before our eyes: And he brought us out from thence, that he might bring us in, to give us the land which he sware unto our fathers. And the LORD commanded us to do all these statutes, to fear the LORD our God, for our good always, **that he might preserve us alive** [a purpose of divine law is to keep us alive and thriving], as it is at this day. And it shall be our righteousness, if we observe to do all these commandments before the LORD our God, as he hath commanded us." Deuteronomy 6:20-25, KJV

The late Dr. Dorothy also taught me that each of us was "a slave in Egypt," so to speak, because we are all sinners and under the death penalty. Just as the ancient Israelites needed to be delivered from slavery in Egypt, each of us needs to be delivered from death! So it is encouraging that *The Torah Story* continued in a big way when Jesus Christ came to the earth to become our Savior. While here, he continued his miracle-working ways, thus continuing to add to *The Torah Story*. Mathew 21:14-15 says:

"And the blind and the lame came to him in the temple; and he healed them. And when the

chief priests and scribes **saw the wonderful things that he did** [the wonders of God], and the children crying in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the Son of David; they were sore displeased," [not everyone likes *The Torah Story*] Matthew 21:14-15, KJV

A huge addition to → *The Torah Story* → Jesus Christ coming as Savior → to deliver us from death

In Acts 3 *The Torah Story* continued on when a man who was lame from birth was healed, which got Peter and John in trouble with the religious leaders of their day.

"And beholding the man which was healed standing with them, they [the religious leaders] could say nothing against it. But when they had commanded them to go aside out of the council, they conferred among themselves, Saying, What shall we do to these men? for that indeed a notable miracle hath been done by them is manifest to all them that dwell in Jerusalem; and we cannot deny it." Acts 4:14-16, KJV

Continuing the story in verses 18-20:

"And they called them, and commanded them not to speak at all nor teach in the name of Jesus [the static-thinking religious elite wanted no further additions to *The Torah Story*]. But Peter and John answered and said unto them, Whether it be right in the sight of God to hearken unto you more than unto God, judge ye. For we cannot but speak the things which we have seen and heard." Acts 4:18-20, KJV

Static-thinking → religious elite → thinking they do God service → attempted to ban the dissemination → of an important addition to → *The Torah Story*

Static thinkers want to freeze the universe in place = True

Freezing a society, or the world, or the universe in place → means → no growth (no new fruit)

However, Peter and John were going to do what Psalm 145:12 says to do, which is: "To make known to the sons of men his mighty acts, and the glorious majesty of his kingdom." John, in particular, noted at the end of his gospel account that he personally witnessed so many wonders and mighty acts, i.e., additions to *The*

*Torah Story*, that you could scarcely write them all down in books:

“And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written. Amen.” John 21:25, KJV

The Apostle Paul credentialized himself, as follows, in 2 Corinthians 12:12 (the mentioned wonders were obviously done by God, using Paul):

“Truly the signs of an apostle were wrought among you in all patience, in signs, and **wonders, and mighty deeds.**”  
2 Corinthians 12:12, KJV

Psalm 150:2, KJV says, “**Praise him for his mighty acts:** praise him according to his excellent greatness.”

It is an author’s prerogative to categorize and so there is an incomplete, but important, listing below of some of the major events forming a core portion of *The Torah Story*. Further, on the individual level it is clear that God creating us, sustaining us, and ultimately

delivering us is of crucial importance to each of us personally. Some of the major mighty acts I want to specifically reference, pertaining to the wonders of *The Torah Story*, are as follows:

Creation

Abel's life story

Enoch's life story

Noah's life story and the flood

The Tower of Babel and the thwarting of Nimrod

Abraham's life story

Isaac's life story

Jacob's life story

Saving Joseph in Egypt and his life story

Saving Moses in Egypt and his life story

The 10 Plagues and the destruction of Egypt

Delivering Israel through the Red Sea

Feeding Israel with manna  
The giving of The Law at Mount Sinai  
Joshua and the conquest of the Promised Land  
The Judges and their stories  
David and Goliath  
David's life story  
Elijah and the prophets of Baal  
The life story of the other prophets  
Esther's story and the deliverance from Haman  
Daniel, his story, and his saving from the lions  
Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego being saved  
John the Baptist's life story  
Jesus Christ coming in the flesh  
Jesus Christ's life, death, and resurrection  
The giving of the Holy Spirit at Pentecost

The apostles and their life stories

The transformation of Saul to the Apostle Paul

The Apostle Paul's amazing trials and life story

**God's intervention in our lives to call us out**

The promised future resurrection

The promised future New Heaven and New Earth

As a writer your author could go on and on - which is basically what John was saying when he said you could not write enough books to describe it all. And so I will stop with the above listing.

In actuality, there is no way any one human being can apprehend it all, particularly since a big part of *The Torah Story* is the fact that it is also personal to every man and woman. And your humble writer friend can in no way even begin to understand all the wonders that God has done and is doing for you.

In Exodus 3:14, where God revealed his name to Moses, we learn something important

that pertains to *The Torah Story*. The something important is that *The Torah Story* **is ongoing**. When God says his name is "I AM THAT I AM" it could also be translated as, "I will be what I will be." And every time he does another one of his mighty acts, it adds to *The Torah Story*.

"And God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you." Exodus 3:14, KJV

Because there is a real *Torah Story*, the two Jehovahs need real characters for it. One of those characters can be you. ... Your author has written an entire book entitled *Creating Characters With Character*, which explains more about this. For now, the important point is that you can be included in God's *Torah Story*.

The two Jehovahs → need → characters → for their *Torah Story*

One of those characters → can be you = True

A large part of *The Torah Story* revolves around the two Jehovahs' festivals. Your author will use generic phraseology to describe them as

"holy days." These days are found throughout the Bible, including the New Testament (Acts 2:1, 18:21, 20:6, 20:16, 27:9, and 1 Corinthians 11:20-34), and particularly in Leviticus 23. Because this book is going to be rather long, your author will call out the holy days, in broad terms, and give his best understanding as to their meaning. It turns out that they are important in helping human beings learn and remember and celebrate the plan of God contained in *The Torah Story*.

The two Jehovahs' → holy days (Leviticus 23) → help humans to → learn + remember + celebrate → the plan of God contained in *The Torah Story*

The first thing we can notice, in verse two and verse 44 of Leviticus 23, is that these are **the feasts of the LORD** – not the feasts of any one people. At any rate it really would not matter if these holy days were to be considered "Jewish only" or "Israelite only," as each of us is either going to become a spiritual Israelite and keep these days or not ultimately obtain eternal life and mercifully be put to eternal death.

The holy days → the feasts of the LORD → NOT the feasts of any one people (e.g., only the Jews)

“And the LORD spoke to Moses, saying,  
Speak to the sons of Israel and say to them,  
**The feasts of the LORD**, which you shall proclaim, holy convocations [believers are supposed to get together with other believers on these days] [ancient Israel had Tabernacle or Temple gatherings on these days], even these are **My appointed feasts**. Six days shall work be done, but the seventh day is the sabbath of rest, a holy convocation. You shall not do any work. It is **a sabbath to the LORD** in all your dwellings. These are the appointed feasts of the LORD, holy convocations which you shall proclaim in their appointed seasons.”  
Leviticus 23:1-4, MKJV

The seventh day (Saturday per the modern calendar) → a Sabbath to the LORD

The second thing we can notice is that the seventh day is a day of rest for the Israelites, not just the Jewish people – who are only one of the twelve tribes of Israel. The seventh day can, at a minimum, 1) point back to the original creation week (Genesis 2:1-3) and 2) it can

point forward to the time when Jesus Christ has returned to the earth and is ruling all nations for 1,000 years (Revelation 20:4-6) (the Millennium). The 1,000 years is important for mankind, hence this chapter. On the Sabbath day believers are supposed to congregate together, if possible, and the ancient Israelites had either Tabernacle or Temple services depending on the time period in which they lived.

The rest of the feasts of the LORD are explained throughout the balance of **Leviticus 23**, which you can read for yourself. There are a number of churches who keep these days and many of them have booklets on the topic, which can explain the below in more detail. Anything that a church teaches should be compared to the Bible as a check on the accuracy of the teaching. Some of the below festivals of the Lord have commanded days of rest (like the weekly Sabbath) included as part of that festival. And some churches technically designate the "holy days" as only applying to the commanded rest days contained within those festivals which have such commanded days of rest associated with them. Your author is using "holy days" in a more generic way so as to make it easier to understand for those in the

world unfamiliar with the festivals of the Lord. The main point is the meaning of the festivals and their place in helping explain the plan of the two Jehovahs. That said (to the best of your author's understanding) the balance of the feasts of the LORD, are as follows (with a brief explanation of each):

Passover – verse five, symbolizing the perfect sacrifice of Jesus Christ

Seven days of unleavened bread – verses 6-15, not eating leavened bread that puffs up symbolizing putting prideful sin out of our lives and also the eating of unleavened bread symbolizing putting Jesus Christ into our lives (John 6:33). During the seven days of unleavened bread there is a wave sheaf offering which likely symbolizes the resurrected Jesus Christ (the firstfruit of the spiritual Israelites, Acts 2:32, 1 Corinthians 15:20-23) ascending to heaven to become our High Priest (Hebrews 10:12, 21) (Hebrews 6:20)

Pentecost – verses 15 – 22, literally means to count 50 days (verses 15-16). Pentecost is also known as the Feast of Weeks. The Holy Spirit was given on this day to early church believers (Acts 2). Evidently, in Israelite history, the Ten

Commandments were given on this day as well. The symbols could be considered to be tied together in that the instruction (the law) was codified and given on that day (but existed before then) and the divine help to our spirit-in-man minds was further given to help write that law on our minds and hearts (Jeremiah 31:33 and Hebrews 10:16). The overall idea is to help us to become like Jehovah number two, Jesus Christ, the end (goal) of the instruction and directions (Romans 10:4). Further, Pentecost symbolizes the early harvest of the firstfruits (those people who receive the Holy Spirit prior to Christ's second coming), while the Feast of Tabernacles (Ingathering) represents the larger harvest to come later (Exodus 34:22). The larger harvest to come later will be explained in more detail in "The Last Great Day" holy day explanation included in section 10.6.

Feast of Trumpets – verses 23 – 25: The meaning of this day is debated. It was evidently the first day of the Israelite civil year and some believe that it was the first day of creation week. Your author personally believes, but does not know and cannot prove, that this day will be celebrated as the day in which Jesus Christ returns as King of kings and Lord of lords (Revelation 19), and also perhaps a celebration

of those in the first resurrection of the dead (Hebrews 11:35). Your author writes, "celebrated," because Jesus Christ might return on a different day than this one. This is because, evidently, no man knows the day or the hour when he will return (Matthew 24:36). 1 Thessalonians 4:16 could be an encapsulated version of this day:

"For the Lord Himself shall descend from Heaven **with a shout**, with the voice of the archangel and **with the trumpet of God**. And the dead in Christ shall rise first."

1 Thessalonians 4:16, MKJV

Zechariah 14 shows that both the Israelites and the non-Israelite nations will be taught to keep the Feasts of the LORD, after Jesus Christ returns to this earth to rule as King (verses 4, 9). Verses 16-19 show that anyone who does not keep the Feast of Tabernacles (see two paragraphs below), at that time, will be punished severely, e.g., their land will not receive rain. This would make no sense if the holy days were abolished at the cross and it is Christ himself, as King, who gives the order.

The Day of Atonement (for sins) – verses 26 – 32, a fast day: This day is further explained in

Leviticus 16, in much greater detail. There are elaborate sacrifices depicting the human High Priest needing to be cleansed. There are offerings for the sins of the congregation. And there is the sacrifice of one goat (representing Jesus Christ) and the sending away of the other goat (the scapegoat) deemed guilty of sin (representing Satan). Satan will ultimately be exposed as the originator of sin and this day partially celebrates Satan getting his just due (Isaiah 27:1). The Day of Atonement and Passover are linked in meaning, at a minimum, in that there is an acknowledgement of sin, repentance, and sacrifices. The sacrifices are necessary because there were sins committed - sins based on Satan's force and fraud value system.

The Feast of Booths (Tabernacles or Ingathering) – verses 33 – 43, symbolizing the ancient Israelites, of the Exodus time period, living in temporary dwellings for 40 years (verse 43). This residing in temporary dwellings also pictures the Christian (spiritual Israelite) sojourn of living out our lives while we wait for the return of Jesus Christ (2 Peter 1:13-14, 2 Corinthians 5:1-7). The seven-day time period can also represent the 1,000 years when Jesus Christ will be on the earth healing people and

the entire planet (Revelation 20:4-6, Ezekiel 36, Isaiah 2, and numerous other places in scripture).

The Last Great Day (the eighth day after The Feast of Booths – verses 36 and 39). The meaning of this day is important for all mankind, and it will take some work to explain the likely meaning.” Your author will defer explanation of this festival and holy day until chapter ten, section 10.6. It is a very important explanation and too long to include here in this already lengthy section. For now, simply note that its true meaning can provide comfort to anyone who has ever lost a loved one and fears they are gone forever.

Israelite culture will eventually be emulated by nations all over the world. The annual festivals of the two Jehovahs, known as God’s holy days, are a core aspect of that culture and will enable the people of the world to plan their personal lives in harmony with God.

### **9.8 The other nations will admit they were wrong and join with Israel in serving God**

Ezekiel 34 shows that God will bring the Israelites back to the Promised Land and then

convert and heal Israel and the land. The Today's English Version (TEV, aka, the Good News Bible) has portions of Ezekiel 34, verses 29-30 as:

"... The other nations will not sneer at them any more. Everyone will know that I protect Israel and that they are my people."

The good news for those sneering citizens of the non-Israelite nations (and the non-sneering) is that despite their historic ignorance, rebellion, and other poor qualities, God is no respecter of persons and will allow them to repent of their sins and their bad attitudes and to be joined to Israel in serving the two Jehovahs.

"Then Peter opened his mouth and said, Truly I see that God is no respecter of persons; but in every nation he who fears Him and works righteousness is accepted with Him. You know the word which **God sent to the sons of Israel**, preaching the gospel of peace by Jesus Christ (He is Lord of all!); that word which was published throughout all Judea, and began from Galilee, after the baptism which John proclaimed; how God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and with power, and He went about doing good, and healing all those

who were oppressed by the Devil, for God was with Him. And we are witnesses of all things which He did, both in the land of the Jews and in Jerusalem. They killed Him and hanged Him on a tree; but God raised Him up the third day and showed Him openly, not to all the people, but to witnesses hand-picked before by God, even to us who ate and drank with Him after He rose from the dead. And He commanded us to preach to the people, and to testify that it is He who was ordained of God to be the Judge of the living and the dead. All the prophets give witness to Him, that through His name whoever believes in Him shall receive remission of sins. While Peter was still speaking these words, the Holy Spirit fell on all those hearing the Word. And those of the circumcision [physical Israelites], who believed (as many as came with Peter), were astonished because the gift of the Holy Spirit was poured out on the nations also." Acts 10:34-45, MKJV

While the giving of the Holy Spirit to non-Israelites was new, as detailed above, there has always been a place for some strangers (citizens of other nations) to join with the physical Israelites and to follow the divine law instructions, particularly if they were living in the land of Israel.

"All that are born of the country shall do these things in this way, in offering an offering made by fire, of a sweet savor to the LORD. And if a stranger stays with you, or whoever is among you in your generations, and will offer an offering made by fire of a sweet savor to the LORD; as you do, so he shall do. One ordinance for you of the congregation and also for the stranger that resides with you, an ordinance forever in your generations. As you are, so the stranger shall be before the LORD. One law and one way shall be for you and for the stranger that lives with you." Numbers 15:13-16, MKJV

The sacrificial death of Jesus Christ and his resurrection back to life opened the door to salvation to all men. As previously pointed out, only a relatively few people are effectively called and chosen now, but some of those few were and are in fact non-Israelites. In the Millennium, with Jesus Christ on the earth reigning, Israel doing its job as a holy nation and a congregation of righteous witnesses, and Satan the deceiver in jail, non-Israelites will finally have a chance to get with God's divine individualism program and they will. Religious confusion will become a thing of the past.

"Once you [Gentiles] were dead, doomed forever because of your many sins. You used to live just like the rest of the world, full of sin, obeying Satan, the mighty prince of the power of the air. He is the spirit at work in the hearts of those who refuse to obey God. All of us used to live that way, following the passions and desires of **our evil nature**. We were born with an evil nature, and we were under God's anger just like everyone else. But God is so rich in mercy, and he loved us so very much, that even while we were dead because of our sins, he gave us life when he raised Christ from the dead. (It is only by God's special favor that you have been saved!) For he raised us from the dead along with Christ, and we are seated with him in the heavenly realms--all because we are one with Christ Jesus. And so God can always point to us as examples of the incredible wealth of his favor and kindness toward us, as shown in all he has done for us through Christ Jesus. God saved you by his special favor when you believed. And you can't take credit for this; it is a gift from God. Salvation is not a reward for the good things we have done, so none of us can boast about it. For we are God's masterpiece. He has created us anew in Christ Jesus, so that we can do the good things he planned for us long ago. **Don't forget that you Gentiles**

**used to be outsiders by birth.** You were called “the uncircumcised ones” by the Jews [physical Israelites, not just the Jews], who were proud of their circumcision, even though it affected only their bodies and not their hearts. **In those days you were living apart from Christ.** **You were excluded** from God’s people, Israel, and you did not know the promises God had made to them. **You lived in this world without God and without hope. But now you belong to Christ Jesus.** Though you once were far away from God, now you have been brought near to him because of the blood of Christ. For Christ himself has made peace between us Jews [physical Israelites] and you Gentiles [non-Israelites] by making us all one people. He has broken down the wall of hostility that used to separate us.” Ephesians 2:1-14, NLT

“that I [the Apostle Paul] should be the minister of Jesus Christ to the [non-Israelite] nations, ministering the gospel of God, so that the offering up of the nations might be acceptable, being sanctified by the Holy Spirit.” Romans 15:16, MKJV

It is important to God that Israel finally does its job so the other nations will want to join with both Jesus Christ and Israelite Civilization.

There are numerous scriptures to this effect and the below are a few of them:

“So says the Lord Jehovah: When I have gathered the house of Israel from the peoples among whom they are scattered, and have been sanctified in them **in the sight of the nations**, then they shall dwell in their land that I have given to My servant Jacob.” Ezekiel 28:25, MKJV

“I will receive you with your sweet aroma when I bring you out from the people and gather you out of the lands into which you have been scattered among them. And I will be sanctified in you in the eyes of the nations.”  
Ezekiel 20:41, MKJV

The people of the other nations will take advantage of their opportunity to change their lives and will embrace Jesus Christ who died for them, too. They will also see the leading civilization on earth, Israelite Civilization, high above the other nations, and will want to join in and participate with Israelite Civilization. The people of the nations will want to learn how to lead moral, reasoned, and productive, contributing lives. Further, they will learn how to forgive and forget, and other social skills so they can come under and join in with Jesus

Christ's worldwide government and be citizens and people in good standing with him.

"And many nations shall be joined to the LORD in that day, and shall be My people; and I will dwell in your midst, and you shall know that the LORD of hosts has sent me to you. And the LORD shall possess Judah, His portion in the holy land, and shall choose Jerusalem again."

Zechariah 2:11-12, MKJV

"And **many nations** shall come and say,  
Come and let us go up to the mountain  
[government] of the LORD, and to the house of  
**the God of Jacob**. And He will teach us of His ways, and we will walk in His paths; for the law [divine law instruction] shall go forth out of Zion, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem. And He shall judge between many peoples, and will decide for strong nations afar off; and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning hooks. Nation shall not lift up a sword against nation, And they shall not still learn war. But they shall sit each one under his vine and under his fig tree; and there shall be no trembling; for the mouth of the LORD of hosts has spoken," Micah 4:2-4, MKJV

"And in that day there shall be the Root of Jesse [Jesus Christ] standing for a banner of the people; to Him the nations shall seek; and His resting place shall be glorious."

Isaiah 11:10, MKJV

"In Jerusalem, the LORD Almighty will spread a wonderful feast for everyone around the world. It will be a delicious feast of good food, with clear, well-aged wine and choice beef. In that day he will remove the cloud of gloom, the shadow of death that hangs over the earth. He will swallow up death forever! The Sovereign LORD will wipe away all tears. He will remove forever all insults and mockery against his land and people. The LORD has spoken!"

Isaiah 25:6-8, NLT

""Look at my servant, whom I strengthen. He is my chosen one, and I am pleased with him. I have put my Spirit upon him. He will reveal justice to the nations. He will be gentle--he will not shout or raise his voice in public. He will not crush those who are weak or quench the smallest hope. He will bring full justice to all who have been wronged. He will not stop until truth and righteousness prevail throughout the earth. Even distant lands beyond the sea will wait for his instruction."" Isaiah 42:1-4, NLT

"At that time they shall call Jerusalem the throne of the LORD; and all nations shall be gathered to it, to the name of the LORD, to Jerusalem. Nor shall they walk any more after the stubbornness of their evil heart."

Jeremiah 3:17, MKJV

The people of the nations will finally understand their former way of life, based on their former religious beliefs and cultural practices, led to countless, wasted, precious lives:

"LORD, you are my strength and fortress, my refuge in the day of trouble! Nations from around the world will come to you and say, "Our ancestors were foolish, for they worshiped worthless idols. Can people make their own god? The gods they make are not real gods at all!" "So now I will show them my power and might," says the LORD. "At last they will know that I am the LORD."" Jeremiah 16:19-21, NLT

"And you shall swear, The LORD lives, in truth, in judgment, and in righteousness; and the nations shall bless themselves in Him, and in Him they shall glory." Jeremiah 4:2, MKJV

“ ... Then people from nations around the world will worship the LORD, each in their own land.” Zephaniah 2:11, NLT

“And many peoples and strong nations shall come to seek the LORD of hosts in Jerusalem and to seek the favor of the face of the LORD.” Zechariah 8:22, MKJV

“And it shall be, everyone who is left of all the nations which came up against Jerusalem shall go up from year to year to worship the King, the LORD of hosts, and to keep the Feast of Tabernacles. And it shall be, whoever will not come up from all the families of the earth to Jerusalem to worship the King, Jehovah of hosts, even on them shall be no rain.” Zechariah 14:16-17, MKJV

All of the above will lead to the people of the nations accepting Jesus Christ as Savior and King. They will further accept that Israel is the leading nation, high above the other nations, with both privileges and responsibilities. The responsibilities include leading holy productive lives, being God’s congregation of witnesses, and welcoming other peoples of other nations into God’s fold IF those peoples will choose to take advantage of their opportunity to become

spiritual Israelites and to learn how to become moral, reasonable, and productive peoples in their own right. Israelite Civilization, under the divine leadership of Jesus Christ, will likely spread to the ends of the earth. After what the peoples of the nations have had to endure thus far in human history, it will be very welcome.

“And all nations shall call you [Israel] blessed; for you shall be a delightful land, says the LORD of hosts.” Malachi 3:12, MKJV

“The whole earth will acknowledge the LORD and return to him. People from every nation will bow down before him.” Psalms 22:27, NLT

### **9.9 Any recalcitrant nation unwilling to serve Jesus Christ will be destroyed**

God admits that prior to the Millennium rule of Jesus Christ, he, in the past, allowed for a veil to be placed over the nations, effectively blinding them. God also admits that he, in the past, also blinded the vast majority of the Israelites. Jesus Christ will take this veil down, as was pointed out in the prior section.

“And He will destroy in this mountain the face of the covering which covers all people, and

the veil that is woven over all nations. He will swallow up death in victory; and the Lord Jehovah will wipe away tears from all faces. And He shall take away from all the earth the rebuke of His people [Israel]. For the LORD has spoken." Isaiah 25:7-8, MKJV

""He has blinded their eyes and hardened their heart, so that they should not see with their eyes nor understand with their heart, and be converted, and I should heal them."" John 12:40, MKJV

What will Jesus Christ do to those who refuse to serve him, preferring to die instead? For the reader's peace of mind sake, this should not be the case with very many people once the veil has been lifted and there is no religious confusion any longer. Hopefully, it will not be the case for even one person. But there always seems to be recalcitrant belligerents who are so set in their immoral and error-prone ways they might just refuse to repent and change. God the Father and Jesus Christ want them to change, but they might not. If they finally do repent and change then they will be accepted, but if not, then not.

"Pour out Your fury on the nations who do not know You [because they refuse to], and on the families who do not call on Your name [after being given a clear chance]; for they have eaten up Jacob and have devoured him [in the past], and have destroyed him [for a time], and have made his dwelling desolate [out of envy]."

Jeremiah 10:25, MKJV

"Now this is what the LORD says: "As for all the evil nations reaching out for the inheritance I gave my people Israel, I will uproot them from their lands just as Judah will be uprooted from hers. But afterward I will return and have compassion on all of them. I will bring them home to their own lands again, each nation to its own inheritance [it will not be in the Promised Land of Israel, but their own God-designated national territory]. And if these nations **quickly learn** the ways of my people, and if they learn to swear by my name, saying, 'As surely as the LORD lives' (just as they taught my people to swear by the name of Baal), then they will be given a place among my people. But any nation who refuses to obey me will be uprooted and destroyed. I, the LORD, have spoken!"" Jeremiah 12:14-17, NLT

## **9.10 People will be taught how to be happy**

Most people have never thought much about happiness; they only know from experience they prefer to be happy rather than sad. This will change in the Millennium. People will actually be taught how to be happy. This does not guarantee perfect happiness, as there are still going to be some disappointments in life, e.g., if two guys are in love with the same girl, at least one of them is going to be temporarily unhappy (maybe both).

People will be taught and come to understand that the purpose of human life is to become a moral, reasonable, and productive person. They will be taught to respect each other's individual natural rights and to learn and practice acceptable social skills. People will learn how to forgive and forget and this is very important because all of us have to admit we need to be forgiven for things we have done. As we hope others will forgive and forget our past blunders, so we must do so for others, too. People will learn this and this will improve social harmony. Jesus Christ will resolve religious and metaphysical confusion and people will really believe if they repent of their sins, acknowledge Jesus Christ as Savior, and receive the Holy

Spirit, they, too, can grow into a mature, healthy, and whole human being. Those needing healing for special circumstances can receive healing. Jesus Christ is going to teach from Jerusalem and there is not going to be any confusion about philosophic matters or matters pertaining to the natural sciences. Each nation will have its own designated territory, safe from invasion by other nations and tribes, and each family within a nation will have their own permanent family land. In substance, there will be minimal to no taxes, only a small temple tax anyone can afford with a little bit of effort, and a tithe on increase, contingent on that increase. If people live in a town or city, there may be some local taxes, but said taxes will be kept minor and the monies will be efficiently and wisely utilized. Every person will be taught they have been given the great honor, by the two Jehovahs, of being made in the image and likeness of God. Each person will come to realize they have been blessed with a mind that can learn, a mind that contains a logical structure that corresponds with the logical structure of the universe. In other words, we can trust our minds to acquire and effectively use knowledge in cooperating with Jesus Christ to exercise dominion over our part of the earth. And each human being will realize they have

been given free moral agency - free will. Within the context of staying within compliance to the divine law instructions and staying within compliance of the respect for others' individual natural rights, each man and each woman is free to become who only they, as a unique creation, can be. In other words, each person can become who he or she chooses to be. Their personal valuations, choices, and efforts will determine just what that is, just who they become. It is up to them. And each person can receive guidance and answered prayers from Jesus Christ. They can also receive guidance and help from the effectively-called-and-chosen-now saints who have been resurrected to become incorruptible spirit beings in the first resurrection (1 Corinthians 15, 1 Peter 2:9, Revelation 1:6, 5:10), and are now functioning as kings and priests on the earth. The below scriptural passage is in application to Israel, but since Israel is the firstfruits regarding the nations, it will also end up being applicable to those individuals of other nations, too.

"And so the LORD waits to be gracious to you. And therefore He is exalted, that He may have mercy on you. For the LORD is a God of judgment; blessed are all those who wait for Him. For the people shall dwell in Zion at

Jerusalem; you shall weep no more; He will be very gracious to you at the voice of your cry. When He hears it, He will answer you. And the LORD gives you the bread of adversity and the water of affliction; yet your teachers shall not be removed into a corner any more, but your eyes shall see your teachers. And your ears shall hear a word behind you, saying, **This is the way, walk in it**, when you turn to the right hand and when you turn to the left."

Isaiah 30:18-21, MKJV

Life will be filled with meaning and purpose. People will no longer be subjected to horrible leadership and bad government. The oppression of human beings will end. People will understand the implications of the law of original appropriation and they will also understand that the law of comparative advantage, as applied to human beings, means there is a place setting for them at God's banquet table. In short, men and women will be valued and treated accordingly. Further, and this is really important, each individual man and woman will be taught to realize that their own life is valuable and important and they should make decisions accordingly. To that end each person will be taught that the two Jehovahs have a unity of all of the virtues in their being and each

human being will be taught to try and obtain and use the virtues. Further, each human being will be taught that there is a unity of a package of values that pertain to an abundant, peaceful life and they will know they must come to value those values. The big first step to revaluing one's values and to start the process of obtaining and using the virtues is to repent of your sins and receive the guidance and help of having the Holy Spirit within you.

"If you then, being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to those who ask Him?" Luke 11:13, MKJV

"And hope does not make us ashamed, because **the love of God** has been poured out in our hearts through the Holy Spirit given to us." Romans 5:5, MKJV

"for the kingdom of God is not eating and drinking, but righteousness and peace and joy in the Holy Spirit." Romans 14:17, MKJV

"May the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit be with you all. Amen."  
2 Corinthians 13:14, MKJV

People who cooperate with Jesus Christ and his team will be given the Holy Spirit of promise. They will believe and know they can have an incorruptible, abundant, eternal life. They will value the two Jehovahs and all they have done for mankind, they will value themselves, and they will value their fellow man.

"in whom also you, hearing the word of truth, the gospel of our salvation, in whom also believing, you were sealed with the Holy Spirit of promise," Ephesians 1:13, MKJV

With all of the above as a preamble to the changed conditions of mankind during the Millennium, your author wants to teach just what it is that most people will need, at a minimum, in order to really be happy. Obviously, your author is limited to teaching certain core, general components that are necessary for a human being to be happy. In doing so your author will begin by quoting a section from his previously written *Decision Filters* book. For the record, this book was written in a secular style to hopefully appeal to those not yet interested in religion, but who wished to have better values and a better life. The quoted section can form a primary building

block of teaching, to those who have never been taught about values or how to think longer term and more prudentially.

### **"Happiness Is The Right Answer**

Virtually every human being currently alive can correctly answer the most important question they will ever be asked and that question is, "What do you want out of life?" And the correct answer is: "I just want to be happy." Your author would contend that this was also true of those who have gone before us, but are not currently with us. They, too, knew the right answer. So there is some good news in all of this in that people can correctly answer this very important question. But here is the bad news. Sometimes people try to be happy in crazy ways (more on this later). And so even with the right ultimate goal in mind, choosing the wrong means can result in a less than happy outcome – both for yourself and your loved ones.

It would be easy to blame our past, the world at large, or other human beings for being in a less-than-happy state. Generally speaking, however, the hard truth of the matter is we are products of the choices we have made. Our choices have consequences. True, others'

choices can also affect us as well, but others' choices are out of our control. We can only control our own choices and most of us could use some help, some choosing guidelines, in learning how to consistently make better decisions - hence this book. Here is a bottom line: your life and your happiness should be important to you. Act accordingly.

... Happiness, it turns out, needs some credible general content in order to be a helpful and valid life goal. Your author can provide several suggestions for your consideration. Let's take them one at a time and work our way through this together.

Deep inside of us, in both our mind and our heart, each of us would like to hear the following when we walk into a room, "Hey, there's your-name-here. He's one of the good guys." (Your author is using "guys" in the mankind sense of the word, applying to all genders, races, ages, etc.). In short, each of us wants to be considered as "one of the good guys." This should lead each of us to ask ourselves a really important question, "Am I really one of the good guys?" Ethics matters and so does character. None of us can be considered to be "one of the good guys," if we are not actually a good guy.

... Your author, for now, suggests that one of the general content criterion for happiness must be a high standard of ethics. Our word must be good, as must our actions, if we are to be considered as being one of the good guys.

Being **ethical** is one general content criterion for happiness.

A second general content criterion for happiness is to be considered to be a reasonable, sound-minded person. When it is our turn to speak, each of us would like to be actually and actively listened to because what we say has some intellectual value to other people. Further, when we are alone and thinking our approach should be reasoned, rational, or intelligent – pick your preferred word. Your author likes reasonable, which implies according to reason and also being balanced. Being reasonable matters. Being reasonable is another general content criterion for happiness. ...

Being **reasonable** – according to reason and balanced - is also a general content criterion for happiness.

A third general content criterion for happiness is to be productive at something. Once again, down deep inside, each of us would like to be considered to be a productive member of society. No one really wants to be considered as a freeloader. Each of us has bills to pay so we must work at something. Since we must work, it makes sense to work effectively in order to produce as much as possible within the resource constraints we are each faced with. In other words, we will feel better about ourselves if we are a productive contributing member of society and thus pay our own way and perhaps also generate some extra we can use to help others with. Helping others is a personal choice and your author is not trying to be preachy, here.

In most countries we can choose how we would like to be productive, which is a blessing. Since we each get to choose, a further two-part suggestion to being productive is as follows: 1) to be productive at something we enjoy doing and 2) that we are also good at. Regarding item number two it might take you some time to develop the skills, including perhaps obtaining the education and/or work experience, but you can do it. The overall reasoning here is that since we likely have to work to pay our bills we

will be happier in our jobs or businesses if we both like what we are doing and are good at it. If both numbers one and two are true, work will seem a lot less like work. Being a productive contributor matters and so being productive is another general content criterion for happiness.

...

Being **productive** – hopefully at something you both enjoy and are good at – is also a general content criterion for happiness.

The next general content criterion for happiness is to have some good relationships with others who are also trying to build out ethical, reasonable, and productive lives. We each have a need to experience a positive “community of emotion.” No one really wants to be permanently alone, or even alone for extended periods of time, but this can happen to all of us from time to time. If it does happen it makes life harder and less enjoyable during that period of time. The way to experience a positive community of emotion is build into your life other men and women of good will who are also attempting to become “one of the good guys.” It is important to have others of like mind to love, to work together and play together with, to intellectually stimulate each other, and in

general to share life experiences with. We want to cheer together when the "Death Star" is blown up, cry together when Rocky is still standing at the end of the 15<sup>th</sup> round, and laugh together when someone cracks a good one-liner, or tells a funny story. All this is to say that we want to laugh together, work together, cheer together, cry together, etc. We want to know that we love and are loved by at least some other people. In other words, it would be nice to be able to share achievements and trials and all of life's ups and downs with some other good guys. It would be nice to both help and to be helped as the case may be. Ergo, having meaningful relationships with family and friends is also a general content criterion for happiness. Relationships matter. ...

Having **meaningful relationships** with other good guys is also a general content criterion for happiness.

Depending on how one chooses to categorize there could also be other general content criteria for happiness, e.g., good health, but your author will allow others to suggest them. For now, if you are in agreement that you would like to be one of the good guys, to be reasonable, to be productive, and to experience a positive

community of emotion ... then you are my kind of person and hopefully we can someday meet. To recap the suggested general content criteria of happiness, we have the following:

**Ethical** – one of the good guys

**Reasonable** – according to reason and balanced

**Productive** – hopefully at something you both enjoy and are good at

**Friendly** – supporting a positive community of emotion with family and friends

To “prove” your author’s suggestion for the above happiness criteria, let’s stop and take a brief, but hard, look at what would be the case if any of the above were missing in one’s life. No one is really going to be happy if they are unethical and others do not trust them. No one wants “He was a scumbag” on his tombstone. Nor are they going to be happy if they cannot contribute something reasonable and balanced to a conversation – if they are considered to be foolish or not worth listening to by others. Nor are they going to be happy if they are unable to produce enough to pay for their own upkeep or

to contribute at least something to society. Nor are they going to be happy if they are all alone in life. No one is really going to be happy if any of these general content criteria pertaining to happiness are missing. Hence, your author's above suggestions can at least be a starting place for most people to think about. And think about them you should because, unfortunately, some people try to be happy in crazy ways.

Happiness as a life goal must be constrained with at least some general criteria, or decisional chaos followed by actual life chaos can ensue.

Perhaps a few examples of some poor, unconstrained decisions might prove useful. Your author would contend that if the general content criteria for happiness are not in place then people can start doing crazy things like one of the following: 1) rob a liquor store thinking if they get away with the money they will be "happy" or 2) raid a neighboring village in order to steal their property in order to "be happy" or 3) shoplift in order to get something that will "make them happy," or 4) stick a needle filled with heroin in their arm or drink too much, etc. Happiness has to have credible general content criteria in place, prior to making decisions, or people will attempt to be happy in immoral or

foolish ways – and then they will make themselves and the people around them miserable, which is to say they will not be happy and neither will any others they come into contact with. Unfortunately, this has all too often been the story of the human race.

The general content criteria of “happiness” can be thought of as general decision filters.

The idea of general happiness decision filters can be illustrated by the following questions one can ask oneself, prior to taking an action: 1) Is what I am about to do ethical, or not? 2) Is what I am about to do reasonable and balanced, or not? 3) Is what I am about to do productive, or not? 4) Is what I am about to do relationship enhancing or relationship destroying? It should go without saying that if the answers to any of the above questions are either, “yes,” or “relationship enhancing,” then proceed. If not, reconsider a sounder option.

There is a necessary point of further clarification, which is that after staying within the general decision filter guidelines we remember we are unique and can follow our particular interests and passions thereafter. It is advisable that we should begin with being

aware of and conforming to the general content criteria for "happiness," or we will fall short in important areas of our lives. The idea of using general decision filters as a tool to help keep us on a good decision-making track can enable us to achieve becoming an ethical, reasonable and balanced, productive person with many good relationships in our lives. After that, because each of us has the freedom to choose, we can then choose the particular and unique-to-us aspects of happiness for our lives. In choosing the particular aspects of happiness we must always stay within the above four general content guidelines. If we do not then we run the risk of: 1) not being "one of the good guys," or 2) trying to be happy in a crazy way, or 3) not being productive with what we have, or worse, living off of others' efforts, or 4) losing an important relationship, or even worse, being alone.

Within the above general decision filter guidelines we can choose the particular aspects of what we believe would make us happy. For example, one can choose to be a white-collar worker in a big city, or to be a family farmer in a rural area. One can choose to marry or not. One can choose to have children or not. One can choose to earn less money and to have a

simpler life as an artist, etc. The difference in living conditions will manifest themselves quite clearly based on each of the above personal choices – all of which can be perfectly acceptable. You can be an ethical office worker in a big city and also be a reasonable, balanced, productive person, and have many good relationships with likeminded others. The same is true for choosing a rural option. Once again, a farmer can quite clearly exhibit ethics, reasonableness, grow a lot of food, and have many good relationships. The choices are yours. The consequences of those choices are yours, also. ...

You can build out a meaningful and good life, over time, through better choices.

Decision filters can help.

**Prudence** is a word one does not hear very often these days, which is a shame. Prudence can be thought of as caring about the future in such a way that we actually take the time to both think about a better future and then act in order to bring it about. Prudent people are generally happier because they have a confidence they can make their world better, over time, with consistently good choices. A

prudent person makes their choices with the overriding goal of wellbeing or happiness in mind. And happiness is ultimately the right answer to the "What do you hope for out of life?" question."

Your author hopes the above was helpful in learning about happiness, its importance, and how to make a good start at achieving it in your life.

### **Why "The Left" Can Never Help People To Achieve Happiness**

The last part of this section and chapter brings us back to why it is so disastrous to attempt to be happy being a member of The Left or following them. Just taking your author's four general content criteria of happiness, let's examine the significant and harmful errors of The Left. To once again recap the suggested general content criteria of happiness, we have the following:

**Ethical** – one of the good guys. The Left cannot help anyone here as they have destroyed divine law ethics because they teach there is no god. Further, they have destroyed the secular standard of what is correct because they do not

hold that every individual has inviolable natural rights. Without a standard of what is correct, i.e., right, NO ONE can be ethical, including The Left itself. Without an external standard of the right, there is no right. No one can be one of the good guys because there are no good guys. The Left is either amoral, or immoral and they have destroyed the standards of ethics necessary for the peaceful interactions between men.

**Reasonable** – your mental processes are according to reason and balanced. The Left is not intellectually consistent in their advocacy for science and the use of logic. They cannot be, because an honest and clear-thinking man can use reason, i.e., logic, to derive individual natural rights from natural laws and The Left cannot abide that. Further, The Left advocates for Socialism, which was intellectually demolished long ago. Those of The Left also advocate for other big government interventionist schemes that are irrational and could never work to deliver happiness and a high standard of living for the average man and woman. The Left purposely does not define their terms or pollute commonly understood definitions via changed terminology to obfuscate clear thinking and communication. The Left

uses slogans and symbols instead of coherent arguments using facts and logic. The Left is evidently completely ignorant of the actual human condition, including what the two Jehovahs are undertaking concerning the human race. In other words, The Left does not even have a viable knowledge of the context of our human situation. The Left is comprised of individuals who are basically intellectual muddleheads or evil sloganeers and who can in no way help one to think clearly, i.e., reasonably.

**Productive** – hopefully at something you both enjoy and are good at. Instead of minding their own business and working to be productive members of society themselves, many members of The Left are advocates of using governmental power to take what others have produced and then redistributing the loot on programs they advocate for. The Left ignores individual natural rights and they function more as takers and redistributors, not as producers. This is the opposite of minding your own business, working with your own hands, and peacefully producing and trading with productive others.

**Friendly** – supporting a positive community of emotion with family and friends. The Left's

widespread violation of the individual natural rights of others means it is comprised of individuals who are not peacemakers, but troublemakers. They destroy lives and start unnecessary political and other fights. The Left's takeover of or infiltration into banking, government, education, legal and financial systems, amongst other things, leads to never ending conflicts between nations, races, genders, religions, and political parties. The Left pits men against each other at every turn. Further, The Left pushes for gender confusion and other anti-family intellectual garbage that weakens stable family units and thus weakens society.

In addition to failing to be ethical, reasonable, productive, and friendly, The Left has further undermined human happiness by gutting human life of ultimate meaning and purpose. Secular Humanism is a tragic joke of an attempt to derive meaning from the meaningless and is a waste of human lives. Compared to what the two Jehovahs are offering humanity, Secular Humanism is basically a Satan-inspired con job that can never provide or lead to human happiness. **The Left is poison.** The Left is morally, intellectually, productively, and socially toxic and the two Jehovahs will kill

all those of The Left who do not repent of their amoral, immoral, irrational, parasitical, and unsocial ways. It cannot happen too soon for the good of the human race. And it will. The sad truth is, the people of The Left inflict unhappiness on themselves and anyone foolish enough to follow them. Not only do they not achieve your author's four general content criteria for happiness, they actively go in the other direction. No wonder they are miserable and they bring so much misery, not happiness, to the human race. Further, while seeing The Tragedy of Being they are powerless to positively affect it in a substantive way because they themselves are huge contributors to Being, being tragic. In short, they are not real leaders because they don't know the answers to the problems, they are unhappy to the point of being miserable, and what they advocate for and work to achieve will make all others on earth miserable, too. Their end shall come, and this will be covered in the next chapter.

## **Chapter Ten**

### **God's Strange Plan And The Tragedy Of Being Explained**

This book is not an easy read because it attempts to honestly convey what the rebellion of man against God, under the evil influence of Satan, has led to. Being has become tragic and it is tough on all of us. Life is hard. People are unhappy. God is blamed. The Left tries to deliver, but it cannot. The Left never will be able to. The Right usually spends more time reacting to the amoral/immoral, irrational proposals of The Left than putting forth any credible solutions of its own. While not as bad as The Left, The Right will never be able to deliver either. People are confused and wounded, hurting, frustrated, unhappy, and some are angry. So far, Israel has failed God and mankind. The Millennium reign of Jesus Christ will help set things right, but what about the billions of lives already "wasted?" Further, will you ever see your already deceased loved ones again, or are they gone forever? As great as the two Jehovahs are, can they somehow make all of this human tragedy right and stick the landing? The short answer is, "Yes." Please

bear with your author as he explains how they will and why they have allowed The Tragedy of Being to so pain the human race. God's Strange Plan, the Torah Story, has a happy ending.

### **10.1 The mystery of Christ and his role in creating and then saving the human race**

The mystery of Christ is thought of in different ways, some more clear than others. Of course, it is a distinct possibility that no one human being completely understands, or has ever understood, exactly what the two Jehovahs are doing. One thing indeed is certain. If a reporter were writing a newspaper story or a magazine article, or like your author, an author was writing a book, the "who" in the story is Jesus Christ, at least from the human point of view. He is the liaison between God the Father and man. Of this, there is no doubt. The purpose of this section is to provide information regarding various aspects of the two Jehovahs, particularly Jesus Christ, that perhaps might have so far eluded much of humanity. Since writing about Jesus Christ, per se, is not the subject of this book, your author will point out various aspects of the two Jehovahs, or Jesus Christ, in largely summary form, with some

supporting scriptures. The Bible as a whole provides the rest of the support.

There are two Jehovahs, not a triune God (Psalm 110:1, John 1:1-3). Whenever the phrase "Holy Spirit" is used, it might be used in reference to God the Father, or it might be used in reference to Jesus Christ (God the son), or it might be used in reference to their divine essence and power more commonly known as the Holy Spirit (Acts 2:1-4, 38, Romans 8:9-11). It all depends on the Biblical context. Both God the Father and Jesus Christ give us of their Holy Spirit, their divine essence and power, to help those effectively called and chosen now, i.e., spiritual Israelites.

"But the hour is coming, and now is, when the true worshipers shall worship the Father in spirit and truth, for the Father seeks such to worship Him. God [the Father] is a spirit, and they who worship Him must worship in spirit and in truth." John 4:23-24, MKJV

"You have heard how I said to you, I go away and I am coming to you again. If you loved Me, you would rejoice because I said, I go to the Father, for My Father is greater than I." John 14:28, MKJV

"(But their thoughts were blinded; for until the present the same veil remains on the reading of the old covenant, not taken away.) But this veil has been done away in Christ. But until this day, when Moses is read, the veil is on their heart. But whenever it turns to the Lord [Jesus Christ], the veil shall be taken away. And **the Lord is that Spirit**; and where the Spirit of the Lord [Jesus Christ] is, there is liberty."

2 Corinthians 3:14-17, MKJV

"But you are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if the Spirit of God dwells in you. But if anyone has not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of His. And if Christ is in you, indeed the body is dead because of sin, but the Spirit is life because of righteousness. But if the Spirit of the One who raised up Jesus from the dead [God the Father] dwells in you, the One who raised up Christ from the dead shall also make your mortal bodies alive by His Spirit who dwells in you." Romans 8:9-11, MKJV

"But you shall receive power, the Holy Spirit coming upon you. And you shall be witnesses to Me both in Jerusalem and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and to the end of the earth."

Acts 1:8, MKJV

"And in the fulfilling of the day of Pentecost, they [the faithful followers of Jesus] were all with one accord in one place. And suddenly a sound came out of the heaven as borne along by the rushing of a mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. And tongues as of fire appeared to them, being distributed; and it sat upon each of them. And they were all filled of the Holy Spirit, and began to speak in other languages, as the Spirit gave them utterance."

Acts 2:1-4, MKJV

God the Father is a Holy Spirit. Jesus Christ is a Holy Spirit. And they both give their divine essence and power to help spiritual Israelites proceed forward through this life. If the Bible seems to be talking about a person, e.g., the Holy Spirit forbidding, for a time, the preaching of the gospel in Asia (Acts 16:6-7), or the Holy Spirit has made you overseers (Acts 20:28), it is almost certainly referring to Jesus Christ, but it could be God the Father depending on context. That the resurrected Jesus Christ is a Holy Spirit directing some events on earth is a part of the mystery of Christ.

As previously pointed out, a big part of the mystery of Jesus Christ is that he was the God

of the Old Testament and our Savior (2 Samuel 22:3; Isaiah 43:3; 45:15,21; 49:26; 60:16; 63:8; Jeremiah 14:8; Hosea 13:4, I Corinthians 10:4).

"be it known to you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom you crucified, whom God [the Father] raised from the dead, in this name does this man stand before you whole. This is the Stone which you builders have counted worthless, and He has become the Head of the Corner. And there is salvation in no other One; for there is no other name under Heaven given among men by which we must be saved."  
Acts 4:10-12, MKJV

"Yet I am the LORD your God from the land of Egypt, and you shall know no God but Me. For **there is no Savior besides Me.**"  
Hosea 13:4, MKJV

An important part of the mystery of Jesus Christ is that his sacrificial death and resurrection created a bridge from death to life for mankind. Of course, God the Father and Jesus Christ are still working a plan with a timeline and so very few men and women are effectively called and chosen now – either of

physical Israel or of the nations. But all can be included when God the Father calls them (more on the importance of this later in this chapter). Part of the mystery of Christ is that the non-Israelites are heirs together with the Israelites.

"For this reason I, Paul, the prisoner of Christ Jesus for the sake of you Gentiles [people who are not physical Israelites]-- Surely you have heard about the administration of God's grace that was given to me for you, that is, the mystery made known to me by revelation, as I have already written briefly. In reading this, then, you will be able to understand my insight into **the mystery of Christ**, which was not made known to men in other generations as it has now been revealed by the Spirit to God's holy apostles and prophets. This mystery is that through the gospel the Gentiles are heirs together with Israel, members together of one body, and sharers together in the promise in Christ Jesus. I became a servant of this gospel by the gift of God's grace given me through the working of his power. Although I am less than the least of all God's people, this grace was given me: to preach to the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ,"

Ephesians 3:1-8, NIV

Another part of the mystery of Jesus Christ is that God the Father created the universe through the Word, who became Jesus Christ.

"and to bring to light what is the fellowship of the mystery which from eternity has been hidden in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ;" Ephesians 3:9, MKJV

"Christ is the visible image of the invisible God. He existed before God made anything at all and is supreme over all creation. Christ is the one through whom God created everything in heaven and earth. He made the things we can see and the things we can't see--kings, kingdoms, rulers, and authorities. Everything has been created through him and for him. He existed before everything else began, and he holds all creation together."

Colossians 1:15-17, NLT

There is confusion over Christ being "the end of the law." This was clarified earlier in this book, but a brief recap for the reader's benefit is as follows: the purpose of the divine law instruction is for the hearers of the word of God to also obey it, cooperating with the two Jehovahs in order to reach the end (goal), (destination), i.e., to become like Jesus Christ.

"For Christ is the end [goal] of the law for righteousness for everyone who believes [and obeys]." Romans 10:4, MKJV

Those looking for the Messiah, particularly the Jews and those practicing the Jewish faith, mistakenly believed the Messiah would come in power to reestablish the twelve tribes of Israel and lead a golden age thereafter. Those so mistaken did not understand the Messiah would first come as a humble, serving man and suffer for our sins. This was evidently a mystery and a critical part of God's Strange Plan. Many of those so confused, who were alive to witness the crucifixion of Jesus, thought he was a sinner and deserved the death he got (Isaiah 53:3-4). Your author wrote a previous book explaining this, entitled: *Why Job Suffered: The Real Story*. It was thought that if someone was hung up on a pole they were experiencing a curse from God. The Jewish religion's rejection of Jesus Christ as Messiah might have been negatively influenced by the below passage of scripture, incorrectly assuming that because Jesus Christ was hung on a tree that it was God himself who had cursed him.

"And **if** a man have committed a sin worthy of death [which Jesus Christ did not], and he be to be put to death, and thou hang him on a tree: His body shall not remain all night upon the tree, but thou shalt in any wise bury him that day; (for he that is hanged is accursed of God;) that thy land be not defiled, which the LORD thy God giveth thee for an inheritance."

Deuteronomy 21:22-23, KJV

Further, the Jews evidently thought that the Messiah would come and live forever – not that he would first come as a human and die for the sins of mankind.

"The crowd answered Him, We have heard out of the law that Christ lives forever. How do you say, The Son of man must be lifted up? Who is this Son of man?" John 12:34, MKJV

"But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, which God has hidden, predetermining it before the world for our glory; which none of the rulers of this world knew (for if they had known, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory)." 1 Corinthians 2:7-8, MKJV

"Who has believed our message? To whom will the LORD reveal his saving power? My

servant grew up in the LORD's presence like a tender green shoot, sprouting from a root in dry and sterile ground. There was nothing beautiful or majestic about his appearance, nothing to attract us to him. He was despised and rejected--a man of sorrows, acquainted with bitterest grief. We turned our backs on him and looked the other way when he went by. He was despised, and we did not care.

Yet it was our weaknesses he carried; it was our sorrows that weighed him down. And we thought his troubles were a punishment from God for his own sins! **But he was wounded and crushed for our sins.** He was beaten that we might have peace. He was whipped, and we were healed! All of us have strayed away like sheep. We have left God's paths to follow our own. Yet the LORD laid on him the guilt and sins of us all. He was oppressed and treated harshly, yet he never said a word. He was led as a lamb to the slaughter. And as a sheep is silent before the shearers, he did not open his mouth. From prison and trial they led him away to his death. But who among the people realized that he was dying for their sins--that he was suffering their punishment? He had done no wrong, and he never deceived anyone. But he was buried like a criminal; he was put in a rich man's grave.

But it was the LORD's good plan to crush him and fill him with grief. Yet when his life is made an offering for sin, he will have a multitude of children, many heirs. He will enjoy a long life, and the LORD's plan will prosper in his hands. When he sees all that is accomplished by his anguish, he will be satisfied. And because of what he has experienced, my righteous servant will make it possible for many to be counted righteous, for he will bear all their sins. I will give him the honors of one who is mighty and great, because he exposed himself to death. He was counted among those who were sinners. He bore the sins of many and interceded for sinners." Isaiah 53:1-12, NLT

That Jesus Christ, the God of the Old Testament, would first humbly come, as a man to die, was obviously a mystery to the Jews. This played out the way the two Jehovahs intended and is an important centerpiece of God's Strange Plan. Of course, non-Israelites, the nations, were even farther removed from understanding what God the Father was doing through Jesus Christ and Israel.

"Now also many nations are gathered against you [Israel], who say, Let her be defiled,

and let our eyes look on Zion. But they do not know the plans of the LORD, nor do they understand His counsel. ... ”

Micah 4:11-12, MKJV

Moving on, the second Jehovah, the Word, came in the flesh to tabernacle with and among men. Once he came in the flesh, the Word was thereafter known as Jesus Christ. Notice in the quoted John 1 scriptures that there are two Jehovahs, referred to as God and the Word, the Word created all things, and came to the earth to be with men, who for the most part, did not know him.

“In the beginning was **the Word**, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was in the beginning with God. All things came into being through Him, and without Him not even one thing came into being that has come into being.” John 1:1-3, MKJV

“He was in the world, and the world came into being through Him, and the world did not know Him.” John 1:10, MKJV

“And the Word became flesh, and tabernacled among us. And we beheld His glory,

the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,  
full of grace and of truth." John 1:14, MKJV

Part of the mystery of Christ is that God the Father would use his Holy Spirit to impregnate Mary, Jesus' mother.

"And in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God into a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, **to a virgin** betrothed to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David. And the virgin's name was Mary. And the angel came in to her and said, Hail, one receiving grace, the Lord is with you. Blessed are you among women. And when she saw him, she was troubled at his saying, and considered what kind of greeting this might be. And the angel said to her, Do not fear, Mary, for you have found favor with God. And behold! You shall conceive in your womb and bear a son, and you shall call His name JESUS. He shall be great and shall be called the Son of the Highest. And the Lord God shall give Him the throne of His father David. And He shall reign over the house of David forever, and of His kingdom there shall be no end. Then Mary said to the angel, How shall this be, since I do not know [sexually know, i.e., she was a virgin] a man? And the angel answered and said to her, The Holy Spirit shall come on

you, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow you. Therefore also that Holy One which will be born of you shall be called Son of God [the Father]. And behold, your cousin Elizabeth also conceived a son in her old age. And this is the sixth month with her who was called barren. For with God nothing shall be impossible. And Mary said, Behold the servant of the Lord. Let it be to me according to your word. And the angel departed from her."

Luke 1:26-38, MKJV

"Now the birth of Jesus Christ was this way (for His mother Mary was betrothed to Joseph) before they came together, she was found to be with child by the Holy Spirit."

Matthew 1:18, MKJV

When Jesus Christ was on the earth, God the Father lived in him through the Father's Holy Spirit. This enabled Jesus Christ to live a sinless life, to become a perfect sin offering for mankind, and to be the first to be resurrected to eternal life. He was the accepted wave sheaf offering and the important proof of concept for what can and likely will eventually happen for virtually all of mankind. Further, as is well known, Jesus Christ is our perfect high priest.

"Christ is the head of the church, which is his body [Israel, his congregation of witnesses, previously explained to also include those of the nations grafted into spiritual Israel]. He is the first of all who will rise from the dead, so he is first in everything. [Christ is THE firstfruit; the Exhibit "A" proof of concept.] For God [the Father] in all his fullness was pleased to live in Christ, and by him God reconciled everything to himself [Jesus Christ was THE sin offering for mankind, Hebrews 7:27]. He made peace with everything in heaven and on earth by means of his blood on the cross. This includes you who were once so far away from God. You were his enemies, separated from him by your evil thoughts and actions, yet now he has brought you back as his friends. He has done this through his death on the cross in his own human body. As a result, he has brought you into the very presence of God, and you are holy and blameless as you stand before him without a single fault." Colossians 1:18-22, NLT

"For we do not have a **high priest** who cannot be touched with the feelings of our infirmities, but was in all points tempted just as we are, yet without sin. Therefore let us come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may

obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.” Hebrews 4:15-16, MKJV

“Therefore **He is able also to save to the uttermost** those who come unto God by Him, since He ever lives to make intercession for them. For such a **high priest** became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners and made higher than the heavens, who does not need, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice daily, first for his own sins and then for the people’s sins. For He did this once for all, when He offered up Himself.” Hebrews 7:25-27, MKJV

“giving thanks to the Father, who has made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light. For He has delivered us from the power of darkness and has translated us into the kingdom of His dear Son; in whom we have redemption through His blood, the remission of sins. who is the image of the invisible God, the First-born of all creation.”

Colossians 1:12-15, MKJV

Part of the mystery of Christ is that, post-repentance, Jesus Christ gives us of his Holy Spirit and, in essence, lives in us, helping us to

change. This provides us with the hope of future glory at the resurrection.

"of which I became a minister, according to the administration of God given to me for you, to fulfill the word of God; **the mystery** which has been hidden from ages and from generations, but now has been revealed to His saints [the effectively called and chosen now]. For to them God would make known what are the riches of the glory of this mystery among the nations, which is Christ in you, the hope of glory," Colossians 1:25-27, MKJV.

A part of the mystery of Christ is that only he can declare whom God the Father is because only he has seen the Father and he it is who really knows him.

"No one has seen God at any time; the Only-begotten Son, who is in the bosom of the Father, He has declared Him." John 1:18, MKJV

God the Father and Jesus Christ defeated principalities and powers, the rulers of this world, and made a show of them. As pointed out in chapter nine of this book, Jesus Christ is King of kings and Lord of lords. At his second coming he will assert his authority over the

earth. Right now, he is at the right hand of God the Father.

“Having stripped [defeated] rulers and authorities, He made a show of them publicly, triumphing over them in it.”

Colossians 2:15, MKJV

“In this way, God disarmed the evil rulers and authorities. He shamed them publicly by his victory over them on the cross of Christ.”

Colossians 2:15, NLT

“But being full of the Holy Spirit, looking up intently into Heaven, he [Stephen the martyr] saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing at the right hand of God. And he said, Behold, I see Heaven opened and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God.” Acts 7:55-56, MKJV

With the defeat of this world, Jesus Christ is soon (from God’s point of view) going to return to the earth in what is commonly known as the second coming. This was explained in chapter nine so now more will be written about this here. Concurrent with the second coming will be a resurrection to eternal life for those who have been effectively called and chosen now. This is the subject of section 10.4, below, so

your author will explain it in detail in that section.

There are a number of scriptures using some form of the phrase, "mystery of Christ," or "mystery of the gospel," or "the mystery of God" and these should be read in light of the scriptures used above, particularly in light of Colossians 1:25-27 quoted above, and 1 Timothy 3:16 quoted below. Some examples are as follows:

"And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God [Jehovah number two, the Word] was manifest in the flesh [as Jesus Christ], justified in the Spirit, seen by angels, preached among nations, believed on in the world, and received up into glory."

1 Timothy 3:16, MKJV

"praying together about us also, that God may open to us a door of the Word, to speak the mystery of Christ, for which I [the Apostle Paul] also have been bound," Colossians 4:3, MKJV

"And pray for me, that utterance may be given to me, that I may open my mouth boldly to make known the mystery of the gospel," Ephesians 6:19, MKJV

"Now to Him who is able to establish you according to my gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ according to the revelation of the mystery, having been unvoiced during eternal times;" Romans 16:25, MKJV

"God is able to make you strong, just as the Good News says. It is the message about Jesus Christ and his plan for you Gentiles [also including you non-Israelites], a plan kept secret from the beginning of time." Romans 16:25, NLT

"that their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and to all riches of the full assurance of the understanding, to the full knowledge of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ [two Jehovahs];"  
Colossians 2:2, MKJV

The mystery of Christ, of God, of the gospel is revealed by God the Father and Jesus Christ to some comparatively few at this time.

"Then Jesus prayed this prayer: "O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, thank you for hiding the truth from those who think themselves so wise and clever, and for revealing it to the childlike. Yes, Father, it pleased you to do it this

way! "My Father has given me authority over everything. No one really knows the Son except the Father, and no one really knows the Father except the Son and those to whom the Son chooses to reveal him." " Matthew 11:25-27, NLT

"And He said, To you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God. But to others I speak in parables, so that seeing they might not see and hearing they might not understand."

Luke 8:10, MKJV

God's Strange Plan includes what is known as the mystery of Christ. As previously mentioned, there is a war being waged by Satan and his spiritual seedline against the two Jehovahs and Israel. Wartime communication requires some mysteries so that the plan of God can be carried out in such a way that it is not capable of being disrupted by the enemy.

As a recap, looking backward, Jesus Christ, under the direction of God the Father, created the entire universe, with the earth as a special habitation (Isaiah 45:18). Christ created man in the two Jehovahs' image and likeness. Satan deceived and manipulated Adam and Eve into sinning, necessitating the need for a perfect sin offering to redeem all of mankind. Jehovah

number two, the Word, came to this earth as a human being in order to live a sinless life, suffer, and then die for our sins. God the Father miraculously impregnated a virgin, Mary, who gave birth to the Son of God. God the Father filled Jesus with his Holy Spirit. Christ succeeded in living a sinless life, dying via crucifixion, and God the Father resurrected him back to his former glory after three days and three nights of actually being dead. Jesus is again at the Father's right hand side functioning as our High Priest and eternal Savior. Further, the two Jehovahs have opened up The Way to salvation to non-Israelites, too. Eventually, all of mankind will be given a chance to repent of their sins, accept Jesus Christ as Savior, and to receive the Holy Spirit. Salvation is open to any who are willing to become, in essence, spiritual Israelites. No wonder a mysterious plan like this confuses people. And this is not the whole story, but it suffices for this section to focus on the Who of God's Strange Plan, the great Jesus Christ and his even greater Father.

Eventually, part of the mystery of Christ is to undo the works of Satan the devil and to even permanently defeat death itself.

"And it was only right that God--who made everything and for whom everything was made--should bring his many children into glory. Through the suffering of Jesus, God made him a perfect leader, one fit to bring them into their salvation. So now Jesus and the ones he makes holy have the same Father. That is why Jesus is not ashamed to call them his brothers and sisters. For he said to God, "I will declare the wonder of your name to my brothers and sisters. I will praise you among all your people." He also said, "I will put my trust in him." And in the same context he said, "Here I am--together with the children God has given me."

Because God's children are human beings--made of flesh and blood--Jesus also became flesh and blood by being born in human form. For only as a human being could he die, and only by dying could he break the power of the Devil, who had the power of death. Only in this way could he deliver those who have lived all their lives as slaves to the fear of dying. We all know that Jesus came to help the descendants of Abraham, not to help the angels. Therefore, it was necessary for Jesus to be in every respect like us, his brothers and sisters, so that he could be our merciful and faithful High Priest before God. He then could offer a sacrifice that would

take away the sins of the people. Since he himself has gone through suffering and temptation, he is able to help us when we are being tempted.” Hebrews 2:10-18, NLT

The Modern King James Version has verses 14-15 of the above, as follows:

“Since then the children have partaken of flesh and blood, He [Jesus Christ] also Himself likewise partook of the same; that through death He might destroy him who had the power of death (that is, the Devil), and deliver those who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage.” Hebrews 2:14-15, MKJV

“He who practices sin is of the Devil, for the Devil sins from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was revealed, that He might undo the works of the Devil.” 1 John 3:8, MKJV

The last enemy to be defeated is death:

“for it is right for Him [Jesus Christ] to reign until He has put all the enemies under His feet. **The last enemy made to cease is death.**”  
1 Corinthians 15:25-26, MKJV

## **10.2 The miraculous healing of those who were blind from birth and crippled from birth**

Throughout the four books known as the Gospels, there are numerous examples of Jesus Christ miraculously healing people through the power of God the Father's Holy Spirit. Later on, after the resurrected Jesus had ascended to the Father, the book of Acts also continues on with numerous examples of healings. Two of the more famous examples of those healings are the focus of this short section. The first of these and perhaps the most famous example is found in John 9.

"And as Jesus passed by, he saw a man which was blind from his birth. And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind? Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him. I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work. As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world. When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he anointed the eyes of the blind man with the

clay, And said unto him, Go, wash in the pool of Siloam, (which is by interpretation, Sent.) He went his way therefore, and washed, and came seeing.

The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seen him that he was blind, said, Is not this he that sat and begged? Some said, This is he: others said, He is like him: but he said, I am he. Therefore said they unto him, How were thine eyes opened? He answered and said, A man that is called Jesus made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash: and I went and washed, and I received sight."

John 9:1-11, KJV

Your author has always wondered why the Bible made it a special point of saying, "blind from his birth." What difference does it make how long the guy was blind for? What if he was blind since three years ago when lightning hit him? Why is being blind from birth so important that the Bible calls it out? We are going to hold this as an open question, which I will answer in the next section of this book.

John 5:17 says, "My Father worketh hitherto, and I work." A large part of Christ's work is to heal and to do so comprehensively at all levels.

The book of Acts is also full of examples of healings done in the name of and by the power of the resurrected Jesus Christ. Probably the most famous example is found in Acts 3. It is the second example of miraculous healing that is the subject of this section.

"Now Peter and John went up together into the temple at the hour of prayer, being the ninth hour. And a certain man lame from his mother's womb was carried, whom they laid daily at the gate of the temple which is called Beautiful, to ask alms of them that entered into the temple; Who seeing Peter and John about to go into the temple asked an alms. And Peter, fastening his eyes upon him with John, said, Look on us. And he gave heed unto them, expecting to receive something of them. Then Peter said, Silver and gold have I none; but such as I have give I thee: In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth rise up and walk. And he took him by the right hand, and lifted him up: and immediately his feet and ankle bones received strength. And he leaping up stood, and walked, and entered with them into the temple,

walking, and leaping, and praising God. And all the people saw him walking and praising God: And they knew that it was he which sat for alms at the Beautiful gate of the temple: and they were filled with wonder and amazement at that which had happened unto him."

Acts 3:1-10, KJV

Your author has always wondered why it said, "lame from his mother's womb," i.e., lame from birth. What difference does it make how long the guy was lame for? What if he was lame from an ox cart accident last year? Why would the Bible specifically say, in essence, lame from birth? We are going to hold this as an open question, which I will answer in the next section of this book.

### **10.3 The sin and the trespass offering and our human predicament**

In a previous book entitled, *Go To The Healer*, your author had a section with the same basic title as this section 10.3 – "The Sin And Trespass Offering And Our Human Predicament." Your author will quote from this book and section below. It was originally written in first person and is quoted as it was originally written, with only a few minor edits.

"In Leviticus, chapters 1-7, it talks about five different types of offerings:

Three of the five offerings are offerings that represent whole-hearted giving after you have been made clean. Those three offerings are commonly known as the burnt offering, the meal (grain) offering, and the peace offering.

The other two offerings are to symbolize forgiveness of sin (making you clean again) because you are a sinner and have sinned. Those two offerings are the sin offering and the trespass offering. The sin offering is detailed in Leviticus 4 and the trespass offering is detailed in Leviticus 5.

And I always wondered, "Sin offering. Trespass offering. What's the difference?" And I never really have heard, or read, a good explanation. It was always some man's opinion, which may, or may not, be correct.

Now it is pretty clear to me that the trespass offering is for a specific sin you have committed. But it was never clear to me why the sin offering was necessary if you had a trespass offering, too.

Sin ... Trespass ... What's the difference? I realize the sin offering talks about sinning in ignorance, but sinning in ignorance is still a sin. Why would the trespass offering not also cover a sin, committed in ignorance?

The answer must be in something that the Sin Offering also applies to, but is not so easily ascertained. Other places in the Bible gave me some clues and additional things to think about. For example, in Psalm 51:5 the Bible records David saying something quite interesting:

"Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me." Psalms 51:5, KJV

"For I was born a sinner - yes, from the moment my mother conceived me."  
Psalms 51:5, NLT

David was not born out of wedlock. He was the youngest of eight sons. What does he mean, "in sin did my mother conceive me?" Something else besides being born out of wedlock is being described here. And Romans 7 provides some additional information.

"The law is good, then. The trouble is not with the law but with me, because I am sold into slavery, with sin as my master. I don't understand myself at all, for I really want to do what is right, but I don't do it. Instead, I do the very thing I hate. I know perfectly well that what I am doing is wrong, and my bad conscience shows that I agree that the law is good. But I can't help myself, because it is sin inside me that makes me do these evil things. I know I am rotten through and through so far as my old **sinful nature** is concerned. No matter which way I turn, I can't make myself do right. I want to, but I can't. When I want to do good, I don't. And when I try not to do wrong, I do it anyway. But if I am doing what I don't want to do, I am not really the one doing it; the sin within me is doing it. It seems to be a fact of life that when I want to do what is right, I inevitably do what is wrong. I love God's law with all my heart. But there is another law at work within me that is at war with my mind. This law wins the fight and makes me a slave to the sin that is still within me."

Romans 7:14-23, NLT

I think a key to understanding why there is so much ado about healing in the Bible is to

understand the difference between "Sin" and "Sins."

When it comes to the difference between Sin and Sins, one possible explanation is that Sin is singular and that Sins are plural. And, of course, that much is true.

But there is also another difference between Sin and Sins besides just singular and plural. And I believe the other difference is the key to understanding why it is so imperative that every human being goes to the Healer.

**Sin is a spiritual disease that has infected all of mankind.** Sins are the results of that disease playing out in our lives, i.e., the manifestation of the spiritual disease in repeat trespasses.

All of us sin because we are sinners. We sin because we have been infected with **the spiritual disease of sin** (Satan's evil nature) and unless we get healed of the disease of sin, we will ultimately die.

"For from within, **out of a person's heart**, come evil thoughts, sexual immorality, theft, murder, adultery, greed, wickedness, deceit,

eagerness for lustful pleasure, envy, slander, pride, and foolishness. All these vile things come from within; they are what defile you and make you unacceptable to God.”” Mark 7:21-23, NLT

“The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked [sick, infected with Satan’s evil nature]; who can know it?”

Jeremiah 17:9, MKJV

Please understand I am not making excuses for anyone, including myself, when I say we have all been infected with sin as a disease. And, ergo, now we somehow have a reason to sin without working to overcome it. You should not have read “sin as a disease” as a convenient excuse. I am just being honest and telling you the truth, as I believe the Bible outlines it.

The Sin Offering is performed to cover sin as a disease (sins committed in ignorance) and the Trespass Offering is performed to cover the results of specific sins, trespasses, which have resulted from that disease. You can take the above explanation, or leave it, but I am almost certain it is correct.

Now let’s go back to the unanswered question as to why God deemed it so important,

in John 9, that it was recorded that Jesus Christ healed a man who was blind from birth. It was so recorded because sin as a disease has made every one of us spiritually blind from birth. And God wanted us to know that Jesus Christ can heal the condition of being blind from birth. All of us have stumbled and bumbled, since birth, because we have been spiritually blind.

Further, let's go back to our other unanswered question as to why God deemed it so important, in Acts 3, to show that, through the power of the resurrected Jesus Christ, a man who was lame from birth was healed. Why? It is because sin, as a disease, has crippled each and every one of us since birth. And God wanted us to know that Jesus Christ can heal the condition of being lame, or crippled, since birth.

Jesus Christ → can heal → being spiritually blind from birth, as all of us have been

Jesus Christ → can heal → being spiritually crippled from birth, as all of us have been

Jesus Christ → can heal → period

Sin, as a disease, has made a wreck out of our lives and a wreck out of the earth. Fortunately, Romans 7, quoted above, does not end on a negative note.

"Oh, what a miserable person I am! Who will free me from this life that is dominated by sin? Thank God! The answer is in Jesus Christ our Lord [The Healer]. So you see how it is: In my mind I really want to obey God's law, but because of my sinful nature I am a slave to sin."

Romans 7:24-25, NLT

In the last portion of this section I want to write about another healing example that used to puzzle me. And that healing example is found in Mark 2:1-12:

"And again he entered into Capernaum after some days; and it was noised that he was in the house. And straightway many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no room to receive them, no, not so much as about the door: and he preached the word unto them. And they come unto him, bringing one sick of the palsy [paralysis and involuntary shaking], which was borne of four. And when they could not come nigh unto him for the press, they uncovered the roof where he was: and when

they had broken it up, they let down the bed wherein the sick of the palsy lay. When Jesus saw their faith, he said unto the sick of the palsy, Son, thy sins be forgiven thee. But there were certain of the scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts, Why doth this man thus speak blasphemies? who can forgive sins but God only? And immediately when Jesus perceived in his spirit that they so reasoned within themselves, he said unto them, Why reason ye these things in your hearts? Whether is it easier to say to the sick of the palsy, Thy sins be forgiven thee; or to say, Arise, and take up thy bed, and walk? But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (he saith to the sick of the palsy,) I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy bed, and go thy way into thine house. And immediately he arose, took up the bed, and went forth before them all; insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, We never saw it on this fashion." Mark 2:1-12, KJV

In verse 5, above, it says: "When Jesus saw their faith, he said unto the sick of the palsy, Son, thy sins be forgiven thee." This, of course, made the scribes and likely the Pharisees angry.

In answer to Christ's question, above, I have always thought it would have been easier to just say, "Get up and walk." By telling the man his sins were forgiven Christ was basically picking a fight with the Pharisees. And so I was long puzzled by what was really happening.

This is what I now think was really happening. If you need physical healing Christ can do that as represented by "get up and walk." If you need spiritual healing (and all of us do) Christ can do that, as well, represented by "your sins are forgiven you." And the really interesting thing is that, evidently, Jesus Christ can do both at the same time, which is what I think Mark's account depicted.

Psalm 103:3-4 recites something quite similar. It reads:

"Who forgiveth all thine iniquities; who healeth all thy diseases; Who redeemeth thy life from destruction; who crowneth thee with lovingkindness and tender mercies;"  
Psalms 103:3-4, KJV

"He forgives all my sins and heals all my diseases. He ransoms me from death and

surrounds me with love and tender mercies.”  
Psalms 103:3-4, NLT

AIDS is a horrifying disease that is one of the scourges of mankind. And because it is such a horrible disease, if we heard that someone we knew and loved had just found out they were HIV positive, we would be horrified. We would also probably thank God, under our breath, that we were not the ones hearing such horrible news.

But guess what? **All human beings are SIN POSITIVE.** And all of us are as good as dead unless we get the help we need. And that is why it is so important to go to the Healer.”

All human beings → are → SIN POSITIVE!

The fact that each of us is sin positive does not excuse our sinning because everyone reading this is of age and has made bad choices based on bad values and then experienced bad consequences. When we sin, using our free will, and all of us have done so and still do, we are guilty. This is why the Bible says that: 1) all have sinned and fallen short of the glory of the Lord (Romans 3:23) and 2) the wages of sin is

death, but 3) the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord (Romans 6:23).

"For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord." Romans 6:23, MKJV

Being sin positive is a lot to overcome and a challenge to heal, but the two Jehovahs have their strange plan that will succeed in the end, so please keep reading. Being sin positive explains a lot about how The Tragedy of Being came about. Being sin positive is work to deal with, even for the two Jehovahs. Fortunately, the two Jehovahs' work is man: "for we are his workmanship ..." (Ephesians 2:10). Though mankind has failed itself, the two Jehovahs will not fail mankind. God the Father and Jesus Christ have a plan to heal the sin positive human race ... all those who have been blind from birth and crippled from birth. They are carrying out that plan.

#### **10.4 The first resurrection**

The return of Jesus Christ will involve an angelic host returning with him and it will commence the reign of Jesus Christ on this earth as King of kings and Lord of lords. One of

the first orders of business will be the destruction of the Revelation 13 beast and the false prophet - the two Satanic Antichrist leaders of end-time humanity's rebellion against the two Jehovahs. It will also involve the destruction of the nations' armies. All this is covered in Revelation 19:11-21, quoted earlier in this book. This is God the Father's **Great Reset**; the nations will be surprised and defeated and this is also a part of the mystery of God. When Jesus Christ begins ruling from Jerusalem, it will effectively also commence the Millennium, previously explained in chapter nine of this book.

"But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he will begin to sound, the mystery of God should be finished, as He has declared to His servants the prophets." Revelation 10:7

Earlier in this book, section 7.7, your author went through a lengthy explanation concerning divine individualism. It is a process that also yields a result. Everything your author wrote in that section is incorporated herein by reference. The return of Jesus Christ includes an event that is commonly known as "the first resurrection." Those who have participated with the two Jehovahs in their divine individualism process

and died in the faith, and similarly those alive at the time of the return of Jesus Christ will be changed into spirit beings at this first resurrection. They will now be incorruptible, eternal beings with spirit bodies. From earlier in this book:

"So also the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption; it is sown in dishonor, it is raised in glory; it is sown in weakness, it is raised in power; it is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body." 1 Corinthians 15:42-44, MKJV

Mortal → Immortal  
Human body → Spirit body  
Dishonor → Honor  
Weak → Powerful  
Corrupt → Incorruptible

Divine individualism, properly understood, allows for each of us to be our unique selves while cooperating with the two Jehovahs to become the best possible version of ourselves. By the grace of God, the two Jehovahs will complete the process for each of us at the resurrection by transforming us into unique,

eternal, incorruptible, spirit members of God's special family.

Divine individualism → 1) a process and also  
2) a result

Divine individualism → an abundant eternal life

A future divine individual will have:

an abundant eternal life +  
their uniqueness as an individual +  
their personality +  
their sense of humor +  
their personal interests

Also earlier in this book your author described the Categories One, Two, and Three of those "called and chosen" and also the Categories One, Two, and Three of the "firstfruits." It is important to know who will be in the first resurrection – those who have the firstfruit of the Holy Spirit. Obviously, if there is a first resurrection, the Bible infers there will be more than one resurrection. This will be clarified in the balance of this book, particularly with emphasis in sections 10.5 and 10.6, which will cover the third and second resurrections, respectively. To refresh the reader's memory of

this important concept (who will be in the first resurrection), your author will review a few pages of this discussion from his earlier section 8.4 concerning the firstfruits:

“But now Christ has risen from the dead, and has become the firstfruit of those who slept.”  
1 Corinthians 15:20, MKJV

Category One of the firstfruits, Jesus Christ, is easily and widely understood.

Category Two of the firstfruits is analogous to Category One of the called and chosen. It, as a percentage of mankind, is relatively small.

“Do not fear, little flock, for it is your Father’s good pleasure to give you the kingdom.” Luke 12:32, MKJV

It is composed of the few human beings who have faithfully followed Jesus Christ, and by implication, God the Father during their lives.

“These are those who were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These are those who follow the Lamb wherever He goes. These were redeemed from among men, as a firstfruit to God and to the Lamb.” Revelation 14:4, MKJV

They have sometimes suffered for their following the two Jehovahs, but they nevertheless maintained the testimony of Jesus Christ, practiced the keeping of the commandments of God, and, if necessary, they were willing to give up their lives for their love of the two Jehovahs and the way of life.

"For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with **the coming glory** to be revealed in us."

Romans 8:18, MKJV

"And our hope of you is certain, knowing that as you are partakers of the sufferings, so also of the consolation [the first resurrection]."

2 Corinthians 1:7, MKJV

"that I may know Him [Jesus Christ] and **the power of His resurrection** and **the fellowship of His sufferings** ...

Philippians 3:10, MKJV

"And I heard a great voice saying in Heaven, Now has come the salvation and power and the kingdom of our God, and the authority of His Christ. For the accuser of our brothers is cast down, who accused them before our God day

and night. And they overcame him because of the blood of the Lamb, and because of the word of their testimony. And they did not love their soul [physical life] to the death."

Revelation 12:10-11, MKJV

"And the dragon was enraged over the woman, and went to make war with the rest of her seed, who keep the commandments of God and have the testimony of Jesus Christ."

Revelation 12:17, MKJV

"Here is the patience of the saints. Here are the ones who keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus." Revelation 14:12, MKJV

These faithful men and women have clearly been effectively called and chosen now and have proved it by how they have heard God, believed God, obeyed God, loved God, and loved their fellow man – who many times, did not love them back. These effectively called and chosen (Category One) now also compose a category and type of firstfruits (Category Two) for the two Jehovahs. Some of these men and women are dead waiting the first resurrection, some are alive today, and there will likely be more prior to the first resurrection (1 Corinthians 15). Similar to the called and chosen, this is the category of

firstfruits that is usually and normally thought of by most religious people. Again, the total number of people comprising this category is a relatively small percentage of mankind and it is composed of some Israelites and also some non-Israelites.

"For the earnest expectation of the creation waits for the manifestation of the sons of God. For the creation was not willingly subjected to vanity, but because of Him who subjected it on hope that the creation itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. And we know that the whole creation groans and travails in pain together until now. And not only so, but ourselves also, **who have the firstfruit of the Spirit**, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, awaiting adoption, the redemption of our body." Romans 8:19-23, MKJV

"Of His own will He brought us forth with the Word of truth, **for us to be a certain firstfruit of His creatures.**" James 1:18, MKJV

"These are those who were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These are those who follow the Lamb wherever He goes. These

were redeemed from among men, **as a firstfruit to God and to the Lamb.**"

Revelation 14:4, MKJV

The Category Two firstfruits are further depicted symbolically in that they represent those, other than Jesus Christ, who have received the Holy Spirit in this age (obviously including those who have died in the faith in the past). The Leviticus 23 holy day of the Feast of Weeks at one time depicted the future (now past) original day of Pentecost (Acts 2), when the Holy Spirit was received by the apostles of Jesus Christ and those others present to whom God wished to give it to. The firstfruits mentioned in the scripture below refer to your author's Category Two of the firstfruits. The fact that the bread was baked with yeast was unusual for offerings to God and shows that the two Jehovahs chose a symbol of expanding yeast because they want to ultimately give their Holy Spirit to as many other human beings who will cooperate with them in their divine individualism process.

"And you shall count to you from the next day after the sabbath, from the day that you brought the sheaf of the wave offering; seven sabbaths shall be complete. To the next day

after the seventh sabbath you shall number fifty days. And you shall offer a new food offering to the LORD. You shall bring out of your homes two wave loaves of two-tenth parts. They shall be of fine flour. They shall be baked with yeast, **firstfruits to the LORD.**"

Leviticus 23:15-17, MKJV

Jesus Christ = **THE** Firstfruit = Category One  
Firstfruits = God's Exhibit "A" → to the human race

Category Two Firstfruits = Category One Called and Chosen = those who died in the faith + those alive and still faithful at the time of Jesus Christ's return = God's Exhibit "B" → to the human race

The Category Two Firstfruits → will be in the first resurrection

Technically speaking → Jesus Christ's resurrection back to life by God the Father → was THE first resurrection

However, Revelation 20:4-6 quoted below, terms what happens as described in 1 Thessalonians 4 and 1 Corinthians 15 as → the first resurrection → ergo → your author will use

"first resurrection" per how the two Jehovahs in their Bible specified the counting

"Brothers, we do not want you to be ignorant about those [Category Two Firstfruits] who fall asleep [are dead waiting the first resurrection], or to grieve like the rest of men, who have no hope. We believe that Jesus died and rose again and so we believe that God will bring with Jesus those who have fallen asleep in him. According to the Lord's own word, we tell you that we who are still alive, who are left till the coming of the Lord, will certainly not precede those who have fallen asleep. For the Lord himself will come down from heaven, with a loud command, with the voice of the archangel and with the trumpet call of God, and the dead in Christ will rise first. After that, we who are still alive and are left will be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And so we will be with the Lord for ever. Therefore encourage each other with these words."

1 Thessalonians 4:13-18, NIV

"But the fact is that Christ has been raised from the dead. He has become the first of a great harvest of those who will be raised to life again. So you see, just as death came into the world through a man, Adam, now the

resurrection from the dead has begun through another man, Christ. Everyone dies because all of us are related to Adam, the first man. But all who are related to Christ, the other man, will be given new life. But there is an order to this resurrection: Christ was raised first; then when Christ comes back, all his people will be raised."

1 Corinthians 15:20-23, NLT

"But someone may ask, "How will the dead be raised? What kind of bodies will they have?" What a foolish question! When you put a seed into the ground, it doesn't grow into a plant unless it dies first. And what you put in the ground is not the plant that will grow, but only a dry little seed of wheat or whatever it is you are planting. Then God gives it a new body--just the kind he wants it to have. A different kind of plant grows from each kind of seed. And just as there are different kinds of seeds and plants, so also there are different kinds of flesh--whether of humans, animals, birds, or fish. There are bodies in the heavens, and there are bodies on earth. The glory of the heavenly bodies is different from the beauty of the earthly bodies. The sun has one kind of glory, while the moon and stars each have another kind. And even the stars differ from each other in their beauty and brightness. It is the same way for the

resurrection of the dead. Our earthly bodies, which die and decay, will be different when they are resurrected, for they will never die. Our bodies now disappoint us, but when they are raised, they will be full of glory. They are weak now, but when they are raised, they will be full of power. They are natural human bodies now, but when they are raised, they will be spiritual bodies. For just as there are natural bodies, so also there are spiritual bodies. The Scriptures tell us, "The first man, Adam, became a living person." But the last Adam--that is, Christ--is a life-giving Spirit. What came first was the natural body, then the spiritual body comes later. Adam, the first man, was made from the dust of the earth, while Christ, the second man, came from heaven. Every human being has an earthly body just like Adam's, but our heavenly bodies will be just like Christ's. Just as we are now like Adam, the man of the earth, so we will someday be like Christ, the man from heaven. What I am saying, dear brothers and sisters, is that flesh and blood cannot inherit the Kingdom of God. These perishable bodies of ours are not able to live forever." 1 Corinthians 15:35-50, NLT

"But let me tell you a wonderful secret God has revealed to us. Not all of us will die, but we

will all be transformed [if you happen to be living at the time Jesus Christ returns]. It will happen in a moment, in the blinking of an eye, when the last trumpet is blown. For when the trumpet sounds, the Christians who have died will be raised with transformed bodies. And then we who are living will be transformed so that we will never die. For our perishable earthly bodies must be transformed into heavenly bodies that will never die. When this happens--when our perishable earthly bodies have been transformed into heavenly bodies that will never die--then at last the Scriptures will come true: "Death is swallowed up in victory. O death, where is your victory? O death, where is your sting?" For sin is the sting that results in death, and the law gives sin its power. How we thank God, who gives us victory over sin and death through Jesus Christ our Lord!" 1 Corinthians 15:51-57, NLT

These Category Two firstfruits will now evidently assist Jesus Christ with his reign over the earth. Further, as part of God's Great Reset, the return of Jesus Christ, Satan and the bad angels are going to be imprisoned for 1,000 years.

"And I saw an angel come down from Heaven, having the key of the abyss and a great

chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand years. And he cast him into the abyss and shut him up and set a seal on him, that he should deceive the nations no more until the thousand years should be fulfilled. And after that he must be loosed a little time. And I saw thrones, and they sat on them, and judgment was given to them. And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for the witness of Jesus and for the Word of God, and who had not worshiped the beast nor his image, nor had received his mark on their foreheads, nor in their hands. And they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years. But the rest of the dead did not live again until the thousand years were finished. **This is the first resurrection** [at the beginning of the one thousand year time period]. Blessed and holy is he who has part in the first resurrection. The second death [eternal death, the really bad death] has no authority over these, but they will be priests of God and of Christ, and will reign with Him a thousand years." Revelation 20:1-6, MKJV

"even from Jesus Christ the faithful Witness, the First-born from the dead and the Ruler of the kings of the earth. To Him who loved us and

washed us from our sins in His own blood, and **made us kings and priests to God and His Father**, to Him be glory and dominion forever and ever. Amen. Behold, He comes with the clouds, and every eye will see Him, and those who pierced Him will see Him, and all the kindreds of the earth will wail because of Him. Even so, Amen." Revelation 1:5-7, MKJV

"And they sang a new song, saying, You are worthy to take the book and to open its seals, for You were slain and have redeemed us to God by Your blood out of every kindred and tongue and people and nation. And You made us kings and priests to our God, and we will reign over the earth." Revelation 5:9-10, MKJV

The return of Jesus Christ will also include the Marriage of the Lamb (Revelation 19:7-9). This was already discussed earlier in section 8.5. Jesus Christ will marry Israel in a ceremony where Israel will initially be represented by those in the first resurrection (spiritual Israel, composed of some physical Israelites and some of the nations who were grafted into Israel). Later on, other members of Israel will be added to that ongoing marriage between Jesus Christ and Israel, as they are deemed ready by God the Father and Jesus Christ.

"For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy. For I have espoused you [speaking of Category Two firstfruits here] to one Man, to present you as a pure virgin to Christ."  
2 Corinthians 11:2, MKJV

The first resurrection will obviously include healing – in fact, a perfect healing of every aspect of ourselves. Each person who is part of the first resurrection will be healed, just of different things. Your author will finish this section with a quote from his *Go To The Healer* book:

"Sometimes we are too proud to admit we need help and then we are not humble enough to go and get that help. James 4:5-6 has an admonishing scripture to remind us.

"Do ye think that the scripture saith in vain, The spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth to envy? But he giveth more grace. Wherefore he saith, God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble." James 4:5-6, KJV

You have to come to the place where you know you are sin positive and to also be humble enough to actually go to the Healer! That is the

E = MC<sup>2</sup> of this [*Go To The Healer*] book.  
Fortunately, God, the Healer (Jehovah Rapha,  
the Physician who heals, Exodus 15:26), wants  
to heal us. God does not want to condemn us.  
He wants to save us. He wants to heal us.

"For God sent not his Son into the world to  
condemn the world; but that the world through  
him might be saved." John 3:17, KJV

"... Our faults defeat us, but you forgive  
them." Psa. 65:3, GNB

The ultimate spiritual healing and the defeat  
of death itself are depicted throughout the 15<sup>th</sup>  
Chapter of I Corinthians. ...

God gives the victory through the Healer,  
Jesus Christ. And as a further encouragement  
the scripture below reveals something rather  
amazing! For those with God's Holy Spirit now,  
that Holy Spirit is the same power working  
inside us to commence the healing process now,  
that God the Father used to resurrect Jesus  
Christ himself from death.

"and how very great is his power at work in  
us who believe. This power working in us is the  
same as the mighty strength which he used

when he raised Christ from death and seated him at his right hand in the heavenly world.” Ephesians 1:19-20, GNB”

Ephesians 1:19-20 depicts the holding out of hope toward those effectively called and chosen now, the Category Two firstfruits, because they know that the Category One firstfruit, Jesus Christ, has been raised from the dead and is the proof of concept, call it Exhibit “A.” The good news is that these future Exhibit “B’s” will be able to encourage the rest of the human race who will be called and chosen later. All of this is part of God’s Strange Plan.

### **10.5 The third resurrection**

If it could be said, and it can be, that the first resurrection is one bookend, then the third resurrection is the other bookend, concerning the two extremes of God’s Strange Plan. Those Exhibit “B” firstfruits (the Category Two firstfruits, the Category One effectively called and chosen now), are those who will be in the first resurrection. They are blessed with a leadership position in God’s eternal kingdom (after many times suffering in this life). The privileges they will experience from being in the first resurrection will be complimented with

serious responsibilities to be performed under Jesus Christ's eternal reign. It is a privilege and a great reward to be so regarded by the two Jehovahs as to be in the first resurrection.

On the entirely other side of the eternal life / eternal death spectrum, there are evidently some men (and women) who hate the two Jehovahs, will never acknowledge their right to own the universe, and they will not serve the two Jehovahs. **They serve their "god,"**

**Satan.** This is to say, there are some men who will not acknowledge the doctrine of original appropriation, giving the two Jehovahs the lawful and just right to own and operate the universe, including, of course, this earth. These incorrigible men will evidently not understand, nor regard if they do understand, the law of comparative advantage and the implications thereof. This means they will not understand nor care that there could be a place for them at God's dinner table of eternal life if they will only repent and change and acknowledge the two Jehovahs (obviously, this is up to Jesus Christ's divine judgment). After living miserable lives, based on Satan their god's values of force and fraud, these incorrigible men and women would rather be dead for all eternity than change Gods, change value systems, learn to obtain and

use the moral and intellectual virtues, and humble themselves. They will not admit they were in the wrong, antisocial, and destructive in their thoughts, words and deeds towards the two Jehovahs and their fellow man, and repent. In effect, they would rather die than admit they were wrong. In effect, they would rather be dead for all eternity than serve the two Jehovahs, their life-givers. They would rather be dead than to be in a social setting with their fellow man, after working their entire lives to enslave, defraud, and kill their fellow man. They will choose to not bear that shame. In effect, their pride is greater than and overrides their self-preservation instinct. They will not care that God mercifully changed a mass-murderer, Saul, into the Apostle Paul, thus demonstrating incredible forgiveness in action (Acts 9). They hate the two Jehovahs, hate their fellow man, and evidently hate themselves. They will intentionally blaspheme God, i.e., they purposefully and willfully deny God the opportunity, through the power of the Holy Spirit, to help them change into moral, reasonable, honestly productive, and socially competent human beings. They are full of wrath against God and man and make themselves, in essence, **vessels of wrath fitted to destruction.** They purposefully and willfully, in

a determined, non-repentant way, deny God's authority and they deny God the opportunity to use the shed blood of Jesus Christ and the power of the Holy Spirit to help them change their wicked lives. They will be those who are in the third resurrection; those slated for eternal extermination.

"For if we sin willfully after we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remains no more sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful looking for judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries."

Hebrews 10:26-27, MKJV

Those in the third resurrection represent the negative extreme of God's creation. **They are literally the bad guys.** They will leave the two Jehovahs no choice but to mercifully exterminate their pestilential existence from the two Jehovahs' universe. Notice in the scripture below that God endured with much long-suffering the non-repentance and willful ongoing rebellion of these miserable creatures.

"What if God, willing to show His wrath and to make His power known, endured with much long-suffering **the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction;**" Romans 9:22, MKJV

"God has every right to exercise his judgment and his power, but he also has the right to be very patient with those who are the objects of his judgment and are fit only for destruction." Romans 9:22, NLT

"For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, **blasphemy**, pride, foolishness: All these evil things pass out from inside and defile the man."

Mark 7:21-23, MKJV

"Therefore I say to you, All kinds of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven to men, but **the blasphemy against the Holy Spirit** shall not be forgiven to men. And whoever speaks a word against the Son of man [Jesus, pre-crucifixion], it shall be forgiven him. But whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit [the resurrected Savior, the only name under heaven whereby men may be saved, Acts 4:12], **it shall not be forgiven him**, either in this world or in the world to come [intentionally, knowingly, unrepentant, and ongoing, i.e., **willfully anti-Christ**, not a word spoken in anger by a hurting human who is later sorry]."

"I know your works and tribulation and poverty (but you are rich), and **I know the blasphemy** of those saying themselves to be Jews, and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan." Revelation 2:9, MKJV

In the Revelation 2:9 scripture just above, the Bible clearly says that there will be those who pretend to be Jews, but are actually Satan worshipers. These fake Jews willfully practice as a way of "life" blasphemy against Jesus Christ, whom they hate. Evidently they will never repent. They practice getting what they want via Satan's force-and-fraud, the-ends-justify-the means, and evil value system. They would rather follow their pseudo-god, Satan, to death. The two Jehovahs will have no choice but to oblige them.

These men (and women) who refuse to repent, these angry men of wrath, the unrepentant vessels of destruction, are used by Satan the warlord as his spiritual seedline and administrative helpers, in Satan's attempt to rule the world in place of Jesus Christ. Your author covered the end of the line for these vessels of destruction in his *Life Charts* book, a few pages of which will be quoted below:

**"When you give your time and energy to Satan you are giving your obedience and loyalty to a warlord.** Satan is the ultimate warlord. Warlords make war and are always preparing for war, not peace. Their idea of peace is ... everyone who disagrees with them is either dead or enslaved to them. What happens when you follow a warlord? What does a warlord do and what are the consequences? **A warlord makes war.** When he is not making war he is making preparations for the next war. The warlord knows he cannot trust the warlord one territory over and so he tries to conquer them before he is conquered. And so on. If the warlord is not victorious then the warlord and his followers are killed and/or enslaved. And they are forced to give up their territory, their property, and to pay tribute on an ongoing basis. Not a good outcome by any reasonable standard. If the warlord and his followers are successful, then they kill and enslave their enemies. And they take their enemy's property and force them to pay tribute. But war leads to lower production, death, and much lower living standards for those fortunate enough to survive. War prevents long-term planning and mankind needs long-term planning to greatly increase production, e.g., to build a steel mill or an

aircraft factory, etc. Even if victorious, the warlord knows he has made lasting enemies. Those enemies will bide their time, getting stronger over time, until they believe they can exact their revenge. And then those enemies attack and there is another death-generating war – with all the attendant pain, suffering, loss of much-needed-for-life property, and death. And on it goes. Satan, the ultimate warlord, has mankind fighting perpetual national, religious, tribal, racial, gender, and “ism” wars. In short, Satan the warlord has man fighting a civil war against man in an attempt to hurt the two beings he really wants to hurt – the two Jehovahs. And man has been stupid enough to follow Satan and his values, which has led to all of the above. We have to stop. If we do not, the two Jehovahs have to stop us – and they will.

The wages of sin (evil) is death (Romans 6:23). There is no eternally burning hell fire. When the two Jehovahs decide a man can no longer be saved, they will put that individual man or woman to death for all eternity.

“Behold, all souls are Mine. As the soul of the father, also the soul of the son, they are Mine.  
**The soul that sins, it shall die.”**

Ezekiel 18:4, MKJV

"And you shall trample the wicked [you cannot trample someone if they are an eternal spirit], for they shall be ashes under the soles of your feet in the day which I am preparing, says the LORD of hosts." Malachi 4:3, MKJV

**"You put away all the wicked of the earth like waste;** therefore I love Your testimonies." Psalms 119:119, MKJV

"For what is the hope of the ungodly when He cuts off, **when God takes away his soul?**" Job 27:8, MKJV

""Don't be afraid of those who want to kill you. They can only kill your body; they cannot touch your soul. **Fear only God, who can destroy both soul and body in hell.**"  
Matthew 10:28, NLT

The word "hell," in the above quoted Matthew 10 scripture, denotes the final burning up into non-living ashes of the willfully unrepentant adherers to evil (Malachi 4:3 above). They are not conscious and suffering for all eternity. If the reader is interested in learning more about this topic, there is a free 12 lesson

downloadable series entitled, *Heaven and Hell* on the website: teachingthelaw.org. Each lesson is about 45 minutes in length. The *Heaven and Hell* series covers this topic in depth by going throughout the entirety of the Bible and not trying to establish what amounts to a horrific doctrine based on a metaphor lifted from one or two scriptures only.

As a further confirmation that the two Jehovahs will ultimately stop evil, please note the following two passages of scripture denoting who it is that will and will not be allowed to live on into eternity. The first refers to the great new environment the two Jehovahs will create – the new heavens and the new earth:

“He who overcomes will inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he will be My son. But the fearful, and the unbelieving, and the abominable, and **murderers**, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, **and all liars**, will have their part in the Lake burning with fire and brimstone, **which is the second death.**” Revelation 21:7-8, MKJV

Note that those who follow Satan, the murderer and the liar, will be killed and experience what the Bible calls the second death, by being burnt

up by fire. In other words, those who play with fire, those who willfully follow Satan's values, will receive what they should receive – eternal death by being burnt up by fire.

The second passage of scripture talks of New Jerusalem (Revelation 21:2) (**Jerusalem = foundation of peace** - not war) and who will and who will not be allowed into it.

"Blessed are they who do His commandments, that their authority will be over the Tree of Life, and they may enter in by the gates into the city [New Jerusalem]. But outside [having been killed] are the dogs, and the sorcerers, and the fornicators, and **the murderers, and the idolaters, and everyone who loves and makes a lie.**"

Revelation 22:14-15, MKJV

In other words, those unrepentantly who follow the murderer and the liar, Satan, will be killed and will be dead for all eternity."

There is **a first physical death**, a fact of nature that all men and women will experience. Even those Category Two firstfruits alive at the time of Jesus Christ's second coming, who will be resurrected from being alive as a human to

being transformed at the first resurrection into an eternal spirit being could be said to have physically died at that point, thus also experiencing the first physical death. All of us know what this first physical death is from having lost loved ones. In the best-case scenario pertaining to a person's physical life, they die from what amounts to old age. All men will eventually experience this first death. The Bible refers to this as follows:

"And as it is appointed to men once to die,  
but after this the judgment," Hebrews 9:27,  
MKJV

Pertaining to the resurrections, broadly speaking, the judgment of men occurs at various times. Those who will be in the first resurrection will have been judged to be worthy, via the grace of God, to be so included. Those in the third resurrection will be judged to be worthy of eternal death, because they unrepentantly reject the grace of God, the sacrifice of Jesus Christ, and the power of the Holy Spirit, amongst other reasons. Finally, there are others who the two Jehovahs will judge to be included in a second resurrection, but this will be explained in the next section, 10.6, of this book.

In addition to the first physical death, there is also **a second death** the Bible makes mention of (Revelation 2:11, 20:6, 20:14, 21:8). This second death is a much more serious and permanent eternal death. Those in the first resurrection do not have to concern themselves with this second death because they were given eternal life at the first resurrection.

"Blessed and holy is he who has part in the first resurrection. The second death has no authority over these, but they will be priests of God and of Christ, and will reign with Him a thousand years." Revelation 20:6, MKJV

Your author has previously used the phrase "**contingent beings**" to refer to both men and angels. Contingent beings are God-created beings that are alive presently, or in the case of men, who have been alive in the past, as the case may be. Contingent human beings are subject to eternal judgment from God the Father and Jesus Christ, through Jesus Christ doing the judging. For the purposes of this section, we will concentrate on men being judged. The Bible also denotes angels as being judged at a future time by resurrected men (1 Corinthians 6:3), but that is not the purpose or subject of this

section of the book. Your author only mentions that angels, too, are contingent beings in order to set the stage for an explanation concerning Satan and his evil angelic followers, later in this book (section 10.11).

"Therefore I solemnly witness before God [the Father] and the Lord Jesus Christ, who is going to judge the living and the dead according to His [Jesus Christ's] appearance and His kingdom," 2 Timothy 4:1, MKJV

"in a day when God [the Father] shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my gospel." Romans 2:16, MKJV

Those human beings in the third resurrection → will experience → a negative divine judgment resulting in → the second death

The second death → eternal death, i.e., eternal extermination

Eternal death = non-existence for all eternity, complete extinguishment of life from that entity

God the Father and Jesus Christ → the life-givers → who created body and soul → can kill

both body + soul (Matthew 10:28, Ezekiel 18:4, 20, Isaiah 10:18)

The purpose of the third resurrection → to administer the second death (eternal death)

Your author has additional explanation regarding the second death in another place of his *Life Charts* book and feels that it would provide additional insight to the reader concerning a few other important matters. To that end, several additional pages will be quoted below. A few of the scriptures have already been quoted and your author asks for the reader's indulgence pertaining to this, as the point of a second eternal death needs to be made, and because it is better to leave the flow as originally written. Further, the quoted passage alludes to the very hopeful message of the next section of this book, the second resurrection. Your author asks for the reader's patience for the detailed explanation of the second resurrection, as that will be provided in the upcoming and very important section 10.6.

"There will, no doubt, be a relatively few who remain adamant in refusing to yield to the two Jehovahs. These miserable human beings will not be allowed to live on into eternity making

themselves and those all around them miserable. They will be put to eternal death.

"And death and hell were cast into the Lake of Fire. This is the second death. And if anyone was not found having been written in the Book of Life, he was cast into the Lake of Fire [to be burnt up]." Revelation 20:14-15, MKJV

Your author brings this up because many worriers are afraid that their non-Christian loved ones have already been lost to eternal torture – an eternal and horrific hellfire that burns and causes perpetual agony, but where the afflicted person lives on and is continuously suffering.

There are two responses to this **false belief**.

First, it is almost certain per the meaning of The Last Great Day, explained in the next section, your loved ones have not had their chance of salvation yet and will almost certainly take advantage of it once they are in their right minds. Second, there is no hellfire – despite what preachers and religions teach. The Bible vetoes the idea per the below very clear scriptures (the very clear scriptures should be used to interpret less clear or obscure scriptures):

"Behold, all souls are Mine. As the soul of the father, also the soul of the son, they are Mine. **The soul that sins, it shall die** [not live forever]." Ezekiel 18:4, MKJV

"And you shall trample the wicked [who willfully refuse to repent and change], for **they shall be ashes** under the soles of your feet [because they were burnt up completely in the lake of fire] in the day which I am preparing, says the LORD of hosts." Malachi 4:3, MKJV

Ashes are not tormented forever and ever. Whatever is burnt to the state that it has become ash is no more.

"I tell you, No. But unless you repent, you will all likewise **perish**." Luke 13:3, MKJV

"For God so loved the world that He gave His only-begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life." John 3:16, MKJV

"For the wages of sin **is death**, but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord." Romans 6:23, MKJV

It is either everlasting life or perishing – not an eternal suffering “life” in a hellfire that never burns out. **The results of being burnt up are everlasting, or permanent**, meaning those so exterminated do not exist any longer and never will again.

“who shall be punished with **everlasting destruction** from the presence of the Lord and from the glory of His power,”  
2 Thessalonians 1:9, MKJV

Everlasting destruction means what it clearly says. Away from “the presence of the Lord” means the ashes are outside of the New Jerusalem (Revelation 21:8):

“But the fearful, and the unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, will have their part in the Lake burning with fire and brimstone, which is the second death.”  
Revelation 21:8, MKJV

In other words, these physical men and women, given a real and fair chance of salvation, reject it, and so now are thrown into the Lake of Fire and experience their second and final death. They will be no longer exist, for all eternity.

For those who say, "Wait, there is a spiritual component to man. How can that be destroyed?"

"And do not fear those who kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul. But rather fear Him **who can destroy both soul and body** in hell [the Lake of Fire]." Matthew 10:28, MKJV

The results of → the Lake of Fire → eternal death → are permanent

Your loved ones are, most likely, not lost forever. They will get their first real chance at salvation in their second physical life [explained in section 10.6 following] and, almost certainly, with shame for their prior life, will take advantage of it. For any who willfully and purposefully do not take advantage of their chance, they will be mercifully exterminated and burnt up. They will no longer exist. Well-intentioned preachers, who think they do God service by teaching the false doctrine of a torturous hellfire, are wrong. They do not speak for the two Jehovahs. The holy days in Leviticus 23 and the rest of the Bible do."

There are some serious and dedicated men and women of God who believe that the Bible does not specifically state there is a third resurrection, which is true. But God the Father and Jesus Christ authored not only the Bible, they also created the entire universe. As previously explained, that one universe has a logical structure because it had to in order for man's mind to be able to make sense of it and to allow for man to have the fair chance to actually have dominion over the earth. In other words, once again, the logical structure of man's God-given mind corresponds to the logical structure embedded into the universe. This allows man to be able to use his mind with confidence WHEN man thinks logically. This is to say that IF man thinks logically, and all thinking is logical or it is not thinking, then man can ascertain important aspects of what is true. If a man or a woman does not think according to logical principles, then they will miss the truth. However, if man does think according to logical principles he can ascertain many important things that are true – he won't miss the truth.

All thinking is logical → or → it is not thinking

Man must think → according to logical principles  
or → he will miss the truth (runs the great risk  
that he will miss the truth)

God authored → the Bible

God also authored (created) → the universe

The universe → cannot → contradict the Bible

The Bible → cannot contradict → the truth men  
ascertain about the universe (when men reason  
properly, according to logical principles) →  
because God, author of both the Bible and the  
universe → is not the author → of confusion

"For God is not the author of confusion, but  
of peace, as in all churches of the saints."  
1 Corinthians 14:33, MKJV

Ergo, if a thinking man can see important  
information in the Bible and can also use that  
information in an inferential way, i.e., to  
compliment what the Bible reveals by extending  
said information forward to a logical conclusion,  
the information so logically concluded is also  
true and can also be relied upon. In other  
words, the Bible plus logic should equal the  
correct answer. At a minimum, it will be an

honest and thoughtful attempt to ascertain truth.

The correct interpretation of the Bible = a correct answer

The correct use of logical principles = a correct answer

The Bible + logic = a correct answer

With the above as a preamble, your author would like to offer evidence that the Bible does reveal a third resurrection. The information is found throughout the Bible as detailed in the scriptures quoted in this section, plus a few additional other scriptural passages your author will now utilize. In making his case, your author will put forth a simple argument using the Bible, logical principles, and also an empirically falsifiable fact.

There are two kinds of deaths mentioned in the Bible, which can be fairly and properly termed: A) the first physical death, B) the second eternal death. For the purposes of your author's argument, the first physical death will be designated as "A" and the second eternal death will be designated as "B". The empirically

falsifiable fact your author is utilizing is that some men, who have rebelled against God the Father and Jesus Christ, have done so in a permanent way, i.e., they will never repent and they have, in fact, died at different times throughout history. Satan has always had men who sold out their souls for gain in this world, e.g., evidently Cain and those like him (Jude 11). It goes without saying that various warlords and monsters in human form have died in different human eras. This is also Biblically inferable from considering Jeremiah 8:1-3, quoted below this paragraph, and Revelation 19:20, where the beast and the false prophet are destroyed. The question is, did some of these decidedly evil men refuse God on a permanent basis, or not? ("I will **never** bow down to you and serve you; I will never repent.") While not 100% empirically knowable by your author, your author believes there are some recalcitrant men who have lived out their lives in the knowing and unrepentant service to Satan. They are part of Satan's spiritual seedline and they are the subject matter of this discussion. They have consciously and willfully served Satan as his workers of iniquity, in what amounts to an attempted administration of sin over the earth. The original Cain (Genesis 4, Jude 11), now dead and buried, and the

Revelation 13 beast / false prophet, in the future, are two scriptural cases in point. These willfully evil, unrepentant men have experienced, or will experience, their first physical death at different times in human history. From the Jeremiah 8:1-3, the Revelation 21:8, and the 2 Peter 3:7 scriptures quoted just below it is inferable that there are more.

"At that time, says the LORD, they shall bring out the bones of the kings of Judah, and the bones of its rulers, and the bones of the priests, and the bones of the prophets, and the bones of the people of Jerusalem, out of their graves. And they shall spread them before the sun, and the moon, and all the host of the heavens, whom they have loved and whom they have served, and after whom they have walked, and whom they have sought, and whom they have worshiped. They shall not be gathered nor buried; they shall be as dung on the face of the earth. And death shall be chosen rather than life by all the rest of those who remain **of this evil family** [families have multiple generations of individuals who die their physical deaths at different periods of time] [the word "family" could also be translated as tribe, people, or nation – all indicating different time periods and

individuals involved through time], who remain in all the places where I have driven them, says the LORD of hosts." Jeremiah 8:1-3, MKJV

Further, Revelation 21:8 refers to murderers, whoremongers, sorcerers, and idolaters (all plural) and says these men (plural), who your author surmises died first physical deaths at different times throughout history, will have their part in the Lake of Fire and experience the second eternal death.

"But the fearful, and the unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, will have their part in the Lake burning with fire and brimstone, which is the second death."  
Revelation 21:8, MKJV

Further still, 2 Peter 3:7 discloses the day of judgment (singular) and the destruction of ungodly men (again, plural).

"But the present heavens and the earth being kept in store by the same word, are being kept for fire until **the day of judgment** and destruction of ungodly men." 2 Peter 3:7, MKJV

Psalm 37 discusses evildoers. It warns other men to not be envious of these workers of iniquity (administrators of sin on the earth). Regular people can sometimes see the material gains, status, and power that these workers of iniquity achieve and be envious, not realizing there is a high eternal price to be paid for actively and willfully serving Satan, the god of this world. Some of Psalm 37's scriptures are quoted below:

"A Psalm of David. Do not fret yourself with evil doers; and do not be envious against **the workers of iniquity.**" Psalms 37:1, MKJV

"Rest in the LORD, and wait patiently for Him; do not fret yourself because of him who prospers in his way, because of him who practices wickedness [intentionally and willfully]." Psalms 37:7, MKJV

"For evildoers shall be cut off; but those who wait on the LORD, they shall inherit the earth." Psalms 37:9, MKJV

"It is but a little while, and **the wicked shall not be**; yea, you shall search his place, and he shall not be." Psalms 37:10, MKJV

"The wicked plots against the just, and gnashes on him with his teeth. The LORD laughs at him; for He sees that his day is coming. The wicked have drawn out the sword, and have bent their bow, to cast down the poor and needy [the workers of iniquity hunt men, preying on human weakness], to kill those who walk uprightly." Psalms 37:12-14, MKJV

"But the wicked shall pass, and the enemies of the LORD shall be like the beauty of pastures; they are consumed, like smoke they perish."  
Psalms 37:20, MKJV

"For the LORD loves judgment and does not forsake His saints; they are kept forever; but the seed of the wicked shall be cut off [this also references a wicked family bloodline, like Jeremiah 8:1-3 mentions]." Psalms 37:28, MKJV

"The wicked watches the righteous, and seeks to kill him." Psalms 37:32, MKJV

"Wait on the LORD, and keep His way, and He shall lift you up to inherit the earth; **when the wicked are cut off, you shall see it.**"  
Psalms 37:34, MKJV

"I have seen the wicked ruthless, and spreading himself like a luxuriant native tree [evidently a reference to fake Jews here, Revelation 2:9, 3:9]. Yet he passed away, and, lo, he was not; and I looked for him, but he could not be found." Psalms 37:35-36, MKJV

**"But the sinners are destroyed together;  
the end of the wicked is cut off."**  
Psalms 37:38, MKJV

With all of the above as a preamble, here is your author's argument, at least the portion that it makes sense to share now, prior to including some additional information in the upcoming sections that will be appended to this argument:

A straightforward, non-allegorical statement contained in the Bible is literally true. **The Bible is always true.** Just exactly how a Bible statement is true sometimes requires thought. At times, how the Bible is true might also require additional information we do not yet possess. An example of this is for more time to pass so additional facts come forth pertaining to the fulfillment of a Bible prophecy. Further,

If either A or B must be true and  
Not A (if A is not true)  
Then B (then B must be true)

Translation: If the Bible is speaking of death, it is either speaking of "A," the first physical death all men will experience, or "B," the dangerous second eternal death that hopefully only a relative few will end up experiencing. Since these are the only known options, it is either a case of "A" or "B." When the Bible, in a point-blank, non-allegorical statement says, in Psalm 37:38: "**But the sinners are destroyed together; the end of the wicked is cut off,**" it must be referring to the second eternal death. We can logically infer this because there have been many sinners who have died their first physical death throughout human history. In other words, wicked men have lived and died in different eras in human history so there is no way Psalm 37:38 can be referring to the first physical death. To bolster your author's case, regarding the empirically falsifiable, the evil man known as the beast (the Antichrist) and the evil man known as the false prophet (Revelation 13), will die their first physical death when they are thrown together into the Lake of Fire (Revelation 19:20). Later in the future, but recorded earlier in the Bible in Ezekiel 38-39,

there is a rebellion against the reign of Jesus Christ sometime during the Millennium, or later, where those so rebelling against his rule are destroyed. The leader of this rebellion is known as Gog (Ezekiel 38:2). He will devise an evil plan (Ezekiel 38:10) to invade and conquer Israel, though he knows Israel dwells securely in the Promised Land under the reign of Jesus Christ. He devises such an evil plan anyway and evidently convinces many other people from several other nations to join him in his willful rebellion (Ezekiel 38:2,14-16). Jesus Christ gets angry and destroys Gog and his army, including sending down fire and brimstone from heaven to destroy them (Ezekiel 38:21-23). Further, Jeremiah 8:1-3 discusses an entire evil family, many generations, who have chosen death rather than life. These willfully evil men have all died, or will die their first physical deaths at different times. To your author's point, the beast and false prophet have died the first physical death many years earlier than this Gog. It is highly likely the three of them will have blasphemed against God the Father, Jesus Christ, and against their Holy Spirit and are worthy of eternal death. But they did not die together ... yet. For them **to die** the second eternal death, **together**, per Psalm 37:38, they will have to be resurrected back to life, along

with all of the other willful, non-repentant, sinful rebels against the two Jehovahs, be judged guilty of unrepentant sin, and then be put to eternal death together – at the same time. In other words, **there is a third resurrection** and after the third resurrection they will all be judged, found guilty, and they will all experience the second death, eternal death forever, at the same time. And those who are the good guys, per Psalm 37:34, will see the bad guys die together. That there are ultimately going to be additional good guys than those who are the firstfruits in the first resurrection is the subject of the next important section. For ALL of the good guys to see ALL of the bad guys dying together, which is clearly the implications of Psalm 37:34, will require three resurrections. At any rate, for the unrepentant, wicked bad guys to die the second death together definitely establishes the third resurrection. Ergo, the death the Bible mentions in Psalm 37:38 is the second and permanent eternal death and this is further alluded to in Psalm 37:20:

“But the wicked shall pass, and the enemies of the LORD shall be like the beauty of pastures; they are consumed, like smoke they perish.”  
Psalms 37:20, MKJV

The wicked are consumed; this is the second death, not the first physical death. They are consumed, like smoke **they perish** means just what it says, they will be burnt up, body and soul, and perish. The good guys will look for them, but they will not be found. Just like something that is burnt up, when the smoke wafts away, what is burnt up is gone, it cannot be found. Of course the ashes that remain will also blow away at some point and not be found, either.

"Yet he [the wicked] passed away, and, lo, he was not; and I looked for him, but he could not be found." Psalms 37:36, MKJV

The third resurrection, the bad resurrection is, so to speak, the other bookend to the first resurrection, the best resurrection.

"But I [Paul] confess this to you, that after **the Way** which they call heresy [the bad guys], so I worship the God of my fathers, believing all things that are written in the Law and in the Prophets [including Jesus Christ as Savior]. And I have hope toward God, which they themselves also allow, that there shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust."  
Acts 24:14-15, MKJV

The first resurrection is of → the just

The third resurrection is of → the unjust

"Do not marvel at this, for the hour is coming in which all who are in the graves shall hear His voice, and shall come forth, those who have done good to **the resurrection of life** [eternal life, the first resurrection], and those who have practiced evil to **the resurrection of condemnation** [the third resurrection]."

John 5:28-29, MKJV

The resurrection of eternal life → the first resurrection

The resurrection of condemnation → the third resurrection

If there is a first resurrection to eternal life and a third resurrection to eternal death, does this mean there is also a second resurrection? Yes, there is. It is the resurrection that will end up applying to the vast majority of mankind and it is an incredible part of God's Strange Plan. To explain the purpose of the second resurrection requires a fairly lengthy section in its own right.

## **10.6 The second resurrection**

As previously explained, there will be comparatively few people in the best resurrection, the first resurrection, and also, hopefully, very few people in the third resurrection, the resurrection that results in eternal death. The second resurrection covers all of the rest of mankind who have ever lived. They lived their lives and died a first physical death, not knowingly understanding and accepting the plan of God. The only exceptions to this delineation of people, who will be in the second resurrection, are those human beings who live on into the Millennium, or who are born in the Millennium. Both of these groups of people will learn the plan of God during the Millennium.

First resurrection → Category One effectively called and chosen now (the Category Two firstfruits)

Third resurrection → those who have willfully, knowingly, unrepentantly rejected God the Father and Jesus Christ

Second resurrection → almost every other human being who has ever lived

The two exceptions to the composition of the above delineation of those people who will be in the second resurrection → 1) those remnant human beings, who are not in the first resurrection, that live on in physical form into the Millennium, or 2) those who are born in the Millennium

The two exception groupings of people, not in the first or second resurrection → obviously learn the plan of God during the Millennium, ergo they do not need to be resurrected back to a second physical life to learn the plan of God

Second resurrection → the vast majority of physical Israelites + the super-vast majority of the peoples of the non-Israelite nations

God has a strange plan and a big part of why the two Jehovahs' plan is strange is because of all of the events pertaining to the second resurrection. Before your author gets into explaining the purpose and necessity of the second resurrection, please note the following scriptures:

"See now that I, I am He [God], and there is no god with me. **I kill, and I make alive; I**

wound and I heal; and there is no deliverer [out] of My hand." Deuteronomy 32:39, MKJV

"For this Christ both died and rose and lived again, that He might be Lord **both of the dead and living**." Romans 14:9, MKJV

""I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?" God is not the God of the dead, but of the living."  
Matthew 22:32, MKJV

"He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living. Therefore you greatly err."  
Mark 12:27, MKJV

The above four scriptures are powerful, but they need some explanation. The explanation points out what God can do that men cannot and it centers on the elucidation of the miracle of the second resurrection. The Bible does not contradict itself. As far as God is concerned, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob will be in the first resurrection and so they are as good as already eternally alive, from the eternal point of view of the two Jehovahs. The two Jehovahs will resurrect them at the first resurrection and Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob will be alive for the rest of eternity. The explanation of the Romans

14:9 verse, which only seems to contradict the Matthew 22:32 and Mark 12:27 verses, is contained in what is going on with the second resurrection. It is the purpose of this entire section to explain it and it will take this entire section to do so.

Because God can kill and then make alive again, wound and then heal, Romans 14:9 makes it clear that it is no big deal to Christ that someone is physically dead for the moment. Christ knows he will ultimately be Lord over those who have died and are currently dead in their graves. This is why he is also Lord of the dead, technically just not yet (but substantively so in the eyes of the two Jehovahs). As previously pointed out, God clearly knows the past and the present and looks ahead to the future. If someone is currently dead, it does not mean all is lost. All is decidedly not lost because the two Jehovahs can resurrect back to life. The two Jehovahs can heal, too. And the healing they can perform is spiritual, mental, and emotional, as well as physical. The healing they can and will perform will open the eyes and minds of those previously blinded and deaf to the truth of God. The Deuteronomy 32:39 kill and make alive scripture does not add the phrase, "I blind and I open the eyes," or the

phrase "I make deaf and then open the ears," but it just as well could have because that is what is implied in the healing of making someone alive again. Remember, God blinded the vast majority of the physical Israelites, his designated Category Two called and chosen and his designated Category Three firstfruits. Further, Jesus spoke in parables, and much of the Bible is written in such a way so as not to be easily understood. This is completely unlike a cookbook recipe that can be easily understood. To be blunt, God is just not that concerned that tens of billions of people have already lived out their first physical lives and are now dead. He is the God of the dead because he is going to resurrect them back to a second physical life, open their eyes, ears, minds, and hearts, and teach them THE WAY. Once this happens the majority of people in this second resurrection will admit they served gods that were not real and they will admit they wasted a lot of their first physical life. Most all of them will repent and cooperate with Jesus Christ. In short, they will embrace the two Jehovahs' divine individualism process and take advantage of their chance to do it over again, only this time much better.

God cannot just put these tens of billions of people to eternal death, i.e., to include them in the third resurrection as permanently lost, because the two Jehovahs purposely blinded them and blinded the people of the nation who was supposed to be their leader, Israel. And God cannot just give these people eternal life, because they have lived according to Satan's values, not the two Jehovahs' values. These tens of billions of people did not meet the qualifications of what is necessary to be included in the first resurrection. But, having been effectively blinded and basically leaderless, neither do they warrant being condemned to eternal death and included in the third resurrection. The answer the two Jehovahs came up with is to have an intermediate resurrection between the narrowly prescribed first resurrection and the third resurrection.

The second resurrection will result in tens of billions of human beings being physically resurrected back to physical life, healed so they are in their right minds, and then taught the plan of God. This process could be summarily stated as: a second physical life is necessary so they can have a first real chance at eternal life. This answers the question and explains how Christ could be considered to be Lord of even

the uncalled dead (not just the dead who will be in the first resurrection, like Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, the good fathers). The uncalled dead will come up in a second resurrection and be given their first real chance for eternal salvation. God the Father and Jesus Christ had to have a "game-saving play" as part of their strange plan that encompasses going back and saving all those considered permanently lost, but who never really had a fair chance at cooperating with the two Jehovahs to achieve eternal life. They admit in the Bible that men in other nations and ages had no real knowledge of God or his plan. That the two Jehovahs state they are not the God of the dead, but the living, is their point of view in future substance going forward throughout eternity, after the three resurrections and their results are permanent. For now, Christ is the God of the dead and the living because those currently dead are not permanently dead, just "asleep" awaiting the second resurrection.

"For this cause, I, Paul, am the prisoner of Jesus Christ for you nations, if you have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God which is given to me toward you, that by revelation He made known to me the mystery (as I wrote before in few words, by which, when you read,

you may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ) **which in other ages was not made known to the sons of men**, as it is now revealed to His holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit, that the nations should be fellow heirs, and of the same body, and partaker of His promise in Christ through the gospel [but not for most until the second resurrection]."

Ephesians 3:1-6, MKJV

Jesus Christ → Lord of both → the dead + the living

The dead include → 1) those effectively called and chosen dead who will be in the first resurrection + 2) those uncalled dead who will be in the second resurrection

After the three resurrections → the two Jehovahs will be God of the living only (because everyone else who did not worship them properly will be eternally dead, i.e., exterminated)

"And He said to them, to you [in essence and substance, those who will be in the first resurrection] it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God. But to those outside [in essence and substance, those who will be in the

second resurrection], all these things are given in parables" Mark 4:11

God is rightly called the God of Hope. By refusing to give up on even those who died uncalled and are physically dead, the two Jehovahs certainly are the God of hope. And, of course, those currently alive, who are cooperating with the two Jehovahs, have the hope of the first resurrection.

"And may **the God of hope** fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that you may abound in hope through the power of the Holy Spirit." Romans 15:13, MKJV

Hopefully those who have agonized about loved ones already dead, loved ones who did not come to become Spiritual Israelites (Christians) in their first physical life, will find joy and peace at the determination of God to save the vast majority of mankind, including your dead loved ones. God wants you to have peace and joy, per the scripture quoted just above, in knowing that the two Jehovahs can execute and bring to fruition their strange plan. And a huge part of their strange plan is what happens at the second resurrection. The Luke scriptural passage, quoted just below, containing a miracle of Christ

healing a dead girl, is effectively a type of second-resurrection foreshadowing:

"He [Christ] was still speaking when someone came from the synagogue-ruler, saying to him, Your daughter is dead, do not trouble the Teacher. But when Jesus heard, He answered Him, saying, Do not fear, only believe and she shall be healed. And coming into the house, He allowed no one to go in, except Peter and James and John, and the father and the mother of the girl. And all were weeping and bewailing her. But He said, Do not weep; she has not died, but sleeps. And they ridiculed, knowing that she was dead. And He put them all out. And He took her by the hand and called, saying, Little girl, arise! And **her spirit came again, and she arose immediately**. And He commanded that food be given her to eat."

Luke 8:49-55, MKJV

"(as it has been written, "I have made you [Abraham] **a father of many nations**") -- before God, whom he believed, **who makes the dead live, and calls the things which do not exist as though they do exist.**"

Romans 4:17, MKJV

The people who are resurrected back to life will need time to get reoriented. They will be surprised to be alive and no doubt surprised to see their loved ones again. They will no doubt also be shocked to learn that Jesus Christ is on the earth ruling as King of kings and Lord of lords. Most of them will need to be healed of various spiritual, mental, emotional, and physical ailments. This will take time. It will also take time for these physically resurrected human beings to learn they must change their value system to accept the unity of the package of values pertaining to life of the two Jehovahs. They will have to be taught to learn about and then to obtain and use the virtues, too. They will need to learn how to be peacefully, sustainably productive. Further, they will need to be taught and come to understand the various mysteries of Christ previously explained in section 10.1 - in particular, that Jesus Christ is their Creator, Savior, and Redeemer. Further still, that it was he who is so determined to save them that he resurrected them back to physical life so he and his team could teach them THE WAY to live.

Each person has to learn one concept at a time. In other words it is ... one concept at a time into one mind at a time ... and this takes

time. It takes time to learn God's instructions and how to apply them. Each person becomes more moral, one good decision at a time. It takes time to develop moral habits and to learn how to live a good life. God the Father and Jesus Christ will need to give each person their Holy Spirit to help them know what to do (the intellectual virtues) and to help them to actually do what is right (practice the moral virtues). It is not just answering a simple question in the affirmative, "Do you accept Jesus Christ as your Savior?" If that were the case, about 2.3 billion Samaritanized Christian people would be in the first resurrection and this would not square with end-time prophecies of a small flock – said small flock having the faith and testimony of Jesus, keeping the commandments of God, and, if necessary, not loving their lives to the death, all previously explained. It takes time and effort to learn, even if the lessons are now taught by expert teachers and simplified for easier understanding. And it is not just those people of the nations who never knew The Way of the Lord, as Israel was blinded and thrown off of the land. God has to resurrect all these ancient physical Israelites and save them, too. And because Israel is the firstfruits of those who are alive at the time, God will work through Israel first in the second resurrection, the nations will

see what God does through Israel, and then God will work with the nations, too.

"The LORD is well pleased for His righteousness sake; He will magnify the Law and make it honorable. But this is a people robbed and spoiled; all of them snared in holes, and they are hidden in prison-houses; they have been taken, and none delivers them; a prize, and none says, Give back. Who among you will hear this? He will listen and hear for the time to come? **Who gave Jacob for a spoil, and Israel to robbers?** Did not the LORD, against whom we have sinned? For they would not walk in His ways, nor did they obey His law. So He has poured on him the fury of His anger, and the strength of battle. And it has set him on fire all around, yet he did not know; and it burned him, yet he did not lay it to heart."

Isaiah 42:21-25, MKJV

The Good News Bible has verse 25 above as:

"So he made us feel the force of his anger and suffer the violence of war. Like fire his anger burned throughout Israel, but we never knew what was happening; we learned nothing at all from it." Isaiah 42:25, TEV

The Israelites resurrected back to life in the second resurrection will finally learn from it and change. The nations will see this miracle and most of them will change, too.

"And I will make My holy name known in the midst of My people Israel. And I will not let them profane My holy name any more. And the nations shall know that I am the LORD, the Holy One in Israel." Ezekiel 39:7, MKJV

The nations shall "know that I am the LORD" because they, too, will have their eyes and ears opened and they, too, shall be given a heart of flesh and then the Holy Spirit so they can become international members of the Commonwealth of Israel.

"To the Chief Musician. On stringed instruments. A Psalm. A Song. May God be merciful to us, and bless us, and cause His face to shine on us. Selah. So that **Your way** may be known on earth, **Your salvation among all nations.**" Psalms 67:1-2, MKJV

"And this gospel of the kingdom shall be proclaimed in all the world as **a witness to all nations**. And then **the end** shall come." Matthew 24:14, MKJV

The Matthew 24:14 scripture has a dual purpose: 1) it is true in part prior to the second coming of Jesus Christ, before the end of this Satan-dominated age and 2) it is true in greater substance during the Last Great Day time period, as the peoples of the nations are resurrected back to a second physical life so they can hear and understand the good news for the very first time. Both #1 and #2 fit, depending on which “the end” God has categorized and is referring to.

“Then Peter opened his mouth and said, Truly I see that God is no respecter of persons; but in every nation he who fears Him and works righteousness is accepted with Him.”

Acts 10:34-35, MKJV

God is determined to save as many people as possible and his strange plan is how he is going to do it. God’s Strange Plan involves super-abounding grace, to do the greatest possible good for the greatest possible number.

“For all things are for your sake, so that **the superabounding grace** might be made to abound through **the thanksgiving of the greater number**, to the glory of God.”

## 2 Corinthians 4:15, MKJV

Your author previously quoted a lengthy section of his *Life Charts* book, explaining the meaning behind God's festivals and holy days. In that quotation the explanation of one of these holy days was purposefully omitted. The omitted portion fits in here, as it provides an explanation of the last festival and holy day, the eighth day (Leviticus 23:36, 39). It is a lengthy quote as it is important to demonstrate that your loved ones are not lost for all eternity. A few of the paragraphs have already been quoted in earlier sections of this book. Your author asks the reader's indulgence in reading a few paragraphs for a second time because for flow purposes it makes more sense to quote the below passage as it was originally written. As an explanatory housekeeping point, sometimes in the section below your author uses an abbreviation, "MRP," which stands for moral, reasonable (rational and balanced), and productive.

"The Last Great Day (the eighth day after The Feast of Booths – Leviticus verses 36 and 39). The meaning of this day is important for all mankind, and it will take some work to explain the likely meaning. Please be patient with your

author as the explanation can give a lot of hope to those worried about loved ones and their eternal fate.

In Revelation 19, Jesus Christ returns to the earth. The government and religious leaders and their government elite and religious elite management teams and minions will evidently not have taken the two Jehovahs up on their Psalm 2 offer of reconciliation. They will refuse to yield to the two Jehovahs. Finally, the Father sends Jesus Christ to take over the earth and put down the rebellion. This is detailed, starting in verse 11, of Revelation 19:

"And I saw Heaven opened. And behold, a white horse! And He sitting on him was called Faithful and True. And in righteousness He judges and makes war. And His eyes were like a flame of fire, and on His head many crowns. And He had a name written, one that no one knew except Himself. And He had been clothed in a garment dipped in blood, and His name is called The Word of God [Jesus Christ, John 1:1,14]. And the armies in Heaven followed Him on white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean. And out of His mouth goes a sharp sword, so that with it He should strike the nations. And He will shepherd them with a rod of iron. And He

treads the winepress of the wine of the anger  
and of the wrath of Almighty God. And He has  
on His garment, and on His thigh a name  
written, KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS.  
And I saw one angel standing in the sun. And he  
cried with a great voice, saying to all the birds  
that fly in mid-heaven, Come and gather  
together to the supper of the great God, so that  
you may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of  
commanders, and the flesh of strong ones, and  
the flesh of horses, and those sitting on them,  
and the flesh of all, both free and slave, both  
small and great. And I saw the beast  
[Antichrist], and the kings of the earth and their  
armies, being gathered to make war against Him  
who sat on the horse, and against His army. And  
the beast was taken, and with him the false  
prophet doing signs before it, (by which he  
deceived those who had received the mark of  
the beast), and those who had worshiped his  
image. The two were thrown alive into the Lake  
of Fire burning with brimstone. And the rest  
were slain by the sword of Him who sat on the  
horse, it proceeding out of His mouth. And all  
the birds were filled from their flesh."

Revelation 19:11-21, MKJV

Jesus Christ returns as King of kings and Lord of  
lords and the Antichrist and the false prophet

are thrown into the lake of fire to be burned up. The kings and their armies are destroyed (also see Zechariah 14). Remember, the Feast of Trumpets could very well celebrate the return of Jesus Christ. What happens next is very interesting.

"And I saw an angel come down from Heaven, having the key of the abyss and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand years. And he cast him into the abyss and shut him up and set a seal on him, that he should deceive the nations no more until the thousand years should be fulfilled. And after that he must be loosed a little time. And I saw thrones, and they sat on them, and judgment was given to them. And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for the witness of Jesus and for the Word of God, and who had not worshiped the beast nor his image, nor had received his mark on their foreheads, nor in their hands. And they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years."  
Revelation 20:1-4, MKJV

A powerful good angel catches and binds Satan the devil and puts him in jail for a thousand years, and also puts a seal on him so

that Satan cannot deceive the nations any longer – during this 1,000 year time period. And the firstfruits of resurrected human beings (1 Corinthians 15 and 1 Thessalonians 4), now divine MRP individuals, will reign with (under) Christ for this time period of 1,000 years (verse 4 above). Using God's holy day layout as a guide, let us attempt to make some correlations: 1) Christ has returned, the [Category Two] firstfruits of human beings have been resurrected in the first resurrection, and the nations in rebellion will have been put down by superior divine force. And now Christ is ruling as King of kings with help from other kings, who are resurrected, glorified human firstfruits. Christ returning as King of kings and the resurrection of the firstfruits of the humans likely correlates to the celebration of the Feast of Trumpets (not necessarily occurring on the Feast of Trumpets). 2) Next, Satan has had hands laid upon him (angelic hands in this case) and is now in prison for 1,000 years with a seal placed upon him so he can no longer deceive the nations and their citizens during this 1,000 year time period. This likely corresponds to the scapegoat having been judged as guilty of sin and being led astray into the wilderness (away from the people) on the Day of Atonement (Leviticus 16). 3) Christ is now ruling, Satan is

bound, and the restoration back to morality and rationality and productivity can begin anew. There is 1,000 years, widely known as the Millennium, where the proper instructions will go out from Jesus Christ, who will relocate to Jerusalem (Isaiah 2:2-4, Ezekiel 36, 40-48, and numerous other places in the Bible). Nations will not learn war any longer (Isaiah 2:4). The earth, which will have almost been ruined (Matthew 24:22, Luke 21:25-26), will become, over time, like the Garden of Eden (Ezekiel 36:35). Force and fraud will be out. The unity of the package of values leading to life will be in. Human development will leap forward as, over time, almost all of humanity will choose to cooperate with the two Jehovahs in their divine individualism process. The two Jehovahs will give their Holy Spirit to the physical Israelites who repent and cooperate with them and also to the citizens of all of the other nations who do so, as well.

"There is no end of the increase of His government and peace on the throne of David, and on His kingdom, to order it and to establish it with judgment **and with justice** from now on, even forever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will do this." Isaiah 9:7, MKJV

Force + fraud → are out

The unity of the package of values pertaining to life + the virtues → are in

Starting in Jerusalem with the remnant of physical Israelites, the government of Jesus Christ will keep increasing until it covers this earth (Isaiah 2:2-5). People and the earth will be built up. Correct principles, such as the moral and intellectual virtues, will be taught and actively learned and applied. Individuals needing healing will be healed, as will the geography of the earth:

"Then the lame shall leap like a deer, and the tongue of the dumb shall sing; for in the wilderness waters shall break out, and streams in the desert." Isaiah 35:6, MKJV

Revelation 20:5-6 has some very important information contained within it. It is a transition passage of verses between verses 1-4 and verses 7-15.

"But the rest of the dead did not live again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection [the first resurrection is referring to verse 4 and to 1 Corinthians 15, 1

Thessalonians 4, and Revelation 19:14]. Blessed and holy is he who has part in the first resurrection [this is the better resurrection mentioned in Hebrews 11:35]. The second death [eternal death] has no authority over these, but they will be priests of God and of Christ, and will reign with Him a thousand years."

Revelation 20:5-6, MKJV

The individuals who participate with the two Jehovahs in their divine individualism process in their first physical life, and who stay faithful to the end, will be resurrected at the return of Jesus Christ. They will live on into eternity with him and the Father and the good angels. While it is appointed once for men to die (Hebrews 9:27), this physical death has no hold over them, as they will be resurrected back to life, only this time in an incorruptible and eternal spiritual body (1 Corinthians 15:53-54). The second death (eternal death) has no possible power over them any longer. They will help Christ reign on the earth for a 1,000 year time period.

"And as it is appointed to men once to die, but after this the judgment, so Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many. And to those

who look for Him He shall appear the second time without sin to salvation.”  
Hebrews 9:27-28, MKJV

“For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. But when this corruptible shall put on incorruption, and when this mortal shall put on immortality, then will take place the word that is written, “Death is swallowed up in victory.” 1 Corinthians 15:53-54, MKJV

This raises the question, “What about everyone else?” There are two parts to the answer. First, there will be some surviving human beings who live on into the 1,000 years time period known as the Millennium and some people will be born during the Millennium. They will obviously be able to learn and understand the plan of God during their remaining time as a human being – in other words, before their physical death. They will not be deceived, as Satan the deceiver will be in bad-angel jail and there will be a seal put upon him so he has no communicational influence over human beings during this 1,000 year time period. Further, Jesus Christ and the first resurrection, now MRP divine individuals, will teach those surviving human beings in an easy to understand way.

They will be proper kings and proper priests teaching mankind (Revelation 20:6). The Holy Spirit will be poured out on all flesh, starting with the remnant of physical Israel and then the nations (Ezekiel 39:29). So those human beings who were in the first resurrection are in the better resurrection. Those human beings who live on into the millennium or who are born during it will be fine if they choose to cooperate with the two Jehovahs, and it is very likely that, once no longer deceived, most will.

However, how happy will any of us be if many of those we love are lost forever, and yet, we live on into eternity? The vast majority of the human beings who have ever existed either: 1) lived without any knowledge of Jesus Christ; or 2) were deceived by Satan, the god of this world (2 Corinthians 4:4, Revelation 20:3) while the two Jehovahs basically, for the most part, stood back and allowed it; or 3) were abused slaves and tortured victims of misguided or evil governments, religions, tribes, etc. These men and women died after terrible and ignorant existences ["ignorant" is not intended to be used pejoratively, only descriptively and in context]; or 4) were so short of self-control they chose drugs or alcohol or some other addictive behavior as the incorrect means to what they

thought they wanted. In substance, they did not really understand life, and the idea of an abundant life was for the most part completely foreign to them. They did not possess either the thoughts or the words to even begin to know what to do. They lacked self-control and so took various shortcuts to a hell of their own making; or 5) were confused by the morality-corrupting, rationality-poisoning, vain philosophies perpetrated upon the human race by corrupt intellectual sellouts and fools; or 6) died young; or 7) any other reason for a failed human life. If the two Jehovahs do not have a plan to deal with all of these shattered and seemingly lost human beings, then Satan has won the numbers count in a landslide. Life is not a game. But if it was and we were counting people to keep score it would look, right now, like Satan has permanently crushed the two Jehovahs.

And there is a counter-intuitive further problem, which is: the two Jehovahs blinded the minds of many people, and Jesus Christ spoke in parables so that people would NOT understand his teachings. Why would the two Jehovahs blind the minds and dull the thoughts of people? Before your author gets himself set upon, please consider the following scriptures pertaining to

Israel and the people hearing Jesus Christ while he was on this earth:

"No one can come to Me unless the Father who has sent Me draw him, and I will raise him up at the last day." John 6:44, MKJV

Unless God the Father called someone to Jesus, they could not understand his message – at that time.

"And the disciples said to Him [Jesus], Why do You speak to them in parables? He answered and said to them, Because it is given to you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of Heaven, **but it is not given to them.**"

Matthew 13:10-11, MKJV

At times, Jesus spoke in parables so that the crowd, in general, would not understand his message – at that time.

"And He [Jesus] said to them [his disciples], To you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God. But to those outside, all these things are given in parables so that seeing they may see, and not perceive; and hearing they may hear, and not understand; lest at any

**time they should be converted, and their sins should be forgiven them.**" Mark 4:11-12, MKJV.

The Mark scripture explains, point-blank, that the Father and Christ's plan was NOT to call and convert all men at that time. This is very counter-intuitive, but true. Further evidence of this is in a passage of John which quotes Isaiah 44:18:

"But though He [Jesus] had done so many miracles before them, yet they did not believe on Him, so that the saying of Isaiah the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spoke, "Lord, who has believed our report? And to whom has the arm of the Lord been revealed?" Therefore they could not believe, because Isaiah said again, "He [God] has blinded their eyes and hardened their heart, so that they should not see with their eyes nor understand with their heart, and be converted, and I should heal them.""

John 12:37-40, MKJV

"What shall we say then? Is there not unrighteousness with God? Let it not be! For He said to Moses, "I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion." So then it is not

of the one willing, nor of the one running, but of God, the One showing mercy.”  
Romans 9:14-16, MKJV

God the Father will call those whom he wills, when he wills (John 6:44). The rest will be called later, most after their first physical life has concluded, which will be explained in the following pages, starting with how God will deal with Israel. For the most part, the general rule is that God deals with Israel first and then the nations (non-Israelites) later.

“No one can come to Me [Christ] unless the Father who has sent Me draw him, and I will raise him up at the last day [the first resurrection, of the firstfruits].” John 6:44, MKJV

“I say then, Did not God put away His people [Israel]? Let it not be said! For I also am an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin.” Romans 11:1, MKJV

The two Jehovahs are still working with physical Israelites, but only a portion of Israel at this time.

“What then? Israel [as a whole] has not obtained that which it seeks, but **the election**

**obtained it [the elect of Israel are those relatively few called and chosen now], and the rest were hardened [for now] even as it is written, "God gave to them a spirit of slumber, eyes not seeing, and ears not hearing" until this day.** And David said, "Let their table become for a snare and a trap and a stumbling block and a recompense to them. Let their eyes be darkened so that they may not see, and their back always bowing." I say then, Did they not stumble that they fall? Let it not be! But by their slipping away came salvation to the nations [non-Israelites], to provoke them to jealousy."

Romans 11:7-11, MKJV

God himself hardened the heart and closed the eyes of most of the physical Israelites, choosing only to work with a portion of them now, "the election" in the Romans 11 scripture quoted above. And God is also using the calling and election of a small percent of the non-Israelite nations now. The reason given was to provoke to jealousy the physical Israelites (which obviously has not worked).

Does this mean that God put down Israel and picked up the church? Already explained, that answer is an emphatic, "No."

"I say then, Did not God put away His people? **Let it not be said! [No! There is just a time delay in order that hard lessons are learned.]** For I also am an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin. God did not thrust out His people whom He foreknew. Or do you not know what the Scripture said in Elijah, how he pleaded with God against Israel, saying, "Lord, they killed Your prophets and dug down Your altars, and I am left alone, and they seek my life." But what does the Divine answer say to him? "I have reserved to Myself seven thousand men who have not bowed the knee to Baal." Even so then, also **in this present time a remnant according to the election of grace has come into being [a few of the physical Israelites are called now and the rest will be called later].**"

Romans 11:1-5, MKJV

God himself admits responsibility for the blinding of the vast majority of the Israelites – for now. But God can solve the problem for all of those not called and part of an election of grace, at the present time. And God can solve the problem of all of those who were mentioned in your author's list of items 1-7 above. God can heal. God can resurrect the dead. God can

heal the dead, e.g., Lazarus (John 11), bringing them back to a second physical existence.

"For I speak to you, the nations [non-physical Israelites]; since I am the apostle of the nations, I glorify my ministry; if by any means I may provoke those who are my flesh [the physical Israelites] to jealousy, and might save some of them [Why not all of them? Please keep reading]. For if their casting away is the reconciling of the world [the opening for some of the non-physical Israelites, i.e., the nations to be called to a special election of grace now], what is the reception except life from the dead? For if the firstfruit is holy [those called now to be spiritual Israelites], the lump is also holy [the balance of non-called-now physical Israelites]; and if the root is holy, also the branches. And if some of the branches were broken off [those physical Israelites not called and chosen now], and you, being a wild olive tree [those called and chosen of the non-physical Israelites now], were grafted in among them [the Israelites], and became a sharer of the root and the fatness of the olive tree with them, do not boast against the branches [the physical Israelites not yet called]. But if you boast, it is not you that bears the root, but the root bears you [God works through Israel which has the law

(instructions/directions), the covenants, etc., Romans 9:4)]. You will say then, The branches were broken off so that I might be grafted in [called and chosen now]. Well, because of unbelief they were broken off, and you stand by faith. Do not be high-minded, but fear. For if God did not spare the natural branches, fear lest He also may not spare you either! Behold then the kindness, and the severity of God; on those having fallen, severity; but on you, kindness, if you continue in the kindness [finish the divine individualism process]. Otherwise you also will be cut off. And those also, if they do not continue in unbelief, will be grafted in. **For God is able to graft them in again [the physical Israelites not called now].**"

Romans 11:13-23, MKJV

"For if you were cut out of the natural wild olive tree, and were grafted contrary to nature [nature meaning God works through physical Israel and you are not physical Israelites] into a good olive tree; how much more **these being according to nature [physical Israelites] will be grafted into their own olive-tree [to become spiritual Israelites on their way to becoming MRP divine individuals]**? For **I do not want you to be ignorant of this mystery**, brothers, lest you should be wise

within yourselves; that **blindness in part**  
**[blindness to some of the physical**  
**Israelites] has happened to Israel**  
**[admitted to be caused by God], until the**  
**fullness of the nations has comes in.** And so  
all Israel shall be saved; as it is written, "There  
shall come out of Zion the Deliverer [in the  
future per Revelation 19], and He will [then]  
turn away ungodliness from Jacob [Jeremiah  
31:33-34]. For this is My covenant with them,  
**when** [not now] I have taken away their sins." Indeed as regards the gospel, they are enemies for your sakes [not accepting Christ as Savior now]. But as regards the election, they are beloved [God still loves the physical Israelites even though they have failed him] for the fathers' sakes [Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob]. For the free gifts and calling of God are without repentance. [The New Living Translation has this sentence as: "For God's gifts and his call can never be withdrawn."] For as you also then disbelieved God, but now have been shown mercy through their disbelief, even so these also **have not believed now**, so that through your mercy they may also obtain mercy. **For God has shut up all in unbelief, so that He might show mercy to all.**" Romans 11:24-32, MKJV

The two Jehovahs (God) → shut up [virtually] all  
→ in unbelief SO THAT → they might ultimately  
show mercy to all [virtually all]

And so there we have the answer as to why so many people seem to not care very much about God, now. God has largely blinded the vast majority of mankind, now, calling only a relatively small percentage to serve as a kind of firstfruits for all of humanity. God, in particular, blinded the vast majority of the physical Israelites. This, in effect, blinded most of humanity because God works through Israel first. And if the majority of the people he works through first are blinded now, then the balance of the human race is even more so. They do not have a historical relationship with God. The physical Israelites were supposed to be a light to them, but failed. **However, God did all of this in order to show mercy TO ALL.** "To all" includes those called to a special election of grace now (whether physical Israelite or not) AND the physical Israelites not yet called AND those non-physical Israelites not yet called (the rest of humanity).

The two Jehovahs (God) → want to show → mercy to all

All = 1) those called to a special election of grace now + 2) the physical Israelites not yet called to the special election of grace + 3) the non-Israelite peoples of the other nations of the world, not yet called to the special election of grace

As your author previously pointed out there is war between Satan and God, and between Satan and mankind. In a war, communications are not normal. They cannot be or the enemy will know your plans and adjust their plans accordingly. Ergo, some of the Biblical communications are in plain text and so that part of the divine communication is readable and understandable. And some of the communications are lightly coded and understandable to some, but not others. And some of the Biblical communication is heavily coded. The heavily coded part of the Biblical communication is intended to be understood, at this time, by only a few - those called and chosen now to a special election of grace. It is even possible that some of the divine communication is not to be completely understood by any human being, for now. If so, the meaning of any such divine communication would have to be revealed by the two Jehovahs later. And so even though the Bible promises

the Holy Spirit will lead us into all truth (John 16:13), it does not say when. As your author went to great lengths to point out [earlier in *Life Charts*], all of us, including your author, are ignorant – just of different things. And all of us, whether called and chosen or not, will die not knowing some aspects of the Bible. This is why there are doctrinal disagreements, divisions within churches, etc., at the present time. It is likely we will know the rest of the story after we have been resurrected to eternal life, but not until then. At any rate, for now, the Bible clearly teaches that God has blinded the minds of most so that the two Jehovahs can ultimately show mercy to almost all. Your author says “almost all” because there are always going to be some who are recalcitrant, some who refuse to submit to the two Jehovahs and participate with them in their divine individualism process. There are at least two scriptures to help show that the two Jehovahs did not intend for men to understand exactly what they were doing because the unwitting actions of some men were necessary to help the two Jehovahs carry out their plans.

“But, we speak wisdom among those who are perfect; yet not the wisdom of this world, nor of the rulers of this world, that come to

**nothing.** But we speak **the wisdom of God in a mystery, which God has hidden,** predetermining it before the world for our glory; which none of the rulers of this world knew (for if they had known, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory)." 1 Corinthians 2:6-8, MKJV

God predetermined to hide his plan from whoever was ruling the world at the time of Christ's necessary sacrifice so they would unwittingly participate in helping to create a bridge from death to life for us, God's characters.

"But they [the nations] **do not know the plans of the LORD**, nor do they understand His counsel. For He has gathered them like the sheaf to the floor." Micah 4:12, MKJV

The Micah 4:12 scripture plainly says that the nations, non-physical Israelites, do not know the plans of the LORD and numerous places in the Bible, e.g., Romans 11 and Mark 4, show that God blinded the majority of the Israelites, too. In other words, per Romans 11:32, "God has shut up all in unbelief, so that he might show mercy to all." The word "all" in both places in the above sentence should be understood to mean "almost all." God has called some to a

special election of grace now, ergo "almost all" pertaining to the first "all" of the Romans 11:32 sentence. And there are always going to be some people who, basically, want to die, and so they will reject God even after their minds are opened to the truth for the first time. Hence, "almost all" also pertains to the last word in the sentence.

The Bible was written so that it would not be completely understood at this time. Sorry, that's the way it is. No one can tell your author that the two supreme minds in the universe could not have written what amounts to a cookbook with recipes on how to become a future MRP divine individual. They are too smart to have attempted writing the Bible to be understood and then failing in the attempt. Any who would disagree with your author can feel free to explain the widespread and heated disagreements pertaining to the Bible and its interpretation. No one argues about the meaning of a recipe in a cookbook. The meaning of a recipe is plain to anyone who can read. One just has to do what the recipe says to get the desired result. The Bible is not this way. The two Jehovahs did not want the Bible to be completely understood, now, because they were shutting up almost all in unbelief, now, because

they want to eventually have mercy to the almost all who will cooperate with them once their minds are opened in the future.

The two Jehovahs → did not write the Bible → like a cookbook containing recipes

The two Jehovahs → wanted to hide → at least some of their plans → from mankind

The Bible is partly written: 1) in plain text, 2) some is lightly coded, and 3) some is more heavily coded

Back to the physical Israelites, it is unknowable what would have happened had they not been such a nation of rebels. They continually frustrated Moses, the other prophets sent by God, e.g., Elijah, and the two Jehovahs. Therefore, **in order to save them later**, by **not having to condemn them now**, God blinded them. This sort of fits in with Ayn Rand, the atheist's, brilliant observation (in so many words): If men are not willing to think, then one must leave them to the consequences of their decisions. In other words, God let the physical Israelites and all mankind have it their way - the immoral, irrational, warring, lying, lustful, backstabbing way in order to allow men to live

out their lives and suffer hard consequences for their immoral and irrational choices. But, as of right now, this still leaves Satan ahead in the "big game."

The two Jehovahs (God) → in order to save the bulk of mankind LATER → blinded them NOW → so as to not have to condemn them NOW → for their numerous immoral + irrational choices (sins)

Let the reader remember that God works primarily through Israel first (uses Israel as a light to the world) and then works through the nations. Ultimately, the two Jehovahs want to save mankind, not condemn mankind.

"For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but so that the world might be saved through Him." John 3:17, MKJV

If God is not going to have to engage in widespread condemnation of mankind, then what is God going to do to save the day? It is obvious, from the above scriptures, that the two Jehovahs have purposely blinded the minds of most men so they would not understand the real plan of God at the time they were alive on the earth. How can God hold these blinded men

fully responsible? And, even worse, from the incorrect, mainstream, Samaritanized Christian point of view, consign all of these immoral and irrational, sinful men and women to eternal torture in a never-ending hellfire? It all seems like quite a conundrum.

The answer is that the two Jehovahs cannot hold those so blinded responsible until they remove the blindness and allow these men and women to actually hear **and really understand**, for the first time in their lives, the goal of the two Jehovahs for them, i.e., divine individualism. **Further, there is no hellfire or eternal torture that will be inflicted on anyone.** [This was already explained in the prior section, 10.5, of this book.] Continuing, the Bible shows and your author explains what the two Jehovahs are yet to do regarding the vast majority of men who have been blinded. Remember, God works through Israel first and then the nations.

Your author wrote a previous book entitled, *Go To The Healer*, where most of the solution to those seemingly spiritually lost was discussed. Ergo, your author will utilize some of this previous book, too, to help explain this part of the answer.

Some may ask one or more of the below questions:

- 1) "Has Satan substantially defeated God the Father and Jesus Christ in that most men who have ever lived have either not known or have not accepted Jesus Christ as their Savior?"
- 2) "What about all those who died before Jesus Christ came to the earth?"
- 3) "What about all those who died as babies, or were aborted?"
- 4) "What about all those who have never even heard of the name of Jesus Christ, the only name under heaven whereby men may be saved (Acts 4:10-12)?"

The two Jehovahs figured all this out a long time ago. They are not going to lose to Satan, their adversary. They want all men to be saved (2 Peter 3:9).

"The Lord is not slow concerning His promise, as some count slowness, but is long-suffering toward us, not willing that any of us

should perish, but that all of us should [eventually] come to repentance.”  
2 Peter 3:9, MKJV

As hard as this may be to believe, the answer to this seeming dilemma is a second resurrection back to physical life for those who have not willfully rejected God. This would include babies and men who lived out their lives and died without ever really understanding the plan of God. At the center of the plan of God is Jesus Christ’s role in living a sinless life and then dying a sacrificial death for mankind and then being resurrected as the firstborn among many (**not a comparatively few**) brethren. It would also include those whom God has blinded. Very few men who have ever lived have actually known the plan of God and then willfully rejected God and eternal life. In other words, very few men have come to know the plan of God and rejected it – thus preferring to pay the death penalty for their own sins themselves and therefore preferring to be dead for all eternity. Most have just lived out their physical lives and then died, not really knowing Jesus Christ or the plan of God. God is going to resurrect them back to physical life, teach them so they understand the plan of salvation, and most will then accept Jesus Christ as Savior and

ultimately become part of those who are subsequently resurrected to eternal life. They will not be in the first resurrection, but they will live on into eternity as MRP unique divine individuals [through a second resurrection process].

Ezekiel 37 speaks to God resurrecting the dead Israelites back to physical life and then bringing them back to their own land so they can finally learn the plan of salvation. While this chapter speaks directly to Israel, it is clear that God is going to also resurrect others, non-Israelites, back to physical life as well. [This is similar to Jeremiah 31 being addressed only to Israel, but the New Covenant obviously applies to people of all nations. Once again, Israel first, then the nations.] This is so that all men who have ever lived can also finally learn the plan of salvation and have a very fair chance to ultimately be given eternal life. God is not a respecter of persons in this regard (Acts 10:34).

"The hand of the LORD was upon me [Ezekiel], and carried me out in the spirit of the LORD, and set me down in the midst of the valley which was full of bones, And caused me to pass by them round about: and, behold, there were very many in the open valley; and, lo, they

were very dry. And he said unto me, Son of man, can these bones live? And I answered, O Lord GOD, thou knowest. Again he said unto me, Prophesy upon these bones, and say unto them, O ye dry bones, hear the word of the LORD. Thus saith the Lord GOD unto these bones; Behold, I will cause breath to enter into you, and ye shall live: And I will lay sinews upon you, and will bring up flesh upon you, and cover you with skin, and put breath in you, and ye shall live [this is clearly a resurrection back to a second physical fleshly life]; and **ye shall know that I am the LORD.** [They will finally know God the Father and Jesus Christ and their plan of salvation.] So I prophesied as I was commanded: and as I prophesied, there was a noise, and behold a shaking, and the bones came together, bone to his bone. And when I beheld, lo, the sinews and the flesh came up upon them, and the skin covered them above: but there was no breath in them. Then said he unto me, Prophesy unto the wind, prophesy, son of man, and say to the wind, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe upon these slain, that they may live [physically again]. So I prophesied as he commanded me, and the breath came into them, and they lived, and stood up upon their feet, an exceeding great army. Then he said

unto me, Son of man, these bones are **the whole house of Israel** [this is the solution to the Romans chapters 9-11 "problem"]: behold, they say, Our bones are dried, and our hope is lost [In other words, metaphorically-speaking, we lived once already and physically died; we did not do what we should have done while we were alive and so we are without hope. They are wrong]: we are cut off for our parts [we sinned and are lost – wrong again]. Therefore prophesy and say unto them, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, O my people, I will open your graves, and cause you to come up out of your graves, and bring you into the land of Israel. [It is very clear that God is speaking of bringing dead Israelites back to physical life again and bringing them into the Promised Land where they belong.] **And ye shall know that I am the LORD** [the purpose of bringing the dead Israelites back to physical life is to help them finally know the LORD and to know his plan of salvation for them], when I have opened your graves, O my people, and brought you up out of your graves, And shall put my spirit in you [spiritual conversion], and ye shall live, and I shall place you in your own land: then shall ye know that I the LORD have spoken it, and performed it, saith the LORD."

Ezekiel 37:1-14, KJV

The two Jehovahs use → 1) blinding the majority of mankind now (Romans 11:32) + 2) a time delay + 3) a second physical life for those not called to a special election of grace now (Ezekiel 37, using Israel to typify all mankind) (those who are called to the special election of grace, now, need no second physical life as they will already have been changed in the first resurrection and will already be eternally saved) + 4) the opening of the minds of those previously blinded (or oblivious) to the truth of Jesus Christ as Savior and the plan of God + 5) the individual's repentance and acceptance of Jesus Christ as Savior (Acts 2:38) + 6) the giving of the Holy Spirit (Ezekiel 37:14) + 7) the divine individualism process → to convert and save (show mercy) to all (almost all)

"And David My servant shall be King over them. And there shall be one Shepherd to all of them. And they shall walk in My judgments, and obey My laws [finally follow God's instructions], and do them." Ezekiel 37:24, MKJV

David is resurrected as a MRP divine being, in the first resurrection, and told to reign over these physical Israelites (verse 24). They will

be taught the intent of the laws, how to worship the two Jehovahs, that Jesus Christ is Savior, etc. This will take a period of time, as learning is one concept at a time into one mind at a time. Then they will be given a period of time to apply the instruction (follow the directions) of the law in their lives. This takes time and effort and they will be given that time. Verse 25 of Ezekiel 37 mentions they shall dwell in the land (live in the land as physical human beings). There is no point to a spiritually resurrected David reigning over physically resurrected men if those men are just going to be given a basic explanation of Jesus Christ as Savior, the plan of God, etc., and then told to choose. After their choice they will need time, and a king to guide them, in God's way. They will need time to follow the divine instructions. David will have been resurrected, in part, to serve as their king in helping to teach and guide them. It is not just a resurrection of the Israelites and the nations back to a second physical life, giving them an up or down choice, as it were, and then their judgment. They will be judged by how well they apply the instructions now that they finally understand the real context of the human situation. They will no longer be deceived, or in fear, or too young, etc. Those badly damaged in this life will almost certainly be healed (Isaiah 35:6) so they are fit

to understand and properly function. Further, children who died will need to grow up to at least some level of adulthood to be held fully responsible for their choices and actions. Those of the nations, resurrected back to a second physical life, will likely be placed back into their native lands and be ruled over and taught by some of those MRP divine beings who were, like David, in the first resurrection (Revelation 20:6).

The two Jehovahs (God) will use → a second physical life → to grant a first real spiritual chance → to those not called now to a special election of grace

The resurrection back to a second physical life is not too hard of a problem for the two Jehovahs. All men who were not called now to know, understand, and participate with the two Jehovahs in their divine individualism process will simply be resurrected back to a physical life, healed, and clearly taught the real plan of God.

In order to further show that the physically resurrected Israelites depict the entire human race, Ezekiel 16 even records that the citizens of Sodom, the poster child of evil, will be restored (back to physical life for a chance at salvation).

Ezekiel 16 has an entire passage of scripture criticizing Jerusalem (the southern two tribes of Israel), Samaria (the northern ten tribes of Israel), and Sodom. When they are all restored back to a second physical life and given the chance to hear and clearly understand the plan of salvation, they will respond. Even though the two Jehovahs will forgive them, they will remember what they did in their first physical life, and be ashamed. Remember, God judged and destroyed the people of Sodom for their evil already (Genesis 19:24-25, 29). If they have already had their one chance, blew it, and then there is the final judgment, there is no point in resurrecting them back to a second physical life.

"You [speaking specifically to the Jews here, but applying to all men] will remember your sins and cover your mouth in silence and shame  
**when I forgive you of all that you have done**, says the Sovereign LORD.""  
Ezekiel 16:63, NLT

"As surely as I live, says the Sovereign LORD, Sodom and her daughters were never as wicked as you and your daughters [the Jews, Jerusalem, the Southern two tribes, verse 2]. Sodom's sins were pride, laziness, and gluttony, while the poor and needy suffered outside her

door. **She was proud and did loathsome things, so I wiped her out**, as you have seen. "Even Samaria [the Northern ten tribes of Israel] did not commit half your sins. You have done far more loathsome things than your sisters ever did. They seem righteous compared to you! You should be deeply ashamed because your sins are so terrible. In comparison, you make your sisters seem innocent! "But **someday I will restore the fortunes of Sodom** and Samaria, and I will restore you, too. Then you will be truly ashamed of everything you have done, for your sins make them feel good in comparison. **Yes, your sisters, Sodom and Samaria, and all their people will be restored, and at that time you also will be restored.** In your proud days you held Sodom in contempt. But now your greater wickedness has been exposed to all the world, and you are the one who is scorned ... "

Ezekiel 16:48-57, NLT

When the physical Israelites, and those others of the nations (depicted by Sodom, of all people, above), are resurrected back to a second physical life and have the plan of God explained to them, most will repent, and God will "forgive you of all that you have done." However, they will remember their own sins and

past ways from their first physical life and be ashamed, as they should be. Since Sodom, one of the most despicable places ever to exist on the earth, such that it was destroyed by fire and brimstone from heaven (Genesis 19:24-25, 29), is prophesied to have its inhabitants physically resurrected, God wanting to forgive these evil men from the past could not be more clear. If God can physically resurrect the residents of Sodom, one of THE prototype evil cities ever, and forgive them after they repent, God can forgive your loved ones, too. Your loved ones are almost certainly not lost. You will not be living on into eternity with a gaping hole in your heart. Do not bet on Satan. Bet on the two Jehovahs. Further, Sodom, Judah, and Samaria all having their fortunes restored will, once again, take a period of time. It will take years. The second resurrection judgment time period is not just a simple tell them the truth and having those so told accept Jesus and be saved.

Since the two Jehovahs → are willing to forgive → the residents of Sodom → they are willing to forgive your loved ones, too

Bet on the two Jehovahs → reject Satan

Satan may think he is winning, or has won, but it is more like half-time of the big game. The two Jehovahs are not going to lose to Satan. All will eventually have a chance to really know God the Father and Jesus Christ and their plan of salvation. And most will repent of their sins and rebellion and accept Jesus Christ as Savior and receive the gift of the Holy Spirit (Acts 2:38). **Eventually, at a time of God's choosing, they will also be resurrected to eternal life, thus avoiding the second death** (Revelation 20:14) - a permanent eternal death. God the Father, Jesus Christ, and most of mankind are going to win. Satan and death are going to lose.

A second physical life → allows for the first real spiritual chance → and thus helps to avoid → the second death (a permanent eternal death)

The second resurrection → a second physical life + comprehensive healing (when necessary) + clearly being taught the plan of God + a time period long enough where people can demonstrate yielding to and cooperation with the two Jehovahs (a time period long enough so that fortunes can be restored) (a time period long enough for resurrected children to come of age and personally make a responsible decision)

The second resurrection process → a second physical life → leading to spiritual conversion of almost all + another spiritual resurrection at a time of the two Jehovahs' choosing (the second spiritual resurrection) → those so spiritually resurrected at the time of the two Jehovahs' choosing → will become → incorruptible eternal spirit beings (like those human firstfruits changed through the first resurrection)

All of the above is the substantive meaning of the Last Great Day holy day (Leviticus 23:36, 39). Those thought lost will be resurrected back to a second physical life and be given their first real chance at understanding the plan of God and the only name under heaven whereby men can be saved, Jesus Christ. They will be given a period of time to learn and apply the divine law instructions / directions. It is, quite literally, a second physical life, but their first chance at accepting Jesus Christ as Savior. They will ultimately be judged by how well they do during that time period, also depicted in Revelation 20:11-13:

"And I saw a great white throne, and Him sitting on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away. And a place was not found for

them. And I saw the dead, the small and the great, stand before God. And the books were opened, and another book was opened, which is the Book of Life. And the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead in it. And death and hell delivered up the dead in them. [Whether someone was buried in the sea or in the ground they will be resurrected back to physical life.] And each one of them was judged according to their works.”  
Revelation 20:11-13, MKJV

This is their second physical life, but their first real chance at salvation, and their first and final judgment. With Satan bound, their eyes open for the first time, physical and other healing available, including the receiving of the Holy Spirit, it is very likely that the vast majority will repent of their sins, accept Jesus Christ as Savior, and cooperate with the two Jehovahs in their divine individualism process. In short, virtually every human being who has ever lived will finally make it. It really will be a Last Great Day when they are resurrected to eternal life as unique MRP divine beings via the ultimate spiritual transformational part of the second resurrection. They are just getting there a bit

later than the [Category Two] firstfruits, after a time delay."

The second resurrection process → commences with human beings being resurrected back to a second physical life → and ends with → those who accept the two Jehovahs and cooperate with them being → ultimately transformed into eternal incorruptible spirit beings (this spiritual end point of the second resurrection will be at a time of the two Jehovahs' choosing)

God may have "let Johnny die," but that is not the end of the story. The two Jehovahs have allowed many men and woman, priceless in value and filled with potential, to die. But Christ is also the God of the uncalled dead. And he will save them. Your loved ones are not lost forever; they are asleep waiting the second resurrection. This is true for the rebel Israelites, as well as the nations who never even knew the God of the Bible in the first place. God's Strange Plan, with its incredible second resurrection solution, will allow for tens of billions of human beings, those thought lost, to become incorruptible eternal spirit beings. The vast majority of the human race will win. Satan and his evil followers will lose. The below scripture pertains to Jacob seeing his Israelite

descendants someday, and being pleased. The second resurrection, represented by the Last Great Day holy day, provides the mechanism for it to become a reality.

"Therefore so says the LORD, who redeemed Abraham, concerning the house of Jacob: Jacob shall not now be ashamed, nor shall his face now become pale. But when he sees his children, the work of My hands, in his midst, they shall sanctify My name, and sanctify the Holy one of Jacob, and shall fear the God of Israel. Those who erred in spirit shall come to understanding, and those who murmured shall learn doctrine." Isaiah 29:22-24, MKJV

This will also be true for the peoples of the non-Israelite nations, if they will just humbly cooperate with the two Jehovahs. Most will.

Can you imagine the joy and relief and wonder when families are brought back to life, healed, and told the true plan of God? Long lost friends, parents, children, and Grandma will be "found" (resurrected back to physical life again) and healed. There will be no religious or metaphysical or philosophical confusion about right and wrong, true and false, holy and profane, etc. God's unity of the package of

values that pertain to life will be taught. People will be taught values, choices, and consequences and told they need to change their values and most will. In short, people will just have to admit they were wrong and change. Isaiah 29:24, quoted above, shows that people will need to learn doctrine, which takes an extended period of time. This is because each man and each woman learns one concept at a time, over time. The doctrine-learning process is one concept at a time into one mind at a time. They will be given the chance to learn and to practice what they have learned and they will also be given the necessary healing, the forgiveness, and the help of the Holy Spirit to demonstrate a changed life.

To end this important section, your author wants to provide additional information pertaining to those who refuse to cooperate with the two Jehovahs and instead choose ... eternal death. Back in section 10.5 your author pointed out that Psalm 37:34 showed the following:

"Wait on the LORD, and **keep His way**, and He shall lift you up to inherit the earth; when the wicked are cut off, you shall see it."  
Psalms 37:34, MKJV

The implication of the above Psalm, culminating in the pointed statement in verse 34, is that "the good guys" should take comfort because when "the bad guys" are permanently destroyed ("cut off"), you good guys shall see it. The second resurrection, obviously preceding the third resurrection, allows for this to be true. At the end of the Last Great Day time period, the length of which is unspecified in the Bible, and after the second spiritual resurrection, again the time when this will occur is also unspecified in the Bible, all of the good guys, those eternally changed to incorruptible spirit beings in either the first or second spiritual resurrections, will finally exist. They would then all be available to witness the event known as the third resurrection. The third resurrection encompasses: 1) a resurrection back to physical life of the "bad guys," 2) followed by all of the bad guys being judged and found guilty, and 3) then the bad guys are put to eternal death. The third resurrection itself is depicted in Revelation 20:13-15.

The Book Of Life → contains the names of those individuals → who are in the first resurrection AND those who are in the spiritual second resurrection

"And the sea gave up the dead in it. And death and hell delivered up the dead in them. And each one of them was judged according to their works. And death and hell were cast into the Lake of Fire. **This is the second death.** And if anyone was not found having been written in the Book of Life, he was cast into the Lake of Fire [to be put to eternal death]."

Revelation 20:13-15, MKJV

Those readers paying close attention might note that your author used Revelation 20, verse 13 with the events depicted in both the second and the third resurrections. This is because it is evidently a swing verse, so to speak, applying as the case may be to either those participating in the second or the third resurrection. In other words, God just used one verse depicting what had to be done to resurrect human beings back to physical life so they could be given their first real chance at salvation if they were being resurrected in the second resurrection, or a period of time later, if they were being resurrected back to physical life via the third resurrection in order to be finally judged not worthy of continued existence and then eternally exterminated.

## **10.7 Man's point of view regarding The Tragedy of Being**

Men and women have a point of view regarding how hard life is and it usually negatively impacts their image of God, or even their willingness to believe in a God. Please allow your author a little latitude as he paints with somewhat of a broad brush. There are, at a minimum, two big viewpoints concerning The Tragedy of Being your author wishes to discuss in this section of the book.

The first such viewpoint is the secular viewpoint. For the hardcore secular people, the very idea of a non-provable God is a nonstarter. Such people dismiss the idea that God created the universe; we are simply evolved animals, in essence, a "happy" accident. But since no one really disputes the substance of Being as having become tragic, our existence does not seem to be such a "happy" accident. Our shared existence seems miserable, at least for billions of humans. For the less hardcore secular people, that your author will define as those at least potentially open to the idea of a Creator God, The Tragedy of Being itself almost "proves" that no such God could exist – at least not a good God. That there has been so much

historically documented human suffering, combined with widespread ongoing human suffering, combined with our own personal existential suffering, shows to them that God must not exist. No good God could be so ... \_\_\_\_\_ (fill in the blank). That is, God gets indicted by one or more of the following ... let's term the below, **A Secular Listing Of God's Indictable Offenses:**

Unloving  
Uncaring  
Lazy  
Stupid or unwise or foolish  
Impotent (God is not strong enough to fix "x")  
Negligent  
Worthless  
Unforgiving  
Petty  
Vindictive  
Affectionless  
Callous, cold, or even cruel  
Incompetent  
Evil  
Etc.

Ergo, since God is "clearly guilty" of one or more of the above indictable offenses, God must not exist. Or, God exists but is a very bad God.

Extending their “thought” process (“since mankind is on its own”), the secular tend to emphasize man (Secular Humanism) and focus on how to “perfect” our human nature and our shared existence, attempting as it were to fix The Tragedy of Being as much as is possible. Unfortunately, the fact that the secular humanists want to use force on others only makes the problems they are attempting to solve worse. Further, concentrating power in the hands of a select few at the helm of governments only makes things worse still, because government does not have the information that price signals provide and those price signals only come when men and women are free and are actively trading private property amongst themselves. The secular tend to focus their “solutions” as concentrated power forcing things to be “made right.” The secular tend to behave as if they do not understand that numerous individuals value, they make choices based on their values, and then those choices have real world consequences. Power does not solve people with bad values making bad choices, and experiencing bad consequences, in so doing making The Tragedy of Being more tragic. It cannot. Power cannot force people to think, particularly about their values. Power can

disrupt producers and take what they produce and transfer part of what is taken to other men, but that does not make The Tragedy of Being better for the honest producers, only for the non-productive recipients of government transfer mechanisms. **Applied power cannot solve The Tragedy of Being.** Further still, for all of the reasons written in the first chapters of this book, if there is no divine law and there is also at the same time a widespread disregard for the secular standard of the right of respecting others' individual natural rights, then there is no "good." There are only empty moral assertions; not an external standard of what good is. Lastly, not to belabor what your author covered in the earlier chapters of this book, if there is no God, then life itself is pointless, substantially without long-term meaning and purpose. The secular hate The Tragedy of Being and some of them hate it, not just because of the pain and suffering that they and their fellow man experience, they deep down hate it because it means to them there is no God. And that makes life empty and hopeless.

For purposes of your author, the second broad viewpoint regarding The Tragedy of Being is a Samaritanized Christian religious point of view. In addition to possibly (at weak

moments) believing one or more of the list of indictment points enumerated above, religious people can become afraid of God and afraid of life. They can become afraid of God for many reasons, usually because something really bad has happened to them, and then the resulting injury makes them question ... let's call the below, **A Religious Listing Of God's Indictable Offenses:**

God's love or lack thereof

God's existence (have I wasted my life serving a non-existent God?)

If God actually forgave me for my sins

If God really does have "a perfect plan for my life"

If God has failed them or if they have failed God

If God is a good father

If Jesus Christ is competent to be the head of the church

Because life is so hard, what can happen if someone with a religious viewpoint experiences

deeply hurtful personal tragedy, is they can walk through the items on the religious "indictment list" enumerated just above and wonder if God is indeed "guilty" of some or all of the points. Further, they can also hold God "guilty" of one or more of the items on "A Secular Listing Of God's Indictable Offenses," listed earlier in this section. Sometimes things can get so bad that a Christian can question almost everything about God, particularly his goodness. And because religious people want to believe that "God will not fail you," it is hard when it seems like he has done just that – failed us. Job served God, but suffered greatly. His lament below sums up what can happen to our state of mind, even to one of the best of us.

"Is this not the struggle of all humanity? A person's life is long and hard, like that of a hired hand, like a worker who longs for the day to end, like a servant waiting to be paid. I, too, have been assigned months of futility, long and weary nights of misery. When I go to bed, I think, 'When will it be morning?' But the night drags on, and I toss till dawn. My skin is filled with worms and scabs. My flesh breaks open, full of pus. "My days are swifter than a weaver's shuttle flying back and forth. They end without hope." Job 7:1-6, NLT

"I would rather die of strangulation than go on and on like this. I hate my life. I do not want to go on living. Oh, leave me alone for these few remaining days. "What are mere mortals, that you should make so much of us? For you examine us every morning and test us every moment. Why won't you leave me alone--even for a moment? Have I sinned? What have I done to you, O watcher of all humanity? Why have you made me your target? Am I a burden to you? Why not just pardon my sin and take away my guilt? For soon I will lie down in the dust and die. When you look for me, I will be gone."'"  
Job 7:15-21, NLT

"What do you gain by oppressing me? Why do you reject me, the work of your own hands, while sending joy and prosperity to the wicked?" Job 10:3, NLT

""I am innocent, but it makes no difference to me--I despise my life. Innocent or wicked, it is all the same to him. That is why I say, 'He destroys both the blameless and the wicked.' He laughs when a plague suddenly kills the innocent. The whole earth is in the hands of the wicked, and God blinds the eyes of the judges

and lets them be unfair. If not he, then who?"  
Job 9:21-24, NLT

""O God, you have ground me down and  
devastated my family." Job 16:7, NLT

The Tragedy of Being is painful to experience and it is also painful just to even be aware of. The secular despair and lack real hope. The religious can fall victim to seeing it as some sort of a never-ending Torture Chamber, run by a cruel and uncaring God. Where is the love in that? And since so many religious people do not understand the second resurrection, they are also worried about their "eternally lost" loved ones – those who have not cared much, if at all, about religion. Those so worried about certainly did not practice the Christian faith very much, if at all, while alive and now they are dead. Even for the religious, The Tragedy of Being and all of its ramifications is a lot for a caring human being to spiritually, mentally, and emotionally process. It can short-circuit our attempt to have a good relationship with God. And it can scare us into not even being 100% certain that we want an eternal relationship with a being that would set up and run what amounts to a Torture Chamber – from our human and limited point of view. In short, our faith can be shaken due to

the ongoing pain experienced via The Tragedy of Being.

One other point your author wants to make before closing this section is to briefly provide an explanation regarding the verbal exclamation, "Why does everything always have to happen to me?" If we have not said it, it is very likely that each one of us has at least thought it. The reason we feel this way is because we take in information through our personal-to-us five senses. The information taken in, and our emotional and mental responses to what has happened, is individually existential, i.e., personal and important to us. In this sense, the above exclamation is true, everything we take in through our five senses and how we react to it is always happening to us – from our limited point of view. However, because human experiences tend to be somewhat common, e.g., falling in love, missing out on love, getting married, having children, sickness, experiencing the death of a close friend or family member, etc., it is not really true that "everything always happens to me." We can momentarily forget that billions of others have experienced something very similar, if not almost exact ... and they, too, had to react to The Tragedy of Being striking home.

## **10.8 God's point of view regarding The Tragedy of Being**

Whatever is truly necessary is not unwise. As difficult as it is to watch your creation suffer, it is evidently a sad necessity for both of the two Jehovahs. When they gave the angels free will, a possibility arose that one or more of the angels would turn against the two Jehovahs. It happened. When the two Jehovahs gave man free will, there was an even greater possibility that man would turn against the two Jehovahs. It also happened. A general law that can be observed from how the two Jehovahs structured their creation is as follows:

When **anything** comes into conflict with free will  
→ free will wins

The general law stated, the two Jehovahs also have free will and can step in and use their free will at a time, a place, and in a way of their own choosing. For example, some of the angels are in bad-angel jail right now (2 Peter 2:4). Because the granting of free will, plus minds, plus time was necessary for the two Jehovahs to achieve their goal, it was a very distinct possibility at least one being would err, i.e., sin,

and set off a chain reaction of bad and hurtful consequences. In other words, The Tragedy of Being does not surprise the two Jehovahs.

Another general law that can be observed could be considered a social science, causal chain sequence:

Values → choices → consequences

If angels adopt bad values, and evidently about one-third of them have (Revelation 12:3-4), bad choices, and then bad consequences ensue. If men adopt bad values, and all of us have (except Jesus Christ when he was on the earth), then bad choices and bad consequences also ensue. And then the two Jehovahs get blamed for the negative consequences. A reminder of what your author wrote earlier might prove helpful right here:

God → is NOT guilty → of sin

God → is guilty → of granting each man a mind

God → is guilty → of granting free will

God → is guilty → of giving each contingent being (man + angels) → so much time

God → is guilty → of patience

The goal of the two Jehovahs for man is to use a divine individualism process to create divine individuals. The human beings who are successfully healed and spiritually transformed at either the first or the second resurrection will become incorruptible, eternal, spirit beings and each one of them will have learned how important it is to be moral, reasonable (rational and balanced), productive, and socially adept – able to get along with God and others. To start with a human being and end up with an incorruptible, eternal, divine individual, complete with that individual's retention of their personality, interests, sense of humor, etc., is not a small undertaking. It is a very complicated and time-consuming process of long-term creation involving complex life. Each human being is complex animal life and all of this is further complicated by the grant of a mind, free will, and time. Man is far above the animals; any assertion to the contrary is gross ignorance or an evil agenda to belittle valuable man.

The two Jehovahs had a pretty good idea that something would go wrong along the way.

If and when it did, they knew suffering would be involved, both for them and for man. The two Jehovahs would have to watch The Tragedy of Being unfold, endure the suffering they would both witness and feel, and press on. And it was decided that if something went wrong that Jehovah number two, the Word, would come to the earth as Jesus Christ to save the day (see Revelation 13:8, quoted just below). In doing so he, too, would suffer firsthand for the bad choices and bad values of others.

"And all dwelling on the earth will worship it [the end-time beast], those whose names have not been written in the Book of Life of the Lamb [Jesus Christ] slain, from the foundation of the world." Revelation 13:8, MKJV

The Bible has numerous scriptures pertaining to Jesus Christ suffering, as well as his followers. The below are several of them:

"For you [followers of Christ] were not called to this? For **Christ also suffered on our behalf**, leaving us an example, that you should follow His steps, He who did no sin, nor was guile found in His mouth, who when He was reviled did not revile in return. When He suffered, He did not threaten, but gave Himself

up to Him who judges righteously. He Himself bore our sins in His own body on the tree, that dying to sins, we might live to righteousness; by whose stripes you were healed. For you were as sheep going astray, but now you are turned to the Shepherd and Overseer of your souls."

1 Peter 2:21-25, MKJV

"But if you also suffer for righteousness' sake, you are blessed. And do not fear their fear, nor be troubled, but sanctify the Lord God in your hearts, and be ready always to give an answer to everyone who asks you a reason of the hope in you, with meekness and fear; having a good conscience, that while they speak against you as evildoers they may be shamed, those falsely accusing your good behavior in Christ. For it is better, if the will of God wills it, to suffer for well-doing than for evil-doing. For Christ also once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that He might bring us to God, indeed being put to death in the flesh, but made alive in the Spirit;" 1 Peter 3:14-18, MKJV

"So then, since Christ suffered physical pain, you must arm yourselves with the same attitude he had, and be ready to suffer, too. For if you are willing to suffer for Christ, you have decided to stop sinning. And you won't spend the rest of

your life chasing after evil desires, but you will be anxious to do the will of God. You have had enough in the past of the evil things that godless people enjoy--their immorality and lust, their feasting and drunkenness and wild parties, and their terrible worship of idols."

1 Peter 4:1-3, NLT

Jesus Christ suffered when he came to this earth. The two Jehovahs knew that due to sin there would be an element of suffering that all human beings would have to experience. The two Jehovahs are not above what they ask man to endure. They have suffered from watching us suffer and Jesus Christ physically suffered, too. The Bible even talks about creation itself suffering along with us while it waits for God to finish the divine individualism process, a big part of his strange plan. Your author will quote the same passage from two different translations below:

"For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the coming glory to be revealed in us. For the earnest expectation of the creation waits for the manifestation of the sons of God. For the creation was not willingly subjected to vanity, but because of Him who subjected it on hope

that the creation itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. And we know that the whole creation groans and travails in pain together until now. And not only so, but ourselves also, who have the firstfruit of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, awaiting adoption, the redemption of our body. For we are saved by hope. But hope that is seen is not hope; for what anyone sees, why does he also hope for it? But if we hope for that which we do not see, then we wait for it with patience." Romans 8:18-25, MKJV

"Yet what we suffer now is nothing compared to the glory he will give us later. For all creation is waiting eagerly for that future day when God will reveal who his children really are. Against its will, everything on earth was subjected to God's curse. All creation anticipates the day when it will join God's children **in glorious freedom from death and decay.** For we know that all creation has been groaning as in the pains of childbirth right up to the present time. And even we Christians, although we have the Holy Spirit within us as a foretaste of future glory, also groan to be released from pain and suffering. We, too, wait anxiously for that day when God will give us our full rights as his children,

including the new bodies he has promised us. Now that we are saved, we eagerly look forward to this freedom. For if you already have something, you don't need to hope for it. But if we look forward to something we don't have yet, we must wait patiently and confidently."

Romans 8:18-25, NLT

God's point of view regarding The Tragedy of Being is that the sufferings of the present time are not worthy to be compared to the glory that shall be revealed in us (Romans 8:18).

The two Jehovahs are thinking long-term and they actually have the ability, unlike human pseudo-leaders mouthing platitudes, to do the greatest good for the greatest number. All they need is cooperation from each of us. One day, they will get it from most people. For those men and women who finally do end up cooperating with the two Jehovahs, they will be healed and given new spirit bodies at the resurrection. And then the pain and suffering phase of the two Jehovahs' complex creation process will be over. As a word of advice for those effectively called and chosen now:

"Therefore be humbled under the mighty hand of God, so that He may exalt you in due

time, casting all your anxiety onto Him, for He cares for you." 1 Peter 5:6-7, MKJV

It is true that God cursed the earth as recorded in Genesis 3:14-19. God also cursed women and men. And so now mankind will learn both good and evil from our choices. This brings us back to what your author taught in the earlier section 3.6: the law of responsibility and the law of solidarity ascertained and explained by the French economist Frederic Bastiat. This section is incorporated herein by reference. For the reader's ease, below are a few key paragraphs detailing those teachings because they fit right here.

Bastiat's central idea of "**the law of responsibility**" is that if someone errs they will receive in return negative feedback (blowback). They will experience a bad result and this psychic loss (and perhaps financial loss, too) will teach them to be more responsible in the future.

The idea behind Bastiat's "**the law of solidarity**" is that other people's errors can flow over into our lives and hurt us, too. Once again, the Bible seems to confirm the law of solidarity, per the below:

"But if you bite and devour one another, take heed that you are not consumed by one another." Galatians 5:15, MKJV

Governments and social reformers should NOT attempt to shift where the loss falls from irresponsible actions. Otherwise, they will prolong bad behavior and choices, in addition to becoming instruments of injustice. In short, thinking they are helping people in need of help, they shift the losses from the irresponsible to innocents and hurt everyone in the process. Beyond this "Executive Summary" your author will mainly let Bastiat speak for himself – as he so eloquently does [emphasis mine throughout]:

"For the laws of Providence [God] to be considered as harmonious, it is not necessary that they exclude evil. It is enough that evil have its explanation and purpose, that it be self-limiting, and that **every [resulting] pain be the means of preventing greater pain by eliminating whatever caused it** [whether the cause be bad values, an immoral choice or ignorance, etc.]. Society is composed of men and every man is a free [moral] agent. Since man is free, he can choose; since he can choose, he can err; since he can err, he can suffer. All error breeds suffering and this

suffering either falls upon the one who has erred, in which case it sets in operation **the law of responsibility**, or else it strikes innocent parties, in which case it sets in motion **the law of solidarity.**" ... "The action of these laws, combined with the ability that has been given us of seeing the connection between cause and effect, must bring us back, by the very fact of suffering, to the path of righteousness and truth [morality and rationality]. ... But in order that evil (suffering) should fulfill this mission, we must not stretch Solidarity artificially, so as to destroy Responsibility – in other words, we must respect Liberty [the freedom of the individual must be respected which is why the two Jehovahs granted men liberty – free will].

Should human institutions step in to oppose in this respect the divine laws, evil would not the less flow from error, only it would shift its position. **It would strike those whom it ought not to strike.** It would be no longer a warning and a monitor. It would no longer have the tendency to diminish and die away by its own proper action. Its action would be continued, and increase, as would happen in the physiological world if the imprudences and excesses of the men of one hemisphere were

felt in their unhappy effects only by the inhabitants of the opposite hemisphere."

... "But in order that experience should afford us this lesson, in order that it should fulfill its mission, develop foresight, explain the series of consequences that flow from our actions, pave the way to good habits, and restrain bad ones - in a word, in order that experience should become an effective instrument of progress and moral improvement-the law of Responsibility must come into operation. The bad consequences must make themselves felt, and evil must for the moment chastise us.

Undoubtedly it would be better that evil had no existence; and it might perhaps be so if man was constituted differently from what he is. But taking man as he is, with his wants, his desires, his sensibility, his free will, his power of choosing and erring, his faculty of bringing into play a cause that necessarily entails consequences that it is not in our power to elude as long as the cause exists; in such circumstances, the only way of removing the cause is to enlighten the will, rectify the choice, abandon the vicious act or the vicious habit; and nothing can effect this but the law of Responsibility."

Experience → has a mission → to learn cause and effect + to develop **future foresight** → that is to improve human choices so as to eliminate the primary cause of evil → wrong choices stemming from bad values

If a man will not think, or he is determined to choose and take actions based on bad values, that man must be left to the consequences of his decisions. This is what God has done with the human race, thus far. It is true that God cursed the earth, but this was a result of Adam and Eve sinning against him. Man was no longer entitled to live in the Garden of Eden; he was to be forced to learn the consequences of his choices, based on bad values. When Adam and Eve ate from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, God in essence said, "Ok. Have it your way." God did not really elaborate at that point in time what "have it your way" really meant, or just whose values having it your way entailed. Your author will point this out now.

There are two basic differentiated sets of values extant in the universe. One set is composed of the unity of the package of values that pertain to life of the two Jehovahs. This set of values has already been elaborated earlier in

this book and pertain to ultimately achieving an abundant eternal life. The other set is composed of Satan's force and fraud value system. Each set of values and the choices based thereon has a cascading and compounding set of consequences.

Satan uses force (e.g., murder, killing, war, and other aspects of bullying like extortions and blackmail, etc.) and fraud (lies, rigged contests, corrupt philosophies, confusion, corruption of definitions and languages, etc.) as values to attempt to achieve his goals. So does his willfully evil spiritual seedline of dedicated followers.

"You [those of the spiritual seedline of Satan] are of the Devil as father, and the lusts of your father you will do. **He was a murderer** from the beginning, and did not abide in the truth because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks of his own, for **he is a liar and the father of it.**" John 8:44, MKJV

What Satan does not get, or is trying to delay as long as possible is this paraphrase of Matthew 25:52: "All who live by the sword (force) will die by the sword (superior force)." What Satan also does not get, or care about is this:

"For nothing is secret that shall not be revealed; nor secret which shall not be known and come to be revealed." Luke 8:17, MKJV

The two Jehovahs are going to expose the workings of Satan and his followers and there is not going to be any place left for them to hide when they do. But for now, what the two Jehovahs have allowed mankind to experience, and we have, is the following:

We have followed a murderer in a vain attempt to have an abundant life

We have followed a liar in a vain attempt to know truth

And there are consequences to such foolishness for all of us. The two Jehovahs are allowing man to learn from both good and evil. And the evil hurts. Adam and Eve picked of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil and so the two Jehovahs are allowing us **to experientially learn** from this choice made for all of us. The consequences of the difference between the two sets of values are highlighted in the below scripture:

"The thief [Satan] does not come except to steal and to kill and to destroy. I [Jesus] have come so that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly."

John 10:10, MKJV

Since man has eaten of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, your author will bullet some points in a sequence of teaching, some of which is a recap of things taught earlier in this book:

Many people see the horrible evils that exist in the world and decide one of two things must be true – this is because of the very existence of evil: 1) God must be bad or he would stop the evil – and I don't want anything to do with a bad God, or 2) God is reasoned out of existence - there can't be a God because evil exists.

But, God is not responsible for evil.

Evil comes from Satan's value system, not God's.

In other words, God is not guilty of evil.

The contingent being, whether an angel or a man, who makes a wrong choice, is responsible for the evil that ensues.

Angels and men were given FREE WILL.

The Executive Summary:

God is not guilty of evil.

God is “guilty” of free will.

Being guilty of free will is NOT the same thing as being guilty of evil.

Whatever is truly necessary is not unwise.

It was truly necessary for God to give men and angels free will because God does not want people-bots or angel-bots.

We experience a lot of things as we go through life.

Interestingly, we tend to experience BOTH good and bad (evil) from the exact same people, events, and things.

Examples of this would be a garden, a child/parent/spouse, or a job. Sometimes the garden gives us good food and other times, weeds and pests. Sometimes a child gives us joy and at other times, e.g., the teenage years, some grief. At work we have some good days and some bad days. Some people at work are nice and some not so much; they are a challenge to get along with. It is the same garden, child, and job and yet we experience both good and evil, at different times, from them. Why?

It is because our ancestors, Adam and Eve, did not value properly.

Adam and Eve ate from the tree of the [experiential] knowledge of good and evil (Genesis 3). This was a whopper of a bad decision.

This brought at least two laws into play.

The Law of Responsibility:

The Law of Responsibility is this. We will be forced to make choices and those choices will sometimes work out for us and sometimes not.

And we will learn good and evil from our own personal choices.

We will grow and develop as human beings learning about and then knowing both good and evil. This applies to all human beings, whether Christian or not.

The Law of Solidarity: The choices of other people, both for good and for evil, will, many times, slop over and flow into our lives. And this will cause humanity to experience, together, the results of our collective individual choices.

Fortunately, some of the choices that other people make are good, e.g., Jonas Salk's polio vaccine, or the development of air travel by the Wright Brothers, etc. So sometimes the Law of Solidarity (communal experience) works for good.

Unfortunately, many times, the Law of Solidarity works for bad (evil). And this is why war, famine, disease, political fighting, and all of the other evils plaguing mankind occur.

Too many people are making immoral and unintelligent choices – because they have the wrong values.

Too many people are trying to live as parasites off of the productive efforts of other men, instead of producing something of value themselves.

Their bad choices have negative consequences, not only for themselves, but for the rest of us, too. This is the Law of Solidarity in operation.

And then God gets blamed for the evil.

And then God gets reasoned out of existence because of the very existence of evil.

But evil is here because men and some angels have adhered to the wrong value system - Satan's value system.

And they have made all too many choices based on Satan's force-and-fraud-based value system.

Men and some of the angels have used their free will irresponsibly. The results are before us.

Because the two Jehovahs knew we would get exhausted from having chosen to follow Satan, instead of them, they gave us some Biblical advice that is shared below:

"Therefore do not be anxious about tomorrow; for tomorrow shall be anxious for its own things. Sufficient to the day is the evil of it [Sometimes when our head hits the pillow at night, we realize we barely made it through the day due to the evil we experienced, but we did. Maybe tomorrow will be a day with more good and less evil in it]." Matthew 6:34, MKJV

Your author speculates that all of us at times have thought, "I wish I could have the good, without the evil."

And when it gets really bad there have probably been times where we have gotten so beaten up that we wish we could just go to sleep and not wake up because life is so hard and full of suffering.

But please remember to think through what is actually happening and why, e.g., God is the life-giver who says, "Choose life," and who promises eternal life. This leads to the below:

**A Big Takeaway:**

God does NOT want us to give up on life ...

He wants us to give up on evil!

God wants us to fully realize that:

The good and the blessings come from God's value system ... but

The bad, the evil, and the curses come from Satan's value system.

Values, it turns out, are incredibly important both conceptually and in their practical effects.

Values are (pun intended) very valuable.

God actually tried to teach his values to ancient Israel, but ancient Israel failed.

Ancient Israel failed God. They failed themselves. Even worse, and to this day ...

Ancient Israel has failed the human race.

Speaking somewhat loosely, but with substantive accuracy, a culture can be thought of as a value-transmission device.

"He [God] made known His ways [values] to Moses, His acts to the sons of Israel."  
Psalms 103:7, MKJV

There was supposed to be at least one place on the earth, even outside the Garden of Eden, where God's ways (values) were known and practiced.

Ancient Israel was located at the center of the earth's three great landmasses at the time. They were to be a light to the peoples of the world, the nation on a hill, so to speak.

Ancient Israel was to have developed a culture, based on God's values, that was: 1) moral, 2) intelligent, and 3) productive.

And this would have been in contrast to the immoral, unintelligent, and parasitical cultures of the rest of the world. Your author writes "parasitical" because most of the world is tribal and thinks in terms of win-lose deals.

Win-lose deals are unsustainable and are ultimately based on some type of force and/or fraud or break the peace somehow.

Win-lose deals lead to wars of retaliation that then lead to more retaliation in an endless cycle of pain, suffering, and death.

Values really matter!

Is there hope? Yes!

Why? Obviously, because of God the Father and Jesus Christ, but also because ...

There is a nation that will not fail God, will not fail themselves, and will not fail the human race, i.e., the spiritual Israelites.

A personal opinion → better descriptive phraseology for the word "Christian" might be "spiritual Israelite."

"and that at that time you were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world."  
Ephesians 2:12, MKJV

In God's eyes there is a commonwealth (in essence, a nation) of spiritual Israel. And if you are, in Christ, you are a citizen of spiritual Israel.

Unlike ancient Israel who did fail God, the nation who will not fail God is spiritual Israel.

God is looking and hoping for spiritual Israelites.

Those already dead in Christ and those effectively called and chosen now, i.e., the spiritual Israelites, will be in the first resurrection. They will help Jesus Christ rule over the earth, teaching those who live on into the Millennium, those who are born in the Millennium time period, and those who are physically resurrected back to life in the second resurrection to learn how important God's set of values are, as contrasted to Satan's evil set of values.

The change of value system from Satan's to God's can be correctly viewed in many ways:

From darkness to light

From hate to love

From lies to truth

From war to peace

From vengeance to forgiveness, ... etc.

The E = MC<sup>2</sup> of all this experiential-based "learning," i.e., this hard physical life is:

Bad values → bad choices → bad consequences

The **compounding bad consequences** include  
→ the generation of → The Tragedy of Being

The Tragedy of Being results in → untold and  
almost unimaginable human suffering

But something far more lasting and enduring is  
being worked out via God's Strange Plan and  
that is either an abundant eternal life or eternal  
non-existent death. Bearing this in mind the  
Bible is basically calling out the following:

God's values → good choices → good eternal  
consequences (an abundant eternal life)

Satan's values → bad choices → negative eternal  
consequences (eternal death)

Therefore, it really is a matter of Life or Death  
what your values really are.

Satan's values cause pain, suffering, confusion,  
anxiety, depression, and death in this life, i.e.,  
they generate The Tragedy of Being.

Fortunately, once the two Jehovahs are done using good and evil to experientially teach the human race, those willfully unrepentant will be exterminated after being judged in the third resurrection. They will not be suffering any longer, but they will be dead and non-existent throughout the balance of eternity. Satan and his angelic followers will also be permanently out of the picture, to be explained later in this book.

Then, the only beings left in the universe will have adopted God's set of values and rejected Satan's set of values.

No longer will choices be made based on Satan's values and no longer will negative and hurtful consequences be felt. Ergo, the negative effects of the Law of Responsibility and the negative effects of the Law of Solidarity will be no more.

Evil will have had its purpose, which was to teach men to revalue their values to God's set of values – the unity of the package of values that pertain to an abundant eternal life.

Every resurrected man (now incorruptible spirit being) left in the universe will have experienced and then rejected Satan's values – though

suffering greatly through the necessary human part of God's divine individualism process.

God will have been shown to be correct.

Satan will have been shown to be incorrect.

Only the "good guys" will be allowed to exist for the balance of eternity.

God's "perfect plan for your life" → to accept his value system + to reject Satan's value system

God's perfect **general plan** for your life → for you to become a moral, reasonable, and productive, incorruptible, eternal spirit being, a unique divine individual who gets along with everyone in the universe for all eternity

Those relatively few men and women who are sealed by the Holy Spirit and are in their graves awaiting the first resurrection, and those Category One effectively called and chosen now (Category Two firstfruits), have already accepted the suffering that is part of the experiential learning process that Adam and Eve picked for the entire human race. Those of us who are currently alive are cooperating with the two Jehovahs to the best of our ability and are

patiently awaiting the return of Jesus Christ to this earth. Our attitude is as follows, though we do not like the suffering:

“I know, O LORD, that Your judgments are right, and that You have afflicted me in faithfulness.” Psalms 119:75, MKJV

The balance of the human race will learn why they have had to suffer so much ... later, most when they come back to physical life in the second resurrection. They will be told that because Adam and Eve did not accept God's conceptual instruction, the entire human race has had to learn about good and evil experientially. We have all had to experientially learn the difference between the two sets of values in extended consequence. And when you extend choices based on Satan's values far enough out, no human life would be left on the earth, were God the Father not to send Jesus Christ back to the earth to stop the madness in time.

“In fact, unless that time of calamity is shortened, the entire human race will be destroyed. But it will be shortened for the sake of God's chosen ones.” Matthew 24:22, NLT

In any compromise between good and evil, evil wins. This is why God does not compromise with:

Evil – moral failure  
Error – intellectual failure  
Being parasitic – productive failure  
Improper social behavior – social failure  
Being unclean – part of social failure

This is why God seems to turn away from us and treat us as enemies sometimes. It is because, in a sense, we are his enemies if we are actively following his enemy, Satan. In Job's case there was another reason going on, but that is beyond the scope of this section of this book. It was explained in your author's *Why Job Suffered: The Real Story*, should the reader be so interested.

"Why do you turn away from me? Why do you consider me your enemy?" Job 13:24, NLT

"Life is hard, then you die" is a true statement from a human point of view, i.e., from a narrow and short-term point of view. But this is not the only point of view, which will be elaborated more in the next section of this book. Since man did not learn conceptually

from God, he either had to be: 1) destroyed (God admitting the failure of his efforts and ending his plan for man), or 2) man had to learn another way, i.e., experientially. God obviously chose option #2. God choosing option #2 does not preclude conceptual teaching from being used later on. God did teach Abraham, Moses, and others. Also, Jesus Christ himself taught many things to some men and women while on his earthly mission. Further, conceptual systematic teaching will be utilized when Jesus Christ and his leadership team of firstfruit kings and priests teach mankind in the Millennium and the Last Great Day time period. To say that this whole process does not touch God's heart is false. An example of this is when God had to do a reset of the human experience long ago at the time of Noah and the great flood. Remember, God can kill and then later make alive again, which is evidently what God decided to do at that time.

"Now the LORD observed the extent of the people's wickedness, and he saw that all their thoughts were consistently and totally evil. So the LORD was sorry he had ever made them [thankfully, only at that moment, not permanently]. It broke his heart."  
Genesis 6:5-6, NLT

Thankfully, the two Jehovahs were determined to carry on and to save mankind, at least those who will ultimately cooperate with them. So they saved Noah and his family during the great flood and life continued on as it has to this day.

The Tragedy of Being teaches Satan's values and their results, the hard way. God already knew the conceptually predictable results, but God's point of view is that The Tragedy of Being was necessary so that mankind could gain some experiential learning. Mankind did not and would not listen to God in advance, thus rejecting conceptual learning, so God has allowed mankind to learn the results the hard way. The two Jehovahs have suffered along with us, like a father watching their child make one bad decision after another, but the child is of age and so there is little the father can do. And Jehovah number two, Jesus Christ, experienced undeserved suffering, too. Isaiah 53 and the gospel accounts of his beatings and crucifixion bear this out. Christ was made to suffer as we were, not that he needed to conceptually learn about God's values, but so he would more fully understand the human predicament, having lived it himself in the flesh.

"Therefore, it was necessary for Jesus to be in every respect like us, his brothers and sisters, so that he could be our merciful and faithful High Priest before God. He then could offer a sacrifice that would take away the sins of the people. Since he himself has gone through suffering and temptation, he is able to help us when we are being tempted."

Hebrews 2:17-18, NLT

"That is why we have a great High Priest who has gone to heaven, Jesus the Son of God. Let us cling to him and never stop trusting him. This High Priest of ours understands our weaknesses, for he faced all of the same temptations we do, yet he did not sin." Hebrews 4:14-15, NLT

Satan as the god of this world deceives mankind and gets man following his force and fraud values. That set of evil values causes pain, suffering, and death ... and then God gets blamed. Every man and every fallen angel who sins against the two Jehovahs generates The Tragedy of Being. The Tragedy of Being is made worse, over time, via additional sins. The compound sin pays off its consequences of pain, suffering, anxiety, depression, hardship, and then death. Even worse, our personal minds and character have been infected with Satan's

evil nature, referred to as the heart in the scripture below.

"The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked; who can know it?"  
Jeremiah 17:9, MKJV

"The heart is more deceitful than all else  
**And is desperately sick;** Who can understand it?" Jeremiah 17:9, NASB

Further, Ephesians 2:1-3 explains that we were actually born with an evil nature, due to being infected by Satan's evil nature. This does not mean a totally evil nature, because man is capable of choosing good and sometimes does so. It is good and evil, evil and good, etc., ad nausea.

"Once you were dead [before becoming spiritual Israelites], doomed forever because of your many sins. You used to live just like the rest of the world, full of sin, obeying Satan, the mighty prince of the power of the air. He is the spirit at work in the hearts of those who refuse to obey God. All of us used to live that way, following the passions and desires of our evil nature. **We were born with an evil nature,**

and we were under God's anger just like everyone else." Ephesians 2:1-3, NLT

This sets the stage and leaves us at a point where it is now possible to provide an explanation concerning what The Tragedy of Being actually is and to further explain God's Strange Plan.

### **10.9 What The Tragedy of Being actually is in a defense of God**

When men consider The Tragedy of Being it is understandable that they would conclude one of two things: 1) there is no God or 2) God exists, but he must be some kind of callous, cold, cruel monster (or something along these lines, as detailed earlier in section 10.7). Both of these conclusions, which seem at least somewhat reasonable or justifiable to suffering men, are wrong. They are both false.

"For the Lord does not abandon anyone forever. Though he brings grief, he also shows compassion according to the greatness of his unfailing love. For he does not enjoy hurting people or causing them sorrow."

Lamentations 3:31-33, NLT

The purpose of this section of the book is to tie together a lot of the key building blocks of the previous sections. In doing so your author will provide an explanation as to what The Tragedy of Being actually is, and do so in a credible defense of God. To get to the right answer for the human race, we must do at least two important things differently. **First**, we must consider and think about what is happening and why from God's viewpoint. **Second**, we must think longer term than men are normally accustomed to think. And we must also consider a few additional building blocks your author will explain in this section.

Let's start with who God the Father and Jesus Christ are; together they are God. They work together. They worked together on creating the universe and on providing a Savior for mankind. Further, they promise they will heal those human beings who cooperate with them no later than the resurrection. To the extent they planned for a second resurrection, in advance, to allow for as many people as is possible to finally agree to worship and serve them, shows they are very patient. They have waited a long time for the fruits of their labor. Let the reader remember that man is their workmanship (Ephesians 2:10).

**"For we are His workmanship,** created in Christ Jesus to good works, which God has before ordained that we should walk in them."

Ephesians 2:10, MKJV

Both the two Jehovahs have what is known as the Unity of Virtues in their being. They are love, emblematic of the moral virtues and they are wise, emblematic of the intellectual virtues. They have all the virtues and their way is a way of peace, not war. Because their way is peace leading to an abundant life and because they possess all of the virtues in their being, this means that they have the requisite social skills and awareness so as to be the two most socially adept beings in the universe. They are not cold, cruel, callous, oblivious, etc. Further, they both work; they are productive. To create an entire universe, with the earth as a special habitation, is a lot of work. They made the earth as a special habitation so they could create man in their image and likeness. To create us in their image and likeness, out of all of their created creatures, is an incredible and great honor – which almost all men have overlooked or taken for granted (Genesis 1:26-28). They further gave men minds so we can be moral and so we can think. And the implication of the command

to have dominion over the earth requires that men learn how to get along with other men and to work together to exercise peaceful dominion over the earth. The earth is too large for one man or one family to have dominion over all of it and nowhere in the command to have dominion over the earth is there any hint or suggestion that one man, family, race, gender, etc., should scheme to have dominion over their fellow man.

"I have made the earth, and created man on it; I with My hands have stretched out the heavens; and all their host have I commanded." Isaiah 45:12, MKJV

"And God said, Let Us [the two Jehovahs] make man in Our image, after our likeness. And let them have dominion [them = working together peacefully] over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the heavens, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over all the creepers creeping on the earth [but not each other]. And God created man in His image; in the image of God He created him. He created them male and female. And **God blessed them**. And God said to them, Be fruitful, and multiply [marry, have children, and be productive together] and fill the earth, and subdue it. And have dominion over the fish of

the sea and over the fowl of the heavens, and all animals that move upon the earth.”  
Genesis 1:26-28, MKJV

Ergo, the two Jehovahs have performed a great deal of thoughtful work and have also taken **an entrepreneurial risk** in making man to look like them. They enabled men to be able to think and to be moral like them and to be able to work to produce like them (albeit on a much smaller scale). Mankind should have taken advantage of our opportunity and cooperated with them, but for the most part we did not.

It is very clear that God walked in the Garden of Eden with Adam and that God provided some **conceptual teaching** and training to Adam.

“And the LORD God took the man and put him into the garden of Eden to work it and keep it. And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, You may freely eat of every tree in the garden, but you shall not eat of the tree of knowledge of good and evil. For in the day that you eat of it you shall surely die [conceptual training and instruction from God].”

Genesis 2:15-17, MKJV

Adam initially cooperated with God, and God allowed Adam to name the animals (Genesis 2:19-20). In Genesis 2:18, 21-25 God created Eve, Adam's wife, from Adam. Big problems started in Genesis 3 where it is disclosed that the serpent was also in the Garden of Eden. He deceived Eve. Unfortunately, Adam followed his wife in disobedience to the conceptual teaching, the training and instruction of God.

"But I fear that somehow you will be led away from your pure and simple devotion to Christ, **just as Eve was deceived by the serpent.**" 2 Corinthians 11:3, NLT

"And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasing to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make wise, she took of its fruit, and ate. She also gave to her husband with her, and he ate."  
Genesis 3:6, MKJV

The serpent, known as Satan the devil, provided **alternative conceptual training and instruction** to that which God provided to Adam and Eve.

"And the great dragon was cast out, the old serpent called Devil, and Satan, who deceives

**the whole world.** He was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.”  
Revelation 12:9, MKJV

“Now the serpent was more cunning than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said to the woman, Is it so that God has said, You shall not eat of every tree of the garden? And the woman said to the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden. But of the fruit of the tree which is in the middle of the garden, God has said, You shall not eat of it, neither shall you touch it, lest you die. And **the serpent said to the woman,** You shall not surely die, for God knows that in the day you eat of it, then your eyes shall be opened, and you shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.” Genesis 3:1-5, MKJV

The rest of the story is well known and covered by your author, earlier in this book. Adam and Eve were expelled from the Garden of Eden, barred from reentry, and a set of curses was pronounced – all of which has made man’s life hard ever since.

Adam and Eve were likely the two most pristine examples of manhood and womanhood ever created. Before they were exposed to the

evil, deceiving serpent, God provided them with conceptual training and instruction. They choose, instead, to follow the serpent's conceptual training and instruction. In essence, Adam and Eve chose for the entire human race. This set in motion a chain reaction of negative, ongoing, and unfolding consequences. Why did God seemingly abandon Adam, Eve, and the entire human race because of the sins of two people? It is a bad question and the implied answer "leads" the human race in the wrong direction. The two Jehovahs did not abandon the human race, but God did have to come to grips with the harsh reality that his correct conceptual training and instruction was rejected for the serpent's incorrect conceptual training and instruction. Adam and Eve did not understand the honor and privilege that God had given them in making them in his image and likeness and providing them with the opportunity to have an eternal relationship with him. It likely hurt God, but did not entirely surprise him.

Adam and Eve → rejected → God's correct conceptual training and instruction

Adam and Eve → accepted → the serpent's incorrect conceptual training and instruction

If we put ourselves into the shoes of the two Jehovahs, since their correct conceptual training and instruction was rejected, this left only one possibility for ultimate success. (Thankfully, God did not choose to just kill Adam and Eve, thus throwing his workmanship into the metaphorical “trash can”). That one possibility for ultimate success is for mankind to learn knowledge (not wisdom) experientially. Adam, in particular, since he was not deceived and chose wrong anyway, and Eve, who was deceived, chose for themselves and their ultimate progeny, the entire human race. They chose to learn, acquiring through experience, the knowledge of both good and evil – option #2, below:

God had two basic options to teach mankind:

- 1) Via **conceptual training** and instruction (the easy way), or
- 2) Via **experiential learning** of the knowledge of good and evil (the hard way)

Not all of the human experiential acquisition of the knowledge of good and evil is fruitless. We have some good days and bad days, some

good experiences that bring us joy and some bad experiences that make us sad, some good relationships and some bad relationships, etc. Each man and each woman does experientially acquire (learn) some knowledge of both good and evil, which was predicted by the choice of Adam and Eve. Since the two Jehovahs are not quitters and they are not going to lose to their adversary, Satan the devil, this forced the two Jehovahs to be patient and to implement a much longer-term plan. This longer-term plan is longer than the lives of any one human generation, so sometimes when things are dark in our lives and we are suffering greatly, we can question: 1) God's existence, or 2) his moral goodness, or 3) his intelligence, or 4) his competence. But it was not God's moral goodness that failed, nor his intelligence, nor his lack of competence. It has been the fact of ongoing human moral weakness and failure and also the fact of ongoing bad-angel rebellion that has generated The Tragedy of Being ... and all of its attendant suffering.

The Tragedy of Being → is generated by billions of men and women + a large number of fallen angels → making choices based on → Satan's set of despicable values

The Tragedy of Being → results from man +  
some of the angels → believing → Satan's  
conceptual training and instruction

The two Jehovahs → are not responsible → for  
The Tragedy of Being

The two Jehovahs → no doubt provided →  
conceptual training and instruction → to the  
angels (one-third of whom rejected said  
conceptual training and instruction)

The two Jehovahs → for certain provided →  
conceptual training and instruction → to Adam  
and Eve (who rejected it and followed Satan's  
conceptual training and instruction)

The two Jehovahs were left with option #2 →  
the hard way → experiential learning → man  
would suffer greatly obtaining → the knowledge  
of both good and evil

The two Jehovahs (God) → do exist

The two Jehovahs (God) → **are innocent** → of  
the offenses for which Satan indicts God → and  
for which Satan would like to con men into →  
convicting God of

The two Jehovahs (God) → possess → the Unity of Virtues in their being, ergo

The two Jehovahs (God) → are loving and wise and all of the other virtues, simultaneously, i.e., they are morally good, wise, caring, and competent

The longer-term plan the two Jehovahs had to come up with had additional personal risks involved for both of them. God the Father would have to risk the eternal loss of the Word, the being who became Jesus Christ (John 1), and the Word had to risk his own eternal life. These additional risks were necessary because, post Adam and Eve's sins, mankind now needed a Savior. The two Jehovahs were determined to provide one. This meant that even though they are God they had to: 1) accept additional entrepreneurial risk and 2) then perform the necessary work to successfully accomplish the task.

"And all dwelling on the earth will worship it, those whose names have not been written in the Book of Life of the Lamb slain, from the foundation of the world." Revelation 13:8, MKJV

As previously mentioned, mankind needs more than a Savior. This is because each man and each woman born after Adam and Eve were born with a sinful nature that made our minds and our hearts sick. In short, in addition to saving we each need healing, too.

"The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked; who can know it?"  
Jeremiah 17:9, MKJV

Actually, the question is not just who can know about the sick heart, it is who can heal it? Fortunately, the two Creators, the two Jehovahs can, but this will take their long-term plan and many miracles yet to come in order to do so.

Experiential learning takes time. It is never as good as conceptually learning the correct theory, because the phenomenon of Being is multitudinous, interactive, and dynamic, i.e., extremely complex. It should go without stating that **without the correct theory you do not have wisdom and understanding**, you have an enormous volume of facts and opinions, many of which contradict each other. Contradictory "facts" and opinions are not prudentially useful. In short, lacking the correct theory is tantamount to getting buried under a

pile of confusing and largely useless data, a plethora of phenomena, if you will. Experiential learning about good and evil is tantamount to acquiring a lot of knowledge, without the wisdom to know how to put it all together in order to be wise enough to understand what is actually happening and why. Sadly, in many cases, the experiential learning many people acquire amounts to coming to finally know what not to do, rather than actually knowing what to do.

To achieve their goal of each man and each woman eventually becoming a moral, reasonable, and productive being, the two Jehovahs gave us: 1) minds that can think, 2) free will so we can both think and be moral, and 3) time. They further structured the universe with a consistently logical structure and made our minds to have a logical structure corresponding to the logical structure of the universe. They did this so we would be able to understand our environment and then be able to successfully build out lives, including having responsible, peaceful dominion over the earth. Further, the two Jehovahs wanted us to learn how to get along with others, i.e., to be able to work together, play together, learn together, etc. In short, the goal of the two Jehovahs and

their general plan for mankind is for each man and for each woman to become a unique, incorruptible, moral, rational, and productive eternal being who is filled with the Unity of Virtues as the two Jehovahs are, and for each person to always get along with every other being in the universe, i.e., to be socially adept, too.

By granting each man and woman the ability to think, free will, and time, the two Jehovahs undertook real risk, because there was a pretty good chance something could go wrong ... and it did. They compounded the risk involved, from a reputational standpoint, by making us in their own image and likeness. One can only imagine Satan laughing at the two Jehovahs when he got Adam and Eve to, in essence, accept his conceptual training and instruction and to reject the two Jehovahs' conceptual training and instruction. Nevertheless, the two Jehovahs still knew that if man would only cooperate with them they could still save and heal man - in so many words, they knew they could stick the landing regarding their great plan for man. But man does not know this, at least not most men, hence all of the angst concerning The Tragedy of Being.

The two Jehovahs needed for man to come to know that making choices based on Satan's set of values produces pain, suffering, confusion, and death. They tried conceptual training, but man rejected it. However, man still needed to learn somehow. It is interesting how the two Jehovahs depicted the difference in the two sets of values. Their unity of the package of values that pertains to life was described as the tree of life and they depicted Satan's set of values that would generate The Tragedy of Being as the tree of knowledge of good and evil.

The two Jehovahs' set of values → generates → abundant eternal life

Satan's set of values → generates → The Tragedy of Being

"And out of the ground the LORD God caused to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food. **The tree of life** also was in the middle of the garden, and **the tree of knowledge of good and evil.**"

Genesis 2:9, MKJV

Adam and Eve picked "learning" via the experiential and hard method, said learning largely limited to knowledge, but likely without

the understanding and wisdom necessary to convert said knowledge into something really prudentially and predictively useful. Not to worry, the two Jehovahs have a plan for adding wisdom and understanding to knowledge, too, but that long-term plan will now take an extended period of time, more than 7,000 years to achieve.

From the human perspective, being forced to leave the Garden of Eden and to experience both good and evil, blessings and curses, for our entire physical lives, without any respite, seems harsh. But human beings, particularly in the Secular Humanist era, evidently do not understand just how big of a problem all of this presented, both to us and to God. **Our hearts and minds are sick, infected with Satan's evil nature.** And now we are making choices based on Satan's set of despicable values; force, fraud, and pride are three of the worst of them.

Satan's values → widespread bad choices → horrific consequences, including pain, suffering, and death (and anxiety and depression)

Satan's values → widespread bad choices → conflicting with each other + compounding on top of each other → The Tragedy of Being

Satan's values → widespread bad choices → would lead to → the extermination of the entire human race if → God the Father did not shorten the days by → sending Jesus Christ back to earth (Matthew 24:22)

If one of us is the parent of a child, let us say the famous "Johnny," and God lets Johnny die, it is a parent's worst nightmare. If we are Johnny's parents, of course we are going to be crushed, hurt, grief-stricken, and it is likely our faith in God will take a hit. We might challenge God's goodness, his ability, his caring, and his wisdom. If others then try and tell you that, "God has a perfect plan for your life," implying or actually stating that little Johnny's death is part of said perfect plan, it seems completely contradictory and confusing to anything a loving parent would wish for a little child, or for another parent. Such a person who is trying to help is probably well intended, but factually incorrect, and they can accidentally do damage to the person they are trying to help because they have the wrong theory, i.e., they have incorrect conceptual "knowledge." After all, from a grieving parent's point of view, God the Father is supposed to be a loving and good father, right? In short, in this tragic instance it

seems like God has directly failed Johnny and his parents.

To get to the bottom of "Why did God let Johnny die?", your author has to unpack some improperly wrapped up concepts in an attempt to make some sense of this personal tragedy. First, God does NOT have a perfect **specific** plan for your life. God has a general plan for you to become a moral, reasonable, productive, incorruptible, unique, eternal spirit being. But since God gave each of us free will, God cannot have a specific plan for your life. **God gave that up when he gave you free will.** For the most part, your own choices will determine your life. Second, there is a big difference in how God the Father and Jesus Christ look at time and how any individual human being looks at time. From the human point of view, when Johnny died, the human parents of Johnny might very well feel that God failed them in this particular instance. However, this is not the end of Johnny's story. This is because Johnny will be resurrected back to physical life in the second resurrection. God will heal Johnny and he will have a chance to live out a good life at that time. Here is both an honest and an accurate way to summarize the difference between the short-term human point of view and God's long-

term point of view. God's long-term point of view is going to prove to be eternally correct, loving, and fruitful. Man's short-term point of view is usually only partially correct and very limited in scope, particularly concerning the time horizon involved.

God will not fail you → from the human point of view = sometimes false

But the actual true answer is per what follows:

God will not **ultimately** fail you = always true

God's long-term point of view is going to prove out to be **eternally correct**, i.e., **loving**, **wise**, and **fruitful**.

The time element in the point of view changes everything about this answer. And when well-intended, religious friends and family attempt to tell the parents of Johnny either: 1) God will not fail you (he just did), or 2) God has a perfect plan for your life, meaning a specific, detailed, controlling plan, this is false (if true, which it is not, it means the God of love wanted Johnny to die).

The change of time perspectives changes decision-making ... in terms of what is loving, wise, and necessary.

The two Jehovahs are eternal beings and they are projecting forward a plan that extends out into eternity. They are in the process of creating eternal (permanent) spirit beings to be like them and they are using a divine individualism process to ultimately create divine individuals. God's love and wisdom and actions are as follows:

God's love = long-term (when in conflict with short-term, or medium-term)

God's wisdom = prudential long-term wisdom

God's actions = the greatest good for the greatest number ... throughout the balance of eternity

In short, God does love Johnny and wants him to eventually become a unique, healthy and whole, divine, incorruptible, eternal spirit being. But God has a problem in that free will is necessary for men to really be moral and for men to be able to learn, including learning how to be productive and to get along with each

other. Similar to it looking, from the human perspective, that God failed both Johnny and his parents, God the Father can look like he is not a good father and Jesus Christ can look like he is not competent to manage the church. But looks can be deceiving to a human, just ask Adam and Eve. The solution to these apparent problems of appearance is: 1) to understand that a difference in time period perspective might very well change what course of action is, in fact, loving, wise, and necessary, and 2) to also understand that it is absolutely critical to comprehend **a general law of the universe**, which men really do not seem to understand. Here it is:

When ANYTHING comes into conflict with free will → free will wins

This general law of the universe, that the two Jehovahs laid down and follow, explains why it can look to human beings like God the Father is not a good father and why it is that Jesus Christ, the head of the church (Ephesians 5:23), can look like he is not competent to do his job. God the Father would like nothing more than to be a great father to each one of us, in real time, but there is an experiential learning process in play right now and God the Father, the eternal

being, is going to allow for this process to play out. Jesus Christ would like nothing better than to effectively lead the Israelites, his congregation of witnesses (his church), to do their job in real time (including, of course the grafted in spiritual Israelites). Yet, once again, the same experiential learning process playing out interferes with yet another eternal being, Jesus Christ. Counter-intuitively, for the present time, it can look like the following, from a human perspective:

God the Father is not a good, loving, and wise father, in real time.

Jesus Christ is not an effective head of the church, in real time.

But, the truth of the matter, per the free will choice of the two Jehovahs, is as follows:

Free will > God as a good Father in real time

Free will > Jesus Christ being an effective head of the church in real time

Ergo, once we understand all of the above points, i.e., 1) free will as a general law of the universe, plus 2) the difference in time period

perspective, plus 3) the just sentencing of the entire human race to experientially acquire knowledge from both good and evil, then we can begin to understand what makes the two Jehovahs look bad. Fortunately for us, the two Jehovahs are much more interested in doing the right thing at the right time in the right way ... than they are concerned about what people think. It is not that they don't care at all about what man thinks, but they have to be better than we are and to do the right thing, so they do. Men tend to follow their hearts, which can cause many problems; the two Jehovahs will do the hard thing of following their brilliant minds, even if this means short-term pain for all involved. (This said, the two Jehovahs following their brilliant minds does not mean to imply it is to the exclusion of their hearts, but that they will make the tough decision and see it through to success). They are going to actually do what The Left can never ever do, which is to actually deliver on doing the greatest good for the greatest number. For now, even the two Jehovahs have some self-imposed limits they are living with.

To bring the free will part of this explanation to a close, for now, and to hopefully add some hope to the discussion, the reader should always

remember that the two supreme beings in the universe also possess free will and they use it wisely. This is why they can and sometimes do answer prayers in the affirmative in real time. For example, some people who turn to God are physically healed in this life. And this brings us back to this important difference in ability, which the two Jehovahs possess, but man does not:

"See now that I, I am He, and there is no god with me. I kill, and I make alive; I wound and I heal; and there is no deliverer of My hand." Deuteronomy 32:39, MKJV

God can kill (allow Johnny to die) and make alive (resurrect Johnny back to physical life again at the second resurrection). God can wound (by allowing man to experience The Tragedy of Being) and heal (sometimes in this life and not later than the resurrection to eternal life). God will heal Johnny after he resurrests him and then God will teach Johnny his eternal plan in context. If we look at God's promises, first to the Israelites, then, by extension, to the nations (and our Johnny is one or the other), God can heal the sick heart and the sick mind of man. God promises to take the heart of stone away and replace it with a heart of flesh (Ezekiel 11:19, 36:26). And God promises to convert

that heart of flesh by writing his divine law instructions upon it and giving his Holy Spirit, too (Jeremiah 31:33-34 and Deuteronomy 30:6, quoted below, and Acts 2:38, not quoted):

"but this shall be the covenant that I will cut with the house of Israel [and later, the nations]: After those days, says the LORD, I will put My law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people. And they shall no more teach each man his neighbor and each man his brother, saying, Know the LORD; for **they shall all know me**, from the least of them to the greatest of them, says the LORD. For I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sins no more." Jeremiah 31:33-34, MKJV

"And the LORD your God will circumcise your heart and the heart of your seed [children], to love the LORD your God with all your heart and with all your soul, so that you may live."  
Deuteronomy 30:6, MKJV

God is going to give each man and each woman, who have ever lived, including the famous Johnny, the chance to personally know him and everyone on earth will. Further, God will heal their sick hearts, their sick minds, their

sick bodies, their emotions, and whatever else needs healing so that when that person finally is called to really understand God, they will. There will be no hindrances. During the Millennium time period Satan will be in jail. During the Last Great Day time period he will be severely restricted in his ability to act, at least after the initial part of this time period. People will finally respond to God's calling. There is a distinct possibility that the Last Great Day time period will be divided into two segments. The first segment will be when Satan is loosed from bad-angel jail (Revelation 20:3, 7-10) and allowed to go out for a little time to, once again, deceive certain nations. Evidently, this occurs right at the beginning of the Last Great Day time period. We can designate this the "Last Great Day - A" time period.

"And when the thousand years have expired, Satan will be loosed out of his prison. And he will go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle. The number of them is as the sand of the sea. And they went up over the breadth of the earth and circled around the camp of the saints, and the beloved city [Jerusalem]. And fire came down from God out of Heaven and devoured them. And the

Devil who deceived them was cast into the Lake of Fire and Brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet were. And he will be tormented day and night forever and ever.”

Revelation 20:7-10, MKJV

Further, evidently corresponding to Revelation 20:7-10, it seems when reading Ezekiel 38-39 that there is an uprising led by Gog and Magog and a group of peoples against the land of Israel. It is, once again, Satan and his spiritual seedline team against God and Israel. God and Israel win, because of God. God sends down fire from heaven to destroy the attacking armies (Revelation 20:9 and Ezekiel 38:14-23, 39:6). If your author's surmising is correct, when God sends down fire to destroy the attacking armies, and Satan is either put back under restraint, or destroyed in the Lake of Fire, this would end the “Last Great Day – A” time period and allow for the balance of the Last Great Day time period to be peaceful. This peaceful part of the Last Great Day time period will allow for the two Jehovahs to accomplish their purposes during it. We could then designate this peaceful portion, likely the greater portion of the Last Great Day time period, “Last Great Day – B.” Of course, all of this is up to the two Jehovahs. It is their plan and their very capable execution of said plan.

This part of your author's explanation centers on the fact the it is the supreme being in the universe, God the Father, who reserves to himself who it is that is called and when they are called. Let the reader please remember that it is only a relatively small percentage of mankind who are effectively called and chosen now, prior to the first resurrection. They are the Category One called and chosen, the Category Two firstfruits.

"No one can come to Me unless the Father who has sent Me draw him [calls him], and I will raise him up at the last day. It is written in the prophets, "And they shall all be taught of God." Therefore everyone who hears and learns from the Father comes to Me." John 6:44-45, MKJV

"Do not fear, little flock, for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom." Luke 12:32, MKJV

One might ask, "Why?" Why are only a relatively few effectively called and chosen now? And, why does God the Father reserve the sole right to call people? Both are good questions and both deserve an answer. As to the "who it is that is called now" part of the question, only a

few people are called and chosen now because it is risky to call someone now. Satan, most of the fallen angels, the demons, and the men comprising Satan's spiritual seedline are actively opposing the two Jehovahs and there is a lot of spiritual, mental, emotional, and sometimes physical pain involved in adopting God's values in this world. It is like constantly swimming upstream. Even with the spiritual help of God's Holy Spirit, it can be exhausting. For those so called now, who happen to be alive at the very end, i.e., right before Jesus Christ returns to rule, they might lose their lives to the worldwide beast system of Revelation 13. It is not easy. Not everyone is willing to actually do God's will. These firstfruits do so. Evidently, God the Father decided that those so effectively called and chosen now could endure to the end and be saved, i.e., with the help of the two Jehovahs they could be successful if called now. In other words, the greater risk to calling them now would likely work out for them and for God. Further, God deemed it necessary to have at least some human servants throughout human history.

"But he who endures to the end, the same shall be kept safe." Matthew 24:13, MKJV

"If you [the true followers of Jesus Christ] were of the world, the world would love its own. But because you are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hates you. Remember the word that I said to you, The servant is not greater than his master. If they have persecuted Me, they will also persecute you. If they have kept My saying, they will also keep yours. But all these things they will do to you for My name's sake, because they do not know Him who sent Me."

John 15:19-21, MKJV

"Not everyone who says to Me, Lord! Lord! shall enter the kingdom of Heaven [in the first resurrection], but he who does the will of My Father in Heaven." Matthew 7:21, MKJV

To attempt an answer to the second question, as to why by the Father, will require a bit of authorial speculation, hopefully correctly inferred by your author. In most homes the father typically functions as the protector of the family and usually, also as the crisis manager. Right now, there is a war going on and this war, tantamount to a crisis, has a lot of casualties. God the Father is the greatest being in the universe, acknowledged to be so by the number two being in the universe, Jesus Christ.

"You have heard how I said to you, I go away and I am coming to you again. If you loved Me, you would rejoice because I said, I go to the Father, for My Father is greater than I."  
John 14:28, MKJV

God the Father, protective of his future potential children, evidently decided that he personally would handle the critical timing of each man's and each woman's calling. Jesus Christ deferred and yielded to the will of the Father, the greatest example of this is his going through with his own crucifixion (Matthew 26:39).

The timing of when a person is called is very important to that person's chances of success. God the Father only calls a relatively few people now. Ergo, he calls virtually the entire human race, i.e., all other people either: 1) during the Millennium time period, or 2) during the Last Great Day time period after the second resurrection brings them back to a second physical life. If someone lives on into the Millennium, they are going to know that Jesus Christ is real and all other religions are false. They will also know that The Left, Secular Humanism, The Right, and the human so-called "elite" of this world are false hopes. In short, as

previously pointed out, there will be no religious or metaphysical confusion of any kind. The surviving humans can listen to Jesus Christ teach ... and Satan will be in jail. Physical Israelites and non-Israelite peoples are going to experience or see the Israelites brought back to the land, healed, and converted. They are also going to witness the Promised Land being transformed into something like the Garden of Eden. The peoples of the non-Israelite nations are going to want to participate as well. All surviving humans, and those born in the Millennium, will be taught they must change value systems, repent of their sins to be forgiven, and ask to receive the Holy Spirit (Acts 2:38). Their decision will be relatively easy and likely correct; they will reject Satan and his values and embrace Jesus and his values that are also God the Father's values. They will learn how to live a different and better way, God's way of a peaceful abundant life. They can teach their children to do the same. Regarding Jesus Christ's and God the Father's values being the same:

**"I and the Father are one!"**  
John 10:30, MKJV

Regarding those humans who are not in the first resurrection, who don't live on into the Millennium, and who are not born during the Millennium, their situation is slightly different, but akin to those living on into or being born during the Millennium. There is a shock factor involved for all of these human beings who are resurrected back to a second physical life in order to receive their first real chance at spiritual salvation. "How could I possibly be alive again? And, there's our Johnny!" They will be stunned.

Before continuing, your author wishes to coin an acronym, which is as follows:

OTEC → one-time eternal chance

Each human being has only one chance, one real chance at eternal salvation. This one-time eternal chance (OTEC) involves **the clear choice**, once a person is healed, not in pain, and in their right mind, to understand they are making a choice between: 1) the two Jehovahs and their unity of the package of values that pertains to life and 2) Satan and his set of values that cause pain, suffering, and death ... and The Tragedy of Being. This clear choice must not be based on, or overly influenced by

fear, or pain, or discouragement, etc. Your author writes "discouragement" because some people get so beat up by their hard lives they come to believe that, "I'll always be a failure," which is false. The OTEC must be timed properly, with the greatest possible wisdom, love, and skill so that the individual human being receiving their OTEC will have the very best chance at choosing correctly. Choosing correctly obviously means to reject Satan and to accept Jesus Christ, and by extension, to accept God the Father. The timing and circumstances of the OTEC are no trivial matter. God the Father, the greatest being in the universe and our potential father, renders the judgment as to the timing of the extension of the OTEC to every human being. No one else is better qualified, of greater character and ability, more far ranging in vision, to make this extremely important timing choice. God the Father extends the OTEC to those who will be in the first resurrection, those who live on into the Millennium, including those who will be born during the Millennium, and to those who are in the second resurrection. What better outcome could any of us ever hope for than for the Supreme Being in the universe to make the timing call as to when the OTEC is extended to us and to the people that we love? We have to trust God the Father's love, wisdom,

character, and ability in extending the OTEC at just the right time for all. And he will.

God the Father → renders a judgment → as to the timing → of the OTEC → to each person

Each human being → makes their own choice → once they receive their OTEC

With the above in mind it is important that we consider this important OTEC from the point of view of the two Jehovahs. Your author, being only a man and not a prophet, will do the best he can. The super-vast majority of human beings will have the OTEC extended to them shortly after their resurrection back to physical life, i.e., during the Last Great Day time period. At that point in time they will have all of the experiential (and conceptual) knowledge they acquired of good and evil from their first physical life and will in all likelihood have been worn out by their first physical life. **Life is hard. No one is exempt.** Those so resurrected might have laments pertaining to their own bad habits, failed relationships, loss of family and friends, financial mistakes and hardships, foolish decisions leading to unnecessarily fractured homes, wasting too much time on foolish things, etc. In short,

these people will still not know the right answers, but they will have experienced a lot of the wrong ones. And now they will receive a second chance to do it all over again, only this time, correctly.

There are two huge factors that will really help them in their important decision, which your author will divide into separate paragraphs for ease of reading. **Factor #1** is they will have very clear Exhibit "A" evidence of the results of God's way being practiced, including: A) how healthy and happy people are from the Millennium time period, B) how the earth is now like a Garden of Eden, and C) they will have a chance to interact with those former human beings who were transformed into spirit beings at the first resurrection and are now helping Jesus Christ as kings and priests on the earth. They will also be able to see Jesus Christ himself. Exposure to these first resurrection former humans and Jesus Christ will resonate with those resurrected back to physical life at the second resurrection. Those so resurrected back to physical life can contrast this entire amount of incredible Exhibit "A" evidence of God's way working, with the Exhibit "B" of Satan's way producing sick of mind and sick of heart broken human beings, including

themselves. They will remember (or be taught) "the civil war of a human experience" human history, prior to the Millennium, has been. Further, they will be taught or perhaps remember, as the case may be, that human beings following Satan's way almost led to the complete annihilation of the human race, as well as the destruction of the earth. In short, God's way extended produces a healthy earth, healthy people, healthy relationships, and ultimately an incorruptible eternal life as a unique MRP spirit being, whereas Satan's way extended produces pain, suffering, death, and eternal annihilation.

**Factor #2** will also take a bit of explaining. One part of the explanation is that God the Father knows these human beings will have ALREADY PAID almost all of the really hard costs they will ever have to pay. Most of these human beings will have been really beaten up and worn down by their first physical life. In short, they have already paid dearly for following Satan. Some of the costs they have had to pay include all of the pain, suffering, anxiety, depression, etc., from the evil part of being forced to experientially acquire the knowledge of good and evil. Each human being got a life sentence concerning this, due to Adam and Eve's incorrect choice for all of us. Further,

for those who will have died in their first physical life of something like cancer or old age, etc., an additional cost that they will have had to pay was the debilitating process leading up to their "final" expiration. God the Father knows exactly where these resurrected human beings are in the process of costs already being paid. And exactly where they are is analogously like a human being who has already paid 29 years and eleven months worth of payments toward a 30-year mortgage on their home. A person in this position only has to make just one more payment and then they own their home. By God the Father timing the OTEC to where it is an easy "Yes" answer, with very clear Exhibit "A" versus Exhibit "B" evidence, most human beings will jump at the chance to acknowledge they were wrong. They will then go ahead and make the necessary changes to live out a successful second physical life with this vital divine lifeline. Almost all will choose to pay the few additional costs required, having already paid though the nose and suffered so much in their first physical life.

Two big factors → in God the Father's judgment to delay the OTEC → for the vast super-majority of the human race → until the Last Great Day time period (God the Father exerts his free will)

Factor #1 → there will be very clear Exhibit "A" versus Exhibit "B" evidence available → for those receiving the OTEC → to compare and contrast

Factor #2 → God the Father times the OTEC to a time when → the person receiving the OTEC → has already paid almost all of the costs a human being will ever have to pay

Compared to what each human being has already had to experience in their first physical life, the relatively easy, few additional costs each will have to pay are as follows:

Acknowledging that God the Father and Jesus Christ own the entire universe and always will.

Confirming they would like to change their life so they are in good standing in the eyes of the two Jehovahs. This will require admitting they were wrong, ergo them repenting of their sins. It would also include admitting that, unfortunately, their actions and attitudes were a contributory cause of The Tragedy of Being.

Accepting Jesus Christ as Savior, being humbly grateful for his sacrifice, paying the costs no

human being can ever pay, and receiving the gift of the Holy Spirit.

Further, to ask that the righteousness of Jesus Christ will now live in them and be imputed to them so they are in good standing with both God the Father and Jesus Christ going forward.

To forever repudiate Satan and his values.

To forgive oneself, including for what they did not know in their first physical life and for what they did in their first physical life.

As others were also subject to the same difficult human condition, to forgive others. No one is exempt from the conditions of the test. All had to experience The Tragedy of Being generated by all of us. Recognizing this and forgiving oneself and others will be important.

To "forgive" God the Father and Jesus Christ for the tough creative process imposed on the human race due to our rebellion against them, including the pain, suffering, and death extent in learning about good and evil the hard, experiential way.

"And have you entirely forgotten the encouraging words God spoke to you, his children? He said, "My child, don't ignore it when the Lord disciplines you, and don't be discouraged when he corrects you. For the Lord disciplines those he loves, and he punishes those he accepts as his children." As you endure this divine discipline, remember that God is treating you as his own children. Whoever heard of a child who was never disciplined? If God doesn't discipline you as he does all of his children, it means that you are illegitimate and are not really his children after all. Since we respect our earthly fathers who disciplined us, **should we not all the more cheerfully submit to the discipline of our heavenly Father and live forever?** For our earthly fathers disciplined us for a few years, doing the best they knew how. But God's discipline is always right and good for us because it means we will share in his holiness. No discipline is enjoyable while it is happening--it is painful! But afterward there will be a quiet harvest of right living for those who are trained in **this way.**" Hebrews 12:5-11, NLT

To live out the balance of their second physical life making choices based upon God's unity of the package of values that pertains to life; this

includes following the divine law instructions and respecting the individual natural rights of others.

To learn to value, acquire, and use the virtues.

To learn what it means to be productive in a peaceful, responsible, and sustainable way.

To learn the necessary social etiquette that is required in order to be able to get along with other people.

To be grateful for God the Father's OTEC and for the wise and loving timing of it.

To be humble and grateful to be given what looks to them like a second chance to finally be included in God's eternal family (it is, of course, their first real chance at salvation).

In your author's opinion, virtually everyone, of this super-vast majority of the human race who have ever lived (tens of billions of people), will accept the evidence and the explanation, process the shock of it all, and say, "Yes," to the two Jehovahs and "No," to Satan. And they will prove it by living their second physical lives differently this time around. In short, **God the**

**Father will be proven right** in his loving and wise timing of the OTEC.

It is not knowable by your author what will happen to those, if any, who use their free will to say, "No," to their OTEC. Perhaps they will simply be put back to physical death and await the third resurrection where they will be eternally exterminated, along with the other permanent enemies of God. This is up to the judgment of Jesus Christ, not your author. It is doubtful they will be allowed to disrupt the Last Great Day time period and its very important purpose.

There is no doubt going to be some painful spiritual, mental, and emotional adjustments that those in the second resurrection will have to process and work through. People will have to admit they made the wrong sacrifices, including serving false gods and/or secular isms and false ideologies, i.e., they wasted a lot of their time and energy serving the wrong things. Jesus Christ will no doubt have to step in and provide spiritual, mental, emotional, and physical healing. The following scriptures will be taught and acknowledged:

"O LORD, my strength and my fortress, and my refuge in the day of affliction, the nations shall come to You from the ends of the earth, and shall say, Surely **our fathers have inherited lies**, vanity, and there is no profit in them." Jeremiah 16:19, MKJV

"They [Israel, but also applying to the nations regarding wasting time, energy, and resources on what amounts to the wrong, waste-of-life, sacrifices] provoked Him to jealousy with strange gods; with abominations they provoked Him to anger. They sacrificed to devils, not to God; to gods whom they knew not, to new ones newly come up, whom your fathers did not fear." Deuteronomy 32:16-17, MKJV

"Then when they are exiled among the nations, they will remember me. [This is speaking of Israel, but the concept in this verse will apply to the people of other nations, too.] They will recognize how grieved I am by their unfaithful hearts and lustful eyes that long for other gods. Then at last they will hate themselves for all their wickedness."  
Ezekiel 6:9, NLT

God the Father is evidently going to wait to time the OTEC until the first physical life of the super-vast majority of most of the people who have ever lived will have been "completed," i.e., he is going to use the second resurrection to offer the OTEC during the Last Great Day time period to most people. And clearly he is allowing the experiential acquisition of the knowledge of good and evil to be an extended process during people's first physical life, filled with a lot of suffering, but with some good experiences, too, of course. After all, God does not want anyone to give up on life; he wants them to give up on evil and the values and vices it is based upon.

Your author wishes to make a further central point pertaining to the suffering part of the human experience. This point centers on **one effect** that these human beings will very likely have experienced. In an authorial speculation, it can analogously be argued that God the Father is tenderizing the human meat in people's first physical life. Why? In order to get each formerly rebellious human being to come to the point where they, of their own free will, are finally ready to actively cooperate with God the Father and Jesus Christ in their divine individualism process. God the Father and Jesus

Christ want to save, not condemn (John 3:17). They want MRP divine individuals, the more, the better. There is a place at God's dinner table of life for you, if you will accept the process and cooperate in it. And this is true for all of those who are currently thought eternally lost. They are not. God the Father has just not extended the OTEC to them yet, but he will. And when he does, they will be tenderized meat, i.e., now humble and teachable. They will be shown the difference between God's way and Satan's way and then the choice in front of them will be very clear.

God the Father, in effect, chose for the majority of the human race, in this sense only, **he chose when they would choose**. But this does not mean he takes away our free will or our ability to choose.

God the Father's careful timing of the OTEC → does NOT mean he took away each person's free will → he simply timed the person's choice → to a point in time where they will have → the greatest possible chance → of eternal success

Earlier in section 10.3, herein incorporated by reference, your author theorized that each human being born after Adam's and Eve's sin,

other than Jesus Christ, was infected with sin as a disease. This sin as a disease is Satan's evil nature, now known as human nature. Each human being is, in essence, sin positive.

Evidently, this sin as a disease infected us at the moment of our conception, per the Psalm 51:5 scripture below and per your author's earlier arguments and discussion in section 10.3.

"Behold, I was brought forth in iniquity, and in sin did my mother conceive me."

Psalms 51:5, MKJV

"For I was born a sinner--yes, from the moment my mother conceived me."

Psalms 51:5, NLT

"But I can't help myself, because **it is sin inside me** that makes me do these evil things. I know I am rotten through and through so far as **my old sinful nature** is concerned. No matter which way I turn, I can't make myself do right. I want to, but I can't." Romans 7:17-18, NLT

The good news is that the sacrifice of Jesus Christ can pay the penalty for our specific sins AND also for the sin as a disease inside of us that makes every human being sin positive ("positive" in the sense that sin is present, not

absent in us). The further good news is that Jesus Christ can heal someone who has been blind from birth and he can also heal someone who has been crippled from birth, both great miracles. Metaphorically speaking, each human being, including your author, has to some extent been both blind from birth and crippled from birth due to sin and its negative effects.

"Praise the LORD, O my soul, and forget not all his benefits-- **who forgives all your sins** and heals all your diseases [including, eventually, sin as a disease inside of us],"  
Psalms 103:2-3, NIV

From the human point of view it can be acknowledged that The Tragedy of Being looks like a Torture Chamber and sometimes seems to function just like one. While an understandable conclusion, The Tragedy of Being is not a Torture Chamber. That is not its purpose, but it does involve extensive human suffering. This leads to one of the reasons your author wrote this entire book. What your author will explain next is also tantamount to an un-provable authorial speculation. However, what will be explained is inferable, all things considered (and there are a lot of things to consider, per this lengthy book). For the reader's benefit, here is

your author's speculation concerning The Tragedy of Being, subject to future correction by the two Jehovahs, written in tabular summary format:

God the Father and Jesus Christ knew that it was highly likely that the serpent would morally and intellectually defeat Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden.

When Adam and Eve sinned, though an unpleasant development, the two Jehovahs did not give up on their plan. They could have killed Adam and Eve on the spot, regrouped, and then tried again with Adam 2.0 and Eve 2.0. They did not.

Because Adam and Eve rejected God's conceptual training and instruction and accepted Satan's instead, God had to allow for doing things the hard way. The hard way was largely non-conceptual, or minimally conceptual compared to how things could have been. In substance, the hard way was an experiential process of man acquiring the knowledge of good and evil. This would involve pain, suffering, and a first physical death. Learning things experientially takes a much longer period of time than learning them conceptually (and

ultimately you need the correct systematic concepts to correctly explain things anyway, i.e., the correct theory). In essence, men, using their free will, picked the hard way instead of the easy way and God allowed it.

The two Jehovahs had to provide a Savior, which they did. Jesus Christ suffered becoming our Savior.

God the Father suffers watching his children (mankind) suffer and he also has to watch them physically die, too. Since God the Father actually loves man, this is a lot of suffering and death that God the Father also has to endure. Of course, Jesus Christ also has to endure these same things. The two Jehovahs will have to endure seeing billions of people suffer and die because each individual involved was, wittingly or not, involved in a rebellion against the two Jehovahs and their easier way.

The two Jehovahs had to have a plan to save those tens of billions of people who would go through this life the hard way. They did so with their multiple resurrections plan being **inclusive of all**.

The two Jehovahs knew that allowing human beings to be infected (injected at conception) with "sin as a disease" was going to be spiritual, mental, emotional, and relationship poison. They knew that the negative fruits of that sin as a disease, manifesting itself through countless bad human choices, would make human beings miserable through suffering and ultimately lead to a point where the world and everyone on it would be in danger. They allowed for it anyway, with the plan for God the Father to step in and save man by sending Jesus Christ back to the earth just in time, in order to stop the impending cataclysm. Jesus Christ's reign for 1,000 years, and thereafter, will produce incredible healing and results and provide God's Exhibit "A" for mankind to experience and see. The fruits of Satan's values will manifest as a completely nihilistic moral, intellectual, productive, and social failure. Satan's disaster will then become, in effect, God's Exhibit "B." The Millennium reign of Jesus Christ will be such a great success, better than we can imagine, that virtually all of mankind will clearly prefer to live under conditions that produce God's Exhibit "A."

The first physical life of those who will be in the second resurrection functioned as a human meat

tenderizer, breaking people down and ultimately making them humble and teachable. God the Father will extend the critical OTEC at just the right time. These wounded, tenderized humans will finally be more than ready to jump at the chance to reject Satan and to embrace God and to finally cooperate with the two Jehovahs in their divine individualism process.

But this leads to the important question, "Will this plan really work?" The answer is, "Yes!" Jesus Christ will heal the wounded, tenderized human beings, including starting the process of healing them of sin as a disease. The full, complete, and permanent eternal healing will take place at the second spiritual resurrection to an incorruptible eternal life, at a time and in a way of the two Jehovahs' choosing. At that moment in time their sin-infected, mortal, and corruptible bodies will be changed to spiritually healed, immortal, incorruptible bodies, just like those human beings who were in the first resurrection will have already experienced.

"So also the resurrection of the dead. It is sown [conceived] in [sin-as-a-disease infected] corruption, it is raised in **incorruption**; it is sown in dishonor, it is raised in glory; it is sown in weakness, it is raised in power; it is sown a

natural body, it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body. And so it is written, "The first man, Adam, was made a living soul," the last Adam was a life-giving Spirit. But not the spiritual first, but the natural; afterward the spiritual. The first man was out of earth, earthy; the second Man was the Lord [Jesus Christ] from Heaven. Such the earthy man, such also the earthy ones. And such the heavenly Man, such also the heavenly ones. And according as we bore the [sin-infected] image of the earthy man, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly Man. And I say this, brothers, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God, nor does corruption inherit incorruption." 1 Corinthians 15:42-50,  
MKJV

The two Jehovahs know what they are doing. They are in control of a creative process, **not** of each individual man's free will, but of their own creative process. They know they can deliver and they will. We will not sin any longer, post-resurrection. That is the very meaning and intent of the adjective "incorruptible." Why won't we sin any longer? Finally, here is your author's speculative, inferred answer:

The Tragedy of Being is not a Torture Chamber. It only looks that way to a human being. In actuality, The Tragedy of Being is a sophisticated, time-consuming, and extensive **immunization protocol** that results in us being inoculated against sin. The inoculation is, in effect, a sterilizing inoculation.

The two Jehovahs are inoculating human beings against sin, putting us through an experiential, suffering-based, extended immunization protocol, so they do not have to put us to eternal death. This is your author's belief.

In God's immunization protocol they are allowing each human being to be infected with Satan's evil sinful nature (effectively, injected into us at conception) and the immunization protocol takes time. It is very painful, involving much suffering, frustration, and even a first physical death in most cases. Using their free will, the two Jehovahs control the overall process, but not our free will, in such a way that being sin positive (and sinning as a result, Romans 3:23) does not invalidate or end our ability to be eternally saved. The two Jehovahs used their free will to provide a Savior, Jesus Christ, who suffered, too. The results of this long, tough immunization protocol were judged

to be worth it, from the point of view of the only two beings in the universe who possess the Unity of Virtues, i.e., from the point of view of the two perfect, loving, wise, long-term, prudential thinkers, whose judgments are always true, correct, and just. God the Father does not just reserve to himself the ability to time the OTEC, he and Jesus Christ chose this immunization protocol for their children in much the same way a loving and wise parent analogously makes important medical decisions for the minor children under their supervision and care. It will work. They will deliver.

Authorial speculation: The Tragedy of Being = an immunization protocol

The immunization protocol → uses sin as a disease → to infect human beings → making them sin positive

The implementation of the immunization protocol → means that God did not have to give up on their plan regarding human beings → even after Adam and Eve sinned

The final result of the immunization protocol → will mean that God does not have to put all

human beings, each currently sin positive, to eternal death ... because

Sin as a disease → is completely healed at the spiritual resurrection (either the first or the second, as the case for that human may be)

A successfully inoculated human being → one who accepts Jesus Christ as Savior + yields to + cooperates with the two Jehovahs → in their divine individualism process → results in → an incorruptible, unique, eternal, MRP spirit being → who will NEVER sin, ever again

Each human being who is successfully inoculated against sin as a disease → does not have to be put to eternal death (a sterilizing inoculation)

"And remember, no one who wants to do wrong should ever say, "God is tempting me." **God is never tempted to do wrong**, and he never tempts anyone else either. Temptation comes from the lure of our own evil desires. These evil desires lead to evil actions, and evil actions lead to death." James 1:13-15, NLT

The two Jehovahs → are never tempted to sin

The two Jehovahs → never tempt anyone else

Our own evil desires lead to → evil actions → sin  
→ death

Because of past human free will choices (Adam's and Eve's) → The Tragedy of Being → is necessary

Jesus Christ = a bridge from death to life for human beings

The Tragedy of Being → an immunization protocol → finally results in a successful, sterilizing inoculation → for those who complete the divine individualism process

God = in control of the immunization protocol

God's immunization protocol → does NOT → violate free will

Further authorial speculation → the sterilizing inoculation, being completed at the resurrection to an eternal, incorruptible spirit being → includes → some kind of **spiritual disgust syndrome** being installed into us that will trigger at even the very thought of sin

Post-resurrection we will not be infected with sin any longer, but will be entirely righteous Holy Spirit:

"So also the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption; it is sown in dishonor, it is raised in glory; it is sown in weakness, it is raised in power; it is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body. And so it is written, "The first man, Adam, was made a living soul," the last Adam [Jesus Christ] was a life-giving Spirit. But not the spiritual first, but the natural; afterward the spiritual." 1 Corinthians 15:42-46, MKJV

The two Jehovahs → did not cause → The Tragedy of Being → but ... they are utilizing it

The two Jehovahs have the two supreme minds in the universe. In any disagreement with mortal man, if they changed their minds to agree with mortal man, then everyone would be wrong, not just mortal man. Your author has observed that one of the signs of a great mind, particularly when the great mind is certain they are correct, is that the possessor of said great mind is: 1) quite confident and 2) not overly concerned about what others might think. This

appears to be the case regarding The Tragedy of Being that is being utilized, not caused, by the two Jehovahs. The two Jehovahs are evidently not all that concerned by what their someday future children “think” (really feel) about the pain, suffering, and death resulting from Tragedy of Being. To summarize the main purposes of The Tragedy of Being, we have:

- 1) It shows in objective reality just what results occur from adopting Satan’s conceptual training and instruction, and his values, and then making choices based on those morally and intellectually flawed values. Considering the human race taken as a whole, the results show forth almost unbearable pain, suffering, and death ... and if the two Jehovahs did not intervene, the earth and everyone on it would be destroyed. Satan is inadvertently providing the two Jehovahs their Exhibit “B” to ultimately use against him during the Millennium and Last Great Day time periods.
- 2) It tenderizes the rebellious, stubborn, willful human “meat,” thus making human beings far more humble and then teachable.
- 3) It is an immunization protocol that results in those human beings who cooperate with the two Jehovahs in their divine individualism process

being successfully inoculated against sin as a disease, so said human beings do not have to be put to eternal death. The inoculation against sin as a disease is a sterilizing inoculation, meaning once someone goes through the process they will never sin ever again; they will be incorruptible (post-resurrection). It is quite possible that at the same time we are changed into an eternal spirit being the two Jehovahs install a disgust syndrome into us re sin (the very thought of sin disgusts us from then on).

Never bet against the two Jehovahs, not even in the middle of a "game" where it looks like they are way behind. They will deliver. Satan will not.

Your author needs to add a brief insert paragraph before going on to the last portion of this section. It is necessary to complete the earlier discussion of free will, at least in regard to some major aspects of free will that the two Jehovahs have personally decided to exercise. God the Father chose to exert his free will in regards to the timing of the OTEC. God the Father and Jesus Christ (the Word at the time) jointly agreed to use (their own) free will to provide mankind with a necessary Savior. God the Father and Jesus Christ jointly agreed to use

their free will in patiently allowing for The Tragedy of Being to be used as a part of their strange plan. Further, God the Father and Jesus Christ can and do use their free will to answer prayers in the affirmative, when it is in their judgment a wise course of action to do so.

Now we are at an intellectual place whereby the last part of this section can be devoted to defending the two Jehovahs against all charges currently pending due to their "Indictment" about being guilty concerning The Tragedy of Being. It is freely acknowledged that God can look bad concerning The Tragedy of Being, at least from the point of view of a human being who is suffering. The below list of charges are from section 10.7, earlier in this book.

### **God's List of Indictable Offenses:**

Unloving  
Uncaring  
Lazy  
Stupid (or unwise or foolish)  
Impotent (God is not strong enough to fix "x")  
Worthless  
Unforgiving  
Petty  
Vindictive

Affectionless  
Callous, cold, and cruel  
Incompetent  
Negligent  
Evil  
Etc.

The above is a very tough list. The items on it are such that if one party in an important relationship were actually guilty, then it could really be damaging to the viability of the relationship itself. If so guilty, the relationship could be in real trouble and it might even be finished. If your author were God's defense attorney, he might be tempted to charge God a great deal, because on the surface of things it would appear to be a very difficult job to get an acquittal. For the two Jehovahs, however, your author provides this one "on the house," as there is nothing your author could ever do to repay them. Hopefully this defense will be worth more than the two Jehovahs are paying for it.

It is necessary to lay down some important facts and principles to get a different perspective. First, your author might as well stipulate that in the eyes of a hurting human being, one who is suffering, or who has

experienced great loss, any of the above charges might appear to be true, or let us say, would feel like they are true to the hurting human. To have experienced being anxious, or depressed, or worried, or hurting, or to have had to face "unexplainable" tragedy, or to watch someone you deeply love be hurting is very hard. It can sap one's will to keep on living. Your author has experienced most all of the above himself. Second, it is always important to take into consideration the context of the situation, without which the truth will be missed. The context of the human situation is largely what this book is about and everything your author has written to this point is incorporated herein by reference. Some key parts of the context of the situation are as follows:

There is a war going on and in a wartime setting, nothing is just (or almost nothing).

The wartime setting forced most communication to be coded, particularly after Adam and Eve chose Satan instead of God, i.e., the father and mother of the human race made a choice that complicated things going forward.

God granted angels free will (God does not want angel-bots, i.e., preprogrammed angels who

have to behave and conduct all of their actions in a certain way).

God granted all men free will (God does not want people-bots, i.e., preprogrammed men who have to behave in a certain way and conduct their actions in a certain way).

A general law of the universe is this: if ANYTHING comes into conflict with free will, then free will is going to govern the outcome.

God granted all men so much time.

God gave all men minds. Man can think.

Because God granted man both free will plus time, God self-limited his own range of freedom of action - for a time (the same is true for his grant of free will and time to angels).

Adam and Eve rejected God's conceptual teaching and training and accepted Satan's.

Values → choices → consequences (man makes choices based on what he values and those choices have consequences)

Man, having perhaps 70 – 100 years, has a time preference far higher than the eternal two Jehovahs do (man wants things to happen as soon as possible) (man is a short-term thinker, as compared to the two Jehovahs).

Man cannot kill and make alive.

Man cannot wound and then completely heal.

God took a risk to create human beings.

God took an even greater **reputational risk** to grant us the honor of making us in their image and likeness.

God did not have to create man.

God did not have to create the angels.

When God created the angels there was a chance that someday some of them would rebel against him and God allowed them to use their free will and time for some of them to do so (Satan + about one-third of all of the angels).

God is allowing Satan and the fallen angels and their evil team, including a satanic spiritual

seedline, to use their free will and time to attempt to disrupt God's eternal plans for man.

The two Jehovahs are eternal beings who think out into eternity, i.e., they have an extremely low time preference (they are more concerned with getting things correct, almost no matter how long it takes, than they are about the time element involved in getting things correct).

It was an act of love for God to make the angels.

It was an even greater act of love for God to make man.

God could have given up when Adam and Eve sinned, killed them both, killed Satan and the fallen angels, i.e., God could have quit when the going got tough, but did not.

Man has not been versed in the science of praxeology, a science of the logic of action, particularly human action. Because of this man does not easily recognize or think about the fact that when man chooses and takes the action to use time and resources to obtain "A," that he has to forgo the same time and resources he could otherwise use to also obtain "B." In other

words, man, when making a choice does not always ask three important questions: 1) Instead of what? and further 2) At whose expense? and further still 3) At what total cost?

Further still, man, with a high time preference does not always think very far out into the future, or consider what the future will look like if he takes a certain action to achieve a goal. Some things that look or feel good at the time can make our future much worse **if** we do not consider what the future will be like, even if we are "successful" in achieving our goal (our goal being what looks or feels good at the time). A man can easily trap himself because he does not think through all of the ramifications of his actions, those ramifications also considering "instead of what?" and "at whose expense?" and "at what total cost?"

God does consider the time element and what the long-term future will look like if an action is currently taken or not taken in an attempt to achieve a goal.

God does consider: Instead of what?

God does consider: At whose expense?

And God does consider: At what total cost?

It would have been safer to not make the angels.

It would have been safer to not make man.

It would have been far safer to not give the angels and man free will, but the upside for both angels and man would have been limited to them becoming basically angel-bots and people-bots.

Summary: God does consider: 1) "Instead of what?" 2) "At whose expense?" 3) "At what total cost?" and God does 4) consider the long term, including imagining what the future will look like if an action is successfully undertaken. Will it be in everyone's long-term best interest, or not?

Now it is time for the actual truth and this is instead of the morally and intellectually flawed, short-term point of view of hurting human beings. God the Father and Jesus Christ imagine a future with an incredible universe, a spectacular earth as universal headquarters, filled with: 1) incorruptible, eternal, moral, rational/reasonable, productive, socially adept, spirit beings (human beings now divine

individuals, post-resurrection) and 2) angels they can trust who will serve the two Jehovahs and who are beautiful, wise, capable, and socially adept in their own right, just lower than the two Jehovahs and now lower than resurrected human beings. The actual truth of the matter is that the two Jehovahs are:

Long-term love in action

Prudential – long-term wisdom in action

Long-term caring in action

God created the universe with the earth as a special habitation, i.e., God is not lazy or impotent or incompetent or worthless

God was so filled with empathy that they decided to have the Word, Jehovah number two, risk his eternal life to come to the earth as Jesus Christ in order to provide a Savior for man. This was a divine rescue mission and it successfully created a bridge from death to life for us, God's special characters. This was an act of love and God the Father, through Jesus, lovingly healed some people while Jesus was on the earth (as an example of what they can and will do), i.e., Jesus and the Father have affection for their

special creation, man, and are decidedly not callous, cold, or cruel.

Jesus Christ endured suffering of all kinds, including physical. He lived a disciplined, sinless life and then offered himself to be crucified for man so that man would have a Savior.

Jesus Christ as Savior has empathy for man and wants to forgive us; so does God the Father, i.e., God is not petty, vindictive, or unforgiving.

God the Father proved he could resurrect a man, Jesus Christ, into an incorruptible spirit being. Now there is a proof of concept for all men to feel confident about, i.e., God is competent to save, heal, resurrect, and to give eternal life, ergo God is not impotent, quite the opposite, and God is not worthless, again, quite the opposite.

God did not abandon the human race after Adam and Eve sinned; instead they risked even more for man. God the Father doubled down and sent the Word as Jesus Christ in order to save us. It was a selfless and risky move, but they were not going to abandon man.

Since Adam and Eve rejected God's training and instruction, accepting instead, Satan's, God had to come to grips with how to teach and train man, since man has much to learn. Because man rejected the use of conceptual training, God was now forced to use experiential training, and this meant man had to learn many things the hard way. In this instance, "Instead of what?" meant man would have to experientially acquire the knowledge of good and evil instead of receiving ongoing systematic conceptual training and instruction directly from God. It was man's choice that forced this "instead of what?" response from God. God still had to teach man in some way, now it was going to be the hard way. Adam and Eve picked the hard way, not the best way.

The serpent, Satan, evidently thought that he had "proven" his case that man was lower than the angels, easily corruptible, and not worthy of being given eternal, universal responsibility. Before the fact, Satan also likely believed that if he could corrupt man then God would have to abandon his goals for man, i.e., Satan probably thought God would have no rational choice but to terminate the "man experiment." But God did not give up on man. God's Strange Plan shows he truly loves man, has affection for him,

and will go to great lengths to save him. In short, God was not unloving, Satan was. God was not unwise, Satan was.

The truth of the matter is this: Satan, the most evil being ever, **is guilty** of most everything on the list of God's indictable and supposed offenses, while God the Father and Jesus Christ **are not guilty on all points**. Instead, they do have love, affection, empathy, and caring, genuine concern for man ... and unwaveringly wise plans for man extending out into eternity. And they are going to deliver. They are going to deliver even though Satan, the fallen angels, the demons, and the group of men comprising the spiritual seedline of Satan are actively opposing the two Jehovahs and trying to corrupt, enslave, and destroy man.

God the Father and Jesus Christ, possessing the Unity of Virtues in their being, possessing **The Way** of the unity of the package of values that pertain to abundant eternal life, are going to: find those who have been thought eternally lost, save those who are thought to be unsalvageable, make alive those thought dead forever, teach those who were not teachable, train those who were not trainable, physically heal those thought permanently disabled,

emotionally and mentally heal those who minds and hearts have been poisoned, and spiritually convert and save those thought beyond hope. The two Jehovahs will deliver for man and then love resurrected man for all eternity, this time with affection and kindness in real time.

"because I will proclaim the name of the LORD, ascribe greatness to our God. He is the Rock; **His work is perfect**. For all His ways are just, **a God of faithfulness**, and without evil; just and upright is He." Deuteronomy 32:3-4, MKJV

"So says the LORD, Do not let the wise glory in his wisdom, nor let the mighty glory in his might; do not let the rich glory in his riches; but let him who glories glory in this, that he understands and knows Me, that I am the LORD, **doing kindness**, judgment, and righteousness, in the earth; for in these I delight, says the LORD." Jeremiah 9:23-24, MKJV

God is motivated by long-term love and is using prudential, long-term thinking in order to engage in ongoing competent and caring action. The attention to detail belies any charge of negligence. But the grant of free will, plus time, and Satan's war against the process have

complicated everything. Angelic and human sin generated The Tragedy of Being, but God the Father and Jesus Christ are going to use it to generate eternal, long-term good. Satan's actions have forced complications, much pain, suffering, and death, and a time delay into God's plans for man. Or, it could be said, something along these lines: 1) God had a workable plan "A" and 2) God had a winnable plan "B," too, should that prove necessary. It was. What the two Jehovahs never had, was any thought of ever losing to Satan, their adversary. And they will not. Plan "B" can look like it is very crooked and even perverse to a human mind, but man was the one who followed Satan-the-perverse instead of God.

"Consider the work of God; for who can make straight **what He has made crooked?**"  
(God allowed for things to become Tragedy-of-Being crooked, for a time) Ecclesiastes 7:13,  
MKJV

Satan cannot make straight what God has made, or allowed to be, crooked. It only looks like Satan is winning so far. But God can, has, and will outthink and outwork Satan to deliver for man, even if they have to suffer watching man suffer through The Tragedy of Being and

even if God has to, in essence, zigzag, or go backward first before going forward. It will evidently take time and God's Strange Plan for people to finally learn **it is in their interest to be principled** (and to be rational, peacefully productive, and to think long-term).

God's Strange Plan → will help men to finally get to the point where they realize → it is in their interest to be principled ... and rational ... and peacefully productive ... and to think long-term

"For God has shut up all in unbelief, so that He might [ultimately] show mercy to all."

Romans 11:32, MKJV

"Remember former things from forever; for **I am God, and no other is God**, even none like Me, declaring the end from the beginning, and from the past things which were not done, saying, **My purpose shall stand**, and I will do all My pleasure;" Isaiah 46:9-10, MKJV

"And if we are children, then we are heirs; heirs of God and joint-heirs with Christ; so that if we suffer with Him, we may also be glorified together. For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the coming glory to be revealed in us. For

the earnest expectation of the creation waits for the manifestation of the sons of God. [A time delay, "Yes," a defeat, "No!"] For the creation was not willingly subjected to vanity, but because of Him who subjected it on hope that the creation itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. And we know that the whole creation groans and travails in pain together until now." Romans 8:17-22, MKJV

"And we know that all things work together for [eternal] good to those who love God, to those who are called according to His [long-term] purpose." Romans 8:28, MKJV

"But the God of all grace, He calling us to His eternal glory by Christ Jesus, **after you have suffered a little**, He will perfect, confirm, strengthen, and establish you."

1 Peter 5:10, MKJV

"For this cause we do not faint; but though our outward man perishes, yet the inward man is being renewed day by day. For the lightness of our present affliction works out for us a far more excellent eternal weight of glory, we not considering the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen; for the things

which are seen are not lasting, but the things  
which are not seen are everlasting.”

2 Corinthians 4:16-18, MKJV

With great minds, the two Jehovahs could have considered the possibility that man would follow Satan as being too risky and then decided not to make man at all. Or, God could have killed Adam and Eve after they sinned and just forgotten about their goals for man. Instead, they decided to wholeheartedly implement plan “B.” And maybe plan “B” was actually their likely real plan all along. The Romans 8:18 scripture, quoted above, reveals that the sufferings of the present time are not worthy to be compared with the coming, post-resurrection glory that man will enjoy throughout the balance of eternity. The two Jehovahs are doing what is necessary to deliver for man. Whatever is necessary is not unwise. And perhaps God is going to do other things not currently knowable to man to kill or diminish the memories of the past pain.

“He who blesses himself in the earth shall bless himself in the God of truth. And he who swears in the earth will swear by the God of truth; because **the former troubles are forgotten**, and because they are hidden from

My eyes. For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth. And the things before will not be remembered, nor come to mind."

Isaiah 65:16-17, MKJV

God and man are going to let go of the past and move forward together into eternity ... together forever and loving it so. Only moral, reasonable, productive, and socially adept beings will live on together into eternity. The two Jehovahs will heal and save the greatest number possible, only exterminating those who willfully refuse to yield to and cooperate with them. What else could they have done?

Nothing. They played the cards they were dealt by rebellious angels and rebellious mankind.

**They are not guilty of all charges.** Satan and his fallen angels and their unrepentantly, wicked human followers, however, are guilty. And this brings us to the next two sections pertaining to eternal judgment.

Before that, however, the two Jehovahs' plan, the plan that enabled them to go ahead and create complex life and then not give up when something went wrong, is motivated by love, crafted by supreme intelligence, and engineered by the two genius minds who created all science, technology, and engineering

– including botanical and animal and angelic life. But it was a plan that had to largely be kept secret, mysterious, and complex with intricate nuances, for good reasons. And all of the above is both a credible explanation (theory) of what is really going on with God and man and why. It is also a defense of the two Jehovahs. It explains **The Tragedy of Being**. It is an exposition of God's Strange Plan.

" ... But [God's] wisdom is shown to be right by what results from it."'" Matthew 11:19, NLT

#### **10.10 Eternal judgment – mankind**

As previously explained, God the Father reserves to himself the timing of every man's one-time eternal chance (OTEC) pertaining to eternal life (John 6:44). The Father's timing of the OTEC and how each person responds determines whether that particular person will be: 1) in the first resurrection or the third resurrection or 2) in the second resurrection or the third resurrection. Again, this is largely dependent on God the Father and his perfect timing for each person. But ... if a man or a woman, once called, willfully and permanently refuses to cooperate with the two Jehovahs in

their divine individualism process, they will end up in the third resurrection.

The final judgment that each man and woman will receive will be performed for the two Jehovahs by Jesus Christ. Some of the aspects of that judgment will be described toward the end of this section.

"how God [the Father] anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and with power, and He went about doing good, and healing all those who were oppressed by the Devil, for God was with Him. And we are witnesses of all things which He did, both in the land of the Jews and in Jerusalem. They killed Him and hanged Him on a tree; but God raised Him up the third day and showed Him openly, not to all the people, but to witnesses hand-picked before by God, even to us who ate and drank with Him after He rose from the dead. And He commanded us to preach to the people, and to testify that it is He who was ordained of God to be the Judge of the living and the dead." Acts 10:38-42, MKJV

For now, God the Father times the OTEC and Jesus Christ will be the ultimate judge. How Jesus judges will have an eternal effect on those so judged.

The eternal judgment pertaining to man, mentioned in Hebrews 6:1-6, is probably best understood if we keep in mind there are three resurrections with different people in each resurrection. As already explained, each resurrection has its own purpose.

The harshest judgment, eternal death, i.e., the second death, is reserved for those who: 1) refuse to acknowledge the two Jehovahs' ownership of the universe, 2) refuse to accept Jesus Christ as Savior, thus paying for their own sins by dying the second death, 3) refuse to acknowledge and serve Jesus Christ as King of kings and Lord of Lords, 4) will not repent of their personal sins and change to the two Jehovahs' unity of the package of values that pertain to life and 5) refuse to forgive others. In short, they blaspheme the Holy Spirit of God the Father and Jesus Christ and refuse to accept their conditional offer of reconciliation and forgiveness. It is a conditional offer in the sense that the person receiving the offer must admit they were wrong (have sinned), apologize sincerely, and then repent and prove they have changed by changing how they think, speak, and act going forward. Of course, this is in addition to being baptized, having faith toward

God, and having hands laid on them to receive the Holy Spirit of the Father and the Son (Acts 2:38, Hebrews 6:1-2). Someone who ends up in the third resurrection will be there because they basically refuse to allow the two Jehovahs to save them by helping them to change. Their judgment will be eternal death, the second death. In an authorial speculation, the spiritual seedline of Satan may choose this path, or at least a certain percentage of them (Jeremiah 8:3). At any rate, some people will, e.g., the Antichrist Beast and the false prophet of Revelation 13. It is probable that the third resurrection will contain the least number of people, at least let us hope so. Of those in this terrible resurrection, probably the greatest number will be willfully unrepentant, for whatever reason.

"Therefore, having left the discourse of the beginning of Christ, let us go on to full growth, not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God, of the baptisms, of doctrine, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of **eternal judgment**. And this we will do, if God permits. For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the

Holy Spirit, and have tasted the good Word of God and the powers of the world to come, and who have fallen away; it is impossible, I say, to renew them again to repentance, since they crucify the Son of God afresh to themselves and put Him to an open shame."

Hebrews 6:1-6, MKJV

From the above scripture, evidently some people who start the process of becoming spiritual Israelites do not follow through. They are the other part of the group of people who will come up at the third resurrection where their eternal judgment, to be exterminated via the second death, will be pronounced and executed. It is never too late for a Christian who has backslid to repent and change back again to following the two Jehovahs, so not to despair if you are such a one. Instead of despairing, repent and go back to being a Christian, a spiritual Israelite, and be consistent in so doing until the day you die.

The third resurrection population subset:

- 1) Any men and women who, no matter when the Father extended them the OTEC, refuse to repent of their sins; they willfully, completely, and permanently reject the two Jehovahs, in

particular Jesus Christ as Savior. They have to end up in the third resurrection because they refuse to use their free will and change their minds toward the two Jehovahs.

2) Any Christians who begin the spiritual Israelite process, but then who willfully reconsider (not from weakness or duress or pain) and then permanently quit the process, thus preferring to pay the death penalty for themselves and to be dead for all eternity. In essence, any people who are in this subset unfortunately passed from having the potential opportunity of being in the first resurrection, the best resurrection, over to actually ending up being in the third resurrection, the worst resurrection. Your author is presuming, here, that people living on into the Millennium or born therein will see Jesus Christ actually ruling on the earth and so will not make this grave error. Regarding those who will be in the third resurrection:

Their eternal judgment → the second death  
(eternal extermination, non-existence)

Eternal judgment → the results are permanent  
(eternal) → they will no longer exist, ever again, throughout the balance of eternity

For those people who do make it into the first resurrection, it is a better resurrection (Hebrews 11:35). But with privileges come responsibilities, and much suffering, as described earlier in this chapter. Evidently, the people who ultimately attain the first resurrection are being judged all along their Christian walk by Jesus Christ, the judge. And in linear time they clearly are judged first because they are in the first resurrection.

"Beloved, do not be astonished at the fiery trial which is to try you, as though a strange thing happened to you, but rejoice according as you are partakers of Christ's suffering, so that when His glory shall be revealed, you may be glad also with exceeding joy. If you are reviled for the name of Christ, you are blessed, because the Spirit of God and of glory rests on you. Truly according to them [the bad guys hating Jesus], He is blasphemed, but according to you He is glorified. But let none of you suffer as a murderer, or a thief, or an evildoer, or a meddler in the affairs of others. But if one suffers as a Christian, let him not be ashamed, but let him glorify God because of this. For the time has come for the judgment to begin from the house of God. And if it first begins from us,

what will be the end of those disobeying the gospel of God? And if the righteous one is scarcely saved, where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear? Therefore let those who suffer according to the will of God commit their souls in well-doing, as to a faithful Creator."

1 Peter 4:12-19, MKJV

Some of those who are accounted "worthy" to be in the first resurrection are dead and "waiting" in their graves. Some others will be alive when God the Father sends Jesus Christ back to the earth to reign at what is known as the second coming. They will be changed from physical human beings to eternal spirit beings.

"For since we believe that Jesus died and was raised to life again, we also believe that when Jesus comes, God will bring back with Jesus all the Christians who have died. I can tell you this directly from the Lord: We who are still living when the Lord returns will not rise to meet him ahead of those who are in their graves. For the Lord himself will come down from heaven with a commanding shout, with the call of the archangel, and with the trumpet call of God. First, all the Christians who have died will rise from their graves. Then, together with them, we who are still alive and remain on the earth will

be caught up in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air and remain with him forever. So comfort and encourage each other with these words."

1 Thessalonians 4:14-18, NLT

We are saved through faith in Jesus Christ by having his shed blood pay for our sins, instead of having to die for all eternity ourselves. This is well known and your author cannot add much here. In short, we are saved by grace and rewarded according to our works.

"being justified freely by His grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus;"  
Romans 3:24, MKJV

"Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ."  
Romans 5:1, MKJV

We are rewarded according to our works.  
This is also well known, per the scripture below.

"For the Son of man shall come in the glory of His Father with His angels, and then He shall reward each one according to his works."  
Matthew 16:27, MKJV

If a man's works, such as they are, are analogously tested by fire and those works mainly burn up, then the reward shall be small, but the person who did not have many works will be saved by faith anyway. So take heart, the good works we attempt to do will likely have some effect and benefit to others and the Bible reminds us that our toil is not in vain (1 Corinthians 15:58).

"For any other foundation can no one lay than that which is laid, which is Jesus Christ. And if anyone builds on this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble, each one's work shall be revealed. For the Day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try each one's work as to what kind it is. If anyone's work which he built remains, he shall receive a reward. If anyone's work shall be burned up, he shall suffer loss. But he shall be saved, yet so as by fire."

1 Corinthians 3:11-15, MKJV

"Therefore, my beloved brethren, be steadfast, immovable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, knowing that your toil is not in vain in the Lord." 1 Corinthians 15:58, NASB

"And behold, I [Jesus Christ] am coming quickly, and My reward is with Me, to give to each according as his work is."

Revelation 22:12, MKJV

Part of the judgment of Christ concerning those in the first resurrection evidently includes the assignment of greater responsibilities to those who have shown they can handle responsibility. What is commonly referred to as "the parable of the talents" demonstrates this. The parable of the talents ends with showing that those who refuse to serve Jesus will be killed – harkening back to the third resurrection already discussed above. Your author will quote Luke's version below:

"The crowd was listening to everything Jesus said. And because he was nearing Jerusalem, he told a story to correct the impression that the Kingdom of God would begin right away. He said, "A nobleman was called away to a distant empire to be crowned king and then return. Before he left, he called together ten servants and gave them ten pounds of silver to invest for him while he was gone. But his people hated him and sent a delegation after him to say they did not want him to be their king. "When he returned, the king called in the servants to

whom he had given the money. He wanted to find out what they had done with the money and what their profits were. The first servant reported a tremendous gain--ten times as much as the original amount! 'Well done!' the king exclaimed. 'You are a trustworthy servant. You have been faithful with the little I entrusted to you, so you will be governor of ten cities as your reward.' "The next servant also reported a good gain--five times the original amount. 'Well done!' the king said. 'You can be governor over five cities.' "But the third servant brought back only the original amount of money and said, 'I hid it and kept it safe. I was afraid because you are a hard man to deal with, taking what isn't yours and harvesting crops you didn't plant.' ""You wicked servant!" the king roared. 'Hard, am I? If you knew so much about me and how tough I am, why didn't you deposit the money in the bank so I could at least get some interest on it?' Then turning to the others standing nearby, the king ordered, 'Take the money from this servant, and give it to the one who earned the most.' "But, master,' they said, 'that servant has enough already!' ""Yes,' the king replied, 'but to those who use well what they are given, even more [responsibility] will be given. But from those who are unfaithful, even what little they have will be taken away. And now about

these enemies of mine who didn't want me to be their king--bring them in and execute them right here in my presence [the third resurrection people]."" Luke 19:11-27, NLT

Those who attain the first resurrection will be pleased with their new spirit bodies. This will also hold true for those who successfully complete the entire second resurrection process. They, too, at a point in time of the two Jehovahs' choosing, will be changed into eternal spirit beings with spirit bodies. The below scripture is specifically in reference to the first resurrection, but by extension will also apply to those who are in the second spiritual resurrection.

"But someone may ask, "How will the dead be raised? What kind of bodies will they have?" ... There are **bodies in the heavens**, and there **are bodies on earth**. The glory of the heavenly bodies is different from the beauty of the earthly bodies. The sun has one kind of glory, while the moon and stars each have another kind. And even the stars differ from each other in their beauty and brightness. It is the same way for the resurrection of the dead. Our earthly bodies, which die and decay, will be different when they are resurrected, for **they will never die**. Our

bodies now disappoint us, but when they are raised, they will be full of glory. They are weak now, but when they are raised, they will be full of power. They are natural human bodies now, but when they are raised, **they will be spiritual bodies.** For just as there are **natural bodies**, so also there are **spiritual bodies.**"

1 Corinthians 15:35, 40-44, NLT

There is less Biblical specificity regarding the judgment of the remainder of the balance of the human beings who are not in either the first or the third resurrections. Ergo, concerning this extremely large group of people who will be in the second physical resurrection, your author is largely limited to using logical inference to extend some of the principles delineated concerning the judgment pertaining to those people who are in the first resurrection. Since the Bible clearly says those in the first resurrection are in the better resurrection (Hebrews 11:35), those in this remainder group of human beings will have to accept this. This is also true of those human beings who survive the end-time cataclysm and live on into the Millennium and it is true of the children born to them during the Millennium time period. In this discussion your author is basically defining the population groups per the following:

All human beings ever born minus those in the first resurrection minus those in the third resurrection = the remainder to be judged

The remainder to be judged includes = 1) those human beings who live on into the Millennium time period + 2) those human beings who are born in the Millennium time period + 3) those human beings who are in the second physical resurrection (as described in section 10.6)

Again, using logical inference, since this remainder to be judged will need to be given a period of time to show they have actually changed, it is likely they will also be judged during that period of time in which they are given, i.e., during the balance of their physical lifetimes. In other words, once they receive their OTEC and repent and are given the Holy Spirit, after that, the balance of their physical life remaining is analogous to those of the first resurrection. The big exception to this being that their Christian walk forward will be much less difficult. This is due to the fact that Satan and his evil team are in jail or otherwise restrained and due to the fact that the earth is now being ruled by Jesus Christ, and that will mean that they are basically going with a

righteous flow downstream instead of having to swim upstream like those of the first resurrection had to. And it is logical that they will be judged according to the same basic criteria. Jesus Christ will certainly be the one who judges them. In summary, Jesus will judge them during their second physical lifetime, post OTEC, according to judging criteria God the Father and Jesus Christ decide on (more on this at the end of this section, below). These people will also be saved by faith and rewarded by their works. They, too, will have eternal spirit bodies once they, too, are spiritually resurrected. The Bible is not specific regarding when they will be spiritually resurrected, but it will obviously be at a time of the two Jehovahs' choosing.

"And you shall know that I am the LORD,  
**when** I have opened your graves, O My people,  
and have brought you up out of your graves.  
And I shall put My Spirit in you, **and you shall**  
**live**, and I will place you in your own land  
[obviously to live for a period of time]. And you  
shall know that I the LORD have spoken and  
have done it, says the LORD."  
Ezekiel 37:13-14, MKJV

The portion of the Ezekiel 37 scripture quoted just below this paragraph is likely

applicable to the Millennium time period, but it is logical to infer the same basic scenario for those Israelites brought back to physical life at the second resurrection and for those of the nations, too. This is because the two Jehovahs are intent on saving Israel first, then the nations (of the human beings who are alive on the planet at the time, whether it be the Millennium time period or the Last Great Day, second resurrection time period). What God does through Israel will largely be extended to the nations, who will be taught to emulate Israel in how they serve God. David, who is going to be King over Israel during the Millennium, will be a resurrected spirit being brought back to life in the first resurrection (Acts 2:25-31, Jeremiah 30:9, Ezekiel 37:24, Hosea 3:5). Since David is going to be king over Israel in the Millennium, it is logical to infer he will also be king over Israel during the Last Great Day, second resurrection, time period. And it is also logical to infer that what happens to physical Israelites during the Millennium time period is also going to happen to physical Israelites in the Last Great Day time period, particularly because the Last Great Day time period comes at the end of the Millennium time period. It is highly likely that Jesus Christ and David will just continue on the same program. The two Jehovahs are bringing all

these people back to life in the Last Great Day time period in order to cleanse and save them. Most of them will evidently live long enough to have children and grandchildren. This will take time. They will be judged during this time analogously the same way those in the first resurrection were judged when they were human beings on the earth.

"Nor shall they [the physical Israelites] be defiled with their idols, even with their filthy idols, nor with all of their transgressions. But I will save them out of all their dwelling places, in them where they sinned, and will cleanse them. And they shall be to Me for a people, and I will be to them for God. And David My servant shall be King over them. And there shall be one Shepherd to all of them. And **they shall walk in My judgments, and obey My laws, and do them** [this takes a period of time; to learn the principles of a new way of life and to then apply them]. And they shall dwell in the land that I have given to Jacob My servant, the land in which your fathers have lived. And they shall dwell in it, even they and their sons, and the sons of their sons for ever [forever obviously being until God the Father and Jesus Christ decide there will be no more human beings

born]. And My servant David shall be their ruler forever." Ezekiel 37:23-25, MKJV

The reason David is their ruler and they are placed into their own land is because they are being given an extended period of time to show they have really changed and they will be judged during this extended period of time. It is not too short of a period of time because evidently some of the people involved will have time to have both children and grandchildren. This only makes sense because each human being learns one concept at a time and they will need a period of time to demonstrate they have really changed in terms of their attitude, thinking process, words, and deeds. Almost all of them will need to learn better social etiquette, i.e., skills, including how to forgive others. They will be given said period of time by the two Jehovahs. Even if the above scripture is strictly applicable to only the Millennium time period, what happens during the Millennium time period is obviously an Exhibit "A" model for what the two Jehovahs intend to do during the Last Great Day time period. They are going to resurrect the Israelites back to life, bring them back to the land, David will be king over them, and they will have to admit they were wrong, repent, and change. As previously explained in section 10.6

regarding the second resurrection, the nations are going to be included, too, but not brought back to the Promised Land; they will go back to the land assigned to their particular nation.

**"And the nations shall know that I the LORD sanctify Israel, when My sanctuary shall be in their midst forever."** Ezekiel 37:28, MKJV

For the nations to know that God sanctifies Israel, they will need to be resurrected back to physical life, too, in order to see it and know it. All involved, both resurrected physical Israelites and those physically resurrected of the nations, will need a period of time to demonstrate changed value systems and the period of time so designated will evidently be a period of time long enough for Jesus Christ to judge them, similar to how he judged those of the first resurrection. It might be a period of time as long as three generations, but this is up to the two Jehovahs.

The last part of this section will delineate some broad judging guidelines. Fortunately, the two Jehovahs want to save man, not condemn them, so there is mercy with judgment for those who willingly cooperate with them.

“For God so loved the world that He gave His only-begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life. For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but **so that the world might be saved through Him.**”

John 3:16-17, MKJV

“Let the heavens rejoice, and let the earth be glad; let the sea roar, and the fullness of it. Let the field be joyful, and all that is in it; then shall all the trees of the forest rejoice before the LORD; for He comes, for **He comes to judge the earth**; He shall judge the world with righteousness, and the people with His truth.”

Psalms 96:11-13, MKJV.

“Justice and judgment are the foundation of Your throne; **mercy** and **truth** shall go before Your face.” Psalms 89:14, MKJV

“Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you pay tithes of mint and dill and cummin, and you have left undone the weightier matters of the Law, judgment, mercy, and faith. You ought to have done these and not to leave the other undone.”

Matthew 23:23, MKJV

"A Psalm of David. I will sing of mercy and judgment; to You, O LORD, I will sing praise." Psalms 101:1, MKJV

Any singular judging criterion and the judging criteria as a whole are the sole discretion of the two Jehovahs, to be utilized by Jesus Christ as the judge. Below is a listing of some Biblical and suggested logical criterion (probably not all). And, once again, the use of any or all of the items on the below list is solely up to the two Jehovahs. The criteria and comments below are only offered to provide a flavor of how each man and woman will be judged. In tabular format, the criteria and authorial comments are as follows:

Because God the Father times the OTEC and there are certain people in the first resurrection and others in the second resurrection and others in the third resurrection, Jesus will judge all at the correct time for that particular person. Those who end up being called up in the third resurrection to be put to eternal death are those who could have been in either the first or second spiritual resurrection, but who rejected the two Jehovahs' offer of forgiveness and reconciliation.

By what a person actually knew and what they did with what they knew, i.e., we will be judged by our informed actions.

According to our natural ability (talents)  
(Matthew 25:14-30, Luke 19:11-27)

According to our spiritual gifts and how we used them (Romans 12, 1 Corinthians 12, Hebrews 2:4, and other places)

Were we hypocrites? (Matthew 7:3-5)

Did we love God and our fellow men? (Matthew 22:34-40)

By both the spirit and the letter of the divine law instructions (Matthew 5:27-28)

By our attitude, including our attitude toward the entirety of the Bible

""Don't misunderstand why I have come. I did not come to abolish the law of Moses or the writings of the prophets. No, I came to fulfill them. I assure you, until heaven and earth disappear, even the smallest detail of God's law will remain until its purpose is achieved. So if you break the smallest commandment and teach

others to do the same, you will be the least in the Kingdom of Heaven. But anyone who obeys God's laws and teaches them will be great in the Kingdom of Heaven." Matthew 5:17-19, NLT

Taking into consideration the context of your particular human situation, e.g., if someone was illiterate, or an oppressed slave, or an orphan, etc., this has to be considered and it will be

"And if I did, my judgment would be correct in every respect because I am not alone--I have with me the Father who sent me."

John 8:16, NLT

Utilizing perfect justice

"He is the Rock; His work is perfect. For all His ways are just, a God of faithfulness, and without evil; just and upright is He."

Deuteronomy 32:4, MKJV

By the mercy we showed to others

"Blessed are the merciful! For they shall obtain mercy." Matthew 5:7, MKJV

Did we act as the judge of others, in the condemnatory sense of the word? There is great danger in this! Did we forgive others?

“Judge not, that you may not be judged. For with whatever judgment you judge, you shall be judged; and with whatever measure you measure out, it shall be measured to you again.”  
Matthew 7:1-2, MKJV

“Therefore be merciful, even as your Father is merciful. Judge not, and you shall not be judged. Condemn not, and you shall not be condemned. **Forgive, and you shall be forgiven.**” Luke 6:36-37, MKJV

“You may be saying, “What terrible people you have been talking about!” But you are just as bad, and you have no excuse! When you say they are wicked and should be punished, you are condemning yourself, for you do these very same things. And we know that God, **in his justice**, will punish anyone who does such things. Do you think that God will judge and condemn others for doing them and not judge you when you do them, too? Don’t you realize how kind, tolerant, and patient God is with you? Or don’t you care? Can’t you see how kind he has been in giving you time to turn from your

sin? But no, you won't listen. So you are storing up terrible punishment for yourself because of your stubbornness in refusing to turn from your sin. For there is going to come a day of judgment when God, the just judge of all the world, will judge all people according to what they have done. He will give eternal life to those who persist in doing what is good [this takes time], seeking after the glory and honor and immortality that God offers. But he will pour out his anger and wrath on those who live for themselves, who refuse to obey the truth and practice evil deeds. There will be trouble and calamity for everyone who keeps on sinning--for the Jew [Jew is used here to reference Israelite] first and also for the Gentile [non-Israelite]. But there will be glory and honor and peace from God for all who do good--for the Jew first and also for the Gentile . **For God does not show favoritism.**" Romans 2:1-11, NLT (The Modern King James Version has verse 11 as: "For there is no respect of persons with God." Romans 2:11, MKJV)

Since God will not test us beyond what we are able to bear, it only makes sense that he will not judge us beyond what we are able to bear, too.

Obviously, this does not include those who will be in the third resurrection.

"No temptation has taken you but what is common to man; but God is faithful, who will not allow you to be tempted above what you are able, but with the temptation also will make a way to escape, so that you may be able to bear it." 1 Corinthians 10:13, MKJV

Any other criterion God the Father and Jesus Christ see fit to deploy.

The Bible seems to link mercy and truth. They are in the same scripture numerous times. The reason is that God cannot change the standard of the right, but God can provide mercy when we do not meet it.

"He shall send from Heaven, and save me from the scorn of him who would swallow me up. Selah. God shall send forth His mercy and His truth." Psalms 57:3, MKJV

He does this through the shed blood of Jesus Christ paying the penalty for us and God also imputes the righteousness of Jesus Christ to us.

"even the righteousness of God through the faith of Jesus Christ, toward all and upon all those who believe. For there is no difference, for all have sinned and come short of the glory of God, being justified freely by His grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus; whom God has set forth to be a propitiation through faith in His blood, to declare His righteousness through the passing by of the sins that had taken place before, in the forbearance of God;" Romans 3:22-25, MKJV

God the Father and Jesus Christ want there to be an acknowledgement there is a standard of the right, their standard, but they also want to show mercy to those requesting it and humbly responding to their OTEC. And the two Jehovahs gladly extend said mercy.

The eternal judgment results are permanent, i.e., eternal in effect. Those successfully in the first resurrection and the second spiritual resurrection will live on into eternity with the two Jehovahs. For those in the third resurrection, their eternal judgment results are eternal, too. They will be put to eternal death and will no longer exist for the balance of eternity.

## **10.11 Eternal judgment – the angels**

Eternal judgment concerning the angels is only partly knowable to man, particularly concerning the eternal judgment of the good angels, the angels that have proven themselves loyal to the two Jehovahs. What is knowable to man is via the Bible plus the use of logic and it is partly unknowable regarding some aspects of the specifics. Your author will do the best he can, starting with the good angels' eternal judgment and finishing with Satan and the bad angels' eternal judgment.

### **The good angels:**

"When you have something against another Christian, why do you file a lawsuit and ask a secular court to decide the matter, instead of taking it to other Christians to decide who is right? Don't you know that someday we Christians are going to judge the world? And since you are going to judge the world, can't you decide these little things among yourselves? **Don't you realize that we Christians will judge angels?** So you should surely be able to resolve ordinary disagreements here on earth."

1 Corinthians 6:1-3, NLT

The Bible speaks of those in the first resurrection as judging the angels someday. Your author writes "first resurrection" because only those in the first resurrection will be spirit beings, post-first-resurrection, and available to assist Jesus Christ in ruling (judging) the world during the Millennium and the Last Great Day time periods (Revelation 1:6, 20:6). Those who are in the second resurrection could not meet this criteria, ergo your author surmises, (perhaps incorrectly), that those resurrected saints who are in the first resurrection will be the ones who ultimately judge the angels. Theoretically it is possible for those who are ultimately spiritually resurrected at the end of the second resurrection time period to be included, too, but this is not knowable by your author. The more likely projection is that 1 Corinthians 6:3 refers to those of the first resurrection.

Obviously, there is no way even a resurrected human, then an eternal, incorruptible spirit being, could know the past history of everything the good angels did unless either God the Father or Jesus Christ informed us of the facts pertaining to all of the good angels. Part of the facts would be: 1) what happened, 2) what the good angels did in

response to what happened, 3) the motive of the good angel being judged, 4) the good angel's attitude, 5) the results of their actions, 6) the extent of their willingness to demonstrate loyalty, 7) their competence, 8) etc., – "etc.," meaning anything else the resurrected saints would need to know to render a judgment that is correct and just. There will no doubt be rewards involved for these faithful, long-time servants of God and man. These good angels are to be commended for rejecting Satan's attempt to recruit them in his coup attempt to overthrow the two Jehovahs. And they are to be commended for their humility in being willing to be surpassed in "status" by human beings who successfully complete God's divine individualism process. Satan and the fallen angels were evidently not so willing and they foolishly charged the throne of the two Jehovahs in their failed coup attempt.

The good angels are not written about a lot in the Bible, but there are a few things that are stated about them. Your author will list some of the key scriptures in this regard. These scriptures largely speak for themselves – listed in a paired summary format - your author's comment first, followed by a supporting Bible scripture:

The good angels served and helped Jesus Christ after he confronted and defeated Satan.

"Then the Devil left him [Jesus Christ]. And behold, angels came and ministered to Him."  
Matthew 4:11, MKJV

The good angels will be used by Jesus Christ to help rid Christ's Kingdom of God of evil.

"The enemy who planted the weeds among the wheat is the Devil. The harvest is the end of the world, and the harvesters [of the evil weeds] are the [good] angels. "Just as the weeds are separated out and burned, so it will be at the end of the world. I, the Son of Man, will send my angels, and they will remove from my Kingdom everything that causes sin and all who do evil, and they will throw them into the furnace and burn them. There will be weeping and gnashing of teeth." Matthew 13:39-42, NLT

The good angels will return with Jesus Christ at his second coming. Please note that since men being judged will be rewarded "according to their works," it is very likely the same judging criterion will be used to reward the good angels according to their works. In other words, the

below scripture could also ultimately apply to the good angels.

"For the Son of man shall come in the glory of His Father with His angels, and then He shall reward each one according to his works."  
Matthew 16:27, MKJV

It is a distinct possibility that each Category One, effectively-called-and-chosen-now saint, has their own angel assigned to them to assist and protect them. At any rate, the below scripture is very interesting.

""Beware that you don't despise a single one of these little ones. For I tell you that in heaven their angels are always in the presence of my heavenly Father." Matthew 18:10, NLT

The good angels will assist Jesus Christ by gathering the elect (the Category Two firstfruits) to him at his return.

"And then at last, the sign of the coming of the Son of Man will appear in the heavens, and there will be deep mourning among all the nations of the earth. And they will see the Son of Man arrive on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. And he will send forth his

angels with the sound of a mighty trumpet blast,  
and they [the good angels] will gather together  
his chosen ones [the Category Two firstfruits]  
from the farthest ends of the earth and heaven."  
Matthew 24:30-31, NLT

The good angels are, or can be formed into an army of God, if necessary.

"Do you think that I [Jesus Christ] cannot now pray to My Father, and He shall presently give Me more than twelve legions of angels?"  
Matthew 26:53, MKJV

The good angels are messengers of God. Notice they are loyal to and praise God and also want peace and the good for God's special creation, man.

"And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host [other good angels], praising God and saying, Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men. And it happened as the angels departed from them into Heaven, the shepherds said to one another, Indeed, let us go to Bethlehem and see this thing which has happened, which the Lord made known to us."

Luke 2:13-15, MKJV

The good angels are serving at the throne of God and are aware of many of the plans of the two Jehovahs.

"Also I say to you, Whoever shall confess Me before men, the Son of man also shall confess him before the angels of God. But he who denies Me before men shall be denied before the angels of God." Luke 12:8-9, MKJV

The good angels are not only accepting of God's overall plan for man, they rejoice when each individual man or woman makes a decision to cooperate with God.

"Likewise I say to you, there is joy before the angels of God over one sinner who repents." Luke 15:10, MKJV

Some of the good angels testified that the crucified Jesus was successfully resurrected back to life as THE FIRSTFRUIT.

"Yes, and also some of our women astounded us, having been early at the tomb; and when they did not find His body, they came saying that they had also seen a vision of angels, who said that He was alive." Luke 24:22-23, MKJV

"And she saw two angels in white sitting there,  
the one at the head and the other at the feet,  
where the body of Jesus had lain."

John 20:12, MKJV

The angels had to accept the two Jehovahs' divine plan and creative process and support it, though this meant that they are going to be eventually surpassed in "status" by mere man. The reader can also read all of Hebrews 2, only a portion of which is quoted below.

"This shows that God's Son is far greater than the angels, just as the name God gave him is far greater than their names. For God never said to any angel what he said to Jesus: "You are my Son. Today I have become your Father." And again God said, "I will be his Father, and he will be my Son." And then, when he presented his honored Son to the world, God said, "Let all the angels of God worship him." God calls his angels "messengers swift as the wind, and servants made of flaming fire."" Hebrews 1:4-7, NLT

"how shall we escape if we neglect so great a salvation, which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by those who heard Him; God also bearing them

witness, both with signs and wonders, and with different kinds of miracles and gifts of the Holy Spirit, according to His own will? For He has not put in subjection to the angels the world to come, of which we speak. But one testified in a certain place, saying, "What is man, that You are mindful of him; or the son of man, that You visit him? You have made him a little lower than the angels. You [ultimately] crowned him with glory and honor and set him over the works of Your hands." Hebrews 2:3-7, MKJV

When a good angel speaks the words of God as a divine messenger, their words (God's words) are steadfast, i.e., absolutely the truth.

"The message God delivered through angels has always proved true, and the people were punished for every violation of the law and every act of disobedience." Hebrews 2:2, NLT

Sometimes the good angels evidently take on the form of a man in order to visit with one of the saints, perhaps to test the particular saint's hospitality.

"Do not be forgetful to entertain strangers, for by this some have entertained angels without knowing it." Hebrews 13:2, MKJV

The good angels are respectful and follow proper protocols (divinely issued protocols), despite having great power and might in their own right.

"Where angels, who are greater in power and might, do not bring a reproaching accusation against them before the Lord." 2 Peter 2:11, MKJV

Evidently, at least some of the churches of God, as categorized by God, have an angel assigned to them.

"the mystery of the seven stars which you saw in My right hand and the seven golden lampstands. The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches, and the seven lampstands which you saw are the seven churches."

Revelation 1:20, MKJV

There are a very large number of the good angels, evidently millions of them. Exactly how many, we do not know at this time.

"And I looked, and I heard the voice of many angels around the throne, and the living creatures and the elders. And the number of

them was myriads and myriads, and thousands of thousands," Revelation 5:11, MKJV

Some of the (evidently senior) good angels are used for important purposes of God (divinely appointed special missions), e.g., sealing the human servants of God prior to certain divine judgments coming upon the earth.

"And after these things I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth so that the wind should not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree. And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God. And he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea, saying, Do not hurt the earth or the sea or the trees until we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads."

Revelation 7:1-3, MKJV

The good angels know who to worship and do so willingly.

"And all the angels stood around the throne, and the elders, and the four living creatures, and they fell before the throne on their faces and worshiped God," Revelation 7:11, MKJV

Some of the good angels have important end-time jobs, such as sounding trumpets pertaining to divine judgments and offering the prayers of the saints before the two Jehovahs.

"And when He opened the seventh seal, there was silence in Heaven for about half an hour. And I saw the seven angels who stood before God, and seven trumpets were given to them. And another angel came and stood at the altar, having a golden censer. And many incenses were given to him, so that he should offer it with the prayers of all saints on the golden altar before the throne." Revelation 8:1-3, MKJV

Some angels will announce God's judgments to the people on the earth.

"And I saw and I heard one angel flying in mid-heaven, saying with a loud voice, Woe! Woe! Woe to the inhabitants of the earth, from the rest of the voices of the trumpet of the three angels being about to sound!"  
Revelation 8:13, MKJV

Some of the good angels will actually be part of carrying out some of the divine judgments.

"Then the sixth angel blew his trumpet, and I heard a voice speaking from the four horns of the gold altar that stands in the presence of God. And the voice spoke to the sixth angel who held the trumpet: "Release the four angels who are bound at the great Euphrates River." And the four angels who had been prepared for this hour and day and month and year were turned loose to kill one-third of all the people on earth."

Revelation 9:13-15, NLT

The good angels help the archangel Michael fight against Satan and his evil team of fallen angels. Evidently, there are ranks among the angels, at least pertaining to some angels being designated as archangels, e.g., Michael.

"And there was war in Heaven. Michael and his angels warring against the dragon. And the dragon and his angels warred,"

Revelation 12:7, MKJV

"But Michael, **the archangel**, when contending with the Devil, he argued about the body of Moses, he dared not bring a judgment of blasphemy, but said, Let the Lord rebuke you!"

Jude 1:9, MKJV

Three great angels convey very important information to the people of the world at the time of the end: 1) the gospel message is preached to the people of the world, 2) there is an announcement pertaining to the destruction of Babylon the Great, and 3) they warn the people of the world against taking the mark of the beast.

"And I saw another angel flying in mid-heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach to those dwelling on the earth, even to every nation and kindred and tongue and people, saying with a great voice, Fear God and give glory to Him! For the hour of His judgment has come. And worship Him who made the heaven and the earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters. And another angel followed, saying, The great city, Babylon, has fallen, has fallen; because of the wine of the anger of her fornication; she has made all nations to drink. And a third angel followed them, saying with a great voice, If anyone worships the beast and its image, and receives a mark in his forehead or in his hand, he also will drink of the wine of the anger of God, having been mixed undiluted in the cup of His wrath. And he will be tormented by fire and brimstone before the holy angels, and in the

presence of the Lamb." Revelation 14:6-10,  
MKJV

Seven angels carry out the judgment of the  
seven last plagues of God.

"And I saw another sign in Heaven, great and  
marvelous: seven angels with the seven last  
plagues; for in them is filled up the wrath of  
God." Revelation 15:1, MKJV

Evidently, there are twelve angels posted to  
each one of the twelve gates of entry into New  
Jerusalem.

"And it had a great and high wall, with twelve  
gates. And at the gates were twelve angels, and  
names inscribed, which are the names of the  
twelve tribes of the sons of Israel:"  
Revelation 21:12, MKJV

Two angels accompanied the God of the Old  
Testament, on the way to see what was  
happening in Sodom. They helped Lot, his wife,  
and two daughters leave Sodom in time  
(Genesis 19).

"And there came two angels to Sodom at  
evening. And Lot sat in the gate of Sodom. And

Lot rose up to meet them when he saw them.  
And he bowed himself with his face toward the  
ground," Genesis 19:1, MKJV

The good angels evidently ascend and descend  
from the throne of God to the earth, doing God's  
will on their journeys to the earth (and while in  
heaven).

"And Jacob went out from Beersheba, and went  
toward Haran. And he came on a certain place,  
and stayed there all night, because the sun had  
set. And he took of the stones of that place, and  
placed them at his head. And he lay down in  
that place to sleep. And he dreamed. And  
behold! A ladder was set up on the earth, and  
the top of it reached to Heaven! And behold!  
The angels of God were ascending and  
descending on it!" Genesis 28:10-12, MKJV

The angels helped Jacob as he prepared to have  
to face Esau after many years of not seeing him.

"And Jacob went on his way, and the angels of  
God met him." Genesis 32:1, MKJV

God uses the good angels to protect his faithful  
human servants.

"If you make the LORD your refuge, if you make the Most High your shelter, no evil will conquer you; no plague will come near your dwelling. For he orders his angels to protect you wherever you go. They will hold you with their hands to keep you from striking your foot on a stone. You will trample down lions and poisonous snakes; you will crush fierce lions and serpents under your feet!" Psalms 91:9-13, NLT

The good angels excel in strength, listen carefully to God's commands, and then obey them.

"Bless the LORD, O angels of His, who excel in strength, who do His command, listening to the voice of His word." Psalms 103:20, MKJV

While those first-resurrection saints will do the judging of the angels, all judgments they render are no doubt going to be subject to the final approval and confirmation of Jesus Christ. This is because those judging the angels are still beholden to Christ and his superior wisdom and knowledge pertaining to each of the good angels.

### **Satan and the bad angels:**

Your author is not certain that those resurrected saints of the first resurrection will judge Satan and the bad angels. It is possible, but it might very well be that Jesus Christ does this himself. Your author will use a few scriptures and logic to put forth the viewpoint that God the Father and Jesus Christ have already, in essence, judged Satan and his evil team of spiritual servants and that judgment is going to be eternal death. Isaiah 27:1 is unambiguous, if the sea monster the LORD kills is, in fact, Satan the devil. Your author believes it is. You, dear reader, may judge for yourself. Of course the judgment of the two Jehovahs will prevail on this important matter.

**"In that day the LORD with His great and fierce and strong sword shall punish the sea-monster, the darting serpent, the sea-monster, that twisting serpent; and He shall kill the monster in the sea."** Isaiah 27:1, MKJV

**"In that day, the LORD will punish with his sword, his fierce, great and powerful sword, Leviathan the gliding serpent, Leviathan the coiling serpent; he will slay the monster of the sea."** Isaiah 27:1, NIV

"By His Spirit the heavens were beautiful;  
His hand pierced the fleeing **serpent.**"  
Job 26:13, MKJV

"Awake! awake! Put on strength, O arm of  
the LORD. Awake! as in the days of old, in the  
generations of old. Was it not You who cut  
Rahab into pieces, piercing the sea-monster?"  
Isaiah 51:9, MKJV

"And there was war in Heaven. Michael and  
his angels warring against the dragon. And the  
dragon and his angels warred, but did not  
prevail. Nor was place found for them in Heaven  
any more. And the great dragon was cast out,  
the old **serpent** called Devil, and **Satan**, who  
deceives the whole world. He was cast out into  
the earth, and his angels were cast out with  
him. And I heard a great voice saying in  
Heaven, Now has come the salvation and power  
and the kingdom of our God, and the authority  
of His Christ. For the accuser of our brothers is  
cast down, who accused them before our God  
day and night. And they overcame him because  
of the blood of the Lamb, and because of the  
word of their testimony. And they did not love  
their soul to the death. Therefore rejoice, O  
heavens, and those tabernacling in them. Woe

to the inhabitants of the earth and in the sea!  
For the Devil came down to you, having great wrath, knowing that he has but a little time.”

Revelation 12:7-12, MKJV

“By the multitude of your goods they have filled your midst with violence, and you have sinned. So I cast you profaned from the height of God, and I destroy you, O covering cherub, from among the stones of fire. Your heart was lifted up because of your beauty; you have spoiled your wisdom because of your brightness. I will cast you to the ground; I will put you before kings, that they may behold you. By the host of your iniquities, by the iniquity of your trade, you have profaned your holy places; so I brought a fire from your midst; it shall devour you, and **I will give you for ashes on the earth, before the eyes of all who see you.** All who know you among the peoples shall be astonished at you; you shall be terrors, **and you will not be forever.**” Ezekiel 28:16-19, MKJV

Using logic to bolster your author’s argument that Satan will be killed by Jesus Christ and be dead (non-existent) for the balance of eternity, hence the eternal judgment designator in this instance, the below scriptures pertaining to New

Jerusalem and the prophesied new heavens (universe) and new earth seem rather clear.

"And God will wipe away all tears from their eyes. And there will be no more death, nor mourning, nor crying out, nor will there be any more pain; for the first things passed away."  
Revelation 21:4, MKJV

"But the fearful, and the unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, will have their part in the Lake burning with fire and brimstone, **which is the second death.**"  
Revelation 21:8, MKJV

"And **every curse will no longer be** [Satan and the fallen angels and demons are the curse of curses]; but the throne of God and of the Lamb will be in it, and His servants will serve Him." Revelation 22:3, MKJV

Since Isaiah 27:1 indicates that the God of the Old Testament, who we know to be Jesus Christ, will take his sword and slay the serpent, i.e., the Devil, i.e., Satan (Revelation 12:9), and since every curse will no longer be (when the new heavens and the new earth are created), this must mean that Satan, the fallen angels,

and the demons are all judged as being worthy of eternal death and destroyed, no longer to exist. **Their judgment, with eternal effect, is extermination.** Since the two Jehovahs have the power to kill body and soul and to jail the bad angels, they can certainly kill them, too.

“And do not fear those who kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul. But rather fear Him who can destroy both soul and body in hell.”  
Matthew 10:28, MKJV

The demons Jesus Christ encountered were afraid of him and some of them asked Christ if he had come to torment them before the time (which is evidence that Jesus Christ might very well handle the judgment of the bad angels himself). There are numerous scriptures showing that Jesus cast demons out of people by simply commanding them. There are so many, in fact, that it does not make sense for your author to quote them all. It also indicates the demons’ unwilling compliance when they are commanded to do something by Jesus Christ (they are spiritually overpowered).

“And He [Jesus] proclaimed in their synagogues throughout all Galilee, and cast out demons.” Mark 1:39, MKJV

"And when they came to the crowd, a man came to Him, kneeling down to Him and saying, Lord, have mercy on my son, for he is a lunatic and grievously vexed; for oftentimes he falls into the fire, and often into the water. And I brought him to Your disciples, and they could not cure him. Then Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? How long shall I suffer you? Bring him here to Me. And Jesus rebuked the demon, and he departed out of him. And the child was cured from that very hour."

Matthew 17:14-18, MKJV

The below scripture illustrates the demons' fear.

"And when He had come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, two demon-possessed ones met Him, coming out of the tombs, exceedingly fierce, so that no one might pass by that way. And behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with You, Jesus, Son of God? Have You come here to torment us before the time?" Matthew 8:28-29, MKJV

Your author believes the torment mentioned is the fact that the demons know they will have to

face a final judgment from Jesus. It is possible that their torment (judgment) might include pain and suffering, as well as eternal death, hence the word "torment," but this is up to the two Jehovahs. But your author really believes (subject to possible correction by the two Jehovahs) that Satan, the fallen angels who supported his failed coup attempt, and the demons will be judged by Jesus Christ and put to eternal death. The previously quoted Isaiah 27:1 scripture and also the Hebrews 2:14-15 scripture quoted below seem to make Satan's fate and eternal judgment certain. He will die.

"Since then the children have partaken of flesh and blood, He also Himself [Jesus Christ] likewise partook of the same; that through death He might destroy him who had the power of death (that is, **the Devil**), and deliver those who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage." Hebrews 2:14-15, MKJV

"After that the end will come, when he will turn the Kingdom over to God the Father, having put down all enemies of every kind. For Christ must reign until he humbles all his enemies beneath his feet [likely as completely destroyed ashes underneath his feet]. And the last enemy to be destroyed is death."

1 Corinthians 15:24-26, NLT

The last enemy to be destroyed is death. While Satan and his evil team's fate will depend on God's judgment, it would appear that the being, Satan, who brought death into the universe via his evil value system and the actions based thereon, deserves death – the soul that sins, it shall die (Ezekiel 18:4, 20). Though it is Elihu who is speaking in the Job 34:12 scriptural reference quoted below, the clear implication of the scripture is that God will not pervert justice because God is a God of justice.

““Surely, God will not act wickedly, And **the Almighty will not pervert justice.**”  
Job 34:12, NASB

The two Jehovahs, being just, will in all likelihood administer the death penalty. **Satan the nihilist will be annihilated.** So will his support staff of fallen angels and demons. At that point, or shortly thereafter, all curses will be gone and nothing that hurts will remain. Evil cannot be reasoned with; evil will keep coming until you kill it. God the Father and Jesus Christ are too smart to subject themselves to being forced to play defense against evil for all

eternity. **Evil will be terminated, with its values repudiated.** There will be peace and justice in the universe and if there were ever a being that deserved to die, it is definitely Satan (Romans 6:23).

Further, the judgments of the LORD are true and righteous altogether (Psalm 19:9, Revelation 16:7, 19:2).

The timing of all of this, of course, is completely up to the two Jehovahs. It might be at the end of the initial part of the Last Great Day time period, or after the completion of the Last Great Day time period. In Revelation 20:7-10, after having been in bad-angel jail for about 1,000 years, Satan will be loosed for a time. He will lead yet another rebellion against Jesus Christ (and Israel) and once again, he will be defeated. He ends up being thrown into the Lake of Fire. Your author, subject to being corrected by the two Jehovahs, reads Revelation 20:10 in light of the more clear Isaiah 27:1 and Hebrews 2:15 scriptures where it is implied and indicated that Satan will be put to eternal death. Willful, determined, nihilistic evil will get its just deserts, annihilation. Christ will defeat Satan, the fallen angels, the demons, the spiritual seedline of Satan, and undo their evil works,

restoring back to life and healing those harmed by them. The last enemy to be defeated is death, including death's values, which will be known and repudiated by all those who live on into eternity, following God the Father and Jesus Christ and wherever they lead.

### **10.12 The new heavens and the new earth – eternal happiness**

After all of the human and angelic judgments are completed, the two Jehovahs are evidently going to create a new heavens (universe) and a new earth. Your author presumes that when the Bible says "new heavens" that this means a completely new universe. The below scriptures are pretty clear. God the Father, Jesus Christ, the resurrected humans now eternal spirit beings, and the good angels will remain – as all are spirit beings.

"And, "You, Lord, have laid the foundation of the earth in the beginning, and the heavens are the works of Your hands. They shall perish, but You will remain. And they shall all become old as a garment, and as a covering You shall fold them up, and they shall be changed. But You are the same, and Your years shall not fail.""  
Hebrews 1:10-12, MKJV

"But the present heavens and the earth being kept in store by the same word, are being kept for fire until the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men. But, beloved, let not this one thing be hidden from you, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. The Lord is not slow concerning His promise, as some count slowness, but is long-suffering toward us, not willing that any of us should perish, but that all of us should come to repentance. But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night, in which the heavens will pass away with a rushing noise, and the elements will melt with fervent heat. And the earth and the works in it will be burned up. Then, all these things being about to be dissolved, what sort ought you to be in holy behavior and godliness, looking for and rushing the coming of the Day of God, on account of which the heavens, being on fire, will melt away, and the elements will melt, burning with heat? But **according to His promise, we look for new heavens and a new earth in which righteousness dwells.**" 2 Peter 3:7-13, MKJV

"For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth. And the things before will not be remembered, nor come to mind."

Isaiah 65:17, MKJV

"And I saw **a new heaven and a new earth.** For the first heaven and the first earth had passed away. And the sea no longer is. And I, John, saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down from God out of Heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her Husband. And I heard a great voice out of Heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they will be His people, and God Himself will be with them and be their God. And God will wipe away all tears from their eyes. And **there will be no more death, nor mourning, nor crying out, nor will there be any more pain;** for the first things passed away. And He sitting on the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And He said to me, Write, for these words are true and faithful. And He said to me, It is done. I am the Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the End. To him who thirsts I will give of the fountain of the water of life freely. He who overcomes will inherit all things, and **I will be his God, and he will be My son.** But the fearful, and the unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, will have their part in the Lake burning with fire and

brimstone, which is the second death.”  
Revelation 21:1-8, MKJV

Every being remaining in the universe will be moral, reasonable, productive, and possess and use social etiquette. Every being in the universe will acknowledge that the two Jehovahs own the entire universe and they will respect both the Father and the Son for all they have done for our benefit so far and all they intend to do throughout eternity. Each resurrected man will now be an incorruptible, divine, eternal, spirit being. Each will possess the Unity of Virtues in his being. We will all acknowledge and live by the unity of the package of values that pertain to life. Each of us will understand and accept the law of comparative advantage and know that there is a place setting at God’s dinner table for each one of us. Each of us will have completed the two Jehovahs’ divine individualism process – we survived God’s Strange Plan and are now fully inoculated against sin as a disease. The results for each of us is that we will now be a unique divine individual with an eternity of time to further develop and grow under the direct leadership of the Father and the Son.

Though being a human being is not easy and we have all suffered losses, please take heart, because what no one can permanently take away from you, is any of the following, if you cooperate with the two Jehovahs in their divine individualism process:

Your character  
Your mind  
Your personality  
Your sense of humor  
Your interests  
Your abilities  
Your achievements  
Your eternal life  
Your family and your friends – assuming they, too, participate with the two Jehovahs in their divine individualism process

Whatever Satan attempts to destroy, God really can build back better. This includes healing each of us at the resurrection, just of different things. Each resurrected human being of both the first and second resurrections will have learned how to:

Be moral

Be rational (reasonable, balanced, and intelligent)

Be productive in a responsible, sustainable way

Be socially adept, getting along with others

And this means we will each fulfill the general content criteria of what it means to be happy.

Each of us will be “one of the good guys,” be worth listening to, be good to have on a productive team, and also be fun to be around. In short, we will be happy and everyone else will be, too.

There will be no more pain and suffering because: 1) the bad guys are all going to be dead and 2) Satan’s values will have been eternally repudiated. The causes of pain and suffering are going to be gone. Revelation 22:3 states “and every curse will no longer be.”

“But the fearful, and the unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, will have their part in the Lake burning with fire and brimstone, which is the second death.”

Revelation 21:8, MKJV

"In that day the LORD with His great and fierce and strong sword shall punish the sea-monster, the darting serpent, the sea-monster, that twisting serpent; and He shall kill the monster in the sea." Isaiah 27:1, MKJV

Revelation 21:3 shows that God the Father will now dwell with men and of course Jesus Christ will too. They will provide direct leadership to each of us throughout eternity.

The Executive Summary is:

We will have a great new environment to live in for all eternity.

We will have direct access to God the Father and Jesus Christ, who will provide leadership throughout eternity.

We are all going to be happy.

There is going to be no more pain, suffering, or death (Revelation 21:4). Jesus Christ really will defeat death and deliver all of us from the various forms of bondage we have been in - whether spiritual, mental, emotional, social, family, tribal, governmental, or other. Then he

will turn the great work he has accomplished over to the Father.

"Since then the children have partaken of flesh and blood, He also Himself [Jesus Christ] likewise partook of the same; that through [his sacrificial] death [and resurrection back to eternal life as THE FIRSTFRUIT] He might destroy him who had the power of death (that is, the Devil), **and deliver those** who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage." Hebrews 2:14-15, MKJV

"then is the end, when He [Jesus Christ] delivers the kingdom to God, even the Father; when He makes to cease all rule and all authority and power [in opposition to the eternal reign of the two Jehovahs]. for it is right for Him to reign until He has put all the enemies under His feet. **The last enemy made to cease is death.**" 1 Corinthians 15:24-26, MKJV

"O death, where is your sting? O grave, where is your victory?" ... But thanks be to God who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ." 1 Corinthians 15:55, 57, MKJV

To the tens of billions of people who have ever lived, God's plan may very well seem

strange, but it will prove to be a great success. And God's Torah Story will no doubt continue to be written on an ongoing basis throughout eternity. It really will be a case of ... to infinity and beyond.

## **Appendix**

### **A List Of Unsupported Assertions (Not Conforming To A Standard Of The Right, i.e., of what is morally, rationally, and/or scientifically correct)**

Instead of goodness, truth, and valid social theories and etiquette, all of which work together and lead toward peace and prosperity, we have pseudo-values by assertion and virtues by assertion that are not morally right, are factually and logically incorrect, that waste the accumulated capital inherited from the sacrifices made by prior generations, and result in social unrest. These unsupported and politically motivated assertions are very likely ultimately going to lead to a peace-destroying human civil war that will gut life, liberty, and private property and will wound and also kill many

human beings, all of whom are made in the image and likeness of God.

Values and virtues by assertion function like a moral and intellectual sinkhole, sucking unsuspecting human beings down into an evil, Satanic, Secular Humanist bottomless pit.

Human beings, seeking safety in various collectives and tribes, are hoping to get away with pretending there are not divine laws and natural laws that govern the universe, but there are. These ignored and disregarded divine law instructions, and the natural laws, including individual natural rights, were given by the two Jehovahs – the lawgivers. The consequences of ignoring divine law instructions and natural laws, particularly the respect for the individual natural rights of others has been shown throughout this book. **Instead of moral goodness, truth, responsible productivity, and social harmony you get morally and intellectually flawed, confusing assertions.**

For the reader's convenience, the last portion of this Appendix contains a listing of at least some of the major "X by assertion" that have been discussed and/or referenced in this book. When your beliefs and values "lead" you to the

place where you find yourselves with no external standard of the right you end up with:

Morality by assertion

Truth by assertion

Elite by assertion

Values by assertion

Virtues by assertion

Virtue signaling as virtue by assertion

"I'm a good person" by assertion

Self-esteem by assertion

Leadership by assertion

The greater good by assertion

The best plan by assertion

Utopia by assertion (if you follow the elite's societal vision)

Political correctness by assertion

Exceptionalism by assertion

Legally “correct” by majority vote assertion

Correct ideology by assertion

Ownership of private property by assertion

History rewritten by assertion

Traditions good or bad by assertion

Cultural correctness by assertion

Tribal goodness / correctness by assertion

Production strategies by assertion – the lack of prices resulting in widespread bureaucratic, arbitrary assertions turns out to be just another example of what happens when you do not have an external standard of the right (in this case marketplace prices) to go by

What prices should be by assertion

Growth by assertion – a derivative of production by assertion (if you listen to and obey our assertions, i.e., the elite decree economic

growth) (perhaps “the elite” are royalty descended from King Canute)

Government expenditure by assertion

Deficits do not matter by assertion

Government winners and losers by assertion

Justice by assertion

Sexuality by assertion

Gender by assertion

Ownership of the universe by assertion (Satan)

Ownership of the earth by assertion (Satan and his spiritual seedline)

The use of personal, tribal, and ideological force justified by assertion

Governmental power justified by assertion

Metaphysics by assertion (remember the positive energy blob from earlier) (this includes various foolish Philosophies of History, e.g., Communism, too)

Meaningful personal experience by assertion  
(personal existentialism)

Correct sympathetic magic by assertion

Feeling, wishing, hoping, evading, etc.,  
conflated for actual thinking, i.e., thinking by  
assertion

God is unjust by assertion

God is cruel by assertion

God is unloving by assertion

Etc., etc., etc. (any other assertions not  
supported by either divine law or by facts and  
logic, i.e., by reason)

Final reminder: It turns out that IF there is no  
external standard of the right then no one can  
be "correct" as there is no RIGHT. This would  
include The Left, the Secular Humanists, The  
Right, and the Neo-Platonic elite.

Final summation and the likely results of  
incoherent assertions → immoral, irrational,

anti-social activism → human civil war →  
destroyed human lives